THE

NEWE TESTAMENT OF

OVR LORD IESVS CHRIST,

TRANSLATED OVT OF

Greeke by Theod. Beza, and Englished by L. T.

Hereunto is added a Kalender and a Table.

Beholde, I bring you gladde tidings of great ioye that shalbe to all the people, Luke 2. 10.



IMPRINTED AT LONDON BY CHRISTOPHER BARKER, PRINTER to the Queenes Maiestie.

1580.

Cum gratia & priuilegio.

periera nisi perissem: Themistocl

Sic vive cū hominib⁹ tanqua deus te videa
Sic loquere cū deo tanqua homines te audiant.

Seneca:

Reddetur tuiq; iusta facta tua
ministrorum dei initium salutis nostr
Latinia iustorum nunquid perit

LENOX LIBRARY
NEW YORK

¶ Ianuarie hath xxxi. dayes.

			Morning prayer.		Euening prayer.	
			1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*	1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*
1	A	*New yeres day.*	Gen. 17.	Rom. 2.	Deut. 10.	Colos. 2.
2	b		Gen. 1.	Matth. 1.	Genes. 2.	Roma. 1.
3	c		3.	2.	4.	2.
4	d		5.	3.	6.	3.
5	e		7.	4.	8.	4.
6	f	*Epiphanie.*	Esay. 60.	Luke. 3.	Esai. 49.	Iohn. 2.
7	g		Gen. 9.	Matth. 5	Gen. 12.	Rom. 5.
8	A	Lucian.	13.	6.	14.	6.
9	b		15.	7.	16.	7.
10	c		17.	8.	18.	8.
11	d		19.	9.	20.	9.
12	e	*Sol in Aqua.*	21.	10.	22.	10.
13	f	Hillari.	23.	11.	24.	11.
14	g	Februarii.	25.	12.	26.	12.
15	A		27.	13.	28.	13.
16	b		29.	14.	30.	14.
17	c		31.	15.	32.	16.
18	d	Prisca.	33.	16.	34.	16.
19	e		35.	17.	37.	1. Cor. 1.
20	f	Fabian.	38.	18.	39.	2.
21	g	Agnes.	40.	19.	41.	3.
22	A	Vincent.	42.	20.	43.	4.
23	b		44.	21.	45.	5.
24	c		46.	22.	47.	6.
25	d	Con. of Paul.	Wisd. 5.	Act. 22.	Wisd. 6.	Act. 26.
26	e		Gen. 48.	Matt. 23.	Gen. 49.	1. Cor. 7.
27	f		50.	24.	Exod. 1.	8.
28	g		Exod. 2.	25.	3.	9.
29	A		4.	26.	5.	10.
30	b		7.	27.	8.	11.
31	c		9.	28.	10.	12.



¶ Februarie hath xxviii. dayes.

			Morning prayer.		Euening prayer.	
			1. *Leſſon.*	2. *Leſſon.*	1. *Leſſon.*	2. *Leſſon.*
1	d	Faſt.	Exod. 11.	Mark. 1.	Exod. 12.	1. Cor. 13
2	e	*Puri. of Marie.*	Wiſ. 9.	2	Wiſd. 12.	14
3	f	Blaſii.	Exod. 13.	3	Exod. 14.	15
4	g		15	4	16	16
5	A	Agathe.	17	5	18	2. Cor. 1
6	b		19	6	20	2
7	c		21	7	22	3
8	d		23	8	24	4
9	e		32	9	33	5
10	f		34	10	Leuit. 18.	6
11	g	*Solin Piſcib.*	Leuit. 19	11	20	7
12	A		26	12	Num. 11.	8
13	b		Num. 12.	13	13	9
14	c	Valentine.	14	14	16	10
15	d	Martii.	17	15	20	11
16	e		21	16	22	12
17	f		23	Luk. di. 1.	24	13
18	g		25	di. 1	27	Galat. 1
19	A		30	2	31	2
20	b		32	3	35	3
21	c		36	4	Deut. 1.	4
22	d		Deut. 2.	5	3	5
23	e	Faſt.	4	6	5	6
24	f	*S. Matthias.*	Wiſd. 19	7	Eccle. 1.	Ephe. 1
25	g		Deut. 6.	8	Deut. 7.	2
26	A		8	9	9	3
27	b		10	10	11	4
28	c		13	11	15	5

¶ March hath xxxi. dayes.

			Morning prayer.		Euening prayer.	
			1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*	1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*
1	d	Dauid.	Deut. 16	Luke. 12	Deut. 17	Ephe. 6
2	e	Cedde.	18	13	19	Phil. 1
3	f		20	14	21	2
4	g		22	15	24	3
5	A		25	16	26	4
6	b		27	17	28	Colos. 1
7	c	Perpetue.	29	18	30	2
8	d		31	19	32	3
9	e		33	20	34	4
10	f		Iosue. 1	21	Iosue. 2	1. Thes. 1
11	g	*Aequinoctium.*	3	22	4	2
12	A	Gregorie.	5	23	6	3
13	b	*Sol in Ariet.*	7	24	8	4
14	c		9	Iohn. 1	10	5
15	d		23	2	24	2. Thes. 1
16	e	Aprilis.	Iudg. 1	3	Iudg. 2	2
17	f		3	4	4	3
18	g	Edwarde.	5	5	6	1. Tim. 1
19	A		7	6	8	2. 3
20	b		9	7	10	4
21	c	Benedict.	11	8	12	5
22	d		13	9	14	6
23	e		15	10	16	2. Tim. 1
24	f	Fast.	17	11	18	2
25	g	*Annun. of Ma.*	Eccle. 2	12	Eccle. 3	3
26	A		Iudg. 19	13	Iudg. 20	4
27	b		21	14	Ruth. 1	Titus. 1
28	c		Ruth. 2	15	3	2. 3
29	d		4	16	1. King. 1	Phile. 1
30	e		1. King. 2	17	3	Hebr. 1
31	f		4	18	5	2

¶ April hath xxx. dayes.

			Morning prayer.		Euening prayer.	
			1. *Leſſon.*	2. *Leſſon.*	1. *Leſſon.*	2. *Leſſon.*
1	g		1. King. 6	Iohn. 19.	1. king. 7.	Heb. 3.
2	A		8	20	9	4
3	b	Richarde.	10	21	11	5
4	c	Ambroſe.	12	Act. 1.	13	6
5	d		14	2	15	7
6	e		16	3	17	8
7	f		18	4	19	9
8	g		20	5	21	10
9	A		22	6	23	11
10	b		24	7	25	12
11	c		26	8	27	13
12	d	*Sol in Tauro.*	28	9	29	Iames. 1.
13	e		30	10	31	2
14	f	Maii.	2. King. 1	11	2. king. 2.	3
15	g		3	12	4	4
16	A		5	13	6	5
17	b		7	14	8	1. Pet. 1.
18	c		9	15	10	2
19	d	Alphege.	11	16	12	3
20	e		13	17	14	4
21	f		15	18	16	5
22	g		17	19	18	2. Pet. 1.
23	A	S. George.	19	20	20	2
24	b		21	21	22	3
25	c	*Marke Euan.*	Eccle. 4	22	Eccle. 5.	1. Iohn. 1.
26	d		2. King. 23	23	2. kin. 24.	2
27	e		3. King. 1.	24	3. king. 2.	3
28	f		3	25	4	4
29	g		5	26	6	5
30	A		7	27	8	2. 3. Iohn.

¶ May hath xxxi. dayes.

			Morning prayer.		Euening prayer.	
			1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*	1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*
1	b	*Phil. & Iacob.*	Eccle. 7.	Actes. 8.	Eccle. 9.	Iudas. 1
2	c		3. king. 9.	28	3. kin. 10.	Rom. 1.
3.	d	Inuention of	11	Matth. 1.	12	2
4	e	the crosse.	13	2	14	3
5	f		15	3	16	4
6	g	Iohn Euang.	17	4	18	5
7	A		19	5	20	6
8	b		21	6	22	7
9	c		4. king. 1.	7	4. king. 2.	8
10	d		3	8	4	9
11	e		5	9	6	10
12	f	*Sol. in Gem.*	7	10	8	11
13	g		9	11	10	12
14	A		11	12	12	13
15	b		13	13	14	14
16	c	Iunii	15	14	16	15
17	d		17	15	18	16
18	e		19	16	20	1. Cor. 1.
19	f	Dunstane.	21	17	22	2
20	g		23	18	24	3
21	A		25	19	1. Esd. 1.	4
22	b		1. Esd. 3.	20	4	5
23	c		5	21	6	6
24	d		7	22	9	7
25	e		2. Esd. 1.	23	2. Esd. 2.	8
26	f	Augustine.	4	24	5	9
27	g		6	25	8	10
28	A		9	26	10	11
29	b		13	27	Hester. 2	12
30	c		Hest. 2.	28	3	13
31	d		4	Marke. 1.	5	14

¶ Iune hath xxx. dayes.

			Morning prayer.		Euening prayer.	
			1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*	1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*
1	e		Heſt. 6.	Marke. 2.	Heſter. 7	1. Cor. 15
2	f		8	3	9	16
3	g	Nichomede.	Iob. 1.	4	Iob. 2.	2. Cor. 1
4	A		3	5	4	2
5	b	Boniface.	5	6	6	3
6	c		7	7	8	4
7	d		9	8	10	5
8	e		11	9	12	6
9	f		13	10	14	7
10	g		15	11	16	8
11	A	Barnabe Apo.	Eccl. 10.	Act. 14.	Eccl. 12.	Act. 15.
12	b	[illegible]	Io. 17, 18	Mar. 12.	Iob. 19.	2. Cor. 9
13	c	[illegible]	20	13	21	10
14	d	Vitus.	22	14	23	11
15	e		24. 25	15	26. 27.	12
16	f		28	16	29	13
17	g		30	Luke. 1.	31	Galat. 1
18	A		32	2	33	2
19	b		34	3	35	3
20	c	Edwarde.	36	4	37	4
21	d		38	5	39	5
22	e		40	6	41	6
23	f	[illegible]	42	7	Prou. 1.	Ephe. 1
24	g	*Iohn Baptiſt.*	Mal. 3.	Mat. 3.	Mal. 4.	Mat. 14
25	A		Prou. 2.	Luke. 8.	Prou. 3.	Ephe. 2
26	b		4	9	5	3
27	c		6	10	7	4
28	d	[illegible]	8	11	9	5
29	e	[illegible]	Eccl. 15.	Act. 3.	Eccl. 19.	Act. 4.
30	f		Prou. 10.	Luke. 12.	Prou. 11.	Ephe. 6.

¶ Iuly hath xxxi. dayes.

			Morning prayer.		Euening prayer.	
			1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*	1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson*
1	g	Visita. Mary.	Prou. 12.	Luke. 13	Prou. 13.	Phil. 1.
2	A		14	14	15	2
3	b	Martin.	16	15	17	3
4	c		18	16	19	4
5	d		20	17	21	Colos. 1.
6	e	Dog daies.	22	18	23	2
7	f		24	19	25	3
8	g		26	20	27	4
9	A		28	21	29	1. Thes. 1
10	b		31	22	Eccle. 1.	2
11	c		Eccle. 2.	23	3	3
12	d	*Sol in Leo.*	4	24	5	4
13	e		6	Iohn. 1.	7	5
14	f		8	2	9	2. Thes. 1
15	g	Swithune.	10	3	11	2
16	A	Augusti.	12	4	Iere. 1.	3
17	b		Iere. 2.	5	3	1. Tim. 1.
18	c		4	6	5	2. 3.
19	d		6	7	7	4
20	e	Margaret.	8	8	9	5
21	f		10	9	11	6
22	g	Magdalen.	12	10	13	2. Tim. 1.
23	A		14	11	15	2
24	b	Fast.	16	12	17	3
25	c	*Iames Apost.*	Eccl. 11.	13	Eccle. 23	4
26	d	Anne.	Iere. 18.	14	Iere. 19.	Titus. 1.
27	e		20	15	21	2. 3.
28	f		22	16	23	Phile. 1.
29	g		24	17	25	Heb. 1.
30	A		26	18	27	2
31	b		28	19	29	3

¶ August hath xxxi. dayes.

			Morning prayer.		Euening prayer.	
			1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*	1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson*
1	c	Lammas.	Iere. 30.	Iohn. 20.	Iere. 31.	Heb. 4.
2	d		32	21	33	5
3	e		34	Actes. 1.	35	6
4	f		36	2	37	7
5	g		38	3	39	8
6	A	Transfigurat.	40	4	41	9
7	b	Name of Ies.	42	5	43	10
8	c		44	6	45. 46.	11
9	d		47	7	48	12
10	e	Laurence.	49	8	50	13
11	f		51	9	52	Iames. 1.
12	g	*Sol in Virgi.*	Lamen. 1	10	Lamen. 2	2
13	A		3	11	4	3
14	b	Septembris.	5	12	Ezech. 2.	4
15	c		Ezech. 3.	13	6	5
16	d		7	14	13	1. Pet. 1.
17	e		14	15	18	2
18	f		33	16	34	3
19	g		Dan. 1.	17	Dan. 2.	4
20	A		3	18	4	5
21	b		5	19	6	2. Pet. 1.
22	c		7	20	8	2
23	d	Fast.	9	21	10	3
24	e	*Barthol. Apo.*	Eccl. 25.	22	Eccle. 29	1. Iohn. 1
25	f		Dan. 11.	23	Dan. 12	2
26	g		13	24	14	3
27	A		Osee. 1.	25	Osee. 2. 3	4
28	b	Augustine.	4	26	5. 6.	5
29	c	Behea. of Ioh.	7	27	8	2. 3. Iohn
30	d		9	28	10	Iude.
31	e		11	Matth. 1.	12	Rom. 1.

¶ September hath xxx. dayes.

			Morning prayer.		Euening prayer.	
			1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*	1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*
1	f	Gyles.	Osee. 13.	Matth. 2.	Ose. 14.	Rom. 2.
2	g		Ioel 1.	3	Ioel. 2.	3
3	A		3	4	Amos. 1.	4
4	b		Amos 2.	5	3	5
5	c	Dog dais end	4	6	5	6
6	d		6	7	7	7
7	e		8	8	9	8
8	f	Nati. of Ma.	Abdi. 1.	9	Ionas 1.	9
9	g		Iona. 2. 3	10	4	10
10	A		Mich. 1.	11	Mich. 2.	11
11	b		3	12	4	12
12	c	*Sol in Libra.*	5	13	6	13
13	d		7	14	Naum. 1.	14
14	e	Holy crosse.	Naum. 2.	15	3	15
15	f	*Aequinoct.*	Abac. 1.	16	Abac. 2	16
16	g	*Autumnale.*	3	17	Soph. 1.	1. Cor. 1.
17	A		Soph. 2.	18	3	2
18	b		Agge. 1.	19	Agge. 2.	3
19	c		Zacha. 1	20	Zac. 2. 3.	4
20	d	Fast.	4. 5.	21	6	5
21	e	*S. Matthewe.*	Eccl. 35.	22	Eccle. 38	6
22	f		Zach. 7.	23	Zach. 8.	7
23	g		9	24	10	8
24	A		11	25	12	9
25	b		13	26	14	10
26	c	Ciprian.	Mala. 1.	27	Mala. 2.	11
27	d		3	28	4	12
28	e		Tobi. 1.	Mark. 1.	Tobi. 2.	13
29	f	*S. Michael.*	Eccle. 39	2	Eccle. 44	14
30	g	Hierome.	Tobi. 3.	3	Tobi. 4	15



¶ October hath xxxi. dayes.

			Morning prayer.		Euening prayer.	
			1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*	1. *Lesson.*	2. *Lesson.*
1	A	Remige.	Tobi. 5.	Mar. 4.	Tobi. 6.	1 Cor. 16
2	b		7	5	8	2. Cor. 1.
3	c		9	6	10	2
4	d		11	7	12	3
5	e		13	8	14	4
6	f	Fayth.	Iudit. 1.	9	Iudit. 2.	5
7	g		3	10	4	6
8	A		5	11	6	7
9	b	Dennis.	7	12	8	8
10	c		9	13	10	9
11	d		11	14	12	10
12	e	*Sol in Scorp.*	13	15	14	11
13	f	Edwarde.	15	16	16	12
14	g		Wisd. 1.	Luk. d. 1.	Wisd. 2.	13
15	A		3	di. 1.	4	Galat. 1
16	b	Nouembris.	5	2	6	2
17	c	Etheldrede.	7	3	8	3
18	d	*Luke Euang.*	Eccle. 51	4	Iob. 1.	4
19	e		Wisd. 9	5	Wisd. 10	5
20	f		11	6	12	6
21	g		13	7	14	Ephe. 1.
22	A		15	8	16	2
23	b		17	9	18	3
24	c		19	10	Eccle. 1.	4
25	d	Crispine.	Eccle. 2	11	3	5
26	e		4	12	5	6
27	f	Fast.	6	13	7	Phil. 1.
28	g	*Simon & Iude*	Io. 24. 25	14	Iob. 42.	2
29	A		Eccle. 8	15	Eccle. 9.	3
30	b		10	16	11	4
31	c	Fast.	12	17	13	Coloss. 1

¶ Nouember hath xxx. dayes.

			Morning prayer. 1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.	Euening prayer. 1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.
1	d	*All Saintes.*	Wisd. 3	he. 11. 12	Wisd. 5.	Apo. 19.
2	e		Eccle. 14	Luke 18.	Eccle. 15	Colos. 2.
3	f		16	19	17	3
4	g		18	20	19	4
5	A		20	21	21	1. Thes. 1
6	b	Leonarde.	22	22	23	2
7	c		24	23	25	3
8	d		27	24	28	4
9	e		29	Iohn 1.	30	5
10	f		31	2	32	2. Thes. 1
11	g	S. Martin.	33	3	34	2
12	A	*Solm Sagit.*	35	4	36	3
13	b	Brice.	37	5	38	1. Tim. 1.
14	c	Decembris.	39	6	40	2. 3
15	d	Machute.	41	7	42	4
16	e		43	8	44	5
17	f	*Elizabeth began her raigne*	45	9	46	6
18	g		47	10	48	2. Tim. 1.
19	A		49	11	50	2
20	b	Edmund king	51	12	Baruc. 1.	3
21	c		Baruc. 2.	13	3	4
22	d	Cicelie.	4	14	5	Titus. 1
23	e	Clement.	6	15	Esai 1.	2. 3.
24	f		Esai. 2.	16	3	Phile. 1
25	g	Katherine.	4	17	5	Hebre. 1.
26	A		6	18	7	2
27	b		8	19	9	3
28	c		10	20	11	4
29	d	Fast.	13	21	13	5
30	e	*Andrew Apo.*	Pro. 20.	Actes 1.	Pro. 21.	6

¶ December hath xxxi. dayes.

			Morning prayer. 1. Lesson.	2. Lesson.	Euening prayer. 1. Lesson.	2. Lesson
1	f		Esai. 14	Act. 2.	Esa. 15.	Heb. 7.
2	g		16	3	17	8
3	A		18	4	19	9
4	b		20. 21	5	22	10
5	c		23	6	24	11
6	d	Nicholas.	25	dim. 7.	26	12
7	e		27	dim. 7.	28	13
8	f	Concep. Ma.	29	8	30	Iames. 1.
9	g		31	9	32	2
10	A		33	10	34	3
11	b		35	11	36	4
12	c	*Sol in Capri.*	37	12	38	5
13	d	Lucie.	39	13	40	1. Pet. 1.
14	e	Ianuarii.	41	14	42	2
15	f		43	15	44	3
16	g	O sapientia.	45	16	46	4
17	A		47	17	48	5
18	b		49	18	50	2. Pet. 1.
19	c		51	19	52	2
20	d	Fast.	53	20	54	3
21	e	*Thomas apo.*	Pro. 23.	21	Pro. 24.	1. Iohn. 1
22	f		Esai. 55	22	Esa. 56.	2
23	g		57	23	58	3
24	A	Fast.	59	24	60	4
25	b	*Christmas.*	Esai. 9.	Luke 2.	Esai. 7.	Tit. 3.
26	c	*S. Steuen.*	Pro. 28.	Act. 6. 7.	Eccle. 4	Actes 7
27	d	*S. Iohn.*	Eccle. 5.	Apoc. 1.	Eccle. 6.	Apo. 22
28	e	*Innocentes.*	Iere. 31.	Act. 25.	Wisd. 1.	1. Iohn 5
29	f		Esai. 61	26	Esai. 62	2. Iohn.
30	g		63	27	64	3. Iohn.
31	A	Siluester.	65	28	66	Iude

An Almanacke for xxvi. yeeres.

The yeeres of our Lord.	The golden number.	Sund. letter.	Leape yeere.	Aſhwednesday the firſt day of Lent.	Eaſter day.
1578	2	E		February. 12.	Marche. 30.
1579	3	D		March. 4.	April. 19.
1580	4	C	B	February. 17.	3
1581	5	A		8	Marche. 26.
1582	6	G		28	April. 15.
1583	7	F		13	Marche. 31.
1584	8	E	D	March. 3.	April. 19.
1585	9	D		February. 24.	11
1586	10	C		16	3
1587	11	B		March. 1.	16
1588	12	A	F	February. 21.	7
1589	13	G		12	Marche. 30.
1590	14	F		March. 4.	April. 19.
1591	15	E		February. 17.	4
1592	16	D	A	9	Marche. 26.
1593	17	C		28	April. 15.
1594	18	B		13	Marche. 31.
1595	19	A		March. 5.	April. 20.
1596	1	G	C	February. 25.	11
1597	2	F		9	Marche. 27.
1598	3	E		March. 1.	April. 16.
1599	4	D		February. 21.	8
1600	5	C	E	6	Marche. 23.
1601	6	B		25	April. 12.
1602	7	A		17	4
1603	8	G		March. 9.	24

THE ORDER OF THE BOOKES OF THE *Newe Teſtament, the number of their Chapters, and the leafe in which eche booke begimneth.*

The Goſpel written by Matthewe		
Chapters	28	Leafe. 1
By Marke	16	35
By Luke	24	56
By Iohn	21	93
The Actes of the Apoſtles	28	120

THE EPISTLES.

Paul to the Romanes	16	155
The firſt to the Corinthians	16	169
The ſecond to the Corinthians	13	183
To the Galatians	6	193
To the Epheſians	6	197
To the Philippians	4	201
To the Coloſſians	4	205
The firſt to the Theſſalonians	5	208
The ſecond to the Theſſaloniãs	3	211
The firſt to Timothie	6	213
The ſecond to Timothie	4	217
To Titus	3	220
To Philemon	one	221
The Epiſtle to the Hebrewes	13	222
The Epiſtle of Iames	5	233
The firſt Epiſtle of Peter	5	236
The ſecond of Peter	3	240
The firſt Epiſtle of Iohn	5	243
The ſecond of Iohn	one	246
The third of Iohn	one	247
The Epiſtle of Iude	one	247
The Reuelation of Iohn	22	248

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORding to S. Matthewe.

CHAP. I.

That Iesus is that Messias, the Saviour promised to the fathers. The nativitie of Christ.

THE * booke of the generation of Iesus Christ the sonne of Dauid, the sonne of Abraham. *Luke 3. 23.*

* Abraham begate Isaac. * And Isaac begate Iacob. And * Iacob begate Iudas and his brethren. *Gene.21. 2. Gen.25. 24. Gene.29.35*

And Iudas begate Phares, and Zara. And * Phares begate Esrom. And Esrom begate Aram. *Gene.38. 27 1.Chro.2. 5. ruth.4.18, 19.*

Aram begate Aminadab. And Aminadab begate Naasson. And Naasson begate Salmon.

Salmon begate Booz of Rachab. And * Booz begate Obed of Ruth. And Obed begate Iesse. *Ruth.4. 21.*

And * Iesse begate Dauid the King. And * Dauid the King begate Salomon of her that was *the wife* of Vrias. *1.Sam.16. 1.& 17.12.*

And * Salomon begate Roboam. And Roboam begate Abia. And Abia begate Asa. *2.Sam. 12. 24.*

And Asa begate Iosaphat. And Iosaphat begate Ioram. And Ioram begate Ozias. *1.King. 11. 43. 1.chro.3*

And Ozias begate Ioatham. And Ioatham begate Achaz. And Achaz begate Ezechias. *10, 11.*

And * Ezechias begate Manasses. And Manasses begate Amon. And Amon begate Iosias. *2.King.20. 21. & 21.*

And * Iosias begate Iakim. And Iakim begate Iechonias and his brethren about the time they were caried to Babylon. *18.1.chro.3 13, 14.*

And after they were caried away into Babylon, * Iechonias begate Salathiel. And * Salathiel begate Zorobabel. *2.King.23. 34.and 24. 1,6. 2.chro.36.4,9.*

And Zorobabel begate Abiud. And Abiud begate Eliacim. And Eliacim begate Azor. *1.Chro.3.16 1.Chro.3.17*

And Azor begate Sadoc. And Sadoc begate Achim. And Achim begate Eliud. *esra.3.2. and 5.2.*

And Eliud begate Eleazar. And Eleazar begate Matthan. And Matthan begate Iacob.

16 And Iacob begate Ioseph the husband of Marie, of whom was borne IESVS, that is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid, *are* fourteene generations. And from Dauid vntill they were caried away into Babylon, fourteene generations: and after they were caried away into Babylon vntill [illegible] fourteene generations.

18 ¶ Nowe the birth of IESVS C[illegible] thus.
Luke 1. 27. When as his mother Marie was *betro[illegible]ph, before they came together, she was found [illegible] of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Ioseph her husband bei[illegible]an, and
Deut. 24. 1. willing to *make her a publike example, was minded to put her away secretly.

20 But whiles he thought these thinges, beholde, the Angel of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, [illegible] Ioseph ỹ sonne of Dauid, feare not to take Marie [illegible] for that which is conceiued in her, is of the holy Ghost.

Luke 1. 31. 21 And she shal bring forth a sonne, and thou shalt *ca-
Act. 4. 12. his name IESVS: for he shall *saue his people from their sinnes.

22 And all this was done that it might be fulfilled which is spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying,

Esa. 7. 14. 23 *Beholde, a virgine shalbe with childe, and she beare a sonne, & they shall call his name Emmanuel, which is by interpretation, God with vs.

24 ¶ Then Ioseph, being rayſed from sleepe, did [illegible] Angel of the Lord had inioyned him, and tooke his [illegible]

25 But he knewe her not, till she had brought foorth her first borne sonne, and he called his name IESVS.

CHAP. II.

The Wisemen, who are the first fruites of the Gentiles, worship Christ. 14 Ioseph fleeth into Egypt with Iesus and his mother. 16 Herod slayeth the children.

[illegible] WHen* IESVS then was borne at Beth-leem in Iudea in the dayes of Herod the King, beholde, there came Wisemen from the East to Hierusalem,

2 Saying, Where is that king of the Iewes that is borne? for we haue seene his starre in the East, and are come to worship him.

3 When king Herod heard *this*, he was troubled, and all Hierusalem with him.

4 And

4 And gathering together all the chiefe Priests and Scribes of the people, he asked of them, where Christ should be borne.

5 And they said vnto him, At Beth-leem in Iudea: for so it is written by the Prophet,

6 *And thou Beth-leem in the land of Iuda, art not the least among the Princes of Iuda: for out of thee shall come the gouernour that shal feede that my people Israel. *Micah.5.2. Iohn 7.42.

7 Then Herod priuily called the Wisemen, *and* diligently inquired of them the time of the starre that appeared,

8 And sent them to Beth-leem, saying, Goe, and search diligently for the babe: & when ye haue found him, bring me worde againe, that I may come also, and worship him.

9 ¶ So when they had heard the king, they departed: and loe, the starre which they had seene in the East, went before them, til it came and stood ouer *the place* where the babe was.

10 And when they sawe the starre, they reioyced with exceeding great ioy,

11 And went into the house, and founde the babe with Marie his mother, and fell downe, and worshipped him, and opened their treasures, and presented vnto him giftes, *euen* golde, and frankincense, and myrrhe.

12 And after they were warned of God in a dreame, that they shoulde not goe againe to Herod, they returned into their countrey another way.

13 ¶ After their departure, beholde, the Angel of the Lord appeareth to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise, & take the babe and his mother, and flie into Egypt, and be there till I bring thee worde: for Herod will seeke the babe, to destroy him.

14 So he arose and tooke the babe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt,

15 And was there vnto the death of Herod, that that might be fulfilled, which is spoken of the Lord by the *Prophet, saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my Sonne. *Hose.11.1.

16 ¶ Then Herod, seeing that he was mocked of the Wisemen, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slewe all the male children that were in Beth-leem, and in all the coastes thereof, from two yere old & vnder, according to ỹ time which he had diligently searched out of ỹ Wisemen.

17 Then was that fulfilled which is spoken by the Prophet Ieremias, saying,

Iere.31.15. 18 *In Rhama was a voyce heard, mourning, and weeping, and great howling: Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they were not.

19 And when Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of the Lord appeareth in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the babe & his mother, and goe into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the babes life.

21 Then he arose vp and tooke the babe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iudea in stead of his father Herod, he was afraide to goe thither: yet after he was warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the partes of Galile,

23 And went & dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophetes which was, That he should be called a Nazarite.

CHAP. III.

1 Iohn preacheth. 4 His apparel and meate. 5 He baptizeth. 8 The fruites of repentance. 10 The axe at the roote of the tree. 12 The fanne and the chaffe. 13 Christe is baptized.

Mark.1.4. luke.3.3. AND * in those dayes, Iohn the Baptist came & preached in the wildernes of Iudea,

2 And sayde, Repent: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

3 For this is he of whome it is spoken by the Prophet Esaias, saying, * The voyce of him that cryeth in the wildernes, Prepare ye the waye of the Lorde: make his pathes straight.

Esai.40.3. mark.1.3. luke 3.4. iohn 1.23.

4 *And this Iohn had his garment of camels heare, and a girdle of a skinne about his loynes: his meate was also locusts and wilde hony.

Mark.1.6.

5 *Then went out to him Hierusalem & all Iudea, and all the region round about Iordan,

Mark.1.5. luke.3.7.

6 And they were baptized of him in Iordan, confessing their sinnes.

7 Nowe when he saw many of the Pharises, and of the Sadducees come to his baptisme, he said vnto them, * O generations of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flye from the anger to come?

Chap.12.34. Iohn8.39. act.13.26.

8 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy amendmēt of life.

9 And thinke not to say with your selues, * We haue Abraham

Abraham to *our* Father: for I say vnto you, that God is able euen of these stones to rayse vp children vnto Abraham.

10 And nowe also is the axe put to the roote of the trees: * therefore euery tree which bringeth not foorth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire. *Chap.7.19*

11 * In deede I baptize you with water to amendement of life, but he that commeth after me, is mightier then I, whose shoes I am not worthie to beare: he will baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire. *Mark.1.8. luke.3.16. iohn.1.26. acts.1.5.& 2.4.& 8.17. and 19.4.*

12 Which hath his fanne in his hand, and will make cleane his floore, and gather his wheate into his garner, but will burne vp the chaffe with vnquenchable fire.

13 ¶ * Then came Iesus from Galile to Iordan vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him. *Mark.1.9. luke.3.21.*

14 But Iohn earnestly put him backe, saying, I haue neede to be baptized of thee, and commest thou to me?

15 Then Iesus answering, said to him, Let be nowe: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteousnesse. So he suffered him.

16 And Iesus when he was baptized, came straight out of the water. And loe, the heauens were opened vnto him, and *Iohn* sawe the Spirit of God descending like a doue, and lighting vpon him.

17 And loe, a voyce *came* from heauen, saying, * This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased. *Colos.1.13. 2.pet.1.17.*

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Christ is tempted.* 4 *He vanquisheth the Deuil with Scripture.* 11 *The Angels minister vnto him.* 12 *He preacheth repentance, and that himselfe is come.* 18 *The calling of Peter, Andrewe,* 21 *Iames and Iohn.* 23 *He preacheth the Gospel, and healeth the diseased.*

THen * was Iesus led aside of the Spirit into the wildernes, to be tempted of the deuil. *Mark.1.12. luke.4.1.*

2 And when he had fasted fourtie dayes, and fourtie nights, he was afterward hungrie.

3 Then came to him the tempter, and saide, If thou be the Sonne of God, commande that these stones be made bread.

4 But he answering, said, It is writte, * Man shal not liue by bread onely, but by euery worde that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. *Deut.8.3.*

5 Then the deuil tooke him vp into the holy Citie,

and ſet him on a pinacle of the temple,

6 And ſaid vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of GOD,
Pſal.91.11. caſt thy ſelfe downe: for it is written, * that he will giue his Angels charge ouer thee, and with their handes they ſhall lift thee vp, leaſt at any time thou ſhouldeſt daſh thy foote againſt a ſtone.

Deut.6.16. 7 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, It is written againe, * Thou ſhalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

8 Againe the deuil tooke him vp into an exceeding hie mountaine, and ſhewed him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glory of them,

9 And ſaid to him, All theſe will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe, and worſhip me.

10 Then ſaide Ieſus vnto him, Auoyde Satan: for it is
Deut.6.13. written, * Thou ſhalt worſhip the Lorde thy God, and him
and 10.20. onely ſhalt thou ſerue.
Mar.1.13. 11 * Then the deuil left him: and beholde, the Angels
Luke 4.13. came, and miniſtred vnto him.

Mar.1.14. 12 ¶ * And when Ieſus had heard that Iohn was com-
Luke 4.14. mitted to priſon, he returned into Galile:
Iohn 4.43. 13 And leauing Nazareth, went and dwelt in Capernaum, which is vpon the ſea in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim,

14 That it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by Eſaias the Prophet, ſaying,

Eſai.9.1. 15 * The lande of Zabulon, and the lande of Nephthalim *by* the way of the ſea, beyonde Iordan, Galile of the Gentiles:

16 The people which ſate in darknes, ſaw great light: and to them which ſate in the region, & ſhadowe of death, light is riſen vp.

Mar.1.15. 17 * From that time Ieſus began to preach, and to ſay, Amend your liues: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

18 ¶ And Ieſus walking by the ſea of Galile, ſawe two brethren, Simon, which was called Peter, and Andrewe his brother, caſting a net into the ſea (for they were fiſhers.)

Mar.1.16. 19 * And he ſaid vnto them, Folow me, and I wil make
1.cor.1.27. you fiſhers of men.

20 And they ſtraightway leauing ỹ nets, folowed him.

21 And when he was gone forth from thence, he ſaw other two brethren, Iames *the ſonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother in a ſhip with Zebedeus their father, mending their nets, and he called them.

22 And

22 And they without tarying, leauing the ſhip, and their father, folowed him.

23 So Ieſus went about all Galile, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Goſpel of the kingdome, and healing euery ſickneſſe and euery diſeaſe among ỹ people.

24 And his fame ſpred abroade through all Syria: and they brought vnto him all ſicke people, that were taken with diuers diſeaſes and torments, and them that were poſſeſſed with deuils, and thoſe which were lunatike, and thoſe that had the palſie: and he healed them.

25 And there folowed him great multitudes out of Galile, and Decapolis, and Hieruſalem, and Iudea, and from beyond Iordan.

CHAP. V.

1 *Who are bleſſed.* 13 *The Apoſtles are the ſalt and light of the world.* 14 *The citie ſet on an hill.* 15 *The candle.* 16 *Good workes.* 19 *The fulfilling of Chriſtes commandements.* 21 *What killing is.* 23 *Reconciliation is ſet before ſacrifice.* 27 *Adulterie.* 29 *The plucking out of the eye.* 30 *Cutting off of the hand.* 31 *The bill of diuorcement.* 33 *Not to ſweare.* 43 *To loue our enemies.* 48 *Perfitnes.*

AND when he ſawe ỹ multitude, he went vp into a mountaine: and when he was ſet, his diſciples came to him.

2 And he opened his mouth and taught them, ſaying,

3 *Bleſſed *are* the poore in ſpirit, for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. *Luke 6. 20.*

4 *Bleſſed *are* they that mourne: for they ſhalbe comforted. *Eſa. 61. 2, 3. luke 6. 21.*

5 *Bleſſed *are* the meeke: for they ſhall inherite the earth. *Pſal. 37. 11.*

6 *Bleſſed *are* they which hunger and thirſt for righteouſneſſe: for they ſhalbe filled. *Eſa. 65. 13.*

7 Bleſſed *are* the merciſull: for they ſhall obteine mercie.

8 Bleſſed *are* the *pure in heart: for they ſhal ſee God. *Pſal. 24. 4.*

9 Bleſſed *are* the peacemakers: for they ſhalbe called the children of God.

10 Bleſſed *are* they *which ſuffer perſecution for righteouſnes ſake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen. *1. Cor. 14. 33. 1. pet. 3. 14.*

11 *Bleſſed ſhall ye be when men reuile you, and perſecute *you*, and ſay all maner of euill againſt you for my ſake, falſely. *Actes 5. 41. 1. pet. 4. 14.*

12 Reioyce and be glad, for great is your rewarde in

heauen: for ſo perſecuted they the Prophets which were before you.

Mark.9.50. luke.14.34. 13 *Ye are the ſalt of the earth: but if the ſalt haue loſt his ſauour, wherewith ſhall it be ſalted? It is thence foorth good for nothing, but to be caſt out, and to be troden vnder foote of men.

14 Ye are the light of the world. A citie that is ſet on an hill, can not be hid.

Mark.4.21. luke.8.16. and 11.33. 15 *Neither doe men light a candle, and put it vnder a buſhel, but on a candleſticke, and it giueth light vnto all that are in the houſe.

1.Pet.2.12 16 *Let your light ſo ſhine before men, that they may ſee your good workes, and glorifie your Father which is in heauen.

17 Thinke not that I am come to deſtroy the Lawe, or the Prophetes. I am not come to deſtroy them, but to fulfill them.

Luke.16.17. 18 *For truely I ſay vnto you, Tyll heauen, and earth periſh, one iote, or one title of the Law ſhall not ſcape, till all things be fulfilled.

Iames 2.10 19 *Whoſoeuer therefore ſhall breake one of theſe leaſt commandements, and teache men ſo, he ſhalbe called the leaſt in the kingdome of heauen: but whoſoeuer ſhall obſerue and teache *them*, the ſame ſhal be called great in the kingdome of heauen.

Luke 11.39 20 For I ſay vnto you, except your righteouſnes * exceede the *righteouſnes* of the Scribes and Phariſes, ye ſhal not enter into the kingdome of heauen.

21 Ye haue heard that it was ſaide vnto them of the olde time, *Thou ſhalt not kill: for whoſoeuer killeth ſhal *Exod.20.13 deut.5.17.* be culpable of iudgement.

22 But I ſay vnto you, whoſoeuer is angrie with his brother vnaduiſedly, ſhalbe culpable of iudgement. And whoſoeuer ſaith vnto his brother, Raca, ſhalbe worthie to be puniſhed by the Councel. And whoſoeuer ſhal ſay, Foole, ſhalbe worthie to be puniſhed with hell fyre.

23 If then thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remembreſt that thy brother hath ought againſt thee,

24 Leaue there thine offering before the altar, and go thy way: Firſt be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

Luke 12.58. 25 *Agree with thine aduerſarie quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him, leaſt thine aduerſarie deliuer

thee

thee to the iudge,& the iudge deliuer thee to the ſergeant, and thou be caſt into priſon.

26 Verely I ſaye vnto thee, thou ſhalt not come out thence,tyll thou haſt payed the vtmoſt farthing.

27 ¶ Ye haue heard that it was ſayde to them of olde time,* Thou ſhalt not commit adulterie. *Exod.20.14 rom.13.9.*

28 But I ſay vnto you,that whoſoeuer looketh on a woman to luſt after her, hath committed adulterie with her already in his heart.

29 *Wherefore if thy right eye cauſe thee to offend, plucke it out,and caſt it from thee: for better it is for thee, that one of thy members periſh, then that thy whole body ſhould be caſt into hell. *Iha.18.8,9 mar.9.47.*

30 Alſo if thy right hande make thee to offende, cut it off,and caſt it from thee: for better it is for thee that one of thy members periſh, then that thy whole body ſhoulde be caſt into hell.

31 It hath bene ſayd alſo,*Whoſoeuer ſhal put away his wife,let him giue her a bill of diuorcement. *Chap. 19.7. deut.24.1.*

32 But I ſay vnto you,whoſoeuer ſhal put away his wife (except it be for fornication) cauſeth her to commit adulterie: and whoſoeuer ſhal marry her that is diuorced,committeth adulterie. *mar.10.4. luke 16.18. 1.cor.7.10.*

33 Againe,ye haue heard that it was ſayde to them of olde time, *Thou ſhalt not forſweare thy ſelfe, but ſhalt performe thine othes to the Lord. *Exod. 20.7. leuit. 19.12 deut.5.11.*

34 But I ſay vnto you,Sweare not at all,neyther by heauen,for it is the throne of God:

35 Nor yet by the earth: for it is his footeſtoole:neither by Hieruſalem: for it is the citie of the great King.

36 Neyther ſhalt thou ſweare by thine head, becauſe thou canſt not make one heare white or blacke.

37 *But let your communication be Yea,yea:Nay,nay. For whatſoeuer is more then theſe,commeth of euill. *Iam.5.12.*

38 ¶ Ye haue heard that it hath bene ſayd,An* eye for an eye,and a tooth for a tooth. *Exod.21.24 leuit.24.20.*

39 But I ſay vnto you, *Reſiſt not euill: but whoſoeuer ſhall ſmite thee on thy right cheeke,turne to him the other alſo. *deut.19.21. Luk.6.29. rom.12.17. 1.cor.6.7.*

40 And if any man will ſue thee at the law, and take away thy coate,let him haue thy cloke alſo.

41 And whoſoeuer will compell thee to go a mile, goe with him twayne.

42 *Giue

Deut.15.8. 42 * Giue to him that asketh, and from him that would borow of thee, turne not away.

Leuit.19.18 43 Ye haue heard that it hath bene sayde, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour, and hate thine enemie.

Luk.6.27. 44 But I say vnto you, * Loue your enemies: bleſſe them
Luk.23.34. that curſe you: do good to them that hate you, * and praye
act.7.60. for them which hurt you, and perſecute you,

1.cor.4.13. 45 * That ye may be the children of your Father that is
Luk.6.35. in heauen: for he maketh his ſunne to ariſe on the euil, and the good: and ſendeth rayne on the iuſt, and vniuſt.

46 For if ye loue them, which loue you, what rewarde ſhal you haue? Do not the Publicanes euen the ſame?

47 And if ye be friendly to your brethren onely, what ſingular thing do ye? do not euen the Publicanes likewiſe?

48 Ye ſhal therefore be perfite, as your Father which is in heauen, is perfite.

CHAP. VI.

1 Almes. 5 Prayer. 14 Forgiuing our brother. 16 Faſting. 19 Our treaſure. 20 We muſt ſuccour the poore. 24 God and riches. 25 Careful ſeeking for meate and drinke, and apparell, forbidden. 33 The kingdome of God and his righteouſnes.

TAke heede that ye giue not your almes before men, to be ſeene of them, or els ye ſhal haue no reward of your Father which is in heauen.

Rom.12.8. 2 * Therefore when thou giueſt thine almes, thou ſhalt not make a trumpet to be blowen before thee, as the hypocrites do in the Synagogues and in the ſtreetes, to bee prayſed of men. Verely I ſay vnto you, they haue their reward.

3 But whē thou doeſt thine almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth,

4 That thine almes may be in ſecret, & thy Father that ſeeth in ſecret, he wil reward thee openly.

5 And when thou prayeſt, be not as the hypocrites: for they loue to ſtand, and praye in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the ſtreetes, becauſe they would be ſeen of men. Verely I ſay vnto you, they haue their reward.

6 But when thou prayeſt, enter into thy chamber: and when thou haſt ſhut thy doore, pray vnto thy father which is in ſecret, and thy Father which ſeeth in ſecrete, ſhall reward thee openly.

7 Alſo when ye praye, vſe no vayne repetitions as the Heathen

Heathen: for they thinke to be heard for their much babbling.

8 Be ye not like them therfore: For your Father knoweth whereof ye haue neede, before ye aske of him.

9 After this maner therefore praye ye, * Our Father which art in heauen, halowed be thy name. *Luk.11.2.*

10 Thy kingdome come. Thy wil be done euen in earth, as *it is* in heauen.

11 Giue vs this day our dayly bread.

12 And forgiue vs our dettes, as wee also forgiue our detters.

13 And leade vs not into tentation, but deliuer vs * frō euil: for thine is the kingdome, and the power, and the glorie for euer. Amen. *Chap.13.19*

14 *For if ye do forgiue men their trespasses, your heauenly Father wil also forgiue you. *Mar.11.25*

15 But if yee doe nōt forgiue men their trespasses, no more wil your Father forgiue *you* your trespasses.

16 Moreouer, whē ye fast, looke not sowre as the hypocrites: for they disfigure their faces, ỹ they might seeme vnto mē to fast. Verely I say vnto you, ỹ they haue their reward.

17 But when thou fastest, anoynt thine head, and wash thy face,

18 That thou seeme not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, wil reward thee openly.

19 ¶Lay not vp treasures for your selues vpon ỹ earth, where the moth and canker corrupt, and where theeues digge through and steale.

20 *But lay vp treasures for your selues in heauen, where neither the moth nor canker corrupteth, and where theeues neither digge through, nor steale. *Luk.12.33. 1.tim.6.19.*

21 For where your treasure is, there wil your heart be also.

22 ¶* The light of the body is the eye: if then thine eye be single, thy whole body shalbe light. *Luk.11.34.*

23 But if thine eye be wicked, then all thy body shalbe darke. Wherefore if the light that is in thee, be darkenes, how great is that darkenes? *Luk.16.13.*

24 * No man can serue two masters: for either he shall hate the one, and loue the other, or els he shal leane to the one, & despise the other. Ye cannot serue God and riches. *Luk.12.22. phil.4.6. 1.tim.6.8.*

25 *Therefore I say vnto you, be not carefull for your life, *1.pet.5.7. psal.55.23.*

life, what ye shall eate, or what ye shall drinke: nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more worth then meate? and the body then rayment?

26 Behold the foules of the heauen: for they sowe not, neyther reape, nor cary into the barnes: yet your heauenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking care is able to adde one cubite vnto his stature?

28 And why care ye for rayment? Learne howe the Lilies of the fielde do growe: they are not wearyed, neyther spinne:

29 Yet I say vnto you, that euen Solomon in all his glory was not arayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God so clothe the grasse of the fielde which is to day, and to morow is cast into the ouen, shal he not *do* much more vnto you, O ye of litle faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eate? or what shall we drinke? or wherewith shall wee be clothed?

32 (For after all these thinges seeke the Gentiles) for your heauenly Father knoweth, that ye haue neede of all these things.

33 But seeke ye first the kingdome of God, & his righteousnes, and all these things shalbe ministred vnto you.

34 Care not then for the morow: for the morowe shall care for it selfe: the day hath ynough with his owne griefe.

CHAP. VII.

1 *We may not giue iudgement of our neighbour, 6 nor cast that which is holy to dogges. 13 The broad & straight way. 15 False prophets. 18 The tree & fruite. 24 The house built on a rocke, 26 and on the sand.*

IVdge not, that ye be not iudged.

Luk.6.37,38 rom.2.1. 1.cor.4.5. Mar.4.24. luk.6.38.

2 For with what * iudgement ye iudge, ye shalbe iudged, and with what * measure ye mete, it shalbe measured to you againe.

Luk.6.41.

3 And why seest thou the mote, that is in thy brothers eye, and perceiuest not the beame that is in thine own eye?

4 * Or how sayest thou to thy brother, Suffer me to cast out the mote out of thine eye, and beholde, a beame is in thine owne eye?

5 Hypocrite, first cast out that beame out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearely to cast out the mote

out

out of thy brothers eye.

5 ¶Giue ye not that which is holy, to dogges, neyther caſt ye your pearles before ſwine, leſt they treade them vnder their feete, and turning againe, all to rent you.

7 ¶* Aske, and it ſhalbe giuen you: ſeeke, and ye ſhall finde: knocke, and it ſhalbe opened vnto you. *Chap.21.22 mar.11.24.*

8 For whoſoeuer asketh, receyueth: & he that ſeeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it ſhalbe opened. *luk.11.9. ioh.14.13. & 16.23.*

9 For what man is there among you, which if his ſonne aske him bread, would giue him a ſtone? *iam.1.5.*

10 Or if he aske fiſh, wil he giue him a ſerpent?

11 If ye then, which are euill, can giue to your children good giftes, howe much more ſhall your Father which is in heauen, giue good things to them that aske him?

12 *Therefore whatſoeuer ye would that men ſhould do to you, euen ſo do ye to them: for this is the Lawe and the Prophets. *Luk.6.31. tob.4.16.*

13 ¶* Enter in at the ſtreyght gate: for it is the wyde gate, and broad way that leadeth to deſtruction: and many there be which go in thereat, *Luke 13.24.*

14 Becauſe the gate is ſtreight, and the way narowe that leadeth vnto life, and few there be that finde it.

15 ¶Beware of falſe prophetes, which come to you in ſheepes clothing, but inwardly they are rauening wolues.

16 Ye ſhal know them by their fruites. *Do men gather grapes of thornes? or figges of thyſtles? *Luk.6.44.*

17 So euery good tree bringeth forth good fruite, *and* a corrupt tree bringeth forth euill fruite.

18 A good tree can not bring forth euil fruite: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruite.

19 * Euery tree that bringeth not forth good fruite, is hewen downe, and caſt into the fire. *Chap.3.10.*

20 Therefore by their fruites ye ſhal know them.

21 ¶Not euery one that ſayth vnto me, Lord, Lord, ſhal enter into the kingdome of heauen, *but he that doeth my Fathers will which is in heauen. *Rom.2.13.*

22 *Many wil ſay to me in that day, Lord, Lord, haue we not by thy Name propheciedand by thy Name caſt out deuils? and by thy Name done many great workes? *Jam.1.22.*

23 And then wil I profeſſe to them, * I neuer knew you: depart from me, ye that worke iniquitie. *Luk.13.27. *Pſal.6.8.*

24 Whoſoeuer then heareth of me theſe words, * and doeth the ſame, I will liken him to a wiſe man, which hath *Luk.6.47.*

builded

builded his house on a rocke:

25 And the rayne fell, and the floods came, and the windes blewe, and beat vpon that house, and it fell not: for it was grounded on a rocke.

26 But whosoeuer heareth these my wordes, & doeth them not, shall be likened vnto a foolish man, which hath buylded his house vpon the sande:

27 And the raine fel, and the floods came, & the windes blewe, and beat vpon that house, and it fell, and the fall thereof was great.

*Mar.*1.22. *Luke*4.32. 28 ¶ *And it came to passe, whē Iesus had ended these wordes, the people were astonyed at his doctrine.

29 For he taught them as one hauing authoritie, & not as the Scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

1 The Leper cleansed. 5 The Centurions faith. 11 The calling of the Gentiles, 12 and casting out of the Iewes. 14 Peters mother in lawe healed. 19 A Scribe desirous to followe Christ. 23 The tempest on the sea. 28 Two possessed with deuilles cured. 32 The deuilles goe into Swine.

NOwe when he was come downe from the mountaine, great multitudes followed him.

*Mar.*1.40. *Luke.*5.12. 2 *And lo, there came a Leper and worshipped him, saying, Master, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

3 And Iesus putting forth his hand, touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane: and immediatly his leprosie was clensed.

4 Then Iesus sayde vnto him, See thou tell no man, but go, & shewe thy selfe vnto the Priest, and offer the gift that

*Leuit.*14.3,4 *Moses commanded, for a witnes to them.

Luke 7.1. 5 ¶ *When Iesus was entred into Capernaum, there came vnto him a Centurion, beseeching him,

6 And sayd, Master, my seruant lyeth sicke at home of the palsie, and is grieuously payned.

7 And Iesus sayd vnto him, I will come and heale him.

8 But the Centurion answered, saying, Master, I am not worthie that thou shouldest come vnder my roofe: but speake the word onely, and my seruant shalbe healed.

9 For I am a man also vnder the authoritie *of another*, and haue souldiers vnder me: and I say to one, Goe, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he commeth: and to my seruant, Do this, and he doeth it.

10 When

10 When Ieſus heard *that*, he marueiled and ſayde to them that followed *him*, Verely, I ſaye vnto you, I haue not found ſo great faith, euen in Iſrael.

11 But I ſaye vnto you, that many ſhall come from the Eaſt and Weſt, and ſhal ſit downe with Abraham, and Iſaac, and Iacob, in the kingdome of heauen.

12 And the children of the kingdome ſhall be caſt out into vtter *darknes: there ſhalbe weeping and gnaſhing of teeth. *Chap.22.13*

13 Then Ieſus ſayd vnto the Centurion, Go thy way, & as thou haſt beleeued, ſo be it vnto thee. And his ſeruant was healed the ſame houre.

14 ¶* And when Ieſus came to Peters houſe, he ſawe his wiues mother layed downe, and ſicke of a feuer. *Mar.1.29. luke 4.38.*

15 And he touched her hande, and the feuer left her: ſo ſhe aroſe, and miniſtred vnto them.

16 *When the euen was come, they brought vnto him many that were poſſeſſed with deuils: and he caſt out the ſpirits with *his* worde, and healed all that were ſicke, *Mar.1.32. luke 4.40.*

17 That it might be fulfilled, which was ſpoken by *Eſaias the Prophet, ſaying, He tooke our infirmities, & bare *our* ſickneſſes. *Eſa.53.4. 1.pet. 2.24.*

18 ¶* And when Ieſus ſaw great multitudes of people about him, he commanded them to go ouer *the water*. *Luk.9.57,58*

19 Thē came there a certaine Scribe, & ſaid vnto him, Maſter, I wil follow thee whither ſoeuer thou goeſt.

20 But Ieſus ſayd vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birds of the heauen haue neſtes, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to reſt his head.

21 ¶And another of his diſciples ſayd vnto him, Maſter, ſuffer me firſt to go, and bury my father.

22 But Ieſus ſayd vnto him, Followe mee, and let the dead burie their dead.

23 ¶*And when he was entred into the ſhip, his diſciples folowed him. *Mar.4.37. luk.8.23.*

24 And behold, there aroſe a great tempeſt in the ſea, ſo that ye ſhip was couered with waues: but he was a ſleepe.

25 Then his diſciples came, and awoke him, ſaying, Maſter, ſaue vs: we periſh.

26 And he ſayd vnto them, Why are ye fearefull, O ye of litle faith? Then he aroſe, & rebuked the windes and the ſea: and *ſo* there was a great calme.

27 And the men marueyled, ſaying, What man is this, that

that both the windes and the sea obey him?

*Mar.*5.1,2. *Luk.*8.26,27 28 ¶ * And when he was come to the other side into the countrey of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with deuils, which came out of the graues very fierce, so that no man might go by that way.

29 And behold, they cryed out, saying, Iesus the Sonne of God, what haue we to doe with thee? Art thou come hither to torment vs before the time?

30 Nowe there was a farre off from them, a great heard of swine feeding.

31 And the deuils besought him, saying, If thou cast vs out, suffer vs to go into the heard of swine.

32 And he sayd vnto them, Go. So they went out & departed into the heard of swine: & behold, the whole heard of swine ranne headlong into the sea, & dyed in the water.

33 Then the heardmen fled: and when they were come into the citie, they told all things, and what was become of them that were possessed with the deuils.

34 And beholde, all the citie came out, to meete Iesus: and when they saw him, they besought him to depart out of their coastes.

CHAP. IX.

1 One sicke of the palsie is healed. 5 Remission of sinnes. 9 Matthew called. 10 Sinners. 17 New wine. 18 The rulers daughter raised. 20 A woman healed of a bloodie issue. 28 Two blinde men by faith receiue sight. 32 A dumme man possessed is healed. 37 The harueſt and workemen.

THen he entred into a ship, and passed ouer, and came into his owne citie.

*Mar.*2.3. *Luk.*5.18. 2 And * lo, they brought to him a man sicke of the palsie, layd on a bed. And Iesus seeing their faith, sayde to the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, be of good comfort: thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

3 And behold, certaine of the Scribes sayd with themselues, This man blasphemeth.

4 But when Iesus saw their thoughts, he sayd, Wherefore thinke ye euill things in your hearts?

5 For whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiuē thee, or to say, Arise, and walke?

6 And that ye may knowe that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (then sayd he vnto the sicke of ỹ palsie,) Arise, take vp thy bed, & go to thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his owne house.

8 So when the multitude sawe it, they marueyled, and glorified God, which had giuen such authoritie to men.

9 ¶ * And as Iesus passed foorth from thence, he sawe a man sitting at the custome, named Matthewe, and sayd to him, Followe me. And he arose, and followed him. *Mark.2.14. luke 5.27.*

10 And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at meate in *his* house, behold, many Publicanes and sinners, that came *thither*, sate downe at the table with Iesus and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharises sawe that, they saide to his disciples, Why eateth your master with Publicanes and sinners?

12 Nowe when Iesus heard it, he said vnto them, The whole neede not a Physicion, but they that are sicke.

13 But go ye and learne what this is, * I will haue mercie, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but the * sinners to repentance. *Hose.6.6. chap.12.7. 1.Tim.1.15.*

14 ¶ * Then came the disciples of Iohn to him, saying, Why doe wee and the Pharises fast oft, and thy disciples fast not? *Mark.2.18. luke 5.33.*

15 And Iesus saide vnto them, Can the children of the mariage chamber mourne as long as the bridegrome is with them? But the dayes will come when the bridegrome shalbe taken from them, and then shal they fast.

16 Moreouer, no man pieceth an olde garment with a piece of newe cloth: for that that shoulde fill it vp, taketh away from the garment, and the breache is worse.

17 Neither do they put newe wine into olde vessels: for then the vessels would breake, & the wine would be spilt, and the vessels should perish: but they put newe wine into newe vessels, and *so* are both preserued.

18 ¶ * While he thus spake vnto them, beholde, there came a certaine ruler, & worshipped him, saying, My daughter is nowe deceassed, but come and lay thine hand on her, and she shall liue. *Mark. 5.22. luke 8.41.*

19 And Iesus arose and folowed him with his disciples.

20 (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an yssue of blood twelue yeres, came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment.

21 For she said in her selfe, If I may touche but his garment onely, I shalbe whole.

22 Then Iesus turned him about, & seeing her, did say, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole. And ỹ woman was made whole at ỹ same moment.)

23 Nowe when Iesus came into the rulers house, and sawe the minstrels and the multitude making noyse,

24 He said vnto them, Get you hence: for the mayde is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.

25 And when the multitude were put forth, he went in and tooke her by the hand, and the maide arose.

26 And this bruite went throughout all that land.

27 And as Iesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, O sonne of Danid, haue mercy vpon vs.

28 And when hee was come into the house, the blinde came to him, and Iesus said vnto them, Beleeue ye that I am able to do this? And they said vnto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched hee their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it vnto you.

30 And their eyes were opened, and Iesus gane them great charge, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But when they were departed, they spred abroade his fame throughout all that land.

Luke 11. 14 32 ¶ * And as they went out, beholde, they brought to him a dumme man possessed with a deuil.

33 And when the deuil was cast out, the dumme spake: then the multitude marueyled, saying, The like was neuer seene in Israel.

Chr. 12. 24. *mark.* 3. 22. *luke* 11. 15. 34 But ȳ Pharises said, * He casteth out deuils, through the prince of deuils.

Marke 6. 6. *luke* 13. 22. 35 ¶ And * Iesus went about all cities and townes, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sickenes and euery disease among the people.

Marke 6. 34. 36 But * when he sawe the multitude, he had compassion vpon them, because they were dispersed, and scattered abroade, as sheepe hauing no shepheard.

Luke 10. 2. *Iob.* 4. 35, 36. 37 Then said he to his disciples, * Surely the harueste is great, but the labourers *are* fewe.

38 Wherefore pray the Lord of the haruest that hee would sende foorth labourers into his haruest.

CHAP. X.

1 *The gift of healing giuen to the Apostles.* 5 *They are sent to preach the Gospel.* 13 *Peace.* 14 *Shaking off the dust.* 16 *Affliction.* 22 *Continuance vnto the ende.* 23 *Flying from persecution.* 28 *Feare.* 29 *Two sparowes.* 30 *Heares of*

our

our head. 32 To acknowledge Christ. 34 Peace and the sword. 35 Variance. 37 Loue of parents. 38 The crosse. 39 To lose the life. 40 To receiue a preacher.

AND * he called his twelue disciples vnto him, and gaue them power against vncleane spirites, to cast them out, and to heale euery sicknes, and euery disease. *Mark.3.13. 14, 15. luke 9.1,2.*

2 Now the names of the twelue Apostles are these. The first *is* Simon, called Peter, and Andrewe his brother: Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother:

3 Philippe and Bartlemewe: Thomas, and Matthewe that Publicane: Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Lebbeus whose surname was Thaddeus:

4 Simon the Cananite, and Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelue did Iesus sende foorth, and commanded them, saying, Goe not into the way of the Gentiles, and into the cities of the Samaritans enter ye not:

6 But goe rather * to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel. *Acts.13.46*

7 * And as ye goe, preache, saying, The kingdome of heauen is at hand. *Luke 10. 9, 11.*

8 Heale the sicke: clense the lepers: rayse vp the dead: cast out the deuils. Freely ye haue receyued, freely giue.

9 * Possesse not golde, nor siluer, nor money in your girdels, *Mar.6.8, 9. luke 9.3.*

10 Nor a scrippe for the iourney, neither two coates, neither shoes, nor a staffe: * for the workeman is worthie of his meate. *and 22.35. 1.Tim.5.15.*

11 And into * whatsoeuer citie or towne ye shal come, enquire who is worthie in it, and there abide till ye goe thence. *Luke 10. 8.*

12 And when ye come into an house, salute the same.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace returne to you.

14 * And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor heare your words, when ye depart out of that house, or that citie, * shake off the dust of your feete. *Mark.6.11. luke 9.5. Act.13.51.*

15 Truely I say vnto you, it shalbe easier for them of the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of iudgement, then for that citie.

16 ¶ * Beholde, I sende you as sheepe in the middes of *Luke 10.3.*

the wolues: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and innocent as doues.

17 But beware of men, for they will deliuer you vp to the Councils, and will scourge you in their Synagogues.

18 And ye shal be brought to the gouernours and kings for my sake, in witnes to them, and to the Gentiles.

Mar. 13. 11. *Luke* 12. 11. 19 *But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought how or what ye shall speake: for it shalbe giuen you in that houre, what ye shall say.

20 For it is not ye that speake, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

Luke 21. 16. 21 And the *brother shal betray the brother to death, and the father the sonne, and the children shall rise against *their* parents, and shall cause them to die.

Mar. 13. 13. 22 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my Name: * but he that endureth to the ende, he shalbe saued.

23 And when they persecute you in this citie, flie into another: for verely I say vnto you, ye shal not go ouer *all* the cities of Israel, till the Sonne of man be come.

Luke 6. 40. *John* 13. 16. *and* 15. 20. 24 *The disciple is not aboue his master, nor the seruant aboue his Lord.

Chap. 12. 24. 25 It is ynough for the disciple to be as his master is, and the seruant as his Lord.* If they haue called the master of the house Beelzebub, howe much more them of his housholde?

Mark 4. 22. *Luke* 8. 17. *and* 12. 2. 26 Feare them not therefore: * for there is nothing couered, that shall not be discloſed, nor hid, that shall not be knowen.

27 What I tel you in darknes, that speake ye in light: & what ye heare in the eare, that preach ye on the houses.

28 And feare ye not them which kill the body, but are not able to kil the soule: but rather feare him, which is able to destroy both soule and body in hell.

29 Are not two sparowes solde for a farthing, and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your father?

1. *Sam.* 14. 45. 30 *Yea, and all the heares of your head are nombred.

2. *Sam.* 14. 11. 31 Feare ye not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparowes.

acts 27. 34. *Mar.* 8. 38. *luke* 9. 26. *and* 12. 8. 2. *Tim.* 2. 12. 32 *Whosoeuer therefore shall confesse me before men, him will I confesse also before my Father which is in heauen.

33 But whosoeuer shall denie me before men, him will I also denie before my Father which is in heauen.

34 *Think

34 *Thinke not that I am come to ſend peace into the earth: I came not to ſend peace, but the ſworde. *Luke 12.51.*

35 For I am come to ſet a man at variance againſt his father, and the daughter againſt her mother, and the daughter in lawe againſt her mother in lawe.

36 *And a mans enemies *ſhalbe* they of his owne houſholde. *Micah. 7.6.*

37 *He that loueth father or mother more then me, is not worthie of me. And he that loueth ſonne, or daughter more then me, is not worthie of me. *Luke 14.26.*

38 *And he that taketh not his croſſe, and followeth after me, is not worthie of me. *Chap. 16.24 mar. 8.34.*

39 *He that will finde his life, ſhall loſe it, and he that loſeth his life for my ſake, ſhall finde it. *luke 9.23. and 14.27.*

40 He that receiueth you, receiueth me: and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that hath ſent me. *Iohn 12.25.*

41 *He that receiueth a Prophet in the name of a Prophet, ſhal receiue a Prophets reward: and he that receiueth a righteous man, in the name of a righteous man, ſhall receiue the reward of a righteous man. *Luke 10.16. Iohn 13.20.*

42 *And whoſoeuer ſhall giue vnto one of theſe litle ones to drinke a cup of colde water onely, in the name of a diſciple, verely I ſay vnto you, he ſhall not loſe his reward. *Mar. 9.41.*

CHAP. XI.

2 Iohn ſendeth his diſciples to Chriſt. 7 Chriſtes teſtimonie of Iohn. 13 The Lawe and the Prophets. 18 Chriſt and Iohn. 21 Chorazin, Bethſaida. 25 The Goſpel reueiled to children. 28 They that are wearie and laden.

AND it came to paſſe that when Ieſus had made an ende of commanding his twelue diſciples, he departed thence to teache and to preache in their cities.

2 ¶ *And when Iohn heard in the priſon the workes of Chriſt, he ſent two of his diſciples, and ſaid vnto him, *Luke 7.18.*

3 Art thou he that ſhould come, or ſhall we looke for another?

4 And Ieſus anſwering, ſaid vnto them, Goe, and ſhewe Iohn, what things ye heare, and ſee.

5 The blinde receiue ſight, and the halt do walke: the lepers are clenſed, and the deafe heare: the dead are raiſed vp, *and the poore receiue the Goſpell. *Eſa. 61.1.*

6 And bleſſed is he that ſhall not be offended in me. *luke 4.18.*

7 And as they departed, Ieſus began to ſpeake vnto the

multitude, of Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernes to see? A reede shaken with the winde?

8 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that weare soft clothing, are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out to see? A Prophet? yea, I say vnto you, and more then a Prophet.

Malac.3.1. Luke7.28. 10 For this is he of whom it is written, *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verely I say vnto you, among them which are begotten of women, arose there not a greater then Iohn Baptist; notwithstanding, he that is the least in the kingdome of heauen, is greater then he.

Luke16.16. 12 And from* the time of Iohn Baptist hitherto, the kingdome of heauen suffreth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the Prophetes and the Lawe prophecied vnto Iohn.

Malac.4.5. 14 And if ye will receiue it, this is that* Elias, which was to come.

15 ¶ He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

Luke7.31. 16 *But whereunto shall I liken this generation? it is like vnto litle children which sit in the markets, and call vnto their fellowes,

17 And saye, Wee haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not daunced, we haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not lamented.

18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a deuil.

19 The Sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Beholde a glutton and a drinker of wine, a friend vnto Publicanes and sinners: but wisdome is iustified of hir children.

Luke 10.13. 20 ¶* Then began hee to vpbraide the cities, wherein most of his great workes were done, because they repented not.

21 Wo *be* to thee, Chorazin: Wo *be* to thee, Bethsaida: for if the great workes, which were done in you, had bene done in Tyrus and Sidon, they had repented long agone in sackecloth and ashes.

22 But I say to you, It shalbe easier for Tyrus and Sidon at the day of iudgement, then for you.

23 And

23 And thou, Capernaum, which art lifted vp vnto heauen, shalt be brought down to hel: for if the great workes, which haue bene done in thee, had bene done among them of Sodom, they had remained to this day.

24 But I say vnto you, that it shalbe easier for them of the land of Sodom in the day of iudgement, then for thee.

25 * At that time Iesus answered, and saide, I giue thee thankes, O Father, Lorde of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these thinges from the wise and men of vnderstanding, and hast opened them vnto babes. *Luke* 10. 21

26 It is so, O Father; because thy good pleasure was such.

27 * All thinges are giuen vnto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Sonne, but the Father: neither knoweth any man the Father, but the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reueile *him*. *Iohn* 3. 35. *Iohn* 6. 46.

28 Come vnto me, all ye that are wearie and laden, and I will ease you.

29 Take my yoke on you, and learne of mee that I am meeke and lowlie in heart: and ye shall finde * rest vnto your soules. *Iere.* 6. 16.

30 * For my yoke is easie, and my burden light. 1. *Ioh.* 5. 3.

CHAP. XII.

1 *The disciples plucke the eares of corne.* 6 *Mercie, Sacrifice.* 10 *The withered hand is healed.* 12 *We must do good on the Sabbath.* 22 *The possessed is holpen.* 25 *A kingdome deuided.* 31 *Sinne, blasphemie.* 33 *The good or euill tree.* 34 *Vipers.* 41 *The Ninenites.* 42 *The Queene of Saba.* 48 *The true mother and brethren of Christ.*

AT * that time Iesus went on a Sabbath day through the corne, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to plucke the eares of corne and to eate. *Mark.* 2. 23. *Luke* 6. 1.

2 And when the Pharises sawe it, they saide vnto him, Beholde, thy disciples doe that * which is not lawfull to do vpon the Sabbath. *Deut.* 23. 25.

3 But he saide vnto them, * Haue ye not read what Dauid did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him? 1. *Sam.* 21. 6

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eat the shew bread, which was not lawfull for him to eate, neither for them which were with him, but onely for the * Priestes? *Exod.* 29. 33

5 Or haue ye not read in the Lawe, howe that on the *Iesus* 8. 51. *and* 24. 9.

Num. 28.9. Sabbath dayes the Prieſtes in the Temple * breake the Sabbath, and are blameles?

6 But I ſay vnto you, that here is one greater then the Temple.

Hoſe.6.7. 7 Wherefore if ye knew what this is, *I will haue mer-
chap.9.13. cie, and not ſacrifice, ye would not haue condemned the innocents.

8 For the Sonne of man is Lord, *euen* of the Sabbath.

Mark.3.1. 9 * And hee departed thence, and went into their Sy-
Luke 6.6. nagogue:

10 And beholde, there was a man which had *his* hande dried vp. And they asked him, ſaying, Is it lawfull to heale vpon a Sabbath day? that they might accuſe him.

11 And he ſaid vnto them, What man ſhall there be among you, that hath a ſheepe, and if it fall on a Sabbath day into a pit, doeth not take it and lift it out?

12 How much more then is a man better then a ſheepe? therefore, it is lawfull to doe well on a Sabbath day.

13 Then ſaid he to the man, Stretch foorth thine hand. And hee ſtretched it foorth, and it was made whole as the other.

14 Then the Phariſes went out, and conſulted againſt him, how they might deſtroy him.

15 But when Ieſus knewe it, hee departed thence, and great multitudes folowed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them in threatning wiſe, that they ſhould not make him knowen,

17 That it might be fulfilled, which was ſpoken by Eſaias the Prophet, ſaying,

Eſai.42.1. 18 * Beholde my ſeruant whom I haue choſen, my beloued in whom my ſoule deliteth: I wil put my Spirit on him, and he ſhall ſhewe iudgement to the Gentiles.

19 Hee ſhall not ſtriue, nor crie, neither ſhall any man heare his voyce in the ſtreetes:

20 A bruiſed reed ſhal he not breake, and ſmoking flaxe ſhal he not quench, till he bring forth iudgemēt vnto victory.

21 And in his Name ſhall the Gentiles truſt.

Luke 11.14. 22 ¶ * Then was brought to him, one poſſeſſed with a deuil, *both* blinde and dumme, and he healed him, ſo that he *which was* bliude and dumme, both ſpake and ſawe.

Chap.9.34. 23 And all the people were amaſed, and ſaid, Is not this
Mark.3.22. that ſonne of Dauid?

Luke 11.15. 24 But when the Phariſes heard it, they ſaide, * This man

man casteth the deuils no otherwise out, but through Beelzebub the prince of deuils.

25 But Iesus knew their thoughts, and sayde to them, Euery kingdome deuided against it selfe, is brought to nought: and euery citie or house, deuided against it selfe, shal not stande.

26 So if Satan cast out Satan, he is deuided against him selfe: howe shal then his kingdome endure?

27 Also if I through Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whom doe your children cast them out? Therefore they shalbe your iudges.

28 But if I cast out deuils by the Spirit of God, then is the kingdome of God come vnto you.

29 Els howe can a man enter into a strong mans house and spoyle his goods, except he first binde the strong man, and then spoyle his house?

30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

31 *Wherefore I say vnto you, Euery sinne and blasphemie shalbe forgiuen vnto men: but the blasphemie *against* the holy Ghost shal not be forgiuen vnto men. *Mar.* 3. 28. 29. *luke* 12. 10. 1. *Ioh.* 5. 16.

32 And whosoeuer shall speake a worde agaynst the Sonne of man, it shalbe forgiuen him: but whosoeuer shal speake against the holy Ghost, it shal not be forgiuen him, neither in this world nor in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruite good: or els make the tree euill, and his fruite euil: for the tree is knowne by the fruite.

34 O generations of vipers, how can you speake good things, when ye are euil? For of the * abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. *Luke* 6. 45.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good things: and an euil man out of an euil treasure, bringeth forth euil things.

36 But I say vnto you, that of euery idle worde that men shall speake, they shall giue account thereof at the day of iudgement.

37 For by thy wordes thou shalt be iustified, and by thy wordes thou shalt be condemned.

38 ¶ *Then answered certaine of the Scribes & of the Pharises, saying, Master, we would see a signe of thee. *Chap.* 16. 1. *luke* 11. 29.

39 But he answered and sayd to them, An euil and adulterous generation seeketh a signe, but no signe shall be 1. *cor.* 1. 22.

giuen

giuen vnto it, saue that signe of the Prophet Ionas.

Ionas 1.17. 40 *For as Ionas was three dayes, and three nightes in the whales bellie: so shall the Sonne of man be three dayes and three nightes in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Niniue shal rise in iudgement with this *Ionas* 3.5. generation, and condemne it: for they * repented at the preaching of Ionas: and behold, a greater then Ionas * here.

1. *King.* 10.1. 42 * The Queene of the South shall rise in iudgement
2. *chro.* 9.1. with this generation, and shal condemne it: for she came from the vtmost partes of the earth to heare the wisdome of Solomon: and behold, a greater then Solomon * here.

Luke 11.24. 43 ¶ *Now when the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh throughout drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

44 Then he saith, I wil returne into mine house from whence I came: and when he is come, he findeth it emptie, swept and garnished.

45 ¶ Then he goeth, and taketh vnto him seuen other spirits worse then him selfe, and they enter in, and dwell there: * and the ende of that man is worse then the beginning. Euen so shal it be with this wicked generation.

Heb. 6.4. *and* 10.26. 2. *pet.* 2.20. *Mar.* 3.31. *luke* 8.20. 46 ¶ *While he yet spake to the multitude, behold, his mother, and his brethren stood without, desiring to speake with him.

47 Then one said vnto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without desiring to speake with thee.

48 But he answered, and sayd to him that tolde him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and sayd, Behold my mother and my brethren.

50 For whosoeuer shal doe my Fathers will which is in heauen, the same is my brother and sister and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The parable of the Sower. 11 and 34 Why Christ spake in parables. 18 The exposition of the parable. 24 The parable of the tares. 31 Of the mustard seede. 33 Of the leauen. 44 Of the hidden treasure. 45 Of the Pearle. 47 Of the drawe net cast into the sea. 53 Christ is not receiued of his countreymen the Nazarites.

Mark 4.1. *luke* 8.4,5. THe * same day went Iesus out of the house, and sate by the sea side.

2 And great multitudes resorted vnto him, so that he went

went into a ship, and sate downe: and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 Then he spake many things to them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sowe.

4 And as he sowed, some fel by the way side, and the foules came and deuoured them vp.

5 And some fell vpon stonie ground, where they had not much earth, and anon they sprong vp, because they had no depth of earth.

6 And when the sunne was vp, they were parched, and for lacke of rooting, wythered away.

7 And some fel among thornes, & the thornes sprong vp, and choked them.

8 Some againe fel in good ground, and brought foorth fruite, one *corne* an hundred folde, some sixtie folde, and another thirtie folde.

9 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 ¶ Then the disciples came, and sayd to him, Why speakest thou to them in parables?

11 And he answered and sayd vnto them, Because it is giuen vnto you, to knowe the secrets of the kingdome of heauen, but to them it is not giuen.

12 *For whosoeuer hath, to him shalbe giuen, and he shal haue abundance: but whosoeuer hath not, from him shalbe taken away, euen that he hath. *Chap.25.29.*

13 Therefore speake I to them in parables, because they seeing, doe not see: and hearing, they heare not, neither vnderstand.

14 So in them is fulfilled the Prophecie of Esaias, which *prophecie* saith, *By hearing ye shall heare, and shal not vnderstand, and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceiue. *Esai.6.9. mark.4.12.*

15 For this peoples heart is waxed fatte, & their eares are dull of hearing, and with their eyes they haue winked, least they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and should vnderstand with their hearts, and should returne, that I might heale them. *luke 8.10. iohn 12.40. actes.28.26. rom.11.8.*

16 But blessed *are* your eyes, for they see: and your eares, for they heare.

17 *For verely I say vnto you, that many Prophets, and righteous men haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene *them*, and to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard *them*. *Luke 10.24.*

18 ¶*Heare ye therefore the parable of the sower. *Mark.4.15.*

19 When. *luke 8.11.*

19 Whensoeuer any man heareth the worde of th
kingdome,& vnderstandeth it not, that euill one comme
and catcheth away that which was sowen in his heart: a
this is he which hath receiued the seede by the way side.

20 And he that receiued seede in the stonie ground,
he which heareth the worde, and incontinently with
receiueth it,

21 Yet hath he no roote in him selfe, and dureth bu
season: for assoone as tribulation or persecution comme
because of the worde, by and by he is offended.

22 And he that receiued the seede among thornes,
he that heareth the worde: but the care of this world, a
the deceitfulnes of riches choke the word, and he is m
vnfruitfull.

23 But he that receiued the seede in the good grou
is he that heareth the worde, and vnderstandeth it, whi
also beareth fruite, and bringeth forth, some an hundre
folde, some sixtie folde, and some thirtie folde.

24 ¶ An other parable put he forth vnto them, sayin
The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a man which sow
good seede in his field.

25 But while men slept, there came his enemie, a
sowed tares among the wheate, and went his way.

26 And when the blade was sprong vp, and broug
forth fruite, then appeared the tares also.

27 Then came the seruants of the housholder, and sa
vnto him, Master, sowedst not thou good seede in thy fie
from whence then hath it tares?

28 And he sayd to them, Some enuious man hath do
this. Then the seruants sayd vnto him, Wilt thou then th
we go and gather them vp?

29 But he sayd, Nay, lest while ye goe about to gath
the tares, ye plucke vp also with them the wheate.

30 Let both growe together vntil the haruest, and
time of haruest I wil say to the reapers, Gather ye first th
tares, and binde them in sheaues to burne them: but g
ther the wheate into my barne.

Mar. 4. 30. *luke 13. 19.* 31 ¶ *Another parable he put forth vnto them, sayin
The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a graine of mustar
seede, which a man taketh and soweth in his field:

32 Which in dede is the least of al seeds: but when it
growen, it is the greatest among herbes, & it is a tree, so th
the birdes of heauen come & build in the branches there

33 ¶ *Anoth

33 ¶*Another parable ſpake he to them, The king- *Luke 13.21.*
dome of heauen is like vnto leauen, which a woman ta-
keth and hideth in three pecks of meale, til all be leauened.

34 ¶*All theſe things ſpake Ieſus vnto the multitude in *Mar.4.33,*
parables, and without parables ſpake he not to them, *34.*

35 That it might be fulfilled, which was ſpoken by the
prophet, ſaying, *I wil open my mouth in parables, and *Pſal.78.2.*
I wil vtter the things which haue bin kept ſecrete from the
foundation of the world.

36 Then ſent Ieſus the multitude away, and went into
the houſe. And his diſciples came vnto him, ſaying, Declare
vnto vs the parable of the tares of that field.

37 Then anſwered he, and ſayd to them, He that ſoweth
the good ſeede, is the Sonne of man,

38 And the field is the world, and the good ſeede are
the children of the kingdome, and the tares are the chil-
dren of that wicked one.

39 And the enemie that ſoweth them, is the deuil, *and *Ioel.3.13.*
the harueſt is the end of the world, and the reapers be the *Reue.14.15.*
Angels.

40 As then the tares are gathered and burned in the
fire, ſo ſhal it be in the end of this world.

41 The ſonne of man ſhall ſend forth his Angels, & they
ſhall gather out of his kingdome all things that offend, and
them which doe iniquitie,

42 And ſhall caſt them into a furnace of fire. There ſhal
be wailing and gnaſhing of teeth.

43 *Then ſhall the iuſt men ſhine as the ſunne in the *Dan.12.3.*
kingdome of their Father. He that hath eares to heare, let
him heare.

44 ¶Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a
treaſure hid in the field, which when a man hath found, he
hideth it, and for ioy thereof departeth and ſelleth all that
he hath, and byeth that field.

45 ¶Againe the kingdome of heauen is like to a mar-
chant man, that ſeeketh good pearles,

46 Who hauing found a pearle of great price, went
and ſolde all that he had, and bought it.

47 ¶Againe the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a
draw net caſt into the ſea, & gathereth of al kindes *of things.*

48 Which, when it is ful, men draw to land, & ſit and
gather the good into veſſels, and caſt the bad away.

49 So ſhal it be at the end of the worlde. The Angels

ſhall

shall goe forth, and seuer the bad from among the iust,

50 And shal cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wayling, and gnashing of teeth.

51 ¶Iesus sayd vnto them, Vnderstande ye all these things? They sayd vnto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then sayd he vnto them, Therefore euery Scribe which is taught vnto the kingdome of heauen, is like vnto an housholder, which bringeth foorth out of his treasure things both newe and olde.

53 ¶And it came to passe, that when Iesus had ended these parables, he departed thence,

Mark.6.1. *luke 4.16.* 54 *And came into his own countrey, & taught them in their Synagogue, so that they were astonied, & said, Whence commeth this wisdome and great workes vnto this man?

55 Is not this the carpenters sonne? Is not his mother *John 6.42.* called Marie, *and his brethren Iames and Ioses, and Simon and Iudas?

56 And are not his sisters all with vs? Whence then hath he all these things?

57 And they were offended with him. Then Iesus sayd *Mark.6.4.* to them, * A prophet is not without honour, saue in his *luke 4.24.* owne countrey, and in his owne house. *iohn 4.44.*

58 And he did not many great workes there, for their vnbeliefes sake.

CHAP. XIIII.

2 Herods iudgement of Christ. 3 Wherefore Iohn was bound, 10 and beheaded. 13 Iesus departeth. 18 Of the fiue loaues, &c. 23 Christ prayeth. 24 The Apostles tossed with the waues. 27 Fayth. 30 Peter in ieopardie. 36 The hemme of Christes garment.

Mar.6.14. *luke 9.7.* AT * that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Iesus,

2 And sayd vnto his seruants, This is that Iohn Baptist, he is risen againe from the dead, & therefore great workes are wrought by him.

Mar.6.17. *luke 3.19.* 3 * For Herod had taken Iohn, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philippes wife.

Leui.18.16. *& 20.21.* 4 For Iohn sayd vnto him, It is not * lawfull for thee to haue her.

5 And when he would haue put him to death, he fea- *Chap.21.26.* red the multitude, because they counted him as a * Prophet.

6 But when Herods birth day was kept, the daughter of Herodias daunced before them, and pleased Herod.

7 Wherefore

7 Wherefore he promiſed with an oth, that he would giue her whatſoeuer ſhe would aske.

8 And ſhe being before inſtructed of her mother, ſaid, Giue me here Iohn Baptiſts head in a platter.

9 And the king was ſorie: neuertheleſſe becauſe of the othe, and them that ſate with him at the table, he commanded it to be giuen *her*,

10 And ſent, and beheaded Iohn in the priſon.

11 And his head was brought in a platter, and giuen to the mayd, and ſhe brought it vnto her mother.

12 And his diſciples came, and tooke vp the body, and buryed it, and went and tolde Ieſus.

13 *And when Ieſus heard it, he departed thence by ſhip into a deſert place apart. And when the multitude had heard it, they followed him on foote out of the cities. *Mark. 6.32. luke 9.10.*

14 And Ieſus ſawe a great multitude, and was moued toward them, and he healed their ſicke.

15 ¶And when euen was come, *his diſciples came to him, ſaying, This is a deſert place, and the time is already paſt: let the multitude depart, that they may goe into the townes, and buy them vitailes. *Mar. 6.35. luke 9.12. iohn 6.5.*

16 But Ieſus ſayd to them, They haue no neede to goe away: giue ye them to eate.

17 Then ſayd they vnto him, We haue here but fiue loaues, and two fiſhes.

18 And he ſayd, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he commanded the multitude to ſit downe on the graſſe, and tooke the fiue loaues and the two fiſhes, and looked vp to heauen and bleſſed, and brake, and gaue the loaues to his diſciples, and the diſciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eate, & were ſufficed, & they tooke vp of the fragments that remained, twelue baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thouſand men, beſide women and little children.

22 ¶And ſtraightway Ieſus compelled his diſciples to enter into a ſhip, and to goe ouer before him, while he ſent the multitude away.

23 And aſſoone as he had ſent the multitude away, he went vp into a mountaine alone to pray: * and when the euening was come, he was there alone. *Mar. 6.45, 46, 47. iohn 6.16, 17, 18.*

24 And the ſhip was now in the middes of the ſea, and was toſſed with waues: for it was a contrarie winde.

25 And

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Iesus went vnto them, walking on the sea.

26 And when his disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit, and cryed out for feare.

27 But straightway Iesus spake vnto them, saying, Be of good comfort, It is I: be not afrayd.

28 Then Peter answered him, and sayd, Master, if it be thou, bid me come vnto thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Iesus.

30 But when he sawe a mighty [illegible] he was afrayd, and as he began to sinke, he cryed, saying, Lord, saue me.

31 So immediatly Iesus stretched [illegible] and caught him, and sayd to him, [illegible] Wherefore diddest thou doubt?

32 And assone as they were [illegible] ship, the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a trueth thou art the Sonne of God.

Mar.6.54. 34 ¶* And when they were come ouer, they came into the land of Gennezaret.

35 And when the men of that place knew him, they sent out into all that countrey round about, and brought vnto him all that were sicke,

36 And besought him, that they might touche the hemme of his garment onely: and as many as touched it were made whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 The commandements and traditions of men. 12 Offence. 13 The plant which is rooted vp. 14 Blinde leading the blinde. 18 The heart. 22 The woman of Chanane. 26 The childrens bread: whelpes. 28 Fayth. 32 4000 men fed. 36 Thankes giuing.

THen came to Iesus the Scribes and Pharises, which were of Hierusalem, saying,

Mar.7.1. 2 * Why doe thy disciples transgresse the traditions
Exod.20.12. of the Elders? for they wash not their handes when they
Deut.5.16. eate bread.
Ephes.6.2. 3 But he answered and sayd vnto them, Why doe ye al-
Exo.21.17. so transgresse the commandement of God by your traditions?
Leuit.20.9. 4 * For God hath commanded, saying, Honour thy
Prou.20.20. father and mother: * and he that curseth father or mo-

ther,

...let him dye the death.

But ye say, Whosoeuer shal say to father or mother, ...gift that is *offered* by me, thou maiest haue profite, ... Though he honour not his father, or his mother, *shal-* ...yes thus haue ye made the commandement of God of ...thoritie by your tradition.

O hypocrites, Esaias prophecied well of you, saying,

* This people draweth nere vnto me with their ...th, and honoureth me with the lippes, but their heart ...re off from me. *Esai* 29.13.

But in vaine they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines, ...n precepts.

Then he called the multitude vnto him, and sayd to ...them, Heare and vnderstand.

* That which goeth into the mouth, defileth not ...e man, but that which commeth out of the mouth, that ...defileth the man. *Mark.*7.18.

Then came his disciples, and said vnto him, Perceiuest thou not, that the Phariſes are offended in hearing ...this saying?

But he answered and said, * Euery plant which mine ...heauenly Father hath not planted, shalbe rooted vp. *Iohn* 15.2.

Let them alone, they be the * blinde leaders of the ...blinde: and if the blinde leade the blinde, both shall fall in- ...to the ditch. *Luke* 6.39.

Then answered Peter, and said to him, Declare *Mark.*7.17.
vnto vs this parable.

Then said Iesus, Are ye yet without vnderstanding?

Perceiue ye not yet, that whatsoeuer entreth into ỹ ...mouth, goeth into the bellie, & is cast out into ỹ draught?

But those thinges which proceede out of ỹ mouth, ...come from the heart, and they defile the man.

For out of the heart * come euil thoughts, murders, *Gene.*6.5.
...aduleries, fornications, thefts, false testimonies, slanders. *and* 8.21.

These are the things, which defile the man: but to *mark.*7.21.
...eate with vnwashen handes, defileth not the man.

* And Iesus went thence, and departed into the *Mark.*7.24.
...coastes of Tyrus and Sidon. 25.

And behold, a woman a Cananite came out of the ...same coastes, and cryed, saying vnto him, Haue mercie on ...me, O Lord, thou sonne of Dauid: my daughter is miserably ...vexed with a deuil.

But he answered her not a worde. Then came to

him his disciples, and besought him, saying, Send her a
for she cryeth after vs.

24 But he answered, and said, I am not sent, but vn
Chap.10.6. the *lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

25 Yet she came, and worshipped him, saying, Lor
helpe me.

26 And he answered, and sayde, It is not good to ta
the childrens bread, and to cast it to whelpes.

27 But she said, Trueth, Lord: yet in deede the whe
eate of the crummes, which fall from their masters tabl

28 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto her, O wom
great is thy faith: be it to thee, as thou desirest. And h
daughter was made whole at that houre.

Mar.7.31. 29 ¶ So Iesus * went away from thence, & came nea
vnto the sea of Galile, and went vp into a mountaine & s
downe there.

Esai.35.5. 30 And great multitudes came vnto him, *having wi
them, halte, blinde, dumme, maimed and many other, & c
them downe at Iesus feete, and he healed them.

31 In so much that the multitude wondered, to see th
dumme speake, the maimed whole, the halte to go, and t
blinde to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

Mark.8.1. 32 *Then Iesus called his disciples vnto him, and sai
I haue compassion on this multitude, because they ha
continued with me alreadie three dayes, and haue nothi
to eate: and I wil not let them depart fasting, lest they fa
in the way.

33 And his disciples said vnto him, Whence should w
get so much bread in ỹ wildernes, as should suffice so gre
a multitude?

34 And Iesus said vnto them, Howe many loaues ha
ye? And they said, Seuen, and a fewe litle fishes.

35 Then he commanded the multitude to sit dow
on the grounde,

36 And tooke the seuen loaues, & the fishes, and ga
thankes, and brake *them*, and gaue to his disciples, and th
disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eate, and were sufficed: and the
tooke vp of ỹ fragments that remained, seuen baskets ful

38 And they that had eaten, were foure thousand me
beside women, and litle children.

39 Then *Iesus* sent away the multitude, and tooke shi
and came into the partes of Magdala.

CHAP.

The signe of Ionas. 6 The leauen of the Phariſes, 12 for their doctrine. 13 The peoples opinion of Chriſt. 17 Faith commeth of God. 18 The rocke. 19 The keies. 21 Chriſt foreſheweth his death. 24 The forſaking of ones ſelfe, and the croſſe. 25 To loſe the life.

1 THen * came the Phariſes and Sadduces, and did tempt him, deſiring him to ſhewe them a ſigne from heauen. *Chap.12.38. mark. 8. 11.*

2 But he anſwered, and ſaide vnto them, When it is euening ye ſay, Faire wether: for the skie is red.

3 * And in the morning *ye ſay*, To day *ſhalbe* a tempeſt: for the skie is red and lowring. O hypocrites, ye can diſcerne the face of the skie, and can ye not *diſcerne* the ſignes of the times? *Luke 12.54.*

4 * The wicked generation, and adulterous ſeeketh a ſigne, but there ſhall no ſigne be giuen it, but that ſigne of the Prophet * Ionas: ſo he left them, and departed. *Chap.12.39 Ionas 1.17.*

5 ¶ And when his diſciples were come to the other ſide, they had * forgotten to take bread *with them*. *Mar.8. 14.*

6 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Take heede and beware of the leauen of the Phariſes and Sadduces. *Luke 12. 1.*

7 And they reaſoned among them ſelues, ſaying, *It is* becauſe we haue brought no bread.

8 But Ieſus knowing it, ſaid vnto them, O ye of litle faith, why reaſon you *thus* among your ſelues, becauſe ye haue brought no bread?

9 Doe ye not yet perceiue, neither remember the fiue loaues, when there were * fiue thouſand *men*, and how many baskets tooke ye vp? *Chap.14.17 iohn 6.9.*

10 Neither the ſeuen loaues when there were * foure thouſand *men*, and how many baskets tooke ye vp? *Chap.15.34.*

11 Why perceiue ye not that I ſaid not vnto you concerning bread, that ye ſhoulde beware of the leauen of the Phariſes and Sadduces?

12 Then vnderſtood they that he had not ſaide that they ſhoulde beware of the leauen of bread, but of the doctrine of the Phariſes and Sadduces.

13 ¶ * Nowe when Ieſus came into the coaſtes of Cæſarea Philippi, he asked his diſciples, ſaying, Whome doe men ſay that I, the Sonne of man am? *Mark.8. 27. luke 9.18.*

14 And they ſayd, Some *ſay* Iohn Baptiſt: and ſome, Elias: and others, Ieremias, or one of the Prophets.

15 He ſaide vnto them, But whome ſay ye that I am?

Iohn 6.69. 16 Then Simon Peter answered, and said, * Thou
that Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God.

17 And Iesus answered, and said to him, Blessed
thou, Simon, the sonne of Ionas: for flesh and blood h
not reueiled it vnto thee, but my Father which is in hea

Iohn 1.42. 18 And I say also vnto thee, that thou art * Peter, a
vpon this rocke I will builde my Church: and the gates
hell shall not ouercome it.

Iohn 20.21. 19 And I * will giue vnto thee the keyes of the ki
dome of heauen, and whatsoeuer thou shalt binde vp
earth, shalbe bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer thou sh
loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen.

20 Then he charged his disciples, that they shoul
tell no man that he was Iesus that Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth Iesus began to shewe v
his disciples, that he must goe vnto Hierusalem, and su
many things of the Elders, & of the hie Priestes, & Scrib
and be slaine, and be raysed againe the third day.

22 Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebu
him, saying, Master, pitie thy selfe: this shall not be v
thee.

23 Then he turned backe, and sayde vnto Peter, G
thee behinde me, Satan: thou art an offence vnto me, b
cause thou vnderstandest not the thinges that are of Go
but the things that are of men.

Chap.10.38 mar.8.34. luke 9.23. & 14.27. 24 Iesus then said to his disciples, * If any man wil
lowe me, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his cro
and folowe me.

Chap.10.39. mark.8.35, 36. luke 9. 24,25, 26. & 17.33. Iohn 12.25. Psal.62.12. rom.2.6. Mar.9.1. luke.9.27. 25 For, * whosoeuer will saue his life, shall lose it: a
whosoeuer shall lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 * For what shall it profite a man though he shoulde
winne the whole world, if he lose his owne soule? or wha
shall a man giue for recompence of his soule?

27 For the sonne of man shall come in the glory of hi
Father with his Angels, and * then shall he giue to euery
man according to his deedes.

28 * Verely I say vnto you, there be some of them tha
stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue
seene the Sonne of man come in his kingdome.

CHAP. XVII.

3 The transfiguration of Christ. 5 Christ ought to be heard. 11 Elias. 13 Iohn Baptist. 17 The vnbeliefe of the Apo-
stles.

Plut. 20 The power of faith. 21 Prayer and fasting. 22 Christ foretelleth his passion. 24 He payeth tribute.

AND * after sixe dayes, Iesus tooke Peter, and Iames, and Iohn his brother, & brought them vp into an hie mountaine apart, *Mark.9.2. luke 9.28.*

2 And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the Sunne, and his clothes were as white as the light.

3 And beholde, there appeared vnto them Moses, and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: if thou wilt, let vs make here three tabernacles, one for thee, & one for Moses, & one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, beholde, a bright cloude shadowed them: and beholde, there *came* a voyce out of the cloude, saying, * This is that my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased: heare him. *Chap.3.17. 2.pet.1.17.*

6 And when the disciples heard that, they fell on their faces, and were sore afraid.

7 Then Iesus came and touched them, and sayd, Arise, and be not afrayd.

8 And when they lifted vp their eyes, they sawe no man, saue Iesus onely.

9 ¶ And as they came downe from the mountaine, Iesus charged them, saying, Shew the vision to no man, vntill the Sonne of man rise againe from the dead.

10 * And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the Scribes that * Elias must first come? *Mark.9.11, 12.*

11 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Certeinely Elias must first come, and restore all thinges. *Malac.4.5. chap.11.14.*

12 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come already, and they knewe him not, but haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would: likewise shal also ỹ Sonne of man suffer of thē.

13 Then the disciples perceiued that he spake vnto them of Iohn Baptist.

14 ¶ * And when they were come to ỹ multitude, there came to him a certaine man, and fell downe at his feete, *Mark.9.14. luke 9.38.*

15 And sayd, Master, haue pitie of my sonne: for he is lunatike, and is sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft times into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, & they coulde not heale him.

17 Then Iesus answered, and said, O generation faithlesse,

Ieſſe, and crooked, how long now ſhall I be with you? how long now ſhall I ſuffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Ieſus rebuked the deuill: and he went out of him: and the childe was healed at that houre.

19 Then came the diſciples to Ieſus apart, and ſayd, Why could not we caſt him out?

20 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Becauſe of your vnbeliefe: *Luke 17. 6.* for *verely I ſay vnto you, if ye haue faith *as much* as a graine of muſtard ſeede, ye ſhall ſay vnto this mountaine, Remoue hence to yonder place, and it ſhall remoue: and nothing ſhalbe vnpoſsible vnto you.

21 How be it this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and faſting.

Chap. 20. 17 22 ¶ And they *being in Galile, Ieſus ſaid vnto them, *mar. 9. 31.* The Sonne of man ſhalbe deliuered into ȳ hands of men, *luke 9 44.* 23 And they ſhall kill him, but the third day ſhall he *and 7. 24.* riſe againe: and they were very ſorie.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that receiued polle money came to Peter, and ſayde, Doeth not your Maſter pay polle money?

25 He ſaid, Yes. And when he was come into ȳ houſe, Ieſus preuented him, ſaying, What thinkeſt thou, Simon? Of whom doe the kings of the earth take tribute, or polle money? of their children, or of ſtrangers?

26 Peter ſayd vnto him, Of ſtrangers. Then ſaide Ieſus vnto him, Then are the children free.

27 Neuertheleſſe, leaſt we ſhould offend them, goe to the ſea, and caſt in an angle, and take the firſt fiſh that commeth vp, and when thou haſt opened his mouth, thou ſhalt finde a piece of twentie pence: that take, and giue it vnto them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 *The greateſt in the kingdome of God.* 5 *To receiue a litle childe.* 6 *To giue offence.* 7 *Offences.* 9 *The pulling out of the eye.* 10 *The Angels.* 12 *The loſt ſheepe.* 15 *The telling of one his fault.* 17 *Excommunication.* 21 *We muſt alwayes pardon the brother that repenteth.* 23 *The parable of the king that taketh an account of his ſeruants.*

Mark. 9. 34. *luke. 9. 46.* THe *ſame time the diſciples came vnto Ieſus, ſaying, Who is the greateſt in the kingdome of heauen?

2 And Ieſus called a litle childe vnto him, and ſet him *Chap. 19. 14* in the middes of them,

1. cor. 14. 20 3 And ſaide, Verely I ſay vnto you, except ye be *conuerted,*

verted, and become as litle children, ye shall not enter into the kingdome of heauen.

4 Whosoeuer therefore shall humble himselfe as this litle childe, ỹ same is the greatest in ỹ kingdome of heauē.

5 And whosoeuer shall receiue one such litle childe in my Name, receiueth me.

6 * But whosoeuer shall offende one of these litle ones which beleeue in me, it were better for him, that a millstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. *Mark.9.42. luke 17.2.*

7 Wo *be* vnto the worlde because of offences: for it must needes be that offences shall come, but wo *be* to that man, by whom the offence commeth.

8 * Wherefore, if thine hand or thy foote cause thee to offend, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life, halt, or maimed, then hauing two hands, or two feete, to be cast into euerlasting fire. *Chap.5.29, 30. marke 9.45.*

9 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, then hauing two eies to be cast into hell fire.

10 See that ye despise not one of these litle ones: for I say vnto you, that in heauen their * Angels alwaies behold the face of my Father which is in heauen. *Psal.34.8.*

11 For * the Sonne of man is come to saue that which was lost. *Luk.19.10.*

12 How thinke ye? * If a man haue an hundreth sheepe, and one of them be gone astray, doeth he not leaue ninetie and nine, and goe into the mountaines, & seeke that which is gone astray? *Luke 15.4.*

13 And if so be that he finde it, verely I say vnto you, he reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninetie and nine which went not astray:

14 So is it not the will of your Father which is in heauen, that one of these litle ones should perish.

15 ¶ * Moreouer, if thy brother trespasse against thee, goe and tell him his faute betweene thee and him alone: if he heare thee, thou hast wonne thy brother. *Leui.19.17. luke 17.3. iames 5.19.*

16 But if he heare thee not, take yet with thee one or two, that by the * mouth of two or three witnesses euery worde may be confirmed. *Deut.19.15 iohn 8.17.*

17 And if he refuse to heare them, tell it vnto the Church: and if he refuse to heare the Church also, let him be vnto thee as an heathen man, and a Publicane. *2.cor.13.1. heb.10.28.*

1.Cor.5.4. 2.thes.3.14. Iohn 20.23. 18 Verely I say vnto you, * Whatsoeuer ye binde on earth, shalbe bounde in heauen: and * whatsoeuer ye loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen.

19 Againe, verely I say vnto you, that if two of you shall agree in earth vpon any thing, whatsoeuer they shal desire, it shalbe giuen them of my Father which is in heauen.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the middes of them.

21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Master, howe oft shall my brother sinne against me, and I shall forgiue him? Luke.17.4. * vnto seuen times?

22 Iesus saide vnto him, I say not to thee, vnto seuen times, but vnto seuentie times seuen times.

23 Therefore is ỹ kingdome of heauen likened vnto a certaine king, which would take an account of his seruãts.

24 And whē he had begun to recken, one was brought vnto him, which ought him ten thousand talents.

25 And because he had nothing to pay, his Lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and *his* children, and all that he had, and *the dette* to be payed.

26 The seruant therefore fell downe, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, refraine thine anger toward me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then that seruants Lorde had compassion, and loosed him, and forgaue him the dette.

28 But when the seruant was departed, he founde one of his fellow seruants, which ought him an hũdred pence, and he laied handes on him, and thratled him, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 Then his fellow seruant fell downe at his feete, and besought him, saying, Refraine thine anger towardes me, and I wil pay thee all.

30 Yet he woulde not, but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the dette.

31 And when his *other* fellowe seruants saw what was done, they were very sory, and came, and declared vnto their Lord all that was done.

32 Then his Lorde called him vnto him, and saide to him, O euill seruant, I forgaue thee all that dette, because thou prayedst me.

33 Oughtest not thou also to haue had pitie on thy fellow seruant, euen as I had pitie on thee?

34 So his Lorde was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentours,

tormentours, till he should pay all that was due to him.

35 So likewise shal mine heauenly Father do vnto you, except ye forgiue from your hearts, eche one to his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

The sicke are healed. 3 and 7 A bill of diuorcement. 12 Eunuches. 13 Children brought to Christ. 17 God onely good. The commandements must be kept. 21 A perfect man. 23 A rich man. 26 Saluation commeth of God. 27 To leaue all and follow Christ.

AND *it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galile, & came into the coasts of Iudea beyond Iordan. *Mark.10.1*

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ Then came vnto him the Pharises tempting him, & saying to him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife vpon euery occasion?

4 And he answered and sayde vnto them, Haue ye not read, *that he which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female, *Gen.1.27.*

5 And sayd,* For this cause, shal a man leaue father and mother, and cleaue vnto his wife, and they which were two shalbe one flesh? *Gen.2.24. 1.cor.6.16. ephes.5.31.*

6 Wherefore they are no more twayne, but one flesh. Let not mā therfore put asunder that, which God hath coupled together.

7 They sayd to him, Why did then *Moses commande to giue a bill of diuorcement, and to put her away? *Deut.24.1.*

8 He sayd vnto them, Moses, because of the hardnes of your heart, suffered you to put away your wiues: but from the beginning it was not so.

9 I say therefore vnto you,* that whosoeuer shal put away his wife, except *it be* for whoredome, & mary another, committeth adulterie: and whosoeuer marrieth her which is diuorced, doeth commit adulterie. *Chap.5.32. mar.10.11. luke 16.18. 1.cor.7.11.*

10 *Then* sayde his disciples to him, If the matter be so betweene man and wife, it is not good to marrie.

11 But he sayd vnto them, All men cannot receiue this thing, saue they to whom it is giuen.

12 For there are some ennuches, which were so borne of *their* mothers bellie: and there be some ennuches, which be gelded by men: & there be some ennuches, which haue gelded

gelded themselues for the kingdome of heauen. He that is able to receiue *this*, let him receiue it.

*Mar.*10.13. *luk.*18.15. *chap.*18.3. 13 ¶ * Then were brought to him litle children, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Iesus sayde, Suffer the litle children, and forbid them not to come to me: for of such is the kingdome of heauen.

15 And when he had put his hands on them, he departed thence.

*Mar.*10.17 *luk.*18.18. 16 ¶ * And behold, one came and said vnto him, Good Master, what good thing shal I do, that I may haue eternall life?

17 And he said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, euē God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe the commandements.

*Exod.*20.13 *deut.*5.16. *rom.*13.9. 18 He saide to him, Which? And Iesus saide, * Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt not commit aduulterie: Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare false witnesse.

19 Honour thy father and mother: and thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

20 The yong man sayde vnto him, I haue obserued all these things from my youth: what lacke I yet?

21 Iesus sayde vnto him, If thou wilt be perfite, go, sell that thou hast, and giue it to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come and follow me.

22 And when the yong man heard that saying, he went away sorowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 Then Iesus said vnto his disciples, Verely I say vnto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heauen.

24 And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 And when his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amased, saying, Who then can be saued?

26 And Iesus beheld them, and said vnto them, With men this is vnpossible, but with God all things are possible.

*Mar.*10.28. *luk.*18.28. 27 ¶ * Then answered Peter, and said to him, Beholde, we haue forsaken all, and followed thee: what therefore shall we haue?

28 And Iesus sayd vnto them, Verely I say to you, that whē the Sonne of man shal sit in the throne of his Maiestie,

which followed me in the regeneration, *shal sit also vpō Luk.22.29.
twelue thrones, and iudge the twelue tribes of Israel.

29 And whosoeuer shal forsake houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my Names sake, he shal receiue an hundreth fold more, and shall inherit euerlasting life.

30 *But many that are first, shalbe last, and the last *shall be* first. *Chap.20.16 mar.10.31. luk.13.30.

CHAP. XX.

1 *Labourers hired into the vineyarde.* 15 *The euil eye.* 17 *He foretelleth his passion.* 20 *Zebedeus sonnes.* 22 *The cuppe.* 28 *Christ is our minister.* 30 *Two blinde men.*

FOr the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine householder, which went out at the dawning of the daye, to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And he agreed with the labourers for a peny a day, and sent them into his vineyarde.

3 And he went out about the third houre, and sawe other standing idle in the market place,

4 And sayd vnto them, Goe ye also into *my* vineyarde, and whatsoeuer is right, I will giue you: and they went their way.

5 Againe he went out about the sixt and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And he went about the eleuenth houre, and founde other standing idle, and said vnto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They sayde vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He said to them, Go ye also into *my* vineyard, and whatsoeuer is right, that shal ye receiue.

8 ¶And when euen was come, the master of the vineyard sayd vnto his steward, Call the labourers, & giue them their hire, beginning at the last, till *thou come* to the first.

9 And they *which were hired* about the eleuēth houre, came and receiued euery man a peny.

10 Nowe when the first came, they supposed that they should receiue more, but they likewise receiued euery man a penie.

11 And when they had receyued it, they murmured against the master of the house,

12 Saying, These last haue wrought but one houre, & thou hast made them equall vnto vs, which haue borne the burden and heat of the day.

13 And

13 And he answered one of them, saying, Friend, I
thee no wrong: diddest thou not agree with me for a p
14 Take that which is thine owne, and goe thy wa
wil giue vnto this last, as much as to thee.
15 Is it not lawful for me to do as I wil with mine ow
Is thine eye euill because I am good?
Chap.19.30 & 22.14. 16 *So the last shalbe first, and the first last: for ma
are called, but fewe chosen.
mar.10.31. 17 *And Iesus went vp to Hierusalem, and tooke th
luk.18.30. twelue disciples apart in the way, and sayd vnto them,
Mar.10.32 18 Beholde, we go vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne
luk.18.31. man shalbe deliuered vnto the chiefe Priestes, and vnto t
Scribes, and they shal condemne him to death,
Ioh.18.32. 19 And *shall deliuer him to the Gentiles, to moc
and to scourge, and to crucifie *him*, but the third daye
shal rise againe.
Mar.10.35. 20 *Then came to him the mother of Zebedens ch
dren with her sonnes, worshipping *him*, and desiring a c
taine thing of him.
21 And he said vnto her, What wouldest thou? She s
to him, Graunt that these my two sonnes may sit, the one
thy right hand, & the other at thy left hand in thy kingdo
22 And Iesus answered and said, Ye know not what y
aske. Are ye able to drinke of the cup that I shall drinke o
and to be baptized with the baptisme that I shalbe baptized
with? They sayd to him, We are able.
23 And he sayd vnto them, Ye shall drinke in deede o
my cuppe, and shalbe baptized with the baptisme that I a
baptized with, but to sit at my right hand, & at my left han
is not mine to giue: but *it shalbe giuen* to them for whom
it is prepared of my Father.
Mat.10.41 luke 22.25. 24 *And when the *other* ten heard this, they disdaine
at the two brethren.
25 Therefore Iesus called them vnto him, and sayd, Ye
know that the lords of the Gentiles haue domination ouer
them, & they that are great, exercise authoritie ouer them.
26 But it shal not be so among you: but whosoeuer wil
be great among you, let him be your seruant.
27 And whosoeuer will be chiefe among you, let him
be your seruant.
Philip.2.7. Mar.10.46 luk.18.35. 28 *Euen as the Sonne of man came not to be serued,
but to serue, and to giue his life for the ransome of many.
29 ¶ *And as they departed from Iericho, a great
multitude

multitude followed him.

30 And behold, two blinde men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by, cryed, saying, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

31 And the multitude rebuked thē, because they should hold their peace: but they cryed the more, saying, O Lorde, the sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

32 Then Iesus stoode still, and called them, and sayde, What wil ye that I should do to you?

33 They said to him, Lord, that our eies may be opened.

34 And Iesus mooued with compassion, touched their eyes, and immediately their eyes receiued sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *Christ rideth on an asse into Hierusalem.* 12 *He casteth out the sellers.* 13 *The house of prayer.* 19 *The withered fig tree.* 25 *Iohns baptisme.* 28 *Who do the will of God.* 30 *Publicanes. Harlots.* 33 *Gods vineyard. The Iewes.* 38 *The sonne killed of the husbandmen.* 42 *The corner stone.*

AND* when they drewe neere to Hierusalem, and were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of the Oliues, then sent Iesus two disciples, *Mar.11.1. luk.19.29.*

2 Saying to them, Goe into the towne that is ouer against you, and anon ye shal finde an asse bound, and a colte with her: loose them, and bring them vnto me.

3 And if any man say ought vnto you, say ye, ỹ the Lord hath neede of them, and straightway he wil let them go.

4 All this was done that it might bee fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,

5 ¶* Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Beholde, thy King commeth vnto thee, meeke, & sitting vpon an asse, & a colte, the foale of an asse vsed to the yoke. *Esa.62.11. zech.9.9. iohn 12.15.*

6 So the disciples went, and did as Iesus had commanded them,

7 And brought the asse and the colte, and put on them their clothes, and set him thereon.

8 And a great multitude spred their garments in the waye: and other cut downe branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 Moreouer, the people that went before, & they also that folowed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, blessed *be* he that commeth in the name of the Lorde, Hosanna *thou which art* in the highest *heauens*.

10 *And

*Mar.*11.11. *Luk.*19.45. *Iob.*2.13.

10 * And when he was come into Hierusalem, all the citie was moued, saying, Who is this?

11 And the people sayde, This is Iesus that Prophet of Nazareth in Galile.

*Deut.*14.25

12 ¶ And Iesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them * that sold & bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that solde doues,

Esa 56.7. *Ierem.*7.11. *mar.*11.17. *luk.*19.46.

13 And sayd to them, It is written, * My house shall be called the house of prayer: but * ye haue made it a denne of theeues.

14 Then the blinde and the halt came to him in the Temple, and he healed them.

15 But when the chiefe Priests & Scribes sawe the marueiles that he did, & the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, they disdayned,

*Psal.*8.2.

16 And sayd vnto him, Heareſt thou what these say? And Iesus said vnto them, Yea: read ye neuer, * By the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast made perfit the prayse?

17 ¶ So he left them, and went out of the citie vnto Bethania, and lodged there.

*Mar.*11.12.

18 And * in the morning, as he returned into the citie, he was hungrie,

19 And seeing a figge tree in the waye, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaues onely, and said to it, Neuer fruite grow on thee hence forwards. And anon the figge tree withered.

20 And when his disciples sawe it, they marueiled, saying, How soone is the figge tree withered!

*Chap.*17.20

21 And Iesus answered and said vnto them, * Verely I say vnto you, if ye haue faith, & doute not, ye shal not onely do that, *which I haue done* to the figge tree, but also if ye say vnto this mountaine, Take thy selfe away, and cast thy selfe into the sea, it shalbe done.

*Chap.*7.7. *Iohn* 15.7. 1.*Iob.*5.14.

22 * And what soeuer ye shall aske in prayer, if ye beleeue, ye shal receiue it.

Mar 11.27, 28 *luk.*20. 1, 2.

23 ¶ * And when he was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priests, and the Elders of the people came vnto him, as he was teaching, and sayd, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie?

24 Then Iesus answered and sayd vnto them, I also wil aske of you a certaine thing, which if ye tell mee, I likewise wil tell you by what authoritie I do these things.

25 The

25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? from heauen, or of men? Then they reasoned among themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say vnto vs, Why did ye not then beleeue him?

26 And if we say, Of men, we feare the multitude, * for all holde Iohn as a Prophet. *Chap.14.5. mar.6.20.*

27 Then they answered Iesus, and said, We cannot tel. And he sayd vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I do these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke yee? A *certaine* man had two sonnes, and came to the elder, and said, Sonne, go & worke to day in my vineyarde.

29 But he answered, and said, I will not: yet afterward he repented himselfe, and went.

30 Then came he to the second, & said likewise. And he answered, and sayd, I will, syr: yet he went not.

31 Whether of them twaine did the will of the father? They said vnto him, The first. Iesus sayd vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that the Publicanes, and the harlots go before you into the kingdome of God.

32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righteousnes, and ye beleeued him not: but the Publicanes & the harlots beleeued him, and ye, though ye sawe it, were not mooued with repentance afterward, that ye might beleeue him.

33 ¶ Heare another parable, There was a certaine housholder, * which planted a vineyard, & hedged it round about, & made a winepresse therein, & built a tower, & let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey. *Esa.5.1. iere.2.21. mark.12.1.*

34 And when the time of the fruite drew nere, he sent his seruants to ỹ husbandmen to receiue the fruites therof. *luke 20.9.*

35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Againe he sent other seruants, mo then the first: and they did the like vnto them.

37 But last of all he sent vnto them his owne sonne, saying, They will reuerence my sonne.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the sonne, they sayd among themselues, * This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and let vs take his inheritance. *Chap.26.3,4 & 27.1.*

39 So they tooke him, & cast him out of the vineyard, and slewe him. *iohn 11.53.*

40 When therefore the Lorde of the vineyarde shall come, what wil he do to those husbandmen?

41 They

41 They sayde vnto him, He will cruelly destroye th
wicked men, & will let out his vineyard vnto other husb
men, which shal deliuer him the fruites in their seasons.

42 Iesus sayde vnto them, Read ye neuer in the Scr
Psal.118.22. tures, * The stone which the buylders refused, the same
act.4.11. made the head of the corner? This was the Lordes doing,
rom.9.33. it is marueilous in our eyes.

43 Therefore say I vnto you, the kingdome of God sh
be taken from you, and shalbe giuen to a nation, which sh
bring forth the fruites thereof.

Esa.8.14. 44 * And whosoeuer shall fall on this stone, he shall b
broken: but on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will dash him
pieces.

45 And when the chiefe Priestes & Pharises had hear
his parables, they perceiued that he spake of them.

46 And they seeking to laye handes on him, feared th
people, because they tooke him as a Prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

2 The parable of the mariage. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 11 The wedding garment, faith. 16 Of Cesars tribute. 23 They questio with Christ touching the resurrection. 32 God is of the liuing. 36 The greatest commandement. 37 To loue God. 39 To loue our neighbour. 42 Iesus reasoneth with the Pharises touching the Messias.

Luk.14.16. THen * Iesus answered, and spake vnto them againe in
rome.19.9. parables, saying,

2 The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine King
which married his sonne,

3 And sent forth his seruants, to call them that were
bid to the wedding, but they would not come.

4 Againe he sent forth other seruants, saying, Tell them
which are bidden, Behold, I haue prepared my dinner: mine
oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are readie:
come vnto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one
to his farme, and another about his marchandise.

6 And the remnant tooke his seruants, and intreated
them sharpely, and slewe them.

7 But when the King heard it, he was wroth, and sent
forth his warriers, & destroyed those murtherers, & burnt
vp their citie.

8 Then sayd he to his seruants, Truely the wedding is
prepared: but they which were bidden, were not worthie.

9 Goe

9 Goe ye therefore out into the high wayes, and as many as ye finde, bid them to the mariage.

10 So those seruants went out into the *hie* wayes, and gathered together all that euer they found, both good and bad: so the wedding was furnished with gheſtes.

11 Then the king came in, to ſee the gheſtes, and ſawe there a man which had not on a wedding garment.

12 And he ſaid vnto him, Friend, how cameſt thou in hither, and haſt not on a wedding garment? And hee was ſpeachles.

13 Then ſaid the king to the ſeruantes, Binde him hand and foote, take him away, and caſt him into vtter darkenes: *there ſhalbe weeping and gnaſhing of teeth. *Chap.* 8. 12.

14 *For many are called, but fewe choſen. *and* 13.42.

15 ¶ *Then went the Phariſes and tooke counſell how *and* 25.30.
they might tangle him in talke. *Chap.* 20.16

16 And they ſent vnto him their diſciples with the He- *Mar.* 12.13
rodians, ſaying, Maſter, we know that thou art true, and tea- *luke* 20.20.
cheſt the way of God truely, neither careſt for any man: for thou conſidereſt not the perſon of men.

17 Tell vs therefore, how thinkeſt thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Ceſar, or not?

18 But Ieſus perceiued their wickednes, and ſaid, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought him a penie.

20 And he ſaid vnto them, Whoſe is this image and ſuperſcription?

21 They ſaid vnto him, Ceſars. Then ſaid he vnto them, *Giue therefore to Ceſar, the things which are Ceſars, and *Mar.* 12.17.
giue vnto God, thoſe things which are Gods. *luke* 20.25.

22 And when they heard it, they marueiled, & left him, *rom.* 13.7.
and went their way.

23 ¶ *The ſame day the Sadduces came to him (which *Mar.* 12.18.
ſay that there is no reſurrection) and asked him, *luke* 20.27.

24 Saying, Maſter, *Moſes ſaid, If a man dye, hauing no *acts.* 23.8.
children, his brother ſhall marie his wife by the right of alli- *Deut.* 25.5.
ance, and raiſe vp ſeede vnto his brother.

25 Now there were with vs ſeuen brethren, and the firſt maried a wife, and deceaſſed: and hauing none iſſue, left his wife vnto his brother.

26 Likewiſe alſo the ſecond, & the third, vnto ye ſeuenth.

27 And laſt of all the woman died alſo.

28 Therefore in the reſurrection, whoſe wife ſhall
be of the ſeuen? for all had her.

29 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Ye are
ceiued, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of G

30 For in the reſurrection they neither marie wi
nor wines are beſtowed in mariage, but are as the Ang
of God in heauen.

31 And concerning the reſurrection of the dead, ha
ye not read what is ſpoken vnto you of God, ſaying,

Exod.3.6. 32 *I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Iſa
mar.12.27. and the God of Iacob? God is not the God of the dead, b
of the liuing.

33 And when the multitude heard it, they were aſto
nied at his doctrine.

Mar.12.28. 34 ¶*But when the Phariſes had heard, that hee ha
put the Sadduces to ſilence, they aſſembled together.

35 And one of them, *which was* an expounder of th
Lawe, asked him a queſtion, tempting him, and ſaying,

36 Maſter, which is the great commaundement in the
Lawe?

Deut.6.5. 37 Ieſus ſaid to him, *Thou ſhalt loue the Lord thy God
mar.12.30. with all thine heart, with all thy ſoule, & with al thy minde.
luke 10.27. 38 This is the firſt and the great commandement.
Mar.12.31. 39 And the ſecond is like vnto this, *Thou ſhalt loue
rom.13.9. thy neighbour as thy ſelfe.
gal.5.14.
iam.2.8. 40 On theſe two commandements hangeth the whole
Lawe, and the Prophets.

Mar. 12.35. 41 ¶*While the Phariſes were gathered together,
luke 20.41. Ieſus asked them,

42 Saying, What thinke ye of Chriſt? whoſe ſonne is
he? They ſaid vnto him, Dauids.

43 He ſaid vnto them, Howe then doeth Dauid in ſpirit
call him Lord, ſaying,

Pſal.110.1. 44 *The Lord ſaid to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, till
I make thine enemies thy footeſtoole?

45 If then Dauid call him Lord, how is he his ſonne?

46 And none could anſwere him a word, neither durſt
any from that day foorth aske him any mo queſtions.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 *How the Scribes teaching the people the Law of Moſes be-
haue themſelues.* 5 *Their phylacteries, & fringes.* 7 *Gree-
tings.* 8 *We are brethren.* 9 *The father.* 10 *The ſeruant.*

13 *To*

13 To shut the kingdome of heauen. 14 To deuoure widowes houses. 15 A Proselyte. 16 To sweare by the Temple. 23 To tithe mynt. 25 To cleanse the outside of the Cuppe. 27 Painted sepulchres. 33 Serpents, vipers. 37 The Henne.

THen spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,
2 Saying, The *Scribes & the Pharises sit in Moses seat. *Nehe.8.4.*
3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue and doe: but after their workes do not: for they say, and do not.
4 *For they binde heauie burdens, and grieuous to be borne, and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselues will not moue them with *one* of their fingers. *Luke 11.46. acts. 15.10.*
5 All their workes they do for to be seene of men: for they make their phylacteries broad, & make long the *frindges of their garments, *Nom.15.38. deut.22.12.*
6 *And loue the chiefe place at feastes, and to haue the chiefe seates in the assemblies, *mar.12.38. Luke 11.43.*
7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. *and 20.46.*
8 *But be not ye called, Rabbi: for one is your doctor, *Iam.3.1.* *so wit, Christ, and all ye are brethren.
9 And *call no man your father vpon the earth: for there is but one, your Father which is in heauen. *Malac.1.6.*
10 Be not called doctors: for one is your doctor, *euen* Christ.
11 But hee that is greatest among you, let him be your seruant.
12 *For whosoeuer will exalt himselfe, shalbe brought low: and whosoeuer will humble himselfe, shalbe exalted. *Luke 14.11. and 18.14.*
13 ¶ Wo therefore *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites, because ye shut vp the kingdome of heauen before men: for ye your selues goe not in, neither suffer ye them that would enter, to come in.
14 *Wo *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye deuoure widowes houses, euē vnder a colour of long prayers: wherefore ye shal receiue the greater damnation. *Mar.12.40. luke 20.47.*
15 Wo *be* vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye compasse sea & land to make one of your profession: and when he is made, ye make him twō folde more the child of hell, then you your selues.
16 Wo *be* vnto you blinde guides, which say, Whosoeuer sweareth by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the gold of the Temple, he offendeth.

*Mar.*11.11. *luk.*19.45. *Iob.*2.13.

10 * And when he was come into Hierusalem, all the citie was moued, saying, Who is this?

11 And the people sayde, This is Iesus that Prophet of Nazareth in Galile.

*Deut.*14.25

12 ¶ And Iesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them * that sold & bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seates of them that solde doues,

Esa 56.7. *Ierem.*7.11. *mar.*11.17.

13 And sayd to them, It is written, * My house shall be called the house of prayer: but * ye haue made it a denne of theeues.

*luk.*19.46.

14 Then the blinde and the halt came to him in the Temple, and he healed them.

15 But when the chiefe Priests & Scribes sawe the marueiles that he did, & the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid, they disdayned,

*Psal.*8.2.

16 And sayd vnto him, Heareſt thou what these saye? And Iesus said vnto them, Yea: read ye neuer, * By the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast made perfit the prayse?

17 ¶ So he left them, and went out of the citie vnto Bethania, and lodged there.

*Mar.*11.12.

18 And * in the morning, as he returned into the citie, he was hungrie,

19 And seeing a figge tree in the waye, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaues onely, and said to it, Neuer fruite grow on thee hence forwards. And anon the figge tree withered.

20 And when his disciples sawe it, they marueiled, saying, How soone is the figge tree withered!

*Chap.*17.20

21 And Iesus answered and said vnto them, * Verely I say vnto you, if ye haue faith, & doute not, ye shal not onely do that, *which I haue done* to the figge tree, but also if yee say vnto this mountaine, Take thy selfe away, and cast thy selfe into the sea, it shalbe done.

*Chap.*7.7. *Iohn* 15.7.

22 * And what soeuer ye shall aske in prayer, if ye beleeue, ye shal receiue it.

1.*Ioh.*5.14. *Mar.* 11.27, 28 *luk.*20. 1, 2.

23 ¶ * And when he was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priests, and the Elders of the people came vnto him, as he was teaching, and sayd, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie?

24 Then Iesus answered and sayd vnto them, I also wil aske of you a certaine thing, which if ye tell mee, I likewise wil tell you by what authoritie I do these things.

25 The

25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? from heauen, or of men? Then they reasoned among themselues, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say vnto vs, Why did ye not then beleeue him?

26 And if we say, Of men, we feare the multitude, * for all holde Iohn as a Prophet. *Chap.14.5. mar.6.20.*

27 Then they answered Iesus, and said, We cannot tel. And he sayd vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I do these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke yee? A *certaine* man had two sonnes, and came to the elder, and said, Sonne, go & worke to day in my vineyarde.

29 But he answered, and said, I will not: yet afterward he repented himselfe, and went.

30 Then came he to the second, & said likewise. And he answered, and sayd, I will, syr: yet he went not.

31 Whether of them twaine did the will of the father? They said vnto him, The first. Iesus sayd vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that the Publicanes, and the harlots go before you into the kingdome of God.

32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righteousnes, and ye beleeued him not: but the Publicanes & the harlots beleeued him, and ye, though ye sawe it, were not mooued with repentance afterward, that ye might beleeue him.

33 ¶ Heare another parable, There was a certaine housholder, * which planted a vineyard, & hedged it round about, & made a winepresse therein, & built a tower, & let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey. *Esa.5.1. iere.2.21. mark.12.1.*

34 And when the time of the fruite drew nere, he sent his seruants to ỹ husbandmen to receiue the fruites therof. *luke 20.9.*

35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Againe he sent other seruants, mo then the first: and they did the like vnto them.

37 But last of all he sent vnto them his owne sonne, saying, They will reuerence my sonne.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the sonne, they sayd among themselues, * This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and let vs take his inheritance. *Chap.26.3,4 & 27.1.*

39 So they tooke him, & cast him out of the vineyard, and slewe him. *iohn 11.53.*

40 When therefore the Lorde of the vineyarde shall come, what wil he do to those husbandmen?

41 They

41 They sayde vnto him, He will cruelly destroye those wicked men, & will let out his vineyard vnto other husbandmen, which shal deliuer him the fruites in their seasons.

42 Iesus sayde vnto them, Read ye neuer in the Scriptures, * The stone which the buylders refused, the same is made the head of the corner? This was the Lordes doing, and it is marueilous in our eyes.

Psal.118.22. act.4.11. rom.9.33.

43 Therefore say I vnto you, the kingdome of God shall be taken from you, and shalbe giuen to a nation, which shall bring forth the fruites thereof.

44 * And whosoeuer shall fall on this stone, he shall be broken: but on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will dash him in pieces.

Esa.8.14.

45 And when the chiefe Priestes & Pharises had heard his parables, they perceiued that he spake of them.

46 And they seeking to laye handes on him, feared the people, because they tooke him as a Prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

2 The parable of the mariage. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 11 The wedding garment, faith. 16 Of Cesars tribute. 23 They question with Christ touching the resurrection. 32 God is of the liuing. 36 The greatest commandement. 37 To loue God. 39 To loue our neighbour. 42 Iesus reasoneth with the Pharises touching the Messias.

THen * Iesus answered, and spake vnto them againe in parables, saying,

Luk. 14.16. rom.19.9.

2 The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine King which married his sonne,

3 And sent forth his seruants, to call them that were bid to the wedding, but they would not come.

4 Againe he sent forth other seruants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I haue prepared my dinner: mine oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are readie: come vnto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, and another about his marchandise.

6 And the remnant tooke his seruants, and intreated them sharpely, and slewe them.

7 But when the King heard it, he was wroth, and sent forth his warriers, & destroyed those murtherers, & burnt vp their citie.

8 Then sayd he to his seruants, Truely the wedding is prepared: but they which were bidden, were not worthie.

9 Goe

...oe ye therefore out into the high wayes, and as ma-
...finde, bid them to the mariage.
10 So those seruants went out into the *hie* wayes, and
...ed togither all that euer they found, both good and
...so the wedding was furnished with ghestes.
11 Then the king came in, to see the ghestes, and sawe
...re a man which had not on a wedding garment.
12 And he said vnto him, Friend, how camest thou in hi-
...her, and hast not on a wedding garment? And hee was
...speechles.
13 Then said the king to the seruantes, Binde him hand
...and foote, take him away, and cast him into vtter darkenes:
...there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth.
14 * For many are called, but fewe chosen. *Chap. 8. 12. and 13. 42.*
15 ¶ * Then went the Pharises and tooke counsell how *and 25. 30.*
they might tangle him in talke. *Chap. 20. 16*
16 And they sent vnto him their disciples with the He- *Mar. 12. 13*
rodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and tea- *luke 20. 20.*
chest the way of God truely, neither carest for any man: for
thou considerest not the person of men.
17 Tell vs therefore, how thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to
giue tribute vnto Cesar, or not?
18 But Iesus perceiued their wickednes, and said, Why
tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?
19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought him
a penie.
20 And he said vnto them, Whose is this image and su-
perscription?
21 They said vnto him, Cesars. Then said he vnto them,
* Giue therefore to Cesar, the things which are Cesars, and *Mar. 12. 17.*
giue vnto God, those things which are Gods. *luke 20. 25.*
22 And when they heard it, they marueiled, & left him, *rom. 13. 7.*
and went their way.
23 ¶ * The same day the Sadduces came to him (which *Mar. 12. 18.*
say that there is no resurrection) and asked him, *luke 20. 27.*
24 Saying, Master, * Moses said, If a man dye, hauing no *acts. 23. 8.*
children, his brother shall marie his wife by the right of alli- *Deut. 25. 5.*
ance, and raise vp seede vnto his brother.
25 Now there were with vs seuen brethren, and the first
maried a wife, and deceassed: and hauing none issue, left his
wife vnto his brother.
26 Likewise also the second, & the third, vnto ỹ seuēth.
27 And last of all the woman died also.

 28 There-

28 Therefore in the reſurrection, whoſe wife ſhall
be of the ſeuen? for all had her.

29 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Ye are
ceiued, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of G

30 For in the reſurrection they neither marie wi
nor wines are beſtowed in mariage, but are as the Ange
of God in heauen.

31 And concerning the reſurrection of the dead, ha
ye not read what is ſpoken vnto you of God, ſaying,

Exod.3.6. 32 *I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Iſa
mar.12.27. and the God of Iacob? God is not the God of the dead, b
of the liuing.

33 And when the multitude heard it, they were aſto
nied at his doctrine.

Mar.12.28. 34 ¶* But when the Phariſes had heard, that hee ha
put the Sadduces to ſilence, they aſſembled together.

35 And one of them, *which was* an expounder of the
Lawe, asked him a queſtion, tempting him, and ſaying,

36 Maſter, which is the great commanndement in the
Lawe?

Deut.6.5. 37 Ieſus ſaid to him, *Thou ſhalt loue the Lord thy God
mar.12.30. with all thine heart, with all thy ſoule, & with al thy minde.

luke 10.27. 38 This is the firſt and the great commandement.

Mar.12.31. 39 And the ſecond is like vnto this, *Thou ſhalt loue
rom.13.9. thy neighbour as thy ſelfe.

gal.5.14. 40 On theſe two commandements hangeth the whole
iam.2.8. Lawe, and the Prophets.

Mar.12.35. 41 ¶* While the Phariſes were gathered together,
luke 20.41. Ieſus asked them,

42 Saying, What thinke ye of Chriſt? whoſe ſonne is
he? They ſaid vnto him, Dauids.

43 He ſaid vnto them, Howe then doeth Dauid in ſpirit
call him Lord, ſaying,

Pſal.110.1. 44 *The Lord ſaid to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, till
I make thine enemies thy footeſtoole?

45 If then Dauid call him Lord, how is he his ſonne?

46 And none could anſwere him a word, neither durſt
any from that day foorth aske him any mo queſtions.

CHAP. XXIII.

*2 How the Scribes teaching the people the Law of Moſes be-
haue themſelues. 5 Their phylacteries, & fringes. 7 Gree-
tings. 8 We are brethren. 9 The father. 10 The ſeruant.*

13 To

To shut the kingdome of heauen. 14 To deuoure widowes houses. 15 A Proselyte. 16 To sweare by the Temple. 23 To tithe mynt. 25 To cleuse the outside of the Cuppe. 27 Painted sepulchres. 33 Serpents, vipers. 37 The Henne.

THen spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,
2 Saying, The *Scribes & the Pharises sit in Moses seat. *Nehe.8.4.*
3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue and doe: but after their workes do not: for they say, and do not.
4 *For they binde heauie burdens, and grieuous to be borne, and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselues will not moue them with *one* of their fingers. *Luke 11.46. acts. 15. 10.*
5 All their workes they do for to be seene of men: for they make their phylacteries broad, & make long the *frindges of their garments, *Nom.15.38. deut.22.12.*
6 *And loue the chiefe place at feastes, and to haue the chiefe seates in the assemblies, *mar.12.38. Luke 11.43.*
7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. *and 20.46.*
8 *But be not ye called, Rabbi: for one is your doctor, *Iam.3.1.* *so mit*, Christ, and all ye are brethren.
9 And *call no man your father vpon the earth: for *Malac.1.6.* there is but one, your Father which is in heauen.
10 Be not called doctors: for one is your doctor, *euen* Christ.
11 But hee that is greatest among you, let him be your seruant.
12 *For whosoeuer will exalt himselfe, shalbe brought low: and whosoeuer will humble himselfe, shalbe exalted. *Luke 14.11. and 18.14.*
13 ¶ Wo therefore *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites, because ye shut vp the kingdome of heauen before men: for ye your selues goe not in, neither suffer ye them that would enter, to come in.
14 *Wo *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye deuoure widowes houses, euē vnder a colour of long prayers: wherefore ye shal receiue the greater damnation. *Mar.12.40. luke 20.47.*
15 Wo *be* vnto you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites: for ye compasse sea & land to make one of your profession: and when he is made, ye make him twō folde more the child of hell, then you your selues.
16 Wo *be* vnto you blinde guides, which say, Whosoeuer sweareth by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoeuer sweareth by the gold of the Temple, he offendeth.

17 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the golde or the Temple that ſanctifieth the golde?

18 And whoſoeuer ſweareth by the altar, it is nothing: but whoſoeuer ſweareth by the offring *that is* vpon it, offendeth.

19 Ye fooles and blind, whether is greater, the offering or the altar which ſanctifieth the offering?

20 Whoſoeuer therefore ſweareth by the altar, ſweareth by it, and by all thinges thereon.

1. *King.* 8. 13 2. *chro.* 6. 2. *Iha.* 5. 34. 21 * And whoſoeuer ſweareth by the Temple, ſweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 * And he that ſweareth by heauen, ſweareth by the throne of God, and by him that ſitteth thereon.

Luke 11. 42. 23 ¶ * Wo *be* to you, Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for ye tithe mynt, & anyſe, and commyn, & leaue the weightier matters of the Law, *as* iudgement, & mercy, & fidelitie. Theſe ought ye to haue done, & not to haue left the other.

24 Ye blinde guides, which ſtraine out a gnat, and ſwallowe a camell.

Luke 11. 39. 25 ¶ Wo *be* to you, * Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for ye make cleane the vtter ſide of the cup, and of the platter: but within they are full of briberie and exceſſe.

26 Thou blinde Phariſe, clenſe firſt the inſide of the cup and platter, that the outſide of them may be cleane alſo.

27 Wo *be* to you, Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for ye are like vnto whited tombes, which appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all filthineſſe.

28 So are ye alſo: for outward ye appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocriſie and iniquitie.

29 ¶ Wo *be* vnto you, Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for ye build the tombes of the Prophets, and garniſh the ſepulchres of the righteous,

30 And ſay, If we had bene in the dayes of our fathers, we would not haue bene partakers with them in the blood of the Prophets.

31 So then ye be witneſſes vnto your ſelues, that ye are the children of them that murthered the Prophets.

32 Fulfill ye alſo the meaſure of your fathers.

33 O ſerpents, the generation of vipers, howe ſhould ye eſcape the damnation of hell!

34 Wherefore beholde, I ſende vnto you Prophets, and wiſe men, and Scribes, and of them ye ſhall kill and crucifie: and

of them shall ye scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute from citie to citie,

35 That vpon you may come all the righteous blood that was shed vpon the earth, * from the blood of Abel the righteous, vnto the blood of Zacharias the sonne of Barachias, * whom ye slewe betwene the Temple and the altar. *Gen.4.8.* *2.Chr.24.22*

36 Verely I say vnto you, all these things shall come vpon this generation.

37 *Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them which are sent to thee, how often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, and ye would not! *Luke 13.34.*

38 Behold, your habitatiō shalbe left vnto you desolate,

39 For I say vnto you, ye shall not see mee hencefoorth till that ye say, Blessed *is* hee that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIIII.

2 The destruction of the Temple. 4 The signes of Christes comming. 12 Iniquitie. 23 False Christes. 29 The signes of the ende of the worlde. 31 The Angels. 32 The figge tree. 37 The dayes of Noe. 42 We must watch. 45 The seruant.

AND * Iesus went out, and departed from the Temple, and his disciples came to him, to shew him the building of the Temple. *Mark 13.1. luke 21.5,6.*

2 And Iesus said vnto them, See ye not all these things? Verely I say vnto you, * there shall not be here left a stone vpon a stone, that shal not be cast downe. *Luke 19.44.*

3 And as hee sate vpon the mount of Oliues, his disciples came vnto him apart, saying, Tell vs when these things shalbe, and what signe *shalbe* of thy comming, and of the ende of the world.

4 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, * Take heed that no man deceiue you. *Ephe.5.6. colos.2.18.*

5 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many.

6 And ye shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres: see that ye be not troubled: for all these thinges must come to passe, but the ende is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, & realme against realme, and there shalbe famine, and pestilence, and earthquakes in diuers places.

8 All these are but the beginning of sorowes.

Chap. 10.17. *Luke* 21.12. *John* 15.20. and 16.2.

9 *Then shall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted, and shall kill you, and ye shalbe hated of all nations for my Names sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shal arise, and shal deceiue many.

12 And because iniquitie shalbe increased, the loue of many shalbe colde.

2. *Thess.* 3. 13 2. *Tim.* 2. 5.

13 *But he that endureth to the ende, he shalbe saued.

14 And this Gospel of the kingdome shalbe preached through the whole world for a witnes vnto all nations, and then shall the ende come.

Mar. 13. 14. *Luke* 21. 20. *Dan.* 9. 27.

15 ¶ When ye *therefore shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by *Daniel the Prophet, set in the holy place, (let him that readeth consider it.)

16 Then let them which be in Iudea, flee into the mountaines.

17 Let him which is on the house top, not come downe to fetch any thing out of his house.

18 And he that is in the field, let not him returne backe to fetch his clothes.

19 And wo *shalbe* to them that are with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

20 But pray that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the *Sabbath *day*.

Acts. 1. 12.

21 For then shalbe great tribulation, such as was not from the beginning of the world to this time, nor shalbe.

22 And except those dayes should be shortened, there should no flesh be saued: but for ỹ electes sake those dayes shalbe shortened.

Mar. 13. 21. *Luke* 17. 23.

23 *Then if any shall say vnto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there, beleeue it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christes, & false prophets, and shall shewe great signes and wonders, so that if it were possible, they should deceiue the very elect.

25 Behold, I haue tolde you before.

26 Wherefore if they shall say vnto you, Beholde, he is in the desert, go not foorth: Behold, he is in the secret places, beleeue it not.

27 For as the lightning commeth out of the East, and is seene into the West, so shal also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

28 *For where soeuer a dead carkeis is, thither wil the Luke 17.37
eagles be gathered together.

29 *And immediatly after the tribulations of those Mar.13.24.
dayes, shall the sunne be darkened, and the moone shall not Luke 21.25.
giue her light, and the starres shall fall from heauen, and the esa.13.10.
powers of heauen shalbe shaken. ezech.32.7.

30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Sōne of man ioel.2.31.
in heauen; & then shal all the kinreds of the earth mourne, and 3.15.
*and they shall see the Sonne of man come in the cloudes Reuel.1.7.
of heauen with power and great glorie. dan.7.13.

31 *And he shal send his Angels with a great sound of 1.Cor.15.52.
a trumpet, and they shal gather together his elect, from the 1.thes.4.16.
foure windes, *and* from the one ende of the heauens vnto the other.

32 Now learne the parable of the figge tree: when her bough is yet tender, and it putteth foorth leaues, ye knowe that sommer *is* neere.

33 So likewise ye, when ye see all these thinges, knowe that *the kingdome of God* is neere, *euen* at the doores.

34 Verely I say vntō you, this generation shal not passe, till all these things be done.

35 *Heauen and earth shall passe away: but my words Mar.13.31.
shall not passe away.

36 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no not the Angels of heauen, but my Father onely.

37 But as the dayes of Nōe *were*, so likewise shall the comming of the Sonne of man be.

38 *For as in the dayes *before* the flood, they did eate Luke 17.28
and drinke, marrie, and giue in mariage, vnto the day that gene.7.
Noe entred into the Arke, 1.pet.3.20.

39 And knew nothing, til the flood came, & tooke them all away: so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

40 *Then two shalbe in the fields, the one shalbe receiued, Luke 17.36.
and the other shalbe refused.

41 Two women shalbe grinding at the mill: the one shalbe receiued, and the other shalbe refused.

42 *Watche therefore: for ye knowe not what houre Mar.13.35.
your master will come.

43 Of *this be sure, that if the good man of the house Luke 12.39
knew at what watch the thiefe would come, he would sure- 1.thes.5.2.
ly watch, and not suffer his house to be digged thorowe. reuel.16.15.

44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in the houre that ye thinke not, will the Sonne of man come.

Luke 12.42. 45 * Who then is a faithfull seruant and wise, whom his master hath made ruler ouer his houshold, to giue them meate in season?

46 Blessed is that seruant, whome his master when he commeth, shall finde so doing.

47 Verely I say vnto you, he shall make him ruler ouer all his goods.

48 But if that euil seruant shal say in his heart, My master doeth deferre his comming,

49 And begin to smite his fellowes, and to eate, and to drinke with the drunken:

50 That seruantes master will come in a day, when hee looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of,

Chap. 13.42. and 25.30. 51 And will cut him off, and giue him his portion with hypocrites: * there shalbe weeping, and gnashing of teeth.

CHAP. XXV.

1 The virgins looking for the bridegrome. 13 Wee must watch. 14 The talents deliuered vnto the seruants. 24 The euil seruant. 30 After what sort the last iudgement shalbe. 41 The cursed.

THen the kingdome of heauen shalbe likened vnto ten virgins, which tooke their lampes, and went foorth to meete the bridegrome.

2 And fiue of them were wise, and fiue foolish.

3 The foolish tooke their lampes, but tooke none oyle with them.

4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels w their lamps.

5 Nowe while the bridegrome taried long, all slumbred and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a crie made, Beholde, the bridegrome commeth: go out to meete him.

7 Then all those virgins arose, & trimmed their lamps.

8 And the foolish said to the wise, Giue vs of your oyle, for our lampes are out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*, lest there will not be ynough for vs and you: but goe ye rather to them that sell, and bye for your selues.

10 And while they went to bye, the bridegrome came: and they that were ready, went in with him to the wedding, and the gate was shut.

11 Afterwardes came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs.

12 But

12 But he answered, and sayd, Verely I say vnto you, I knowe you not.

13 *Watch therefore: for ye knowe neither the day, nor the houre, when the Sonne of man wil come. *Chap.24.42. mar.13.35.

14 *For *the kingdome of heauen is* as a man that going into a strange countrey, called his seruants, and deliuered to them his goods. *Luke 19.12. 13.

15 And vnto one he gaue fiue talents, and to another two, and to another one, to euery man after his owne ability, and straightway went from home.

16 Then hee that had receyued the fiue talents, went and occupied with them, and gayned other fiue talents.

17 Likewise also, he that *receiued* two, he also gayned other two.

18 But he that receiued that one, went and digged it in the earth, and hid his masters money.

19 But after a long season, the master of those seruants came, and reckoned with them.

20 Then came hee that had receyued fiue talentes, and brought other fiue talentes, saying, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me fiue talents: beholde, I haue gayned with them other fiue talents.

21 Then his master sayd vnto him, It is wel done good seruant and faithful, Thou hast bene faithfull in litle, I will make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy.

22 Also he that had receiued two talents, came, and sayd, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me two talents: behold, I haue gained two other talents more.

23 His master sayd vnto him, It is wel done good seruant, and faithful, Thou hast bin faithful in litle, I wil make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy masters ioy.

24 Then he which had receiued the one talent, came, and sayd, Master, I knew that thou wast an hard man, which reapest where thou sowedst not, and gatherest where thou strawedst not:

25 I was therefore afrayd, and went, and hid thy talent in the earth: beholde, thou hast thine owne.

26 And his master answered, and said vnto him, Thou euil seruant, and slouthful, thou knewest that I reape where I sowed not, and gather where I strawed not.

27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my money to the exchangers, and then at my comming should I haue receiued mine owne with vantage.

28 Take

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vn
him which hath ten talents.

Chap.13.12. *mar.4.25.* *luke 8.18.* *and 19.26.* 29 * For vnto euery man that hath, it shalbe giuen, a
he shal haue abundance, and from him that hath not, e
that he hath, shalbe taken away.

Chap.8.12. *and 22.13.* 30 Cast therefore that vnprofitable seruant into vtt
* darkenes: there shalbe weeping, and gnashing of teeth.

31 ¶ And when the Sonne of man commeth in his gl
rie, and all the holy Angels with him, then shal he sit vp
the throne of his glorie,

32 And before him shalbe gathered all nations, and h
shal separate them one from another, as a shepheard sepa
rateth the sheepe from the goates.

33 And he shal set the sheepe on his right hand, and th
goates on the left.

34 Then shall the King say to them on his right hand
Come ye blessed of my Father: take the inheritance of th
kingdom prepared for you from the fundations of ỹ world.

Esa.58.7. *ezech. 18.7.* 35 * For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me meate: I
thirsted, and ye gaue me drinke: I was a stranger, and y
tooke me in vnto you.

Eccle.7.35. 36 *I was* naked, and ye clothed me: I was * sicke, and
ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came vnto me.

37 Then shal the righteous answere him, saying, Lord,
when sawe we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or a thirst,
and gaue thee drinke?

38 And when saw we thee a stranger, and tooke thee
in vnto vs? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when saw we thee sicke, or in prison, and came
vnto thee?

40 And the King shal answere, and say vnto them, Verely
I say vnto you, in as much as ye haue done it vnto one of the
least of these my brethren, ye haue done it to me.

Psal.6.8. *chap.7.23.* *luke 13.27.* 41 Then shal he say vnto them on ỹ left hand, * Depart
from me ye cursed, into euerlasting fire which is prepared
for the deuil and his angels.

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me no meate: I
thirsted, and ye gaue me no drinke:

43 I was a stranger, and ye tooke me not in vnto you:
I was naked, and ye clothed me not: sicke, and in prison, and
ye visited me not.

44 Then shal they also answere him, saying, Lord, when
saw we thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked,

or

ſicke, or in priſon, and did not miniſter vnto thee?

45 Then ſhal he anſwere them, and ſay, Verely I ſay vnto you, in as much as ye did it not to one of the leaſt of theſe, ye did it not to me.

46 * And theſe ſhal go into euerlaſting paine, and the righteous into life eternall. *Dan.12.2. Iohn 5.29.*

CHAP. XXVI.

1 The conſultation of the Prieſts againſt Chriſt. 6 His feete are anointed. 15 Judas ſelleth him. 26 The inſtitution of the Supper. 34 & 69 Peters denyall. 38 Chriſt is heauie. 47 He is betrayed with a kiſſe. 56 He is led to Caiaphas. 64 He confeſſeth himſelfe to be Chriſt. 67 They ſpit at him.

AND * it came to paſſe, when Ieſus had finiſhed all theſe ſayings, he ſayd vnto his diſciples, *Mark.14.1. Iuke 22.1.*

2 Ye know that after two dayes is the Paſſeouer, and the Sonne of man ſhalbe deliuered to be crucified.

3 * Then aſſembled together the chiefe Prieſts, and the Scribes, and the Elders of the people into the hall of the high Prieſt, called Caiaphas, *Iohn 11.47.*

4 And conſulted together, that they might take Ieſus by ſubtiltie, and kil him.

5 But they ſayd, Not on the feaſt *day*, leſt any vprore be among the people.

6 ¶ * And when Ieſus was in Bethania, in the houſe of Simon the leper, *Mar.14.3. Iohn 11.2.*

7 There came vnto him a woman, which had a boxe of very coſtly ointment, and powred it on his head, as he ſate at the table.

8 And when his diſciples ſawe it, they had indignation, ſaying, What needed this waſte?

9 For this ointment might haue bene ſolde for much, and bene giuen to the poore.

10 And Ieſus knowing it, ſaid vnto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for ſhe hath wrought a good worke vpō me.

11 * For ye haue the poore alwayes with you, but me ſhal ye not haue alwayes. *Deut.15.11.*

12 For in that ſhe powred this ointment on my bodie, ſhe did it to burie me.

13 Verely I ſay vnto you, where ſoeuer this Goſpel ſhall be preached throughout all the world, there ſhall alſo this that ſhe hath done, be ſpoken of for a memoriall of her.

14 ¶ * Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iſcariot, went *Mar.14.10.*

went vnto the chiefe Prieſtes,

15 And ſayd, What wil ye giue me, and I will deliuer him vnto you? and they appointed vnto him thirtie *pieces* of ſiluer.

16 And from that time, he ſought opportunitie to betray him.

Mar. 14. 12. *Luke* 22. 7. 17 ¶ *Nowe on the firſt *day* of the feaſt of vnleauened bread, the diſciples came to Ieſus, ſaying vnto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eate the Paſſeouer?

18 And he ſayd, Go ye into the citie to ſuch a man, and ſay to him, The Maſter ſayth, My time is at hand: I wil keepe the Paſſeouer at thine houſe with my diſciples.

19 And the diſciples did as Ieſus had giuen them charge, and made ready the Paſſeouer.

Luke 22. 14. 20 *So when the euen was come, he ſate downe with the twelue.

Mar. 14. 18. *Ioh.* 13. 21. 21 And as they did eate, he ſayd, *Verely I ſay vnto you, that one of you ſhal betray me.

22 And they were exceeding ſorowfull, and began euery one of them to ſay vnto him, Is it I, Maſter?

Pſal. 41. 9. 23 And he anſwered and ſayd, *He that dippeth his hand with me in the diſh, he ſhal betray me.

24 Surely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written of him: but wo *be* to that man, by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had bene good for that man, if he had neuer bene borne.

25 Then Iudas which betrayed him, anſwered, & ſayd, Is it I, Maſter? He ſayd vnto him, Thou haſt ſayd it.

1. Cor. 11. 24 26 ¶ *And as they did eate, Ieſus tooke the bread, and when he had bleſſed, he brake it, and gaue it to the diſciples, and ſayd, Take, eate: this is my body.

27 Alſo hee tooke the cup, and when hee had giuen thankes, he gaue it them, ſaying, Drinke ye all of it.

28 For this is my blood of the Newe teſtament, that is ſhed for many, for the remiſsion of ſinnes.

29 I ſay vnto you, that I wil not drinke henceforth of this fruite of the vine, vntil that day, when I ſhal drinke it newe with you in my Fathers kingdome.

30 And when they had ſung a pſalme, they went out into the mount of Oliues.

Mar. 14. 27. *Iohn* 16. 32. *and* 18. 8. *Zech.* 13. 7. 31 ¶ *Then ſaid Ieſus vnto them, All ye ſhalbe offended by me this night: for it is written, I * will ſmite the ſhepheard, and the ſheepe of the flocke ſhalbe ſcattered.

32 But

32 But * after I am riſen againe, I will goe before you into Galile. *Mark.14. 28.& 16.7.*

33 But Peter anſwered, & ſaid vnto him, Though that al men ſhould be offended by thee, yet wil I neuer be offended.

34 *Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Verely I ſay vnto thee, that this night, before the cocke crow, thou ſhalt denie me thriſe. *Iohn 13.38. mark.14.30.*

35 Peter ſaid vnto him, Though I ſhould die with thee, I wil in no caſe denie thee. Likewiſe alſo ſaid all ỹ diſciples.

36 ¶ Then went Ieſus with them into a place which is called Gethſemane, and ſayd vnto his diſciples, Sit ye here, while I goe, and pray yonder. *Luke 22.39.*

37 And he tooke vnto him Peter, and the two ſonnes of Zebedeus, and beganne to waxe ſorowfull, and grieuouſly troubled.

38 Then ſayd Ieſus vnto them, My ſoule is very heauie, euen vnto the death: tarie ye here, and watch with me.

39 So he went a litle further, & fell on his face, & prayed, ſaying, O my Father, if it be poſsible, let this cup paſſe from me: neuertheles, not as I wil, but as thou wilt.

40 After, he came vnto the diſciples, and found them aſleepe, and ſayd to Peter, What? could ye not watch with me one houre?

41 Watch, and pray, that ye enter not into tentation: the ſpirit in deede is readie, but the fleſh is weake.

42 Againe he went away the ſecond time, and prayed, ſaying, O my Father, if this cup can not paſſe away from me, but that I muſt drinke it, thy wil be done.

43 And he came, and found them a ſleepe againe, for their eyes were heauie.

44 So he left them and went away againe, and prayed the third time, ſaying the ſame wordes.

45 Then came he to his diſciples, and ſaid vnto them, Sleepe henceforth, and take your reſt: beholde, the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is giuen into the hands of ſinners.

46 Riſe, let vs go: beholde, he is at hand that betrayeth me.

47 * And while he yet ſpake, lo, Iudas, one of ỹ twelue, came, and with him a great multitude with ſwordes and ſtaues, from the high Prieſtes and Elders of the people. *Mar. 14.43. luke 22.47. iob. 18.3.*

48 Nowe he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, ſaying, Whomſoeuer I ſhal kiſſe, that is he, lay holde on him.

49 And

49 And forthwith he came to Ieſus, and ſayd, Ge
thee, Maſter, and kiſſed him.

50 Then Ieſus ſayd vnto him, Friend, wherefo
thou come? Then came they, and layd hands on Ieſu
tooke him.

51 And beholde, one of them which were with
ſtretched out *his* hand, and drew his ſworde, and ſtro
ſeruant of the high Prieſt, and ſmote off his eare.

52 Then ſayd Ieſus vnto him, Put vp thy ſword in
Gene.9.6. place: * for all that take the ſworde, ſhall periſh wit
Reue.13.10. ſworde.

53 Either thinkeſt thou, that I can not nowe pray
Father, & he wil giue me mo then twelue legions of An

Iſai.53.10. 54 How then ſhould the *Scriptures be fulfilled,
ſay, that it muſt be ſo?

55 The ſame houre ſayd Ieſus to the multitude, Y
come out as *it were* againſt a thiefe, with ſwordes & ſ
to take me: I ſate dayly teaching in the Temple a
you, and ye tooke me not.

56 But all this was done, that the Scriptures of
Verſe.31. Prophets might be fulfilled.* Then all the diſciples for
him, and fled.

Mar.14.53. 57 ¶ *And they tooke Ieſus, and led him to Cai
Luke 22.54. the hie Prieſt, where the Scribes and the Elders we
Iohn 18.14. ſembled.

58 And Peter folowed him a farre off vnto ỹ hie P
hall, and went in, and ſate with the ſeruants to ſee the
Mar.14.55. 59 Nowe * the chiefe Prieſtes and the Elders, a
the whole councel ſought falſe witnes againſt Ieſus, t
him to death.

60 But they found none, and though many falſe wi
ſes came, yet found they none: but at the laſt came two
witneſſes,

Iohn 2.19. 61 And ſaid, This man ſayd, *I can deſtroy the Te
of God, and build it in three dayes.

62 Then the chiefe Prieſt aroſe, and ſayd to him,
ſwereſt thou nothing? What is the matter that theſe
witnes againſt thee?

63 But Ieſus helde his peace. Then the chiefe Prieſt
ſwered, and ſayd to him, I charge thee ſweare vnto v
Chap.16.27. the liuing God, to tel vs, if thou be that Chriſt, the Sonn
Rom.14.10. God, *or no.*

2 Theſ.4.14. 64 *Ieſus ſayd to him, Thou haſt ſayd it; neuerthele
I ſay

you, hereafter shall ye see the Sonne of man, sit-
the right hand of the power *of God*, and come in the
of the heauen.

65 Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath
ned, what haue we any more neede of witnesses?
now ye haue heard his blasphemie.

66 What thinke ye? They answered, and sayd, Hee is
ie of death.

67 Then spet they in his face, and busseted him, and *Isa.50.6.*
her smote him with roddes,

68 Saying, Prophecie to vs, O Christ, Who is he that
ote thee?

69 ¶ Peter sate without in the hall: and a mayd came *Mar.14.66.*
him, saying, Thou also wast with Iesus of Galile: *luke 22.56.*

70 But he denied before them all, saying, I wot not *iohn 18.25.*
at thou sayest.

71 And when he went out into the porche, another
de sawe him, and sayd vnto them that were there, This
was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

72 And againe he denied with an othe, saying, I know
not the man.

73 So after a while, came vnto him they that stood by,
and sayd vnto Peter, Surely thou art also one of them, for
thy speach bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse *him selfe*, & to sweare, saying,
know not the man. And immediatly the cocke crewe.

75 Then Peter remembred the wordes of Iesus, which
had said vnto him, Before the cocke crowe, thou shalt de-
me thrise. So he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 He is deliuered bound to Pilate. 5 Iudas hangeth himself.
19 Pilates wife. 20 Barabbas is asked. 24 Pilate washeth
his hands. 26 Christ is crowned with thorne. 34 He is cru-
cified, 40 reuiled. 50 He giueth vp the ghost. 57 He is bu-
ried. 62 The souldiers watch him.

WHen ¶ the morning was come, all the chiefe Priestes, *Mar.15.1.*
and the Elders of the people tooke counsell against Ie- *luke 22.66.*
sus to put him to death, *iohn 18.28.*

2 And led him away bound, and deliuered him vnto
Pontius Pilate the gouernour.

3 ¶ Then when Iudas which betrayed him, saw that he
was condemned, he repented him selfe, & brought againe
the

the thirtie pieces of siluer to the [illegible]

4 Saying, I haue sinned [illegible]
But they sayd, What is that to vs? [illegible]

5 And when he had cast downe the siluer pieces in the
Mat.1.18. Temple, he departed, and went, *and hanged himself.

6 And the chiefe Priestes tooke the siluer pieces, and
sayd, It is not lawful for vs to put them into the treasurie, be-
cause it is the price of blood.

7 And they tooke counsell, and bought with them the
potters field, for the buriall of strangers.

Act.1.19. 8 Wherefore that field is called, * The field of blood,
vntil this day.

9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Ie-
Zech.11.12. remias the Prophet, saying, * And they tooke thirtie siluer
pieces, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the
children of Israel valued.

10 And they gaue them for the potters field, as the Lord
appointed me.)

Mark.15.2. 11 ¶ *And Iesus stood before the gouernour, and the
Luke 23.3. gouernour asked him, saying, Art thou that King of the
Iohn 18.33. Iewes? Iesus sayd vnto him, Thou sayest it.

12 And when he was accused of the chiefe Priestes and
Elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then sayd Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not how
many things they lay against thee?

14 But he answered him not to one word, insomuch
that the gouernour marueyled greatly.

15 Now at the feast, the gouernour was wont to deli-
uer vnto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Ba-
rabbas.

17 When they were then gathered together, Pilate
sayd vnto them, Whether will ye that I release vnto you
Barabbas, or Iesus which is called Christ?

18 (For he knew well, that for enuie they had deliue-
red him.

19 Also when he was set downe vpon the iudgement
seate, his wife sent to him, saying, Haue thou nothing to do
with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this
Mar.15.11. day in a dreame by reason of him.)

Luke 23.18. 20 *But the chiefe Priestes and the Elders had perswa-
Iohn 18.40. ded the people that they should aske Barabbas, and de-
Act.13.28. stroy Iesus.

21 The

The gouernour answered, and said vnto them,
which of the twaine will ye that I let loose vnto you?
They said Barabbas.
Pilate said vnto them, What shall I doe then with
Jesus which is called Christ? They all said to him, Let him
be crucified.
Then said the gouernour, But what euill hath hee
done? Then they cryed the more, saying, Let him be cru-
cified.
When Pilate saw that he anayled nothing, but that
rather a tumult was made, he tooke water and washed his
hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the
blood of this iust man: looke you to it.
Then answered all the people, and said, His blood
be on vs and our children.
Then let he Barabbas loose vnto them, & scourged
Jesus, and deliuered him to be crucified.
¶ Then the souldiers of the gouernour tooke Iesus *Mar.* 15. 16.
into the common hall, and gathered about him the whole *Iohn* 19. 2.
band.
And they stripped him, and put about him a skarlet
robe.
And platted a crowne of thornes, and put it vpon
his head, and a reede in his right hand, and bowed their
knees before him, and mocked him, saying, God saue thee
King of Iewes.
And they spitted vpon him, and tooke a reede, and smote
him on the head.
And when they had mocked him, they tooke the
robe from him, and put his owne rayment on him, and led
him away to crucifie him.
*And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, *Mar.* 15. 21.
named Simon: him they compelled to beare his crosse. *Luke* 23. 26.
*And when they came vnto the place called Golgo- *Mar.* 15. 22.
tha (that is to say, the place of *dead mens* skulles.) *Iohn* 19. 17.
They gaue him vineger to drinke, mingled with gall:
and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drinke.
¶ And when they had crucified him, they parted his
garments, and did cast lottes, that it might be fulfilled, *Psal.* 22. 18.
which was spoken by the Prophet, They deuided my gar- *Mar.* 15. 24.
ments among them, and vpon my vesture did cast lottes.
And sitting downe, they watched him there.
¶ They set vp also ouer his head his cause written,

THIS IS IESVS THE KING OF THE IEWES.

38 ¶ And there were two theeues crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 And they that passed by, reuiled him, wagging their heads,

Iohn 2.19. 40 And saying, * Thou that destroiest the temple, and buildest it in three daies, saue thy selfe: if thou be ỹ Sonne of God, come downe from the crosse.

41 Likewise also the hie Priests mocking him, with the Scribes, and Elders, and Pharises, said,

42 He saued others, *but* he can not saue himselfe: if he be the king of Israel, let him nowe come downe from the crosse, and we will beleeue in him.

Psal.22.9. 43 * He trusteth in God, let him deliuer him now, if he wil haue him: for he said, I am the sonne of God.

44 The selfe same thing also the theeues which were crucified with him, cast in his teeth.

45 Nowe from the sixth houre was there darkenesse ouer all the land, vnto the ninth houre.

Psal.22.1. 46 And about the ninth houre Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, saying, * Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

47 And some of them that stoode there, when they heard it, said, This man calleth Elias.

Psal.69.22 48 And straightway one of them ranne, and tooke a spondge, and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke.

49 Other said, Let be: let vs see, if Elias will come and saue him.

50 Then Iesus cryed agayne with a loude voyce, and yeelded vp the ghost.

2.Chro.3.14 51 And beholde, * the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the stones were clouen.

52 And the graues did open themselues, and many bodies of the Saintes, which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the graues after his resurrection, and went into the holy Citie, and appeared vnto many.

54 When the Centurion, and they that were with him watching Iesus, sawe the earthquake, and the thinges that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truely this was the Sonne of God.

55 ¶ And

55 ¶And many women were there, beholding him a farre off, which had folowed Iesus from Galile, ministring vnto him.

56 Among whom was Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of Iames, and Ioses, and the mother of Zebedeus sonnes.

57 ¶*And when the euen was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Ioseph, who had also himselfe bene Iesus disciple. *Mar.* 15.42. *luke* 23. 50. *iohn* 19.38.

58 He went to Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be deliuered.

59 So Ioseph tooke the body, & wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth,

60 And put it in his newe tombe, which he had hewen out in a rocke, and rolled a great stone to the doore of the sepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie sitting ouer against the sepulchre.

62 ¶Nowe the next day that folowed the Preparation *of the Sabbath*, the hie Priestes and Pharises assembled to Pilate,

63 And said, Sir, we remember that that deceiuer said, while he was yet aliue, Within three dayes I will rise.

64 Commande therefore, that the sepulchre be made sure vntill the thirde day, lest his disciples come by nyght, and steale him away, and say vnto the people, He is risen from the dead: so shall the last errour be worse then the first.

65 Then Pilate said vnto them, Ye haue a watch: goe, and make it sure as ye knowe.

66 And they went, and made the sepulchre sure with the watch, and sealed the stone.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 *The women goe to the sepulchre.* 2 *The Angel.* 9 *The women see Christ.* 18 *He sendeth his Apostles to preache.*

NOwe* in the end of the Sabbath, when the first *day* of the weeke began to dawne, Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie came to see the sepulchre, *Mark.* 16.9. *iohn* 20. 11.

2 And beholde, there was a great earthquake: for the Angel of the Lord descended from heauen, and came and rolled backe the stone from the doore, and sate vpon it.

3 And his countenance was like lightning, and his rayment white as snowe.

4 And for feare of him, the keepers were aſtonied, and became as dead men.

5 But the Angel anſwered, and ſaide to the women, Feare ye not: for I knowe that ye ſeeke Ieſus which was crucified:

6 He is not here, for he is riſen, as he ſaide: come, ſee the place where the Lord was laid,

7 And goe quickly, and tell his diſciples that he is ryſen from the dead: and beholde, he goeth before you into Galile: there ye ſhall ſee him: loe, I haue tolde you.

8 So they departed quickely from the ſepulchre, with feare and great ioy, and did runne to bring his diſciples worde.

9 And as they went to tell his diſciples, beholde, Ieſus alſo met them, ſaying, God ſaue you. And they came, and tooke him by the feete, and worſhipped him.

10 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto them, Be not afraide. Goe, and tell my brethren, that they goe into Galile, and there ſhall they ſee me.

11 ¶Now when they were gone, beholde, ſome of the watche came into the citie, and ſhewed vnto the hie Prieſts all the things that were done,

12 And they gathered them together with the Elders, and tooke counſel, and gaue large money vnto ỹ ſouldiers,

13 Saying, Say, His diſciples came by night, and ſtole him away while we ſlept.

14 And if this matter come before the Gouernour to be heard, we will perſwade him, and ſo vſe the matter that you ſhall not neede to care.

15 So they tooke ỹ money, & did as they were taught: and this ſaying is noiſed among the Iewes vnto this day.

16 ¶Then the eleuen diſciples went into Galile, into a mountaine, where Ieſus had appointed them.

17 And when they ſaw him, they worſhipped him: but ſome doubted.

Chap. 11. 27 *Iohn* 17. 2. *Hebr.* 1. 2. 18 And Ieſus came, and ſpake vnto them, ſaying, * All power is giuen vnto me in heauen, and in earth.

Mar. 16. 15. 19 * Goe therefore, and teache all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and the Sonne, and the holy Ghoſt,

Iohn 14. 16. 20 Teaching them to obſerue all things, whatſoeuer I haue commanded you: and lo, * I am with you alway, vntil the ende of the worlde, AMEN.

THE

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORDing to Marke.

CHAP. I.

Iohn baptizeth. 6 His apparell and meate. 9 Iesus is baptized. 12 He is tempted. 14 He preacheth the Gospel. 21 an 39 He teacheth in the Synagogues. 23 He healeth one that had a deuil. 29 Peters mother in lawe. 32 Many diseased persons. 40 The Leper.

THE beginning of the Gospel of Iesus Christ, the sonne of God:

2 As it is written in the Prophetes, *Beholde, I sende my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee, *Malac. 3. 1.*

3 *The voyce of him that crieth in the wildernesse is, Prepare the way of the Lorde: make his paths straight. *Isai. 40. 3. luke 3. 4. iohn 1. 15.*

4 *Iohn did baptize in the wildernes, and preache the baptisme of amendement of life, for remission of sinnes. *Matth. 3. 1.*

5 And all the countrey of Iudea, and they of Hierusalem went out vnto him, and were all baptized of him in the riuer Iordan, confessing their sinnes.

6 *Now Iohn was clothed with camels heare, & with a girdle of a skinne about his loynes: and he did eate *locustes and wilde hony, *Matth. 3. 4. Leuit. 11. 22*

7 *And preached, saying, A stronger then I, commeth after me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to stoupe downe, and vnloose. *Matth. 3. 11 luke 3. 16. iohn. 1. 26.*

8 Trueth it is, I haue baptized you with water: but he will baptize you with the holy Ghost. *acts. 1. 5. & 24. & 11.*

9 ¶*And it came to passe in those dayes, that IESVS came from Nazareth, *a citie* of Galile, and was baptized of Iohn in Iordan. *16. & 19. 4. Matth. 3. 13. luke 3. 21.*

10 And assoone as he was come out of the water, *Iohn* sawe the heauens clouen in twaine, and the holy Ghost descending vpon him like a doue. *iohn 1. 33.*

11 Then there was a voyce from heauen, *saying*, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

12 *And immediatly the spirite driueth him into the wildernesse. *Matth. 4. 1. luke 4. 1.*

13 And *hebre. 2. 18*

13 And he was there in the wildernesse fourtie dayes, and was tempted of Satan: he was also with the wilde beastes, and the Angels ministred vnto him.

*Matth.*4.12 *luke* 4.14. *Iohn* 4.43. 14 ¶ *Nowe after that Iohn was committed *to prison*, Iesus came into Galile, preaching the Gospel of the kingdome of God,

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent and beleeue the Gospel.

*Matth.*4.18 *luke* 5. 2. 16 ¶ *And as he walked by the sea of Galile, he sawe Simon, and Andrewe his brother, casting a nette into the sea, (for they were fishers.)

17 Then Iesus said vnto them, Followe me, and I will make you to be fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsooke their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a litle further thence, he sawe Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother, as they were in the ship, mending their nettes.

20 And anon he called them: and they left their father Zebedeus in the ship with his hired seruants, & went their way after him.

*Matth.*4.13. *luke* 4.31. 21 ¶ So* they entred into Capernaum, and straightway on the Sabbath day he entred into the Synagogue, and taught.

*Matth.*7.28 *luke* 4. 32. 22 And they were astonied at his doctrine, *for he taught them as one that had authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

23 ¶ And there was in their Synagogue a man, in who was an vncleane spirit, and he cryed out,

24 Saying, Ah, what haue we to doe with thee, O Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I knowe thee what thou art, *euen* that holy one of God.

25 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And the vncleane spirite tare him, and cryed with a loude voyce, and came out of him.

27 And they were all amased, so that they demanded one of another, saying, What thing is this? what newe doctrine is this? for he commandeth euen the foule spirits with authoritie, and they obey him.

28 And immediatly his fame spred abroade throughout all the region bordering on Galile.

*Matth.*8.14 *luke* 4. 38. 29 ¶ * And assoone as they were come out of the Synagogue, they entred into the house of Simon and Andrew, with

with Iames and Iohn.

30 And Simons wiues mother lay ſicke of a feuer, and anon they tolde him of her.

31 And he came and tooke her by the hand, and lifted her vp, and the feuer forſooke her by and by, and ſhe miniſtred vnto them.

32 And when euen was come, at what time the ſunne ſetteth, they brought to him all that were diſeaſed, and them that were poſſeſſed with deuils.

33 And the whole citie was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed many that were ſicke of diuers diſeaſes: and he caſt out many deuils, and ſuffered not the deuils to ſay that they knewe him.

35 And in ỹ morning very early before day, *Ieſus* aroſe and went out into a ſolitarie place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed earefully after him.

37 And when they had found him, they ſaid vnto him, All men ſeeke for thee.

38 Then he ſaid vnto them, Let vs goe into the next townes, that I may preache there alſo: for I came out for that purpoſe.

39 And he preached in their Synagogues, throughout all Galile, and caſt the deuils out.

40 ¶ *And there came a leper to him, beſeeching him, and kneeled downe vnto him, & ſaid to him, If thou wilt, thou canſt make me cleane. *Matth.* 8. 2. *Luke* 5. 12.

41 And Ieſus had compaſsion, and put forth his hand, and touched him, and ſaid to him, I will: be thou cleane.

42 And aſſoone as he had ſpoken, immediatly the leproſie departed from him, and he was made cleane.

43 And after he had giuen him a ſtraight commandement, he ſent him away forthwith,

44 And ſayd vnto him, See thou ſay nothing to any mã, but get thee hence, and ſhewe thy ſelfe to the * Prieſt, and offer for thy clenſing thoſe thinges, which Moſes commanded, for a teſtimoniall vnto them. *Leuit.* 14. 4.

45 But when he was departed, *he began to tell many things, and to publiſhe the matter: ſo that Ieſus coulde no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in deſert places: and they came to him from euery quarter. *Luke* 5. 15.

CHAP. II.

3 and 4 One sicke of the palsie, having his sinnes forgiuen him, is healed. 14 Matthewe is called. 19 Fastings and afflictions are foretolde. 23 The disciples plucke the eares of corne. 26 The shewebread.

Matth.9.1. Luke 5.18. AFter * *a fewe* dayes, he entred into Capernaum againe, and it was noysed that he was in the house.

2 And anon, many gathered together, in so much that the places about the doore couldē not receiue any more: and he preached the word vnto them.

3 And there came vnto him, that brought one sicke of the palsie, borne of foure men.

4 And because they couldē not come nere vnto him for the multitude, they vncouered the roofe of the house where he was: and when they had broken it open, they let downe the bed, wherein the sicke of the palsie laye.

5 Nowe when Iesus saw their faith, he said to the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

6 And there were certaine of ỹ Scribes, sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doeth this man speake such blasphemies? *Iob 14.4. Esa.43.25.* * who can forgiue sinnes, but God onely?

8 And immediatly when Iesus perceiued in his spirit, that thus they reasoned with themselues, he said vnto thē, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsie, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee? or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and walke?

10 But that ye may know, that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (he said vnto the sicke of the palsie.)

11 I say vnto thee, Arise and take vp thy bed, and get thee hence into thine owne house.

12 And by and by he arose, and tooke vp his bed, and went forth before them all, in so much that they were all amased, & glorified God, saying, We neuer saw such a thing.

13 ¶Then he went forth againe towarde the sea, and all the people resorted vnto him, and he taught them.

Matth.9.9. Luke 5.27. 14 * And as Iesus passed by, he sawe Leui *the sonne* of Alpheus sit at the receite of custome, & saide vnto him, Followe me. And he arose, and followed him.

15 ¶And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at table in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sate at table also with Iesus,

Iesus,& his disciples: for there were many ỹ folowed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharises sawe him eate with the Publicanes & sinners, they said vnto his disciples, How is it, that he eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 Now when Iesus heard it, he sayde vnto them, The whole haue no neede of the Physician, but ỹ sicke. * I came not to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance. *1.Tim.1.13.*

18 * And the disciples of Iohn, and the Pharises did fast, and came & said vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharises, fast, and thy disciples fast not? *Matth.9.14 luke 5.33.*

19 And Iesus sayde vnto them, Can the children of the marriage chamber fast, whiles the bridegrome is with them? as long as they haue the bridegrome with them, they can not fast.

20 But the dayes wil come, when the bridegrome shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

21 Also no man soweth a piece of new cloth in an olde garment: for els the newe piece that filled it vp, taketh away *somewhat* from the olde, and the breache is worse.

22 Likewise, no man putteth new wine into old vessels: for els the newe wine breaketh the vessels, and the wine runneth out, and the vessels are lost: but newe wine must be put into new vessels.

23 ¶ * And it came to passe as hee went through the corne on the Sabbath daye, that his disciples, as they went on their way, began to plucke the eares of corne. *Matth.12.1 luke 6.1.*

24 And the Pharises sayde vnto him, Beholde, why doe they on the Sabbath day, that which is not lawful?

25 And he sayde to them, Haue yee neuer read what * Dauid did, when he had neede, and was an hungred, *both* he, and they that were with him? *1.Sam.21.6.*

26 Howe he went into the house of God, in the dayes of Abiathar the hie Priest, & did eat the shew bread, which were not lawfull to eate, but for the * Priests, and gaue also to them which were with him? *Exod. 29.33 leuit.8.31.*

27 And he saide to them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath. *and 24.9.*

28 Wherefore the Sonne of man is Lorde, euen of the Sabbath.

CHAP. III.

1 *The withered hand is healed.* 6. *The Pharises consult with the Herodians.* 10 *Many are healed by touching Christ.*

11 *An*

11 *At his sight the deuils fall downe before him.* 14 *The twelue Apostles.* 24 *The kingdome deuided against it self.* 29 *Blasphemie against the holy Ghost.* 33 *Christs parents.*

Mat. 12. 9. *luke* 6. 6. AND * he entred againe into the Synagogue, and there was a man which had a withered hand.

2 And they watched him, whether he would heale him on the Sabbath day, that they might accuse him.

3 Then he sayde vnto the man which had the withered hand, Arise: *stand forth* in the middes.

4 And he said to them, Is it lawfull to do a good deede on the Sabbath day, or to do euill? to saue the life, or to kill? But they held their peace.

5 Then he looked round about on them angerly, mourning also for the hardnes of their hearts, & said to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: And his hand was restored, as whole as the other.

6 ¶ And the Pharises departed, & straightway gathered a councill with the Herodians against him, that they might destroy him.

7 But Iesus auoyded with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude followed him from Galile, & from Iudea,

8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea, and beyond Iordan: and they that dwelled about Tyrus & Sidon, when they had heard what great things he did, came vnto him in great number.

9 And he commanded his disciples, that a litle shippe shoulde wayte for him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed many, in so much that they preassed vpon him, to touche him, as many as had plagues.

11 And when the vncleane spirits sawe him, they fell downe before him, and cryed, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God.

12 And he sharpely rebuked them, to the ende they should not vtter him.

Chap. 6. 7. *mat.* 10. 1. *luke* 9. 1. 13 ¶ * Then he went vp into a mountaine, and called vnto him whom he would, and they came vnto him.

14 And he appointed twelue that they should be with him, and that he might send them to preache,

15 And that they might haue power to heale sicknesses, and to cast out deuils.

16 And the first *was* Simon, & he named Simon, Peter.

17 Then Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn, Iames brother

ther(& surnamed them Boanerges,which is, the sonnes of thunder)

18 And Andrewe, and Philippe, and Bartlemewe, and Matthewe,and Thomas, and Iames,*the sonne* of Alpheus,& Thaddeus,and Simon the Cananite,

19 And Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him, & they came home.

20 And the multitude assembled againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread.

21 And when his kinsfolkes heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him:for they said that he was beside himself.

22 ¶*And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, sayd, He hath Beelzebub, and through the prince of the deuils he casteth out deuils. *Mat.*9.34. & 12.24. *luke* 11.15.

23 But he called them vnto him,and sayd vnto them in parables,How can Satan driue out Satan?

24 For if a kingdome be deuided against it selfe, that kingdome can not stand.

25 Or if a house be deuided against it selfe, that house can not continue.

26 So if Satan make insurrection against himselfe, and be deuided,he can not endure,but is at an ende.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, & take away his goods, except he first binde that strong man, and then spoyle his house.

28 ¶* Verely I say vnto you, all sinnes shalbe forgiuen vnto the children of men, & blasphemies, wherewith they blaspheme: *Mat.*12.31. *luk.*12.10. 1.*ioh.* 5.16.

29 But he that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, shall neuer haue forgiuenes, but is culpable of eternall damnation,

30 Because they said,He had an vncleane spirit.

31 ¶* Then came his brethren and mother,and stoode without,and sent vnto him,and called him. *Mat.*12.46. *luk.*8.19.

32 And the people sate about him,& they said vnto him, Behold,thy mother,& thy brethren seeke for thee without.

33 But he answered them, saying, Who is my mother and my brethren?

34 And he looked rounde about on them, which sate in compasse about him,and sayd,Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoeuer doeth the will of God, he is my brother,and my sister,and mother.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

4 *The parable of the ſower,* 14 *and the meaning thereof.* 19 *Thornes.* 21 *The candle.* 26 *Of him that ſowed, & that ſlept.* 31 *The graine of muſtard ſeede.* 38 *Chriſt ſleepeth in the ſhippe.*

*Mat.*13.1. *Luke*8.4. AND * he beganne againe to teache by the ſea ſide, and there gathered vnto him a great multitude, ſo that he entred into a ſhip, and ſate in the ſea, & all the people was by the ſea ſide on the land.

2 And he taught them many thinges in parables, and ſayd vnto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken: Behold, there went out a ſower to ſowe.

4 And it came to paſſe as he ſowed, that ſome fell by the way ſide, and the foules of the heauen came, and deuoured it vp.

5 And ſome fell on ſtonie grounde, where it had not much earth, and by and by ſprang vp, becauſe it had not depth of earth.

6 But aſſoone as the ſunne was vp, it was burnt vp, and becauſe it had not roote, it withered away.

7 And ſome fel among the thornes, & the thornes grew vp, and choked it, ſo that it gaue no fruite.

8 Some againe fell in good ground, & did yeelde fruite that ſprong vp, and grew, and it brought forth, ſome thirtie fold, ſome ſixtie fold, and ſome an hundreth folde.

9 Then he ſaid vnto them, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelue, asked him of the parable.

11 And he ſaid vnto them, To you it is giuen to knowe the myſterie of the kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all things be done in parables,

*Eſa.*6.9. *mat.*13.14. *luk.*8.10. *ioh.*12.40. *act.*28.26. *rom.*11.8. 12 *That they ſeeing, may ſee, & not diſcerne: and they hearing, may heare, and not vnderſtād, leſt at any time they ſhould turne, and their ſinnes ſhould be forgiuen them.

13 Againe he ſaid vnto them, Perceiue ye not this parable? how then ſhould ye vnderſtand all *other* parables?

14 The ſower ſoweth the worde.

15 And theſe are they that *receiue the ſeed* by the waies ſide, in whome the worde is ſowen: but when they haue heard it, Satan commeth immediatly, and taketh away the word that was ſowen in their hearts.

16 And likewiſe they that receiue the ſeede in ſtonie ground,

ound, are they, which when they haue heard the worde, straightwayes receiue it with gladnes.

17 Yet haue they no roote in themselues, and endure but a time: *for* when trouble and persecution ariseth for the word, immediatly they be offended.

18 Also they that receiue the seed among the thornes, are such as heare the word:

19 But the cares of this worlde, and the * deceitfulnes of riches, and the lustes of other thinges enter in, and choke the word, and it is vnfruitefull. *1.Tim.6.17.*

20 But they that haue receiued seede in good ground, are they that heare the word, & receiue it, and bring forth fruite: one *corne* thirtie, another sixtie, & some an hundreth.

21 ¶Also he said vnto them, *Commeth the candle in, to be put vnder a bushel, or vnder the bed, and not to be put on a candlesticke? *Mat.5.15. luk.8.16. & 11.33.*

22 *For there is nothing hid, that shall not be opened: neither is there a secret, but that it shal come to light. *Mat.10.26. luke 8.17.*

23 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare. *& 12.2.*

24 And he said vnto them, Take heede what ye heare. *With what measure ye mete, it shalbe measured vnto you: and vnto you that heare, shall more be giuen. *Mat.7.2. luke 6.38.*

25 *For vnto him that hath, shall it be giuen, and from him that hath not, shalbe taken away, euen that he hath. *Mat.13.12. & 25.29.*

26 ¶Also he said, So is the kingdome of God, as if a man should cast seede in the ground, *luke 8.18. & 19.26.*

27 And should sleepe, and rise vp night & day, and the seede should spring and grow vp, he not knowing how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruite of it self, first the blade, then the eares, after that full corne in the eares.

29 And assoone as the fruite sheweth it selfe, anon hee putteth in the sickle, because the haruest is come.

30 ¶* He said moreouer, Whereunto shal we liken the kingdom of God? or with what cõparison shal we cõpare it? *Mat.13.31. luke 13.19.*

31 *It is* like a grayne of mustard seede, which when it is sowen in the earth, is the least of all seedes that be in the earth:

32 But after that it is sowen, it groweth vp, & is greatest of all herbes, and beareth great branches, so that the foules of heauen may build vnder the shadow of it.

33 And * with manie such parables hee preached the word vnto them, as they were able to heare it. *Mat.13.34.*

34 And without parables spake he nothing vnto them: but

but he expounded all things to his diſciples apart.

Mat. 8.23. *luke* 8.22. 35 ¶ *Now the ſame day when euen was come, he ſ vnto them, Let vs paſſe ouer vnto the other ſide.

36 And they left the multitude, & tooke him as he w in the ſhip, & there were alſo with him other litle ſhipp

37 And there aroſe a great ſtorme of winde, and t waues daſhed into the ſhip, ſo that it was now full.

38 And he was in the ſterne aſleepe on a pillowe: a they awoke him, and ſaid to him, Maſter, careſt thou not t we periſh?

39 And he roſe vp, and rebuked the winde, and ſayd vnto the ſea, Peace, and be ſtill. So the winde ceaſed, and was a great calme.

40 Then he ſayde vnto them, Why are ye ſo feareful how is it that ye haue no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and ſayd one to an ther, Who is this, that both the winde and ſea obey him?

CHAP. V.

2 One poſſeſſed is healed. 7 The deuil acknowledgeth Chri 9 A legion of deuilles 13 entreth into ſwine. 22 Iai daughter. 25 A woman is healed of a bloody iſſue. 26 P ſitions. 34 Faith. 39 Sleepe.

Mat. 8.28. *luke* 8.26. AND *they came ouer to the other ſide of the ſea into the countrey of the Gadarens.

2 And when he was come out of the ſhippe, there met him incontinently out of the graues, a man which had an vncleane ſpirite:

3 Who had his abiding among the graues, & no man could binde him, no not with chaines,

4 Becauſe that when he was often bounde with fetters and chaines, he plucked the chaines aſunder, and brake the fetters in pieces, neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwayes both night and daye he cryed in the mountaines, and in the graues, and ſtrooke him ſelfe with ſtones.

6 And when he ſawe Ieſus a farre off, he ran, and worſhipped him,

7 And cryed with a loude voyce, and ſaide, What haue I to doe with thee, Ieſus the Sonne of the moſt hygh God? I will that thou ſweare to mee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he ſayde vnto him, Come out of the man, thou vncleane ſpirite.)

9 And

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? and he answe-
red, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And he prayed him instantly, that he woulde not
send them away out of the countrey.

11 Nowe there was there in the mountaines a great
heard of swine feeding.

12 And all the deuils besought him, saying, Send vs in-
to the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And incontinently Iesus gaue them leaue. Then the
vncleane spirits went out, and entred into the swine, & the
heard ranne headlong from the high banke into the sea,
(and there were about two thousand swine) and they were
choked vp in the sea.

14 And the swineheardes fled, and tolde it in the citie,
and in the countrey, and they came out to see what it was
that was done.

15 And they came to Iesus, and saw him that had bene
possessed with the deuil, & had the legion, sit both clothed,
and in his right minde: and they were afrayde.

16 And they that sawe it, tolde them what was done
to him that was possessed with the deuill, and concerning
the swine.

17 Then they began to pray him, that he would depart
from their coastes.

18 And when he was come into the shippe, he that had
bene possessed with the deuil, prayed him that he might be
with him.

19 Howbeit, Iesus would not suffer him, but sayde vnto
him, Go thy way home to thy friends, and shew them what
great thinges the Lorde hath done vnto thee, and *how* he
hath had compassion on thee.

20 So he departed, and began to publish in Decapolie,
what great thinges Iesus had done vnto him: and all men
did marueile.

21 ¶ And when Iesus was come ouer againe by ship vn-
to the other side, a great multitude gathered together to
him, and he was neere vnto the sea.

22 * And beholde, there came one of the rulers of the *Mat.* 9. 18.
Synagogue, whose name was Iairus: and when he saw him, *Luke* 8. 41.
he fell downe at his feete,

23 And besought him instatly, saying, My litle daughter
lyeth at point of death: *I pray thee* that thou wouldest come
& lay thine handes on her, that she may be healed, and liue.

24 Then

24 Then he went with him, and a great multitude fo-
lowed him, and thronged him.

25 (And there was a certaine woman, which was di-
sed with an issue of blood twelue yeres,

26 And had suffered many things of many physici-
and had spent all that she had, and it auayled her not-
but she became much worse.

27 When shee had heard of Iesus, shee came in
preasse behinde, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I may but touche his clothes, I
be whole.

29 And straightway the course of her blood was
vp, & she felt in her body, that she was healed of that pl-

30 And immediatly when Iesus did knowe in him
the vertue that went out of him, he turned him rou-
bout in the preasse, & saide, Who hath touched my clo-

31 And his disciples said vnto him, Thou seest the m-
tude throng thee, and sayest thou, Who did touche me?

32 And he looked rounde about, to see her that
done that.

33 And the woman feared & trembled: for shee kn-
what was done in her, and she came and fell downe bef-
him, and told him the whole trueth.

34 And he sayde to her, Daughter, thy faith hath m-
thee whole: go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.)

35 While he yet spake, there came from the *house* r-
of the Synagogues house *certaine* which said, Thy da-
ter is dead: why diseasest thou the Master any further?

36 Assoone as Iesus heard that worde spoken, he sa-
vnto the ruler of the Synagogue, Be not afraid: only bele-

37 And he suffered no man to folowe him saue Pet-
Iames, and Iohn the brother of Iames.

38 So he came vnto the house of the ruler of the Sy-
gogue, and sawe the tumult, and them that wept and wa-
led greatly.

39 And he went in, & said vnto thē, Why make ye thi-
trouble, and weepe? the childe is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laught him to scorne: but he put them a-
out, & tooke the father, & the mother of the childe, & the-
that were with him, and entred in where the childe laye-

41 And tooke the childe by the hande, and sayde vn-
her, Talitha cumi, which is by interpretation, Maiden, I-
vnto thee, arise.

42 An-

And ſtraightway the mayden aroſe, and walked: for
s of the age of twelue yeeres, and they were aſtonied
measure.

And hee charged them ſtraitly that no man ſhould
of it, and commanded to giue her meate.

CHAP. VI.

Chriſt preaching in his countrey, his owne contemne him. 6 The vnbeliefe of the Nazarites. 7 The Apoſtles are ſent. 13 They caſt out deuils: they anoint the ſicke with oyle. 14 Herods opinion of Chriſt. 18 The cauſe of Iohns impriſonment. 22 Dauncing. 27 Iohn beheaded, 29 buried. 30 The Apoſtles returne from preaching. 34 Chriſt teacheth in the deſert. 37 He feedeth the people with fiue loaues. 48 The Apoſtles are troubled on the ſea. 56 The ſicke that touche Chriſtes garment, are healed.

And *he departed thence, and came into his owne coun- *Mat.*13. 54.
trey, and his diſciples followed him. *luke* 4.16.

And when the Sabbath was come, he began to teache
the Synagogue, and many that heard him, were aſtonied,
ſaid, From whence hath this man theſe things? & what
ome is this that is giuen vnto him, that euen ſuch great
kes are done by his handes!

Is not this that carpenter Maries ſonne, the brother
mes and Ioſes, and of Iuda and Simon? and are not his
s here with vs? And they were offended in him.

Then Ieſus ſaide vnto them, A * Prophet is not with- *Mat.*13.57.
nour, but in his owne countrey, and among his owne *luke* 4.24.
d, and in his owne houſe. *iohn* 4.44.

And he could there do no great workes, ſaue that he
s handes vpon a fewe ſicke folke, and healed *them.*

And hee marueiled at their vnbeliefe, * and went a- *Mat.*4.23.
by the townes on euery ſide, teaching. *luke* 13.22.

¶ * And he called vnto him the twelue, and began to *Chap.*3.14.
them foorth two and two, and gaue them power ouer *mat.* 10.1.
eane ſpirites, *luke* 9.1.

And commanded them, that they ſhould take nothing
their iourney, ſaue a ſtaffe onely: neither ſcrip, neither
d, neither money in their girdels:

But that they ſhould be ſhod with *ſandales, and that *Acts*,12. 8.
ſhould not put on two coates.

And he ſaid vnto them, Whereſoeuer ye ſhall enter
an houſe, there abide till ye depart thence.

*Mat.*10. 14. *Luke* 9.5. *Acts* 13.51 *and* 18.6.

11 *And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence, *shake off the dust that is vnder your feete, for a witnes vnto them. Verely I say vnto you, it shalbe easier for Sodom or Gomorrha at the day of iudgment, then for that citie.

12 ¶ And they went out, and preached, that *men* should amend their liues.

*Iam.*5.14.

13 And they cast out many deuils: and they *anointed many that were sicke, with oyle, and healed *them*.

*Mat.*14.1. *Luke* 9.7.

14 ¶ *Then king Herod heard *of him* (for his name was made manifest) and saide, Iohn Baptist is risen againe from the dead, and therefore great workes are wrought by him.

15 Other said, It is Elias, and some saide, It is a Prophet, or as one of those Prophets.

Luke 3.19.

16 *So when Herod heard it, he said, It is Iohn whom I beheaded: he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himselfe had sent foorth, and had taken Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, which was his brother Philips wife, because he had married her.

*Leui.*18.16. *and* 20.21.

18 For Iohn saide vnto Herod, *It is not lawfull for thee to haue thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias layed wayte against him, and would haue killed him, but she could not:

20 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing that hee *was* a iust man, and an holy, and reuerenced him, and when hee heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 But the time being conuenient, when Herod on his birth day made a banket to his princes and captaines, and chiefe estates of Galile:

22 And the daughter of the same Herodias came in, and daunced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate at table together, the king said vnto the maid, Aske of me what thou wilt, and I wil giue it thee.

23 And he sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I wil giue it thee, *euen* vnto the halfe of my kingdom.

*Mat.*14.8.

24 *So she went foorth, and said to her mother, What shal I aske? And she said, Iohn Baptists head.

25 Then she came in straightway with haste vnto the king, and asked, saying, I would that thou shouldest giue me *euen* now in a charger the head of Iohn Baptist.

26 Then the king was very sorie: *yet* for his othes sake, and for their sakes which sate at table with him, hee would not refuse her.

27 And

27 And immediatly the king sent the hangman, & gaue
ge that his head should be brought in. So hee went and
ded him in the prison,
28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to
maid, and the maid gaue it to her mother.
29 And when his disciples heard it, they came & tooke
his body, and put it in a tombe.
30 ¶*And the Apostles gathered themselues together *Luke 9.10.*
Iesus, and tolde him al things, both what they had done,
and what they had taught.
31 And he said vnto them, Come ye apart into the wil-
ernes, and rest a while: for there were many commers &
ers, that they had not leasure to eate.
32 *So they wēt by ship out of ȳ way into a desert place. *Mat.14.13.*
33 But the people sawe them when they departed, and *luke 9.10.*
knewe him, and ranne afoote thither out of all cities,
came thither before them, and assembled vnto him.
34 *Then Iesus went out, and sawe a great multitude, & *Mat.9.36.*
cōpassion on them, because they were like sheepe which *and 14.14.*
no shepheard: *and he began to teach thē many things. *Luke 9.11.*
35 * And when the day was nowe farre spent, his disci- *Mat. 14.15.*
es came vnto him, saying, This is a desert place, and nowe
e day is farre passed.
36 Let them depart that they may go into the countrey
townes about, and bye them bread: for they haue no-
ng to eate.
37 But he answered, and saide vnto them, Giue ye them
ete. And they saide vnto him, Shal we goe, and bye two
ndreth penie worth of bread, and giue them to eate?
38 * Then he said vnto them, Howe many loaues haue *Mat.14.17.*
goe and looke. And when they knewe it, they said, Fiue, *luke 9.13.*
two fishes. *iohn 6.9.*
39 So he commanded them to make them all sit downe
companies vpon the greene grasse.
40 Then they sate downe by rowes, by hundreds, and by
ties.
41 And he tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, &
ooked vp to heauen, & gaue thankes, and brake the loaues,
d gaue them to his disciples to set before them, and the
o fishes he deuided among them all.
42 So they did all eate, and were satisfied.
43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of the frag-
ments, and of the fishes.

44 And they ỹ had eaten, were about fiue thousand m

45 ¶ And straightway he caused his disciples to go i to the ship, and to go before vnto the other side vnto Be saida, while he sent away the people.

46 Then assoone as he had sent them away, he depart into a mountaine to pray.

*Mat.*14.23. *iohn* 6.15. 47 * And when euen was come, the shippe was in th middes of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them troubled in rowing, (for the wi was contrary vnto them) and about the fourth watch of t night, he came vnto them, walking vpon the sea, and woul haue passed by them.

49 And when they saw him walking vpon the sea, th supposed it had bene a spirit, and cryed out.

50 For they all sawe him, and were sore afraid: but an he talked with them, and saide vnto them, Be ye of goo comfort: it is I, be not afraid.

51 Then he went vp vnto them into the shippe, and th winde ceased, and they were much more amased in the selues, and marueiled.

52 For they had not considered *the matter* of ỹ loaue because their hearts were hardened.

*Mat.*14.34. 53 ¶ * And they came ouer, and went into the land of Gennesaret, and arriued.

54 So when they were come out of the ship, straigh way they knewe him,

55 And ranne about throughout all that region rou about, *and* began to carie hither and thither in couches a that were sicke, where they heard that he was.

56 And whithersoeuer he entred into townes, or citie or villages, they laid their sicke in the streetes, and pray him that they might touche at the least the edge of his ga ment. And as many as touched him, were made whole.

CHAP. VII.

2 *The Apostles are found fault with, for eating with vnwa shen hands.* 4 *The Pharises traditions about washings.* Hy pocrites. 8 *Mens traditions more set by then Gods.* 10 P rents *must be honoured.* 14 *The things that do in deede d file a man.* 25 *The woman of Chanane.* 32 *The deafe dum man is healed.*

*Mat.*15.2. THen * gathered vnto him the Pharises, and certaine o the Scribes which came from Hierusalem.

2 And

2 And when they sawe some of his disciples eate meate
with cómon hands, (that is to say vnwashen) they cõplained.
3 (For the Pharises, and all the Iewes, except they wash
their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the Elders.
4 And *when they come* from the market, except they
wash, they eate not: and many other things there be, which
they haue taken vpon them to obserue, *as* the washing of
cuppes, and pottes, and of brasen vessels, and of beddes.)
5 Then asked him the Pharises & Scribes, Why walke
not thy disciples according to the tradition of the Elders,
but eate meate with vnwashen handes?
6 Then he answered and said vnto them, Surely * Esai *Isa.29.13.*
hath prophecied well of you, hypocrites, as it is written,
This people honoureth mee with lippes, but their heart is
farre away from me.
7 But they worship mee in vaine, teaching *for* doctrines
the commandements of men.
8 For ye lay the commandement of God apart, and ob-
serue the tradition of men, *as* the washing of pottes and of
cuppes, and many other such like things ye do.
9 And he said vnto them, Wel, ye reiect the commande-
ment of God that ye may obserue your owne tradition.
10 For Moses said, * Honour thy father and thy mother: *Exod.20.12*
and, * Whosoeuer shall speake euil of father or mother, let *deut. 5.16.*
him dye the death. *ephes.6.2.*
11 But ye say, If a man say to father or mother, Corban, *Exo. 21.17.*
that is, By the gift that is *offred* by mee, thou mayest haue *leui 20.9.*
profite, *he shal be free.* *prou. 20.20.*
12 So ye suffer him no more to do any thing for his fa-
ther, or his mother,
13 Making the worde of God of none authoritie, by
your tradition which ye haue ordeined: and ye doe many
such like things.
14 *Then he called the whole multitude vnto him, and *Mat.15.10.*
said vnto them, Hearken you all vnto me, and vnderstand.
15 There is nothing without a mã, that can defile him,
when it entreth into him: but the thinges which proceede
out of him, are they which defile the man.
16 If any haue eares to heare, let him heare.
17 And when he came into an house, *away* from the peo-
ple, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.
18 And he said vnto them, What? are ye without vn-
derstanding also? Doe ye not know that whatsoeuer thing

from without entreth into a man, cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but int
bellie, and goeth out into the draught which is the pu
of all meates?

20 Then he said, That which commeth out of man,
defileth man.

Gen. 6. 5. and 8. 21. 21 *For from within, *euen* out of the heart of men,
ceede euil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murthers,

22 Thefts, couetousnes, wickednes, deceit, vncleanes
a wicked eye, backbiting, pride, foolishnes.

23 All these euil things come from within, and de
a man.

Mat. 15. 21. 24 ¶*And from thence he rose, and went into the b
ders of Tyrus and Sidon, and entred into an house,
would that no man should haue knowen: but he could
be hid.

25 For a certaine woman, whose litle daughter ha
vncleane spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at his fe

26 (And the woman was a Greeke, a Syrophenissian
nation) and she besought him that hee would cast out
deuil out of her daughter.

27 But Iesus said vnto her, Let the children first be fe
for it is not good to take the childrens bread, and to ca
vnto whelpes.

28 Then she answered, and said vnto him, Trueth, Lo
yet in deede the whelpes eate vnder the table of the c
drens crummes.

29 Then he said vnto her, For this saying goe thy w
the deuil is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come home to her house, she fo
the deuil departed, and her daughter lying on the bed.

31 ¶ And hee departed againe from the coastes of
rus and Sidon, and came vnto the sea of Galile, through
middes of the coastes of Decapolis.

32 And they brought vnto him one that was deafe,
stambred in his speache, and prayed him to put his hand v
on him.

33 Then he tooke him aside from the multitude, and p
his fingers in his eares, and did spit, and touched his tong

34 And looking vp to heauen, he sighed, and said v
him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, & the strin
of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plaine.

36 And

36 And he commaunded them, that they ſhould tell no
man: but how much ſoeuer he forbad them, the more a great
ide they publiſhed it,

37 And were beyond meaſure aſtonied, ſaying, *He hath *Gene.1.31.
me all things wel: he maketh both the deafe to heare, and *eccle.39.21.
e dumme to ſpeake.

CHAP. VIII.

The myracle of the ſeuen loaues. 11 *The Iewes ſeeke ſigne.* 15 *To beware of the leauen of the Phariſes.* 22 *A blinde man healed.* 27 *The peoples ſundrie opinions of Chriſt.* 29 *The Apoſtles acknowledge Chriſt.* 31 *Hee foretelleth his death.* 33 *Peter, Satan.* 35 *To ſaue & loſe the life.* 38 *To be aſhamed of Chriſt.*

1 *In* thoſe dayes, when there was a very great multitude, *Mat.15.32.
and had nothing to eate, Ieſus called his diſciples to him,
and ſaid vnto them,

2 I haue compaſſion on the multitude, becauſe they
tarie nowe continued with mee three dayes, and haue no-
thing to eate.

3 And if I ſend them away faſting to their owne houſes,
they would faint by the way: for ſome of them came from
farre.

4 Then his diſciples anſwered him, Whēce can a man
ſatisfie theſe with bread here in the wildernes?

5 And he asked them, How many loaues haue ye? And
they ſaid, Seuen.

6 Then he commanded the multitude to ſit downe on
the ground: & he tooke the ſeuen loaues, & gaue thankes,
brake *them*, and gaue to his diſciples to ſet before *them*, and
they did ſet *them* before the people.

7 They had alſo a few ſmal fiſhes: & when he had giuen
thankes, he commanded them alſo to be ſet before *them*.

8 So they did eate, and were ſuffiſed, and they tooke vp
of the broken meate that was left, ſeuen baskets full.

9 (And they that had eaten, were about foure thou-
ſand) ſo he ſent them away.

10 ¶ *And anon hee entred into a ſhip with his diſci- *Mat.15.39.
ples, and came into the partes of Dalmanutha.

11 *And the Phariſes came foorth, and began to diſ- *Mat.16.1.
pute with him, ſeeking of him a ſigne from heauen, & temp-
ting him.

12 Then he ſighed deepely in his ſpirit, and ſaide, Why
doeth this generation ſeeke a ſigne? Verely I ſay vnto you,

*Mat.*10.14. *Luke* 9.5. *Acts* 13.51 *and* 18.6. 11 *And whosoeuer shall not receiue you, nor he[ar] you, when ye depart thence, *shake off the dust that is vn[der] your feete, for a witnes vnto them. Verely I say vnto yo[u] it shalbe easier for Sodom or Gomorrha at the day of iud[g]ment, then for that citie.

12 ¶ And they went out, and preached, that *men* shou[ld] amend their liues.

*Iam.*5.14. 13 And they cast out many deuils: and they *anointe[d] many that were sicke, with oyle, and healed *them*.

*Mat.*14.1. *Luke* 9.7. 14 ¶ *Then king Herod heard *of him* (for his name was made manifest) and saide, Iohn Baptist is risen againe fro[m] the dead, and therefore great workes are wrought by hi[m].

15 Other said, It is Elias, and some saide, It is a Prophe[t] or as one of those Prophets.

Luke 3.19. 16 *So when Herod heard it, he said, It is Iohn whom beheaded: he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himselfe had sent foorth, and had take[n] Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, which wa[s] his brother Philips wife, because he had married her.

*Leui.*18.16. *and* 20.21. 18 For Iohn saide vnto Herod, * It is not lawfull fo[r] thee to haue thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias layed wayte against him, an[d] would haue killed him, but she could not:

20 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing that hee *was* a iu[st] man, and an holy, and reuerenced him, and when hee hea[rd] him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 But the time being conuenient, when Herod on [his] birth day made a banket to his princes and captaines, an[d] chiefe estates of Galile:

22 And the daughter of the same Herodias came in, [and] daunced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate at table to[o] gether, the king said vnto the maid, Aske of me what thou wilt, and I wil giue it thee.

23 And he sware vnto her, What soeuer thou shalt aske of me, I wil giue it thee, *euen* vnto the halfe of my kingdo[m].

*Mat.*14.8. 24 * So she went foorth, and said to her mother, What shal I aske? And she said, Iohn Baptists head.

25 Then she came in straightway with haste vnto the king, and asked, saying, I would that thou shouldest giue me euen now in a charger the head of Iohn Baptist.

26 Then the king was very sorie: *yet* for his othes sake, and for their sakes which sate at table with him, hee would not refuse her.

27 And

27 And immediatly the king ſent the hangman, & gaue
ge that his head ſhould be brought in. So hee went and
ded him in the priſon,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to
maid, and the maid gaue it to her mother.

29 And when his diſciples heard it, they came & tooke
his body, and put it in a tombe.

30 ¶*And the Apoſtles gathered themſelues together *Luke 9.10.
Ieſus, and tolde him al things, both what they had done,
and what they had taught.

31 And he ſaid vnto them, Come ye apart into the wil-
dernes, and reſt a while: for there were many commers &
goers, that they had not leaſure to eate.

32 *So they wẽt by ſhip out of ỹ way into a deſert place. *Mat.14.13.

33 But the people ſawe them when they departed, and *luke 9.10.
many knewe him, and ranne afoote thither out of all cities,
and came thither before them, and aſſembled vnto him.

34 *Then Ieſus went out, and ſawe a great multitude, & *Mat.9.36.
had cõpaſſion on them, becauſe they were like ſheepe which *and 14.14.
had no ſhepheard: *and he began to teach thẽ many things. *Luke 9.11.

35 * And when the day was nowe farre ſpent, his diſci- *Mat. 14.15.
ples came vnto him, ſaying, This is a deſert place, and nowe
the day is farre paſſed.

36 Let them depart that they may go into the countrey
and townes about, and bye them bread: for they haue no-
thing to eate.

37 But he anſwered, and ſaide vnto them, Giue ye them
to eate. And they ſaide vnto him, Shal we goe, and bye two
hundreth penie worth of bread, and giue them to eate?

38 * Then he ſaid vnto them, Howe many loaues haue *Mat.14.17.
ye? goe and looke. And when they knewe it, they ſaid, Fiue, *luke 9.13.
and two fiſhes. *iohn 6.9.

39 So he commanded them to make them all ſit downe
by companies vpon the greene graſſe.

40 Then they ſate downe by rowes, by hundreds, and by
fifties.

41 And he tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fiſhes, &
looked vp to heauen, & gaue thankes, and brake the loaues,
and gaue them to his diſciples to ſet before them, and the
two fiſhes he deuided among them all.

42 So they did all eate, and were ſatisfied.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets full of the frag-
ments, and of the fiſhes.

44 And they ỹ had eaten, were about fiue thousand m

45 ¶ And straightway he caused his disciples to go i to the ship, and to go before vnto the other side vnto B saida, while he sent away the people.

46 Then assoone as he had sent them away, he depar into a mountaine to pray.

Mat.14.23. iohn 6.15. 47 * And when euen was come, the shippe was in th middes of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them troubled in rowing, (for the win was contrary vnto them) and about the fourth watch of th night, he came vnto them, walking vpon the sea, and woul haue passed by them.

49 And when they saw him walking vpon the sea, the supposed it had bene a spirit, and cryed out.

50 For they all sawe him, and were sore afraid: but an he talked with them, and saide vnto them, Be ye of goo comfort: it is I, be not afraid.

51 Then he went vp vnto them into the shippe, and th winde ceased, and they were much more amased in them selues, and marueiled.

52 For they had not considered *the matter* of ỹ loaues because their hearts were hardened.

Mat.14.34. 53 ¶ * And they came ouer, and went into the land o Genneseret, and arriued.

54 So when they were come out of the ship, straigh way they knewe him,

55 And ranne about throughout all that region roun about, *and* began to carie hither and thither in couches a that were sicke, where they heard that he was.

56 And whithersoeuer he entred into townes, or citie or villages, they laid their sicke in the streetes, and pray him that they might touche at the least the edge of his ga ment. And as many as touched him, were made whole.

CHAP. VII.

2 *The Apostles are found fault with, for eating with vnwas shen hands.* 4 *The Pharises traditions about washings. Hy pocrites.* 8 *Mens traditions more set by then Gods.* 10 *Pa rents must be honoured.* 14 *The things that do in deede de file a man.* 25 *The woman of Chanane.* 32 *The deafe dum man is healed.*

Mat.15.2. THen * gathered vnto him the Pharises, and certaine o the Scribes which came from Hierusalem.

2 And

3 And when they sawe some of his disciples eate meate
with cõmon hands, (that is to say vnwashen) they cõplained.
(For the Pharises, and all the Iewes, except they wash
their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the Elders.
4 And *when they come* from the market, except they
wash, they eate not: and many other things there be, which
they haue taken vpon them to obserue, *as* the washing of
cuppes, and pottes, and of brasen vessels, and of beddes.)
5 Then asked him the Pharises & Scribes, Why walke
not thy disciples according to the tradition of the Elders,
but eate meate with vnwashen handes?
6 Then he answered and said vnto them, Surely * Esai *Isa.29.14.*
hath prophecied well of you, hypocrites, as it is written,
This people honoureth mee with lippes, but their heart is
farre away from me.
7 But they worship mee in vaine, teaching *for* doctrines
the commandements of men.
8 For ye lay the commandement of God apart, and ob-
serue the tradition of men, *as* the washing of pottes and of
cuppes, and many other such like things ye do.
9 And he said vnto them, Wel, ye reiect the commande-
ment of God that ye may obserue your owne tradition.
10 For Moses said, * Honour thy father and thy mother: *Exod.20.12*
and, * Whosoeuer shall speake euil of father or mother, let *deut. 5.16.*
him dye the death. *ephes.6.2.*
11 But ye say, If a man say to father or mother, Corban, *Exo. 21.17.*
that is, By the gift that is *offred* by mee, thou mayest haue *leuit 20.9.*
profite, *he shal be free.* *prou. 20.20.*
12 So ye suffer him no more to do any thing for his fa-
ther, or his mother,
13 Making the worde of God of none authoritie, by
your tradition which ye haue ordeined: and ye doe many
such like things.
14 *Then he called the whole multitude vnto him, and *Matth 15.10.*
said vnto them, Hearken you all vnto me, and vnderstand.
15 There is nothing without a mã, that can defile him,
when it entreth into him: but the thinges which proceede
out of him, are they which defile the man.
16 If any haue eares to heare, let him heare.
17 And when he came into an house, *away* from the peo-
ple, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.
18 And he said vnto them, What? are ye without vn-
derstanding also? Doe ye not know that whatsoeuer thing

from without entreth into a man, cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into
bellie, and goeth out into the draught which is the pur
of all meates?

20 Then he said, That which commeth out of man, t
defileth man.

Gen.6.5. 21 *For from within, *euen* out of the heart of men, p
*and*8.21. ceede euil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murthers,

22 Thefts, couetousnes, wickednes, deceit, vnclean
a wicked eye, backbiting, pride, foolishnes.

23 All these euil thinges come from within, and de
a man.

*Mat.*15.21. 24 ¶*And from thence he rose, and went into the h
ders of Tyrus and Sidon, and entred into an house,
would that no man should haue knowen: but he could
be hid.

25 For a certaine woman, whose litle daughter h
vncleane spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at his fe

26 (And the woman was a Greeke, a Syrophenissia
nation) and she besought him that hee would cast out
deuil out of her daughter.

27 But Iesus said vnto her, Let the children first be f
for it is not good to take the childrens bread, and to ca
vnto whelpes.

28 Then she answered, and said vnto him, Trueth, L
yet in deede the whelpes eate vnder the table of the
drens crummes.

29 Then he said vnto her, For this saying goe thy w
the deuil is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come home to her house, she f
the deuil departed, and her daughter lying on the bed.

31 ¶ And hee departed againe from the coastes o
rus and Sidon, and came vnto the sea of Galile, through
middes of the coastes of Decapolis.

32 And they brought vnto him one that was deafe,
stambred in his speache, and prayed him to put his hand
on him.

33 Then he tooke him aside from the multitude, and
his fingers in his eares, and did spit, and touched his ton

34 And looking vp to heauen, he sighed, and said
him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, & the str
of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plaine.

36 And he commaunded them, that they ſhould tell no man: but how much ſoeuer he forbad them, the more a great while they publiſhed it,

37 And were beyond meaſure aſtonied, ſaying, *He hath done all things wel: he maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumme to ſpeake. *Gene.1.31. ecclo.39.21.

CHAP. VIII.

The myracle of the ſeuen loaues. 11 The Iewes ſeeke ſignes. 15 To beware of the leauen of the Phariſes. 22 A blinde man healed. 27 The peoples ſundrie opinions of Chriſt. 29 The Apoſtles acknowledge Chriſt. 31 Hee foretelleth his death. 33 Peter, Satan. 35 To ſaue & loſe the life. 38 To be aſhamed of Chriſt.

1 IN* thoſe dayes, when there was a very great multitude, and had nothing to eate, Ieſus called his diſciples to him, and ſaid vnto them, *Mat.15.32.

2 I haue compaſſion on the multitude, becauſe they haue nowe continued with mee three dayes, and haue nothing to eate.

3 And if I ſend them away faſting to their owne houſes, they would faint by the way: for ſome of them came from farre.

4 Then his diſciples anſwered him, Whēce can a man ſatisfie theſe with bread here in the wildernes?

5 And he asked them, How many loaues haue ye? And they ſaid, Seuen.

6 Then he commanded the multitude to ſit downe on the ground: & he tooke the ſeuen loaues, & gaue thankes, brake *them*, and gaue to his diſciples to ſet before *them*, and they did ſet *them* before the people.

7 They had alſo a few ſmal fiſhes: & when he had giuen thankes, he commanded them alſo to be ſet before *them*.

8 So they did eate, and were ſuffiſed, and they tooke vp of the broken meate that was left, ſeuen baskets full.

9 (And they that had eaten, were about foure thouſand) ſo he ſent them away.

10 ¶* And anon hee entred into a ſhip with his diſciples, and came into the partes of Dalmanutha. *Mat.15.39.

11 * And the Phariſes came foorth, and began to diſpute with him, ſeeking of him a ſigne from heauen, & tempting him. *Mat.16.1.

12 Then he ſighed deepely in his ſpirit, and ſaide, Why ſeeketh this generation ſeeke a ſigne? Verely I ſay vnto you,

a ſigne ſhal not be giuen vnto this generation.

13 ¶ So he left them, and went into the ſhippe againe, and departed to the other ſide.

Mat.16.5. 14 ¶ * And they had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ſhip with them, but one loafe.

15 And he charged them, ſaying, Take heede, & beware of the leauen of the Phariſes, and of the leauen of Herod.

16 And they reaſoned among themſelues, ſaying, It is becauſe we haue no bread.

17 And when Ieſus knewe it, he ſaide vnto them, Why reaſon you *thus*, becauſe ye haue no bread? perceiue ye not yet, neither vnderſtand? haue ye your hearts yet hardened?

18 Haue ye eyes, and ſee not? and haue ye eares, and heare not? and doe ye not remember?

Iohn 6.11. 19 * When I brake the fiue loaues among fiue thouſand, howe many baskets full of broken meate tooke ye vp? They ſaid vnto him, Twelue.

20 And when *I brake* ſeuen among foure thouſand, how many baskets of the leauings of broken meate tooke ye vp? And they ſaid, Seuen.

21 Then he ſaide vnto them, Howe *is it* that ye vnderſtande not?

22 And he came to Bethſaida, and they brought a blinde man vnto him, and deſired him to touche him.

23 Then he tooke the blinde by the hand, and led him out of the towne, and ſpet in his eyes, and put his hands vpon him, and asked him, if he ſawe ought.

24 And he looked vp, and ſaid, I ſee men: for I ſee them walking like trees.

25 After that, he put his hands againe vpon his eyes, and made him looke againe. And hee was reſtored to his ſight, and ſaw euery man a farre off clearely.

26 And he ſent him home to his houſe, ſaying, Neither go into the towne, nor tell it to any in the towne.

Mat.16.13. *Luke 9.18.* 27 ¶ * And Ieſus went out, and his diſciples into the townes of Ceſarea Philippi. And by the way hee asked his diſciples, ſaying vnto them, Whom do men ſay that I am?

28 And they anſwered, *Some ſay*, Iohn Baptiſt: and ſome, Elias: and ſome, One of the Prophets.

29 And he ſaid vnto them, But whome ſay ye that I am? Then Peter anſwered, & ſaid vnto him, Thou art that Chriſt.

30 And he ſharply charged them, that concerning him they ſhould tell no man.

31 Then

31 Then he began to teache them that the Sonne of man muſt ſuffer many things, and ſhould be reproued of the elders, and of the hie Prieſts, and of the Scribes, & be ſlaine, and within three dayes riſe againe.

32 And he ſpake that thing boldly. Then Peter tooke him aſide, and began to rebuke him.

33 Then he turned backe, and looked on his diſciples, and rebuked Peter, ſaying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou vnderſtandeſt not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

34 ¶ And he called the people vnto him with his diſciples, & ſayd vnto them, * Whoſoeuer wil folow me, let him forſake him ſelfe, and take vp his croſſe, and follow me. *Mat. 10. 38. and 16. 24.*

35 For whoſoeuer wil * ſaue his life, ſhall loſe it: but whoſoeuer ſhall loſe his life for my ſake and the Goſpels, he ſhall ſaue it. *luke 9. 23. and 14. 27. Mat. 10. 39.*

36 For what ſhall it profite a man, though he ſhould winne the whole world, if he loſe his ſoule? *and 16. 25. luke 9. 24.*

37 Or what exchange ſhal a man giue for his ſoule? *and 17. 33.*

38 * For whoſoeuer ſhalbe aſhamed of me, and of my wordes among this adulterous and ſinfull generation, of him ſhal the Sonne of man be aſhamed alſo, when he cometh in the glorie of his Father with the holy Angels. *Mat. 10. 33. luke 9. 26. and 12. 9.*

CHAP. IX.

Chriſts tranſfiguration. 7 Chriſt muſt be heard. 11 Of Elias and John Baptiſt. 14 The poſſeſſed is healed. 23 Faith can doe all things. 31 Chriſt foretelleth his death. 33 Who is greateſt among the Apoſtles. 36 Chriſt taketh a childe in his armes. 42 To offend. 50 Sali. Peace.

1 And * he ſayd vnto them, Verely I ſay vnto you, that there be ſome of them that ſtand here, which ſhall not taſte of death, till they haue ſeene the kingdome of God come with power. *Mat. 16. 28. luke 9. 27.*

2 * And ſixe dayes after, Ieſus taketh vnto him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, & caryeth them vp into an hie mountaine out of the way alone, and his ſhape was changed before them. *Mat. 17. 1. luke 9. 28.*

3 And his raiment did ſhine, *and was* very white, as ſnowe, ſo white as no fuller can make vpon the earth.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with Moſes, and they were talking with Ieſus.

5 Then Peter anſwered, and ſayd to Ieſus, Maſter, it is good

good for vs to be here: let vs make also three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 Yet he knew not what he sayd: for they were afrayd.

7 And there was a cloude that shadowed them, and a voyce came out of the cloude, saying, * This is my beloued Sonne: heare him.

Mat.3.17. and 17.5. chap.1.11.

8 And suddenly they looked round about, and sawe no more any man saue Iesus onely with them.

9 * And as they came downe from the mountaine, he charged them, that they should tel no man what they had seene, saue when the Sonne of man were risen from the dead againe.

Mat.17.9.

10 So they kept that matter to them selues, and demanded one of another, what the rising from the dead againe should meane.

11 Also they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes that * Elias must first come?

Mal.4.5.

12 And he answered, and sayd vnto them, Elias verely shal first come, and restore all things: and * as it is written of the Sonne of man, he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

Isa.53.4.

13 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come (and they haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would) as it is written of him.

14 ¶ * And when he came to *his* disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, & the Scribes disputing with them.

Mat. 17.14. Luke 9.38.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were amased, and ranne to him, and saluted him.

16 Then he asked the Scribes, What dispute ye among your selues?

17 And one of the companie answered, and sayd, Master, I haue brought my sonne vnto thee, which hath a dumme spirit:

18 And whereſoeuer he taketh him, he teareth him, and he fometh, and gnasheth his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast him out, & they could not.

19 Then he answered him, and sayd, O faithlesse generation, howe long shal I be with you? howe long nowe shall I suffer you? Bring him vnto me.

20 So they brought him vnto him: and assoone as the spirit saw him, he tare him, and he fel downe on the ground, wallowing and foming.

21 T

21 Then he asked his father, How long time is it since he hath bene thus? And he said, Of a childe.

22 And oft-times he casteth him into the fire, and into the water to destroy him: but if thou canst doe any thing, helpe vs, and haue compassion vpon vs.

23 And Iesus said vnto him, If thou canst beleeue it, all things are possible to him that beleeueth.

24 And straightway the father of the childe, crying with teares, said, Lord, I beleeue: helpe my vnbeliefe.

25 When Iesus sawe that the people came running together, he rebuked the vncleane spirit, saying vnto him, Thou dumme and deafe spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 Then *the spirit* cryed, and rent him sore, and came out, and he was as one dead, in so much that many said, He is dead.

27 But Iesus tooke his hand & lift him vp, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him secretly, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he sayd vnto them, This kinde can by no other meanes come forth, but by prayer, and fasting.

30 ¶*And they departed thence, and went together through Galile, and he would not that any should haue knowen it. *Mat.17,22. luke 9.22.*

31 For he taught his disciples, and said vnto them, The Sonne of man shalbe deliuered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, but after that he is killed, he shall rise againe the thirde day.

32 But they vnderstood not that saying, and were afraid to aske him.

33 *After, he came to Capernaum: and when he was in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among you by the way? *Mat.18.1. luke 9.46.*

34 And they helde their peace: for by the way they reasoned among them selues, who *should be* the chiefest.

35 And he sate downe, and called the twelue, and sayd to them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and seruant vnto all.

36 And he tooke a litle childe, & set him in the middes of them, and tooke him in his armes, and said vnto them,

37 Whosoeuer shal receiue one of such litle children in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer receyueth me, receiueth not me, but him that sent me.

38 ¶*Then

Luke 9.49. 38 ¶ *Then Iohn answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out deuils by thy Name, which followeth not vs, and we forbade him, because he followeth vs not.

1. Cor. 12.3. 39 *But Iesus sayd, Forbid him not: for there is no man that can doe a miracle by my Name, that can lightly speak euil of me.

40 For whosoeuer is not against vs, is on our part.

Mat. 10.42. 41 *And whosoeuer shall giue you a cup of water to drinke for my Names sake, because ye belong to Christ, verely I say vnto you, he shal not lose his rewarde.

Mat. 18.6. Luke 17.1. 42 *And whosoeuer shall offende one of these little ones, that beleeue in me, it were better for him rather, that a milstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were cast into the sea.

Mat. 5.29. and 18.8. 43 *Wherefore if thine hand cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life, maimed, then hauing two hands, to goe into hell, into the fire that neuer shalbe quenched,

Esa. 66.24. 44 *Where their worme dieth not, and the fire neuer goeth out.

45 Likewise, if thy foote cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to goe halt into life, then hauing two feete to be cast into hell, into the fire that neuer shall be quenched,

46 Where their worme dyeth not, and the fire neuer goeth out.

47 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out: It is better for thee to goe into the kingdome of God with one eye, then hauing two eyes, to be cast into hell fire,

48 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire neuer goeth out.

Leuit. 2. 13. 49 For euery man shalbe salted with fire: and *euery sacrifice shalbe salted with salt.

Mat. 5.13. Luke 14.34. 50 *Salt is good: but if the salt be vnsauerie, wherewith shal it be seasoned? haue salt in your selues, and haue peace one with another.

CHAP. X.

9 The wife, onely for fornication, is to be put away. 13 Little children are brought to Christ. 17 A rich man asketh Iesus, howe he may possesse eternal life. 28 The Apostles for sooke all things for Christes sake. 33 Christ foresheweth his death. 35 Zebedeus his sonnes requeste. 46 Blinde Bartimeus healed.

1 Nd *he aroſe from thence, and went into the coaſtes of Iudea by the farre ſide of Iordan, & the people reſorted vnto him againe, & as he was wont, he taught them againe. *Mat.19.1.*

2 Then the Phariſes came & asked him, if it were lawfull for a man to put away *his* wife, and tempted him.

3 And he anſwered, and ſayd vnto them, What did *Moſes commaund you? *Deut.24.1.*

4 And they ſayd, Moſes ſuffred to write a bil of diuorcement, and to put her away.

5 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, For the hardnes of your heart he wrote this precept vnto you,

6 But at the beginning of the creatio *God made them male and female: *Gen.1.27. mat.19.4.*

7 *For this cauſe ſhal man leaue his father and mother, and cleaue vnto his wife. *Gen.2.24. 1.cor.6.16.*

8 And they twaine ſhalbe one fleſh: ſo that they are no more twaine, but one fleſh. *ephe.5.31.*

9 *Therefore, what God hath coupled together, let not man ſeparate. *1.Cor.7.10.*

10 And in the houſe his diſciples asked him againe of that matter.

11 And he ſayd vnto them, *Whoſoeuer ſhall put away his wife and marrie another, committeth adulterie againſt her. *Mat.5.32. and 19.9. luke 16.18.*

12 And if a woman put away her husband, and be maryed to another, ſhe committeth adulterie.

13 ¶ *Then they brought litle children to him, that he ſhould touch them, and his diſciples rebuked thoſe that brought them. *Mat.19.13. luke 18.15.*

14 But when Ieſus ſaw it, he was diſpleaſed, & ſayd to them, Suffer the litle children to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of ſuch is the kingdome of God.

15 Verely I ſay vnto you, Whoſoeuer ſhall not receiue the kingdome of God as a litle childe, he ſhall not enter therein.

16 And he tooke them vp in his armes, and put *his* handes vpon them, and bleſſed them.

17 ¶ And when he was gone out on the way, there came one *running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good maſter, what ſhal I doe, that I may poſſeſſe eternal life? *Mat.19.16. luke 18.18.*

18 Ieſus ſayd to him, Why calleſt thou me good? there is none good but one, euen God.

19 Thou knoweſt the commandements. *Thou ſhalt not *Exo.20.13.*

not commit adulterie. Thou ſhalt not kill. Thou ſhalt not ſteale. Thou ſhalt not beare falſe witnes. Thou ſhalt hurt no *man*. Honour thy father and mother.

20 Then he anſwered, and ſayd to him, Maſter, all theſe things I haue obſerued from my youth.

21 And Ieſus looked vpon him, and loued him, & ſayd vnto him, One thing is lacking vnto thee, Go *and* ſel all that thou haſt, and giue to the poore, & thou ſhalt haue treaſure in heauen, and come, folowe me, and take vp the croſſe.

22 But he was ſad at that ſaying, and went away ſorowfull: for he had great poſſeſsions.

23 And Ieſus looked round about, and ſaid vnto his diſciples, Howe hardly doe they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God!

24 And his diſciples were afrayd at his wordes. But Ieſus anſwered againe, and ſayd vnto them, Children, howe hard is it for them that truſt in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God!

25 It is eaſier for a camel to go through ỹ eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were much more aſtonied, ſaying with them ſelues, Who then can be ſaued?

27 But Ieſus looked vpon them, and ſaid, With men it is impoſsible, but not with God: for with God all things are poſsible.

Mat. 19.27. *Luke* 18.28. 28 ¶*Then Peter began to ſay vnto him, Loe, we haue forſaken all, and haue folowed thee.

29 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid, Verely I ſay vnto you, there is no man that hath forſaken houſe or brethren, or ſiſters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or landes for my ſake and the Goſpels,

30 But he ſhal receiue an hundreth folde, nowe at this preſent, houſes, & brethren, and ſiſters, and mothers, & children, and landes with perſecutions, and in the worlde to come, eternall life.

Mat. 19.30. *Luke* 13.30. 31 *But many *that are* firſt, ſhalbe laſt, and the laſt, firſt.

32 ¶*And they were in the way going vp to Hieruſalem, and Ieſus went before them, and they were troubled, and as they folowed, they were afrayd, and Ieſus tooke the twelue againe, and began to tell them what things ſhould come vnto him,

Mat. 20.17. *Luke* 18.31. 33 *Saying*, Beholde, we go vp to Hieruſalem, and the Sonne of man ſhalbe deliuered vnto the hie Prieſts, and to the

Scribes, and they shal condemne him to death, and shal deliuer him to the Gentiles.

34 And they shal mocke him, and scourge him, and spit vpon him, and kill him: but the third day he shal rise againe.

35 ¶* Then Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus came vnto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest doe for vs that that we desire. *Mat. 20. 20.*

36 And he sayd vnto them, What would ye I should do for you?

37 And they sayd to him, Graunt vnto vs, that we may sit, one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left hand in thy glorie.

38 But Iesus said vnto them, Ye know not what ye aske: Can ye drinke of the cup that I shal drinke of, and be baptized with the baptisme that I shalbe baptized with?

39 And they sayd vnto him, We can. But Iesus sayd vnto them, Ye shall drinke in deede of the cuppe that I shall drinke of, and be baptized with the baptisme wherewith I shalbe baptized:

40 But to sit at my right hand, & at my left, is not mine to giue, but *it shalbe giuen* to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard that, they began to disdaine at Iames and Iohn.

42 But Iesus called them vnto him, and sayd to them, Ye knowe that they which are princes among the Gentiles, haue domination ouer them, and they that be great among them, exercise authoritie ouer them. *Luke 22. 25.*

43 But it shal not be so among you: but whosoeuer wil be great among you, shalbe your seruant.

44 And whosoeuer wil be chiefe of you, shalbe the seruant of all.

45 For euen the Sonne of man came not to be serued, but to serue, & to giue his life for the raunsome of many.

46 ¶* Then they came to Iericho: and as he went out of Iericho with his disciples, and a great multitude, Bartimeus the sonne of Timeus, a blinde man, sate by the wayes side, begging. *Mat. 20. 29. Luke 18. 35.*

47 And when he heard that it was Iesus of Nazareth, he began to crie, and to say, Iesus the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

48 And many rebuked him, because he should holde his peace: but he cryed much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

49 Then

49 Then Ieſus ſtood ſtil, and commanded him to be called: and they called the blinde, ſaying vnto him, Be of good comfort: ariſe, he calleth thee.

50 So he threwe away his cloke, and roſe, and came to Ieſus.

51 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, What wilt thou that I doe vnto thee? And the blinde ſayd vnto him, Lorde, that I may receiue ſight.

52 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Goe thy way: thy fayth hath ſaued thee. And by and by he receyued his ſight, and folowed Ieſus in the way.

CHAP. XI.

1 *Chriſt entreth into Hieruſalem riding on an aſſe.* 13 *The fruitleſſe figtree is curſed.* 15 *Sellers and Buyers are caſt out of the Temple.* 23 *The force of fayth.* 24 *Fayth in prayer.* 25 *The brothers offences muſt be pardoned.* 27 *The Prieſtes aske by what authoritie he wrought thoſe things that he did.* 30 *Whence Iohns Baptiſme was.*

Mat. 21. 1. Luke 18. 29. AND *when they came neere to Hieruſalem, to Bethphage and Bethania vnto the mount of Oliues, he ſendeth forth two of his diſciples,

2 And ſayd vnto them, Go your wayes into that towne that is ouer againſt you, and aſſoone as ye ſhal enter into it, ye ſhal finde a colte tyed, whereon neuer man ſate: loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man ſay vnto you, Why doe ye this? Say that the Lord hath neede of him, and ſtraightway he will ſende him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found a colte tyed by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met, and they looſed him.

5 Then certaine of them that ſtoode there, ſayde vnto them, What doe ye loosing the colte?

6 And they ſayd vnto them, as Ieſus had commaunded them: So they let them goe.

Iohn 12. 14. 7 ¶*And they brought the colte to Ieſus, and caſt their garments on him, and he ſate vpon him.

8 And many ſpred their garments in the way: other cut downe branches of the trees, & ſtrawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that folowed, cryed, ſaying, Hoſanna: bleſſed *be* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

10 Bleſſed

10 Blessed *be* the kingdome that commeth in ỹ Name of the Lord of our father Dauid: Hosanna, *O thou which art* in the hiest *heauens*.

11 *So Iesus entred into Hierusalem, and into the Temple: and when he had looked about on all things, and now it was euening, he went forth vnto Bethania with the twelue. *Mat.21.10. Luke 19.45.*

12 *And on the morowe when they were come out from Bethania, he was hungrie. *Mat.21.19.*

13 And seeing a figge tree a farre off, that had leaues, he went *to see* if he might finde any thing thereon: but when he came vnto it, he found nothing but leaues: for the time of figges was not yet.

14 Then Iesus answered, and said to it, Neuer man eate fruite of thee hereafter while the world standeth: and his disciples heard it.

15 ¶ And they came to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the Temple, and began to cast out them that solde and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of ỹ money changers, and the seates of them that solde doues.

16 Neither would he suffer that any man should cary a vessell through the Temple.

17 And he taught, saying vnto them, Is it not written, *Mine house shalbe called the house of prayer vnto all nations? * but you haue made it a denne of theeues. *Isai.56.7. Iere.7.11.*

18 And the Scribes and hie Priestes heard it, & sought how to destroy him: for they feared him, because ỹ whole multitude was astonied at his doctrine.

19 But when euen was come, *Iesus* went out of ỹ citie.

20 ¶ *And in the morning as they iourneyed together, they sawe the figge tree dried vp from the rootes. *Mat.21.19*

21 Then Peter remembred, and said vnto him, Master, beholde, the figge tree which thou cursedst, is withered.

22 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Haue the faith of God.

23 For verely I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou taken away, and cast into the sea, and shall not wauer in his heart, but shall beleeue that those things which he saieth, shall come to passe, whatsoeuer he saith, shalbe *done* to him.

24 *Therefore I say vnto you, whatsoeuer ye desire when ye pray, beleeue that ye shall haue it, and it shalbe *Mat.7.7. Luke 11.9.* vnto you.

Mat.6.14. 25 *But when ye ſhal ſtand and pray, forgiue, if ye h
any thing againſt any man, that your Father alſo which i
heauen, may forgiue you your treſpaces.

26 For if you will not forgiue, your Father which h
heauen, will not pardon you your treſpaces.

Mat.21.23. 27 ¶*Then they came againe to Hieruſalem: and a
Luke 20.1. walked in the Temple, there came to him the hie Prieſ
and the Scribes, and the Elders,

28 And ſaide vnto him, By what authoritie doeſt th
theſe thinges? and who gaue thee this authoritie, th
thou ſhouldeſt doe theſe things?

29 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, I will a
aske of you a certaine thing, and anſwere ye me, and I w
tell you by what authoritie I doe theſe things.

30 The baptiſme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of m
anſwere me.

31 And they thought with them ſelues, ſaying, If w
ſhall ſay from heauen, he will ſay, Why then did ye not b
leeue him?

32 But if we ſay of men, we feare the people: for al m
counted Iohn, that he was a Prophet in deede.

33 Then they anſwered, and ſaide vnto Ieſus, We ca
not tell. And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide vnto them, Neithe
will I tell you by what authoritie I doe theſe things.

CHAP. XII.

1 *Of the vineyard.* 10 *Chriſt the ſtone refuſed of the Iewe*
13 *Of tribute to be giuen to Ceſar.* 18 *The Sadducees den*
ing the reſurrection. 28 *The firſt commandement.* 31 *T*
loue God and the neighbour is better then ſacrifices. 3
Chriſt Dauids ſonne. 38 *To beware of the Scribes & Ph*
riſes. 42 *The poore widowe.*

Iſai.5.1. AND he began to ſpeake vnto them in parables. * A co-
Iere.2.2. *uaue* man planted a vineyard, and compaſſed it with a
mat.21.33. hedge, & digged a pit for the winepreſſe, and built a towr
Luke 20.9. in it, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a ſtrange
countrey.

2 And at the time, he ſent to the husbandmen a ſer-
uant, that he might receiue of the husbandmen of ỹ fruite
of the vineyarde.

3 But they tooke him, and beat him, and ſent him a-
way emptie.

4 And againe he ſent vnto them another ſeruant, and
at

him they caſt ſtones, and brake his head, and ſent him a-
way ſhamefully handled.

5 And againe he ſent another, and him they ſlewe, and
many other, beating ſome, and killing ſome.

6 Yet had he one ſonne, his deare beloued: him alſo
he ſent the laſt vnto them, ſaying, They will reuerence my
ſonne.

7 But the husbandmen ſaid among themſelues, This is
the heire: come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance ſhalbe
ours.

8 So they tooke him, and killed him, and caſt him out
of the vineyarde.

9 What ſhall then the Lorde of the vineyard doe? He
will come and deſtroy theſe husbandmen, & giue the vine-
yard to others.

10 Haue ye not read ſo much as this Scripture? * The
ſtone which the builders did refuſe, is made the head of
the corner. *Pſal.118. 22.iſa.28. 16.mat.21.*

11 This was done of the Lord, and it is marueilous in
our eyes. *42.actes 4. 11.rom.9.*

12 Then they went about to take him, but they feared
the people: for they perceiued that he ſpake that parable
againſt them: therefore they left him, and went their way. *33.1.pet. 2.8.*

13 ¶*And they ſent vnto him certaine of the Phariſes,
and of the Herodians that they might take him in *his* talke. *Mat.22.15 luke 20.20.*

14 And when they came, they ſaid vnto him, Maſter, we
know that thou art true, and careſt for no man: for thou
conſidereſt not the perſon of men, but teacheſt the way of
God truely. Is it lawful to giue tribute to Ceſar, or not?

15 Should we giue it, or ſhould we not giue it? But he
knewe their hypocriſie, and ſaid vnto them, Why tempt ye
me? Bring me a penie, that I may ſee it.

16 So they brought it, and he ſaid vnto them, Whoſe
is this image and ſuperſcription? and they ſaide vnto him,
Ceſars.

17 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, * Giue to
Ceſar the thinges that are Ceſars, and to God, thoſe that
are Gods: and they marueiled at him. *Rom.13.7.*

18 ¶*Then came the Sadduces vnto him, (which ſay,
there is no reſurrection) and they asked him, ſaying, *Mat.22.23. luke 20.27.*

19 Maſter, *Moſes wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother
die, & leaue *his* wife, and leaue no children, that his brother
ſhould take his wife, and raiſe vp ſeede vnto his brother. *Deut.25.5. mat.22.24.*

20 There were ſeuen brethren, and the firſt tooke a wife, and when he dyed, left no yſſue.

21 Then the ſeconde tooke her, and he dyed, neither did he yet leaue yſſue, and the third likewiſe:

22 So thoſe ſeuen had her, and left no yſſue: laſt of all the wife died alſo.

23 In ỹ reſurrection then, when they ſhall riſe againe, whoſe wife ſhal ſhe be of them? for ſeuen had her to wife.

24 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide vnto them, Are ye not therefore deceiued, becauſe ye knowe not the Scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they ſhal ryſe againe from the dead, neither men marrie, nor wiues are married, but are as the Angels which are in heauen.

26 And as touching the dead, that they ſhall ryſe againe, haue ye not read in the booke of Moſes, howe in the buſh God ſpake vnto him, ſaying, *I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Iſaac, and the God of Iacob?

Exod.3.6. mat.22.32.

27 God is not the God of the dead, but the God of the liuing. Ye are therefore greatly deceiued.

28 ¶ *Then came one of the Scribes that had heard them diſputing together, *and* perceiuing that he had anſwered them well, he asked him, Which is the firſt commandement of all?

Mat.22.35.

29 Ieſus anſwered him, The firſt of all the commandements *is*, *Heare, Iſrael, the Lord our God is the onely Lorde.

Deut.6.4.

30 Thou ſhalt therefore loue the Lorde thy God with all thine heart, and with al thy ſoule, and with al thy mind, and with al thy ſtrength: this is the firſt commandement.

31 And the ſeconde *is* like, that is, *Thou ſhalt loue thy neighbour as thy ſelfe. There is none other commandement greater then theſe.

Leui.19.18. mat.22.39. rom.13.9. gal.5.14. iames.2.8.

32 Then that Scribe ſaid vnto him, Well Maſter, thou haſt ſaid the trueth, that there is one God, and that there is none but he.

33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with all the vnderſtanding, and with all the ſoule, and with all the ſtrength, and to loue *his* neighbour as himſelfe, is more then all whole burnt offerings and ſacrifices.

34 Then when Ieſus ſawe that he anſwered diſcretely, he ſaid vnto him, Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durſt aske him any queſtion.

35 ¶ *And*

35 ¶ * And Ieſus anſwered and ſaide teaching in the Temple, Howe ſay the Scribes that Chriſt is the ſonne of Dauid? *Mat.*22.41. *Luke*20. 41.

36 For Dauid himſelfe ſaid by the holy Ghoſt, * The Lord ſaid to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footeſtoole. *Pſal.*110.1.

37 Then Dauid himſelfe calleth him Lorde: by what meanes is he then his ſonne? and much people heard him gladly.

38 * Moreouer he ſaide vnto them in his doctrine, Beware of the Scribes which loue to goe in long robes, and *loue* ſalutations in the markets, *Mat.*23.6. *luke* 11. 43. & 20.43.

39 And the chiefe ſeates in the Synagogues, and the firſt roumes at feaſtes.

40 Which * deuoure widowes houſes, euen vnder a colour of long prayers. Theſe ſhall receiue the greater damnation. *Mat.*23.14. *luke.*20.47.

41 * And as Ieſus ſate ouer againſt the treaſurie, hee beheelde how the people caſt money into the treaſurie, and many rich men caſt in much. *Luke* 21.1.

42 And there came a certaine poore widowe, and ſhe threw in two mites, which make a quadrin.

43 Then he called vnto him his diſciples, and ſaid vnto them, Verely I ſay vnto you, that this poore widow hath caſt more in, then all they which haue caſt into the treaſurie.

44 For they all did caſt in of their ſuperfluitie: but ſhe of her pouertie did caſt in all that ſhe had, *euen* all her liuing.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Of the deſtruction of Hieruſalem. 9 Perſecutions for the Goſpel. 10 The Goſpel muſt be preached to all nations. 26 Of Chriſtes comming to iudgement. 33 We muſt watch and pray.

AND * as he went out of the Temple, one of his diſciples ſaid vnto him, Maſter, ſee what maner ſtones, and what maner buildings *are here*. *Mat.*24.1. *luke.*21.5.

2 * Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Seeſt thou theſe great buildings? there ſhall not be left one ſtone vpon a ſtone, that ſhall not be throwen downe. *Luke.*19.43

3 And as he ſate on the mount of Oliues, ouer againſt the Temple, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrewe asked him ſecretly,

4 Tell vs, when ſhall theſe things be? and what *ſhall be* the ſigne when all theſe things ſhalbe fulfilled?

Ephe.5.6. *2.theſ.2.3.* 5 And Ieſus anſwered them, and began to ſay, *Take heede leſt any man deceiue you.

6 For many ſhall come in my Name, ſaying, I am *Chriſt*, and ſhall deceiue many.

7 Furthermore when ye ſhall heare of warres, and rumors of warres, be ye not troubled: for *ſuch thinges* muſt needes be: but the ende *ſhall* not *be* yet.

8 For nation ſhall riſe againſt nation, and kingdome againſt kingdome, and there ſhalbe earthquakes in diuers quarters, and there ſhalbe famine and troubles: theſe *are* the beginnings of ſorowes.

9 But take ye heede to your ſelues: for they ſhall deliuer you vp to the councils, and to the Synagogues: ye ſhalbe beaten, and brought before rulers and Kinges for my ſake, for a teſtimoniall vnto them.

10 And the Goſpel muſt firſt be publiſhed among all nations.

Mat.10.19. *luke 12.11.* *& 21.14.* 11 *But when they leade you, and deliuer you vp, be not careſull before hand, neither ſtudie what ye ſhall ſay, but what is giuen you at the ſame time, that ſpeake: for it is not ye that ſpeake, but the holy Ghoſt.

12 Yea, and the brother ſhall deliuer the brother to death, and the father the ſonne, and the children ſhall riſe againſt their parents, and ſhall cauſe them to die.

13 And ye ſhalbe hated of all men for my Names ſake: but whoſoeuer ſhall endure vnto the ende, he ſhalbe ſaued.

Mat.24.15. *luke 21.20.* *Dani.9.27.* 14 *Moreouer, when ye ſhall ſee the abomination of deſolation (ſpoken of by *Daniel the Prophet) ſet where it ought not, (let him that readeth, conſider it) then let them *that be* in Iudea, flee into the mountaines,

15 And let him that is vpon the houſe, not come downe into the houſe, neither enter therein, to fetch any thing out of his houſe.

16 And let him that is in the field, not turne backe againe to take his garment.

17 Then woe *ſhalbe* to them that are with childe, and to them that giue ſucke in thoſe dayes.

18 Pray therfore that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For thoſe dayes ſhalbe ſuch tribulation, as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created vnto this time, neither ſhalbe.

20 And

20 And except that ℣ Lord had ſhortened thoſe dayes, no fleſh ſhould be ſaued: but for the electes ſake, which he hath choſen, he hath ſhortened thoſe dayes.

21 Then * if any man ſay to you, Loe, here is Chriſt, or, loe, he is there, beleeue it not. *Mat.* 24. 23. *luke* 17. 23.

22 For falſe Chriſtes ſhall riſe, and falſe prophets, and ſhall ſhewe ſignes and wonders, to deceiue if it were poſſible the very elect. *and* 21. 8.

23 But take ye heede: beholde, I haue ſhewed you all things before.

24 ¶ Moreouer in thoſe dayes, after that tribulation, the ſonne ſhall waxe darke, and the moone ſhall not giue her light, *Iſai.* 13. 10. *ezek.* 32. 7.

25 And the ſtarres of heauen ſhall fall: and the powers which are in heauen, ſhall ſhake. *ioel.* 2. 10. *and* 3. 15.

26 And then ſhall they ſee the Sonne of man comming in the cloudes, with great power and glory.

27 * And he ſhall then ſend his Angels, and ſhal gather together his elect from the foure windes, *and* from the vtmoſt part of the earth, to the vtmoſt part of heauen. *Mat.* 24. 31.

28 Now learne a parable of the figge tree. When her bough is yet tender, and it bringeth forth leaues, ye know that ſommer *is* nere.

29 So in like maner, when ye ſee theſe things come to paſſe, knowe that *the kingdome of God* is nere, *euen* at the doores.

30 Verely I ſay vnto you, that this generation ſhall not paſſe, till all theſe things be done.

31 Heauen and earth ſhall paſſe away, but my wordes ſhall not paſſe away.

32 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the Angels which are in heauen, neither the Sonne himſelf, but the Father.

33 * Take heede: watch, and pray: for ye knowe not when the time is. *Mat.* 24. 13.

34 *For the Sonne of man is* as a man going into a ſtrange countrey, and leaueth his houſe, and giueth authoritie to his ſeruants, and to euery man his worke, and commandeth the porter to watch.

35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye knowe not when the maſter of the houſe will come, at euen, or at midnight, at the cocke crowing, or in the dawning,)

36 Leſt if he come ſuddenly, he ſhould find you ſleeping.

17 And these thinges that I say vnto you, I say vnto
men, Watch.

CHAP. XIIII.

2 The Priestes conspire against Christ. 3 The woman anoynting oyle on Christes head. 12 The preparing of the Passouer. 22 The institution of the supper. 41 Christ deliuered vnto the handes of men. 43 Iudas betrayeth him with a kisse. 53 Christ is before Caiaphas. 66 Peters denyall.

Mat.26.2. Luke 22.1. AND * two dayes after followed *the feast of* the Passouer, and of vnleauened bread: and the hie Priestes, and Scribes soughte how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

2 But they said, Not in the feast *day*, lest there be any tumult among the people.

Mat.26.6. Iohn 12.2. 3 * And when he was in Bethania in the house of Simon the leper, as he sate at table, there came a woman hauing a boxe of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and she brake the boxe, and powred it on his head.

4 Therefore some disdained among themselues, and said, To what ende is this waste of ointment?

5 For it might haue bene solde for more then three hundreth pence, and beng giuen vnto the poore, and they murmured against her.

6 But Iesus said, Let her alone: why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good worke on me.

7 For ye haue the poore with you alwayes, and when ye will ye may doe them good, but me ye shall not haue alwayes.

8 She hath done that she couldе: she came aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verely I say vnto you, whersoeuer this Gospel shall be preached throughout the whole worlde, this also that she hath done, shalbe spoken of in remembrance of her.

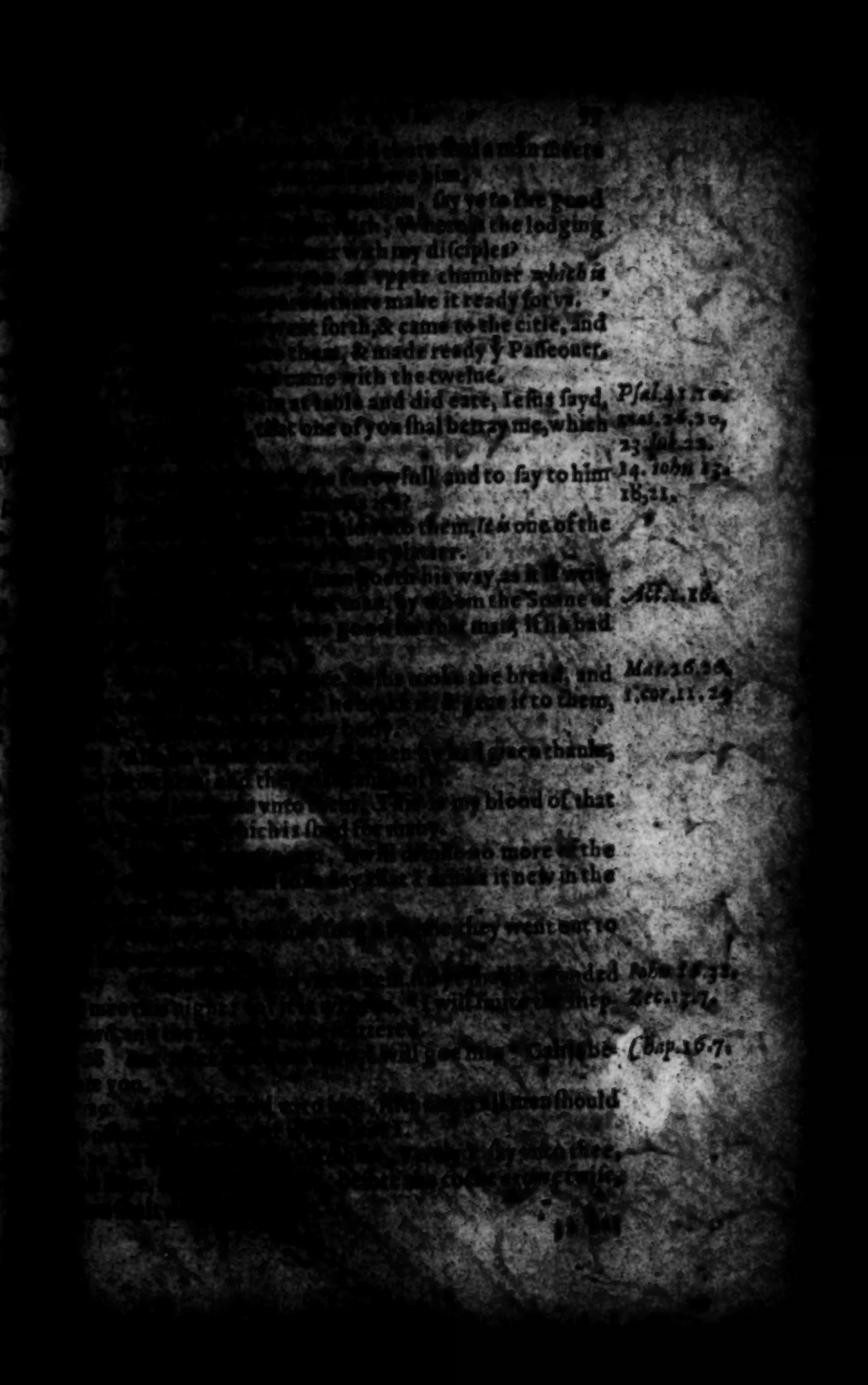
Mat.26.14. Luke 22.4. 10 ¶ * Then Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went away vnto the hie Priests, to betray him vnto them.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised that they woulde giue him money: therefore he sought how he might conueniently betray him.

Mat.26.17. Luke 22.8. 12 ¶ * Nowe the first day of vnleauened bread, when they sacrificed the Passeouer, his disciples saide vnto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eate the Passeouer?

13 Then he sent forth two of his disciples, and sayde

vnto



31 But he ſayde more earneſtly, If I ſhoulde d
thee, I wil not denie thee: likewiſe alſo ſayd they all.

Mat. 26.36 32 ¶ *After, they came into a plac
Luk. 22.39. mane: then he ſayd to his diſciples, Sit ye here, til
prayed.

33 And he tooke with him Peter, and Iames, and
and he began to be troubled, and in great heauines,

34 And ſayde vnto them, My ſoule is very heau
vnto the death: tary here and watch.

35 So he went forwarde a litle, and fell downe o
ground, & prayed, that if it were poſsible, that houre
paſſe from him.

36 And he ſaid, Abba, Father, all things are poſsibl
to thee, take away this cup from me: neuertheleſſe not
I wil, but that thou wilt, *be done.*

37 Then he came, and founde them ſleeping, and
to Peter, Simon, ſleepeſt thou? couldeſt not thou watch
houre?

38 ¶ Watch ye, and pray, that ye enter not into t
tion: the ſpirit in deede is ready, but the fleſh is weak.

39 And againe he went away, and prayed, and ſpake
ſame wordes.

40 And he returned, and founde them a ſleepe ag
for their eyes were heauie: neither knewe they what t
ſhould anſwere him.

41 And he came the third time, and ſayde vnto th
Sleepe henceforth, and take your reſt: it is ynough
houre is come: behold, the Sonne of man is delinered
the hands of ſinners.

42 Riſe vp: let vs goe: lo, he that betrayeth mee,
hand.

Mat. 26.47. 43 * And immediatly whyle he yet ſpake, came
Luk. 22.47. that was one of the twelue, & with him a great multi
Ioh. 18.3. with ſwordes and ſtaues from the hie Prieſtes, and Scri
and Elders.

44 And he that betrayed him, had giuen them a toke
ſaying, Whomſoeuer I ſhal kiſſe, he it is: take him and lead
him away ſafely.

45 And aſſoone as he was come, he went ſtraightwa
to him, and ſaid, Hayle Maſter, and kiſſed him.

46 Then they layed their handes on him, & tooke hi

47 And one of them that ſtoode by, drew out a ſworde
and ſmote a ſeruant of the hie Prieſt, and cut off his eare.

48 And

And Ieſus anſwered & ſaide vnto them, Ye be come againſt a thiefe with ſwordes and ſtaues, to take me.

I was dayly with you teaching in the Temple, and ye me not: but *this is done* that the Scriptures ſhould be fulfilled.

Then they all forſooke him, and fled.

And there folowed him a certaine yong man, clothed vpon his bare *body*, & the yong men caught him.

But he left his linnen cloth, & fled from them naked.

So they led Ieſus away to the hie Prieſt, & to him together all the hie Prieſtes, and the Elders, and the ſcribes. *Mat.26.57. luk.22.54. ioh.18.24.*

And Peter folowed him a farre off, euen into the hall of the hie Prieſt, and ſate with the ſeruants, and warmed him at the fire.

And the * hie Prieſts, & all the Councill ſought for witnes againſt Ieſus, to put him to death, but found none. *Mat. 26.59.*

For many bare falſe witnes againſt him, but their witnes agreed not together.

Then there aroſe certaine, and bare falſe witnes againſt him, ſaying,

We heard him ſaye, * I will deſtroye this Temple that is made with hands, and within three dayes I will buyld another made without hands. *Ioh.2.19.*

But their witnes yet agreed not together.

Then the hie Prieſt ſtood vp amongſt them, & asked Ieſus, ſaying, Anſwereſt thou nothing? what is the matter that theſe beare witnes againſt thee?

But he held his peace, & anſwered nothing. Againe the hie Prieſt asked him, and ſayde vnto him, Art thou that Chriſt the Sonne of the bleſſed?

And Ieſus ſaid, I am *he*, * and ye ſhall ſee the Sonne of man ſit at the right hande of the power *of God*, and come in the cloudes of heauen. *Mat.24.30.*

Then the hie Prieſt rent his clothes, & ſayd, What need we any more neede of witneſſes?

Ye haue heard the blaſphemie: what thinke ye? And they all condemned him to be worthy of death.

And ſome began to ſpit at him, & to couer his face, and to beate him with fiſts, and to ſay vnto him, Prophecie. And the ſergeants ſmote him with *their* roddes.

* And as Peter was beneath in the hall, there came one of the maydes of the hie Prieſt. *Mat.26.69. luk.22.55.*

67 And *ioh.18.25.*

67 And when she saw Peter warming *himselfe*, she looked on him, & sayd, Thou wast also with Iesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denyed it, saying, I knowe him not, neither wot I what thou sayest. Then he went out into the porch, and the cocke crewe.

*Mat.*26.71. *Luke* 22.58. 69 *Then a mayde saw him againe, and began to say to them that stoode by, This is *one* of them.

70 But he denyed it againe: and anon after, they that stoode by, sayd againe to Peter, Surely thou art *one* of them: for thou art of Galile, and thy speach is like.

71 And he began to curse, and sweare, *saying*, I know not this man of whom ye speake.

*Mat.*26.75. *Ioh.*13.38. 72 *Then the second time the cocke crew, & Peter remembred the word that Iesus had said vnto him, Before the cocke crow twise, thou shalt deny me thrise, & weying that with himselfe, he wept.

CHAP. XV.

1 *Of the thinges that Christ suffered vnder Pilate.* 11 *Barrabas is preferred before Christ.* 15 *Pilate deliuereth Christ to be crucified.* 17 *He is crowned with thorne.* 19 *They spit on him, and mocke him.* 21 *Simon of Cyrene carrieth Christes crosse.* 27 *Christ is crucified betwene two theeues.* 29 *He is rayled at.* 37 *He giueth vp the ghost.* 43 *Ioseph buryeth him.*

*Mat.*27.1. *Luke* 22.66. *Ioh.*18.19. AND *anon in the dawning, the hie Priests held a Counsell with the Elders, and the Scribes, and the whole Councill, and bound Iesus, and led him away, and deliuered him to Pilate.

2 Then Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And he answered, and sayd vnto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the hie Priests accused him of many things.

*Mat.*27.12. *Luke* 23.3. *Ioh.*18.35. 4 *Wherfore Pilate asked him againe, saying, Answerest thou nothing? beholde howe many things they witnesse against thee.

5 But Iesus answered no more at all, so that Pilate marueiled.

6 Nowe at the feast, Pilate did deliuer a prisoner vnto them, whomsoeuer they would desire.

7 Then there was one named Barabbas, which was bounde with his fellowes, that had made insurrection, who in the insurrection had committed murther.

8 And the people cryed aloude, & began to desire *that he would do* as he had euer done vnto them.

9 Then

10 Then Pilate answered them, and sayd, Will ye that I loose vnto you the King of the Iewes?
11 For he knew that the hie Priests had deliuered him for enuie.
12 But the hie Priests had mooued the people *to desire* that he would rather deliuer Barabbas vnto them.
13 And Pilate answered, and sayde againe vnto them, What wil ye then that I do *with him*, whom ye call the King of the Iewes?
14 And they cryed againe, Crucifie him.
14 Then Pilate said vnto them, But what euill hath he done? And they cryed the more feruently, Crucifie him.
15 So Pilate willing to content the people, loosed them Barabbas, and deliuered Iesus, when he had scourged him, that he might be crucified.
16 Then the souldiers led him away into the hal, which is the common hall, and called together the whole band,
17 And clad him with purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, and put it about *his head*,
18 And began to salute him, *saying*, Haile, King of the Iewes.
19 And they smote him on the head with a reede, and spat vpon him, and bowed the knees, *&* did him reuerence.
20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke the purple off him, and put his owne clothes on him, & led him out to crucifie him.
21 * And they compelled one that passed by, *called* Simon of Cyrene (which came out of the countrey, and was father of Alexander and Rufus) to beare his crosse. *Mat.27.32. luk.23.26.*
22 *And they brought him to a place named Golgotha, which is by interpretation, the place of *dead mens* skulles. *Mat.27.33. luk.23.33.*
23 And they gaue him to drinke wine mingled with myrrhe, but he receiued it not. *iohn.19.17.*
24 * And when they had crucified him, they parted his garmẽts, casting lots for them, what euery man should haue. *Luk.23.34.*
25 And it was the third houre, whẽ they crucified him.
26 And the title of his cause was writtẽ aboue, THAT KING OF THE IEWES.
27 They crucified also with him two theeues, the one on the right hand, and the other on his left.
28 Thus the Scripture was fulfilled which saith, * And he was counted among the wicked. *Isa.53.12.*
29 And they that went by, rayled on him, wagging their

Iohn 2.19. their heads,& ſaying, * Hey,thou that deſtroyeſt the ple,and buyldeſt it in three dayes,

30 Saue thy ſelfe,and come downe from the cro

31 Likewiſe alſo euen the hie Prieſtes mocking, mong themſelues with the Scribes,He ſaued other me ſelfe he can not ſaue.

32 Let Chriſt the King of Iſrael now come downe the croſſe,that we may ſee,and beleue.They alſo that crucified with him,reuiled him.

33 ¶Nowe when the ſixe houre was come,darkene roſe ouer all the land vntill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre Ieſus cryed with a lo

*Pſal.*22.1. voyce, ſaying,* Eloi, Eloi, lamma-ſabachthani? which

*mat.*27.46. interpretatiõ, My God, my God,why haſt thou forſaken

35 And ſome of them that ſtoode by,when they h it,ſayd,Behold,he calleth Elias.

*Pſal.*69.22. 36 And one ranne, & filled a * ſpondge full of vine and put it on a reede,& gaue him to drinke,ſaying,Le alone: Let vs ſee if Elias will come,and take him down

37 And Ieſus cried with a loude voyce,and gaue vp ghoſt.

38 And the vayle of the Temple was rent in twa from the top to the bottome.

39 Now when the Centurion,which ſtood ouer agai him, ſawe that he thus crying gaue vp the ghoſt, he ſay Truely this man was the Sonne of God.

40 ¶There were alſo women, which beheld a farre among whom was Marie Magdalene,and Marie(the moth of Iames the leſſe,and of Ioſes) and Salome,

*Luk.*8.2. 41 Which alſo when he was in Galile, * followed hi and miniſtred vnto him, & many other women which c vp with him vnto Hieruſalem.

*Mat.*27.57 42 * And nowe when night was come (becauſe it wa the day of the preparation that is before the Sabbath)

Luk. 23 50. 43 * Ioſeph of Arimathea, an honorable counſelle

*Ioh.*19.38. which alſo looked for the kingdome of God, came, & we in boldly vnto Pilate,and asked the body of Ieſus.

44 And Pilate marueiled,if he were already dead, a called vnto him the Centurion,& asked of him whether h had bene any while dead.

45 And when he knewe *the trueth* of the Centurion, h gaue the body to Ioſeph:

46 Who bought a linnen cloth,and tooke him down

an

wrapped him in the linnen cloth, and layed him in a
that was hewen out of a rock,& rolled a ſtone vnto
doore of the ſepulchre.

And Marie Magdalene, and Marie Ioſes *mother*, be-
where he ſhould be layed.

CHAP. XVI.

*Chriſtes reſurrection. 9 He appeareth to Marie Mag-
lene and others. 15 He ſendeth his Apoſtles to preach.
His aſcenſion.*

Nd* when the Sabbath day was paſt, Marie Magdalene, *Luke* 24.1.
and Marie the *mother* of Iames, and Salome, bought *ioh.*20.1.
ſweete oyntments that they might come, and anoynt him.

2 Therefore earely in the morning, the firſt daye of the
eke, they came vnto the ſepulchre, when the ſunne was
ſet riſen.

3 And they ſaide one to another, Who ſhall rolle vs a-
the ſtone from the doore of the ſepulchre?

4 And when they looked, they ſawe that the ſtone was
olled away (for it was a very great one.)

5 *So they went into the ſepulchre,& ſawe a yong man *Mat.*28.1.
ting at the right ſide, clothed in a long white robe: and *ioh.*20.12.
they were ſore troubled.

6 But he ſayde vnto them, Be not ſo troubled: ye ſeeke
Ieſus of Nazareth, which hath bene crucified: he is riſen, he
is not here: behold the place where they put him.

7 But go your way, and tell his diſciples, and Peter, that
he will go before you into Galile: there ſhal ye ſee him,* as *Chap.*14.28
he ſayd vnto you. *mat.*26.32.

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the ſepul-
chre: for they trembled, and were amaſed: neither ſaid they
any thing to any man: for they were afrayde.

9 ¶And when Ieſus was riſen againe, early the firſt day
of the weeke, he appeared firſt to Marie Magdalene,* out of *Iohn* 20.16.
whom he had caſt ſeuen deuils. *luke* 8.2.

10 And ſhee went and tolde them that had bene with
him, which mourned and wept.

11 And when they heard that he was aliue, and had ap-
peared to her, they beleeued it not.

12 ¶*After that, he appeared vnto two of them in ano- *Luke* 24.13.
ther forme, as they walked and went into the countrey.

13 And they went, and told it to the remnant, neyther
beleeued they them.

14 ¶* Finally, hee appeared vnto the eleuen as they *Luk.*24.36.
ſate *ioh.*20.19.

sate together, and reproched them for their vnbelief
hardnes of heart, because they beleeued not them
had seene him, being risen vp againe.

Mat.28.19 15 And he sayd vnto them,* Go ye into all the wo
and preach the Gospel to euery creature.

16 He that shal beleeue and be baptized, shalbe sa
Joh.12.48. * but he that wil not beleeue, shalbe damned.

Act.16.18. 17 And these tokens shal follow them that beleeu
Act.2.4. my Name they shall cast out deuils, and * shal speake
& 10.46. newe tongues,

Act.28.5. 18 *And shal take away serpents, and if they shal dr
Act.28.8. any deadly thing, it shal not hurt them: * they shal lay t
hands on the sicke, and they shal recouer.

Luk.24.51. 19 * So after the Lorde had spoken vnto them, he
receiued into heauen, and sate at the right hand of God.

20 And they went foorth, and preached euery w
Heb.2.4. And the * Lord wrought with them, & confirmed the
with signes that followed, Amen.

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORDING to Luke.

CHAP. I.

*1 Lukes preface. 5 Zacharias & Elisabet. 15 What an
Iohn should be. 20 Zacharias strooken dumme for ha
credulitie. 26 The Angel salateth Marie, and foretel
Christes natiuitie. 39 Marie visiteth Elisabet. 46 Ma
song. 68 The song of Zacharias, shewing that the prom
Christ is come. 76 The office of Iohn.*

FOR as much as many haue taken in ha
to set foorth the storie of those thing
whereof we are fully perswaded,

2 As they haue deliuered them vn
vs, which from the beginning sawe the
their selues, and were ministers of th
worde,

3 It seemed good also to mee (most noble Theophilus)
assoone as I had searched out perfectly all thinges from th
beginning, to write vnto thee thereof from poynt to poin

4 That thou mightest acknowledge the certaintie o
those things, whereof thou hast bene instructed.

5 Th

N the time of Herod king of Iudea, there was a certaine Priest named Zacharias, of the * course of Abia: his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name Elisabet. 1. Chro. 24. 1

Both were iust before God, & walked in all the commandements & ordinances of the Lord, without reproofe.

And they had no childe, because that Elisabet was barren: and both were well stricken in age.

And it came to passe, as he executed the Priestes office before God, as his course came in order,

According to the custome of the Priestes office, his lot was to burne incense, when he went into the Temple of the Lord. Exod. 30. 7.

And the whole multitude of the people were without in prayer,* while the incense was burning. Leuit. 16. 17.

Then appeared vnto him an Angel of the Lord standing at the right side of the altar of incense.

And when Zacharias saw *him*, he was troubled, and feare fell vpon him.

But the Angel saide vnto him, Feare not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elisabet shal beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Iohn.

And thou shalt haue ioy and gladnes, and many shal reioyce at his birth.

For he shalbe great in the sight of the Lord, and shall neither drinke wine, nor strong drinke: and he shalbe filled with the holy Ghost, euen from his mothers wombe.

*And many of the children of Israel shal he turne to the Lord God. Malac. 4. 5.

*For he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turne the heartes of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdome of the iust men, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. Mat. 11. 14.

Then Zacharias said vnto the Angel, Whereby shall I knowe this? for I am an olde man, and my wife is of a great age.

And the Angel answered, and saide vnto him, I am Gabriel that stand in the presence of God, and am sent to speake vnto thee, and to shew thee these good tidings.

And beholde, thou shalt be dumme, and not be able to speake, vntil the day that these thinges be done, because thou beleeuedst not my wordes, which shalbe fulfilled in their season.

21 Now the people waited for Zacharias, and mar-
led that he taried so long in the Temple.

22 And when hee came out, hee could not speake
them: then they perceiued that he had seene a vision
Temple: for he made signes vnto them, & remained dum

23 And it came to passe, when the dayes of his
were fulfilled, that he departed to his owne house.

24 And after those dayes, his wife Elisabet conceiu
and hid her selfe fiue moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath ỹ Lord dealt with me, in the dayes wh
in he looked on *me*, to take from me my rebuke among

26 ¶ And in the sixt moneth, the Angel Gabriel
sent from God vnto a citie of Galile, named Nazareth,

*Mat.*1.18. 27 *To a virgine affianced to a man whose name *was*
seph, of the house of Dauid, and the virgins name *was* Mar

28 And the Angel went in vnto her, and said, Haile th
that art freely beloued: the Lorde *is* with thee: blessed
thou among women.

29 And when she sawe *him*, she was troubled at his
ing, and thought what maner of salutation that should be

30 Then the Angel saide vnto her, Feare not, Marie:
thou hast found fauour with God.

*Isai*7.14. 31 * For lo, thou shalt conceiue in thy wombe, & bea
*Chap.*2.21. a sonne, * and shalt call his name IESVS.
*mat.*1.21. 32 He shalbe great, and shalbe called the Sonne of th
most High, and the Lord God shal giue vnto him the thro
of his father Dauid.

*Dan.*7.14, 33 * And hee shal reigne ouer the house of Iacob for
*27.mic.*4.7 uer, and of his kingdome shalbe none ende.

34 Then said Marie vnto the Angel, Howe shall this be
seeing I know not man?

35 And the Angel answered, & saide vnto her, The ho
ly Ghost shall come vpon thee, and the power of the mo
High shal ouershadow thee: therefore also that holy thi
which shalbe borne of thee, shalbe called the Sonne of God.

36 And behold, thy cousin Elisabet, she hath also conce
ued a sonne in her olde age: and this is her sixt moneth
which was called barren.

37 For with God shall nothing be vnpossible.

38 Then Marie said, Behold the seruant of the Lord: be
it vnto me according to thy word. So the Angel departed
from her.

39 ¶ And Marie arose in those dayes, and went into the
hill

countrey with haſte to a citie of Iuda,

40 And entred into the houſe of Zacharias, and ſaluted Elisabet.

41 And it came to paſſe, as Eliſabet heard the ſalutation of Marie, the babe ſprang in her belly, and Eliſabet was filled with the holy Ghoſt.

42 And ſhe cried with a loude voyce, and ſaide, Bleſſed art thou among women, becauſe the fruite of thy wombe is bleſſed.

43 And whence *commeth* this to me, that the mother of my Lord ſhould come to me?

44 For loe, aſſoone as the voyce of thy ſalutation ſounded in mine eares, the babe ſprang in my belly for ioy.

45 And bleſſed *is* ſhe that beleeued: for thoſe thinges ſhall be performed, which were tolde her from the Lord.

46 Then Marie ſaid, My ſoule magnifieth the Lord,

47 And my ſpirit reioyceth in God my Sauiour.

48 For he hath looked on ỹ poore degree of his ſeruãt: for behold, from hencefoorth ſhall all ages call me bleſſed.

49 Becauſe, hee that is mightie, hath done for me great thinges, and holy *is* his Name.

50 And his mercie *is* from generation to generation on them that feare him.

51 *He hath ſhewed ſtrength with his arme: * he hath ſcattered the proude in the imagination of their heartes. *Iſa.51.9. pſal.33.10.*

52 *He hath put downe the mightie from *their* ſeates, and exalted them of lowe degree. *Iſa.29.15. 1.Sam.2.6.*

53 *He hath filled the hungrie with good thinges, and ſent away the riche emptie. *Pſal.34.10.*

54 *He hath vpholden Iſrael his ſeruant to be mindfull of his mercie, *Iſa 30.18. and 41.8.& 54.5. iere. 31.3,20.*

55 (*As he hath ſpoken to our fathers, *to wit*, to Abraham and his ſeede) for euer.

56 ¶ And Marie abode with her about three moneths: after, ſhe returned to her owne houſe. *Gen.17.19. and 22.17.*

57 ¶ Nowe Eliſabets time was fulfilled, that ſhe ſhould be deliuered, and ſhe brought foorth a ſonne. *pſal.132.11.*

58 And her neighbours, and couſins heard tell how the Lord had ſhewed his great mercie vpon her, and they * reioyced with her. *Verſe 14.*

59 And it was ſo that on the eight day, they came to circumciſe the babe, and called him Zacharias after the name of his father.

60 But his mother answered, and saide, Not so, but he shalbe called Iohn.

61 And they said vnto her, There is none of thy kinred that is named with this name.

62 Then they made signes to his father, howe he would haue him called.

63 So he asked for writing tables, and wrote, saying, His name is Iohn, and they marueiled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, & his tõgue, and he spake and praised God.

was restored to it former state, *a read in some copies.*

65 Then feare came on all them that dwelt neere vnto them, and al these words were noysed abroade throughout all the hill *countrey* of Iudea.

66 And all they that heard them, layde *them* vp in their heartes, saying, What maner childe shall this be! and the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 Then his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophecied, saying,

68 Blessed *be* the Lord God of Israel, because he hath visited and * redeemed his people,

Chap.2.30. mat.1.21.

69 *And hath raysed vp the horne of saluation vnto vs, in the house of his seruant Dauid,

Psa.132.18.

70 *As hee spake by the mouth of his holy Prophetes, which were since the world began, *saying*,

Iere.23.6. and 30.10.

71 *That he would send vs* deliuerance from our enemies, and from the handes of all that hate vs,

72 That he might shewe mercie towardes our fathers, and remember his holy couenant,

Gene.22.16.

73 **And* the othe which he sware to our father Abraham,

Iere.31.33. hebr.6.13, 17.

74 *Which was*, that hee would graunt vnto vs, that we being deliuered out of the handes of our enemies, shoulde serue him without feare,

1.Pet.1.15.

75 All the dayes of our life, in * holines and righteousnesse before him.

76 And thou, babe, shalt be called the Prophet of the most High: for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord, to prepare his wayes,

77 *And* to giue knowledge of saluation vnto his people, by the remission of their sinnes,

78 Through the tender mercie of our God, whereby

Zech.3.8. and 6.12. mal.4.2.

*the day spring from an hie hath visited vs,

79 To giue light to them that sit in darkenes, & in the shadow of death, & to guide our feete into ỹ way of peace.

80 And

80 And the childe grewe, and waxed ſtrong in ſpirit, and was in the wilderneſſe, till the day came that he ſhould ſhew himſelfe vnto Iſrael.

CHAP. II.

Auguſtus Ceſar taxeth all the worlde. 7 Chriſt is borne. 13 The Angels ſong. 21 Chriſt is circumciſed. 22 Marie purified. 28 Simeon taketh Chriſt in his armes. 29 His ſong. 36 Anna the Propheteſſe. 40 The child Chriſt. 46 Iesus diſputeth with the doctours.

AND it came to paſſe in thoſe dayes, that there came a decree from Auguſtus Ceſar, that all the worlde ſhoulde be taxed.

2 (This firſt taxing was made when Cyrenius was gouernour of Syria.)

3 Therefore went all to be taxed, euery man to his owne citie.

4 And Ioſeph alſo went vp from Galile out of a citie called Nazareth, into Iudea, vnto the citie of * Dauid, which is called Beth-leem (becauſe hee was of the houſe and linage of Dauid,) *Iohn.7.42.*

5 To be taxed with Marie that was giuen him to wife, which was with childe.

6 ¶ And ſo it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accompliſhed that ſhe ſhould be deliuered.

7 And ſhe brought foorth her firſt begotten ſonne, and wrapped him in ſwadling clothes, and laide him in a cratch, becauſe there was no roome for them in the ynne.

8 ¶ And there were in the ſame countrey ſhepheards, abiding in the field, and keeping watch by night ouer their flocke.

9 And loe, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and the glory of the Lord ſhone about them, and they were ſore afraid.

10 Then the Angel ſaide vnto them, Be not afraide: for beholde, I bring you glad tidings of great ioye, that ſhall be to all the people:

11 *That is*, that vnto you is borne this day in the citie of Dauid, a Sauiour, which is Chriſt the Lord.

12 And this *ſhalbe* a ſigne to you, Ye ſhall finde the babe ſwadled, and laide in a cratch.

13 And ſtraightway there was with the Angel a multitude of heauenly ſouldiers, prayſing God, and ſaying,

14 Glory *be* to God in the high *heauens*, and peace
earth, and towards men good will.

15 And it came to passe when the Angels were gone
way from them into heauen, that the shepheardes said
to another, Let vs go then vnto Beth-leem, & see this th
that is come to passe which the Lord hath shewed vnto

16 So they came with haste, and found both Marie
Ioseph, and the babe laide in the cratch.

17 And when they had seene it, they published abr
the thing, which was told them of that childe.

18 And all that heard it, wondred at the things wh
were told them of the shepheards.

19 But Marie kept al those sayings, and pondered th
in her heart.

20 And the shepheardes returned glorifying and pra
sing God, for all that they had heard and seene as it was
ken vnto them.

*Gen.*17. 12. *Leuit.*12.3. *Iohn* 7.22. *Chap.*1.31. *mat.*1.21. 21 ¶ * And when the eight dayes were accomplish
that they should circumcise the childe, his name was
called * IESVS, which was named of the Angel, before
was conceyued in the wombe.

*Leuit.*12.6. 22 * And when the dayes of her purification after
Law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to H
rusalem, to present him to the Lord,

*Exod.*13.2. *nom.*8.16. 23 (As it is written in the Law of the Lord, * Euery m
childe that *first* openeth the wombe, shalbe called holy
the Lord)

*Leuit.*12.6. 24 And to giue an oblation, * as it is commanded in th
Lawe of the Lorde, a paire of turtle doues, or two yong pi
geons.

25 And behold, there was a man in Hierusalem, whos
name was Simeon: this man *was* iust, and feared God, a
waited for the consolation of Israel, and the holy Ghost wa
vpon him.

26 And it was declared to him from God by the holy
Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seene that
Anoynted of the Lord.

27 And hee came by *the motion of* the Spirite into the
Temple, and when the parents brought in the babe Iesus, to
do for him after the custome of the Law,

28 Then hee tooke him in his armes, and praysed God,
and said,

29 Lord, now lettest thou thy seruant depart in peace,
according

cording to thy word.

30 For mine eyes haue ſeene thy ſaluation,

31 Which thou haſt prepared before the face of all people,

32 A light to be reueyled to the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Iſrael.

33 And Ioſeph & his mother marueiled at thoſe things, which were ſpoken touching him.

34 And Simeon bleſſed them, and ſaide vnto Marie his mother, Beholde, this *childe* is appointed for the * fall and rising againe of many in Iſrael, and for a ſigne which ſhalbe ſpoken againſt, *Eſa.* 8.14 *rom.* 9.32. 1.*pet.* 2.8.

35 (Yea and a ſword ſhal pearce through thy ſoule) that the thoughtes of many heartes may be opened.

36 And there was a Prophetiſſe, one Anna the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aſer, which was of a great age, after ſhe had liued with an husband ſeuen yeeres from her virginitie:

37 And ſhe *was* widowe about foure ſcore and foure yeres, and went not out of the Temple, but ſerued *God* with faſtings and prayers, night and day.

38 She then comming at the ſame inſtant vpon them, confeſſed likewiſe the Lord, and ſpake of him to al that looked for redemption in Hieruſalem.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the Lawe of the Lorde, they returned into Galile to their owne citie Nazareth.

40 And the childe grewe, and waxed ſtrong in Spirite, and was filled with wiſdome, and the grace of God was with him.

41 ¶ Now his parents went to Hieruſalem euery yere, at the feaſt of the Paſſeouer. *Deut.* 16. 1.

42 And when he was twelue yere olde, and they were come vp to Hieruſalem, after the cuſtome of the feaſt,

43 And had finiſhed the dayes *thereof*, as they returned, the childe Ieſus remained in Hieruſalem, and Ioſeph knewe not, nor his mother,

44 But they ſuppoſing that he had bene in the companie, went a dayes iourney, and ſought him among *their* kinſfolke, and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned back to Hieruſalem, and ſought him.

46 And it came to paſſe three dayes after, that they

found him in the Temple, sitting in the middes of the doc-
tors, both hearing them, and asking them questions:

47 And all that heard him, were astonied at his vnder-
standing, and answeres.

48 So when they sawe him, they were amased, and his
mother said vnto him, Sonne, why hast thou thus dealt with
vs? beholde, thy father and I haue sought thee with sore
heauie heartes.

49 Then saide he vnto them, Howe is it that ye sought
me? knew ye not that I must go about my Fathers busines?

50 But they vnderstoode not the worde that he spake
to them.

51 Then hee went downe with them, and came to Na-
zareth, & was subiect to them: and his mother kept all these
sayings in her heart.

52 And Iesus increased in wisdome, and stature, and in
fauour with God and men.

CHAP. III.

4 Iohn exhorteth to repentance. 15 His testimonie of Christ.
20 Herod putteth him in prison. 21 Christ is baptized.
His pedegree.

NOwe in the fiftenth yeere of the reigne of Tiberius Cae-
sar, Pontius Pilate being gouernour of Iudea, & Herod
being Tetrarch of Galile, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of
Iturea, and of the countrey of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the
Tetrarch of Abilene,

Acts.4.6. 2 (* When Annas and Caiaphas were the hie Priestes)
the word of God came vnto Iohn, the sonne of Zacharias in
the wilderneſſe.

Matth.3.2. mark.1.4. 3 * And hee came into all the coastes about Iordan,
preaching the baptisme of repentance for the remission of
sinnes.

4 As it is written in the booke of the sayings of Esaias
Isai 40.3. iohn 1.23. the Prophet, which saith, * The voyce of him that cryeth in
the wilderneſſe *is*, Prepare ye the way of the Lord: make his
paths straight.

5 Euery valley shalbe filled, and euery mountaine and
hill shalbe brought lowe, and crooked thinges shalbe made
straight, and the rough wayes *shalbe made* smoothe.

6 And all flesh shall see the saluation of God.

7 Then saide hee to the people that were come out to
Matt.3.7. be baptized of him, * O generations of vipers, who hath
forewarned

warned you to flee from the wrath to come?
8 Bring forth therefore fruites worthie amendment of
life, and begin not to say with your selues, We haue Abra-
ham to our father: for I say vnto you, that God is able of
these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.
9 Now also is the axe layd vnto the roote of the trees:
therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruite,
shalbe hewen downe, and cast into the fire.
10 ¶ Then the people asked him, saying, What shall we
do then?
11 And he answered, and sayde vnto them, *He that *Iam.2.15.
hath two coates, let him part with him that hath none: and *1.Ioh.3.17.
he that hath meate, let him doe likewise.
12 Then came there Publicanes also to be baptized,
and sayd vnto him, Master, what shall we doe?
13 And he said vnto them, Require no more then that
which is appointed vnto you.
14 The souldiers likewise demaunded of him, saying,
And what shal we doe? And he said vnto them, Do violence
to no man, neither accuse any falsly, and be content with
your wages.
15 As the people wayted, and all men mused in their
hearts of Iohn, if he were not that Christ,
16 Iohn answered, and sayd to them all, *In deede I *Mat.3.11.
baptize you with water, but one stronger then I, commeth, *mark.1.8.
whose shoes latchet I am not worthie to vnloose: he will *iohn 1.26.
baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire. *actes 1.5.
17 Whose fanne is in his hand, and he wil make cleane *and 8.4. &
his floore, and wil gather the wheate into his garner, but 11.16. and
the chaffe will he burne vp with fire that neuer shall be 19.4.
quenched.
18 Thus then exhorting with many other thinges, he
preached vnto the people.
19 *But when Herod the Tetrarch was rebuked of him, *Mat.14.3.
for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the euils *mark.6.17.
which Herod had done,
20 He added yet this aboue all, that he shut vp Iohn in
prison.
21 *Nowe it came to passe, as all the people were bap- *Mat.3.13.
tized, and that Iesus was baptized and did pray, that the *mark.1.9.
heauen was opened: *iohn 1.32.
22 And the holy Ghost came downe in a bodily shape
like a doue vpon him, and there was a voyce from heauen,
saying,

saying, Thou art my beloued Sonne: in thee I am well pleased.

23 ¶And Iesus him selfe began to be about thirtie yeeres of age, being as men supposed the sonne of Ioseph, *which was* *the sonne* of Eli,

24 *The sonne* of Matthat, *the sonne* of Leui, *the sonne* of Melchi, *the sonne* of Janna, *the sonne* of Ioseph,

25 *The sonne* of Mattathias, *the sonne* of Amos, *the sonne* of Naum, *the sonne* of Esli, *the sonne* of Nagge,

26 *The sonne* of Maath, *the sonne* of Mattathias, *the sonne* of Semei, *the sonne* of Ioseph, *the sonne* of Iuda,

27 *The sonne* of Ioanna, *the sonne* of Rhesa, *the sonne* of Zorobabel, *the sonne* of Salathiel, *the sonne* of Neri,

28 *The sonne* of Melchi, *the sonne* of Addi, *the sonne* of Cosam, *the sonne* of Elmodam, *the sonne* of Er,

29 ¶*The sonne* of Iose, *the sonne* of Eliezer, *the sonne* of Iorim, *the sonne* of Matthat, *the sonne* of Leui,

30 *The sonne* of Simeon, *the sonne* of Iuda, *the sonne* of Ioseph, *the sonne* of Ionan, *the sonne* of Eliacim,

31 *The sonne* of Melea, *the sonne* of Mainan, *the sonne* of Mattatha, *the sonne* of Nathan, *the sonne* of Dauid,

32 *The sonne* of Iesse, *the sonne* of Obed, *the sonne* of Booz, *the sonne* of Salmon, *the sonne* of Naasson,

33 *The sonne* of Aminadab, *the sonne* of Aram, *the sonne* of Esrom, *the sonne* of Phares, *the sonne* of Iuda,

34 *The sonne* of Iacob, *the sonne* of Isaac, *the sonne* of Abraham, *the sonne* of Thara, *the sonne* of Nachor,

35 *The sonne* of Saruch, *the sonne* of Ragau, *the sonne* of Phalec, *the sonne* of Eber, *the sonne* of Sala,

36 *The sonne* of Cainan, *the sonne* of Arphaxad, *the sonne* of Sem, *the sonne* of Noe, *the sonne* of Lamech,

37 *The sonne* of Mathusala, *the sonne* of Enoch, *the sonne* of Iared, *the sonne* of Maleleel, *the sonne* of Cainan,

38 *The sonne* of Enos, *the sonne* of Seth, *the sonne* of Adam, *the sonne* of God.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Of Christes temptation, and fasting.* 16 *He teacheth in Nazareth to the great admiration of all.* 24 *A Prophet that teacheth in his owne country is contemned.* 33 *One possessed of the deuil is healed.* 38 *Peters mother in law healed.* 40 *and diuers other persons are restored to health.* 41 *The deuils acknowledge Christ.*

ANd Iesus full of the holy Ghost returned from Iordan, and was led by that Spirit into the wilderneſſe,

2 *And

2 * And was *there* fourtie dayes tempted of the deuil, and in those dayes he did eate nothing: but when they were ended, he afterward was hungrie. *Mat.4.2. mar.1.12.*

3 Then the deuil sayd vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, commaund this stone that it be made bread.

4 But Iesus answered him, saying, It is written, * That man shal not liue by bread onely, but by euery worde of God. *Deut.8.3. mat.4.4.*

5 Then the deuill tooke him vp into an high mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdomes of the world, in the twinkeling of an eye.

6 And the deuil said vnto him, All this power will I giue thee, and the glorie of those *kingdomes*: for that is deliuered to me: and to whomsoeuer I wil, I giue it.

7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, they shall be all thine.

8 But Iesus answered him, and sayde, Hence from me, Satan: for it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lorde thy God, and him alone thou shalt serue. *Deu.6.13. and 10.20.*

9 Then he brought him to Hierusalem, and set him on a pinacle of the Temple, and said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence,

10 For it is written, * That he will giue his Angels charge ouer thee to keepe thee: *Psal.91.12.*

11 And with *their* handes they shal lift thee vp, least at any time thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone.

12 And Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, It is sayd, * Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. *Deu.6.16.*

13 And when the deuil had ended all the tentation, he departed from him for a litle season.

14 ¶ And Iesus returned by the power of the spirit into Galile: and there went a fame of him throughout all the region round about.

15 For he taught in their Synagogues, and was honored of all men.

16 * And he came to Nazareth where he had bene brought vp, and (as his custome was) went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood vp to reade. *Mat.13.54. mar.6.1. iohn 4.43.*

17 And there was deliuered vnto him the booke of the Prophet Esaias: and when he had opened the booke, he found the place, where it was written,

18 * The Spirit of the Lord *is* vpon me, because he hath anointed mee, that I should preache the Gospel to the poore: *Isa.61.1.*

poore: he hath ſent me, that I ſhould heale the bro-
hearted, that I ſhould preach deliuerance to the captiu-
and recouering of ſight to the blinde, that I ſhould ſe-
libertie them that are bruiſed:

19 And that I ſhould preach the acceptable yeere
the Lord.

20 And he cloſed the booke, and gaue it againe to
miniſter, and ſate downe: and the eyes of all that wer-
the Synagogue, were faſtened on him.

21 Then he began to ſay vnto them, This day is
Scripture fulfilled in your eares.

22 And all bare him witnes, and wondered at the
cious wordes, which proceeded out of his mouth, and
Is not this Ioſephs ſonne?

23 Then he ſaid vnto them, Ye will ſurely ſay vnto
this prouerbe, Phyſicion, heale thy ſelfe: whatſoeuer
haue heard done in Capernaum, doe it here likewi-
thine owne countrey.

Iohn 4.44. 24 And he ſayd, Verely I ſay vnto you, * No Prophet
accepted in his owne countrey.

25 But I tel you of a trueth, many widowes were in
1.*Kin.*17.9. rael in the dayes of * Elias, when heauen was ſhut thr-
*Iam.*5.17. yeres and ſixe moneths, when great famine was through
all the land,

26 But vnto none of them was Elias ſent, ſaue into S-
repta, *a citie of* Sidon, vnto a certaine widowe.

2.*Kin.*5.14. 27 Alſo many lepers were in Iſrael, in the time of E-
ſeus the Prophet: yet none of them was made cleane,
ning Naaman the Syrian.

28 Then all *that were* in the Synagogue, when the
heard it, were filled with wrath,

29 And roſe vp, and thruſt him out of the citie, and
him vnto the edge of the hil, whereon their citie was bu-
to caſt him downe headlong.

30 But he paſſed through the middes of them, & we-
his way,

*Mat.*4.13. 31 ¶ * And came downe into Capernaum a citie of G-
*mark.*1.22. lile, and there taught them on the Sabbath dayes.

*Mat.*7.29. 32 * And they were aſtonied at his doctrine: for h-
*mar.*1.22. worde was with authoritie.

*Mar.*1.23. 33 * And in the Synagogue there was a man which h-
a ſpirit of an vncleane deuil, which cryed with a lou-
voyce,

34 Say-

34 Saying, Oh, what haue we to doe with thee, thou
of Nazareth? art thou come to deſtroy vs? I knowe
thou art, *euen* the holy one of God.
35 And Ieſus rebuked him, ſaying, Holde thy peace, and
out of him. Then the deuil throwing him in the mids
came out of him, and hurt him nothing at all.
36 So feare came on them all, and they ſpake among
ſelues, ſaying, What thing is this? for with authori-
and power he commaundeth the foule ſpirits, and they
out.
37 And the fame of him ſpred abroad throughout all
places of the countrey round about.
38 ¶ *And he roſe vp, and came out of the Synagogue, *Mat.8.14.*
entred into Simons houſe. And Simons wiues mother *mar.1.30.*
taken with a great feuer, & they required him for her.
39 Then he ſtood ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and
left her, and immediatly ſhe aroſe, and miniſtred vnto
them.
40 Nowe at the ſunne ſetting, all they that had ſicke
of diuers diſeaſes, brought them vnto him, & he layde
his hands on euery one of them, and healed them.
41 *And deuils alſo came out of many, crying, and ſay- *Mar.1.35.*
Thou art that Chriſt that Sonne of God: but he rebu-
them, and ſuffred them not to ſay that they knew him
be that Chriſt.
42 And when it was day, he departed, & went forth in-
a deſert place, and the people ſought him, and came to
him, and kept him that he ſhould not depart from them.
43 But he ſaid vnto them, Surely I muſt alſo preach the
kingdome of God to other cities: for therefore am I ſent.
44 And he preached in the Synagogues of Galile.

CHAP. V.

Chriſt teacheth out of the ſhip. 6 Of the draught of fiſh. 11 The Leper. 16 Chriſt prayeth in the deſert. 18 One ſicke of the palſie. 27 Leui the Publicane. 34 The faſtings and afflictions of the Apoſtles after Chriſtes aſcenſion. 36. 37. 38 Faint hearted and weake diſciples are likened to olde bottels and worne garments.

1 Then *it came to paſſe, as the people preaſſed vpon him *Mat.4.18.*
to heare the worde of God, that he ſtood by the lake of *mar.1.16.*
Genezaret,
2 And ſawe two ſhippes ſtand by the lake ſide, but the
fiſhermen

fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nettes.

3 And he entred into one of the shippes, which was Simons, and required him that he would thrust off a little from the land: and he sate downe, and taught the people out of the ship.

4 ¶Now when he had left speaking, he said vnto Simon, Launche out into the deepe, and let downe your nettes to make a draught.

5 Then Simon answered, and sayd vnto him, Master, we haue trauailed sore all night, and haue taken nothing: neuertheless at thy worde I wil let downe the net.

6 And when they had so done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, so that their net brake.

7 And they beckened to their parteners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and helpe them, which came then, and filled both the shippes, that they did sinke.

8 Nowe when Simon Peter sawe it, he fel downe at Iesus knees, saying, Lorde, goe from me: for I am a sinneful man.

9 For he was vtterly astonied, and all that were with him, for the draught of fishes which they tooke.

10 And so was also Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus, which were companions with Simon. Then Iesus said vnto Simon, Feare not: frō henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought the shippes to land, they forsooke all, and followed him.

Mat.8.2. mar.1.40. 12 ¶*Now it came to passe, as he was in a certaine citie, beholde, *there was* a man full of leprosie, and when he sawe Iesus, he fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

13 So he stretched foorth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane. And immediatly the leprosie departed from him.

14 And he commaunded him that he should tell it no man: but goe, *saith he*, and shewe thy selfe to the Priest, and *Leuit.14.4.* offer for thy cleansing, as *Moses hath commanded, for a witnes vnto them.

15 But so much more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, and to be healed of him of their infirmities.

16 But he kept him selfe apart in the wildernesse, and prayed.

17 ¶ A

17 ¶ And it came to passe, on a certaine day, as he was teaching, that the Pharises and doctours of the Lawe sate by, which were come out of euery towne of Galile, and Iudea, and Hierusalem, and the power of the Lord was *in him* to heale them.

18 *Then beholde, men brought a man lying in a bed, which was taken with a palsie, and they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him. *Mat.9.2. mar.2.3.*

19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the prease, they went vp on the house, and let him downe through the tyling, bed & all, in the middes before Iesus.

20 And when he saw their fayth, he sayd vnto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

21 Then the Scribes and the Pharises began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? who can forgiue sinnes, but God onely?

22 But when Iesus perceiued their reasoning, he answered, and sayd vnto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee, or to say, Rise and walke?

24 But that ye may know that that Sonne of man hath authoritie to forgiue sinnes in earth, (he sayd vnto the sicke of the palsie) I say to thee, Arise: take vp thy bed, and goe to thine house.

25 And immediatly he rose vp before them, and tooke vp *his bed* whereon he lay, and departed to his owne house, praysing God.

26 And they were all amased, and praysed God, & were filled with feare, saying, Doutlesse, we haue seene strange things to day.

27 ¶ *And after that, he went forth and sawe a Publicane named Leui, sitting at the receite of custome, and sayd vnto him, Folowe me. *Mat.9.9. mar.2.14.*

28 And he left all, rose vp, and folowed him.

29 Then Leui made him a great feast in his owne house, where there was a great companie of Publicanes, and of other that sate at table with them.

30 But they that were Scribes and Pharises among them, murmured against his disciples, saying, Why eate ye and drinke ye with Publicanes and sinners?

31 Then Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, They that are whole, neede not the Physition, but they that are sicke.

32 *I

1.Tim.1.15. 32 *I came not to call the righteous, but sinners
pentance.

Mat.9.14. 33 ¶*Then they said vnto him, Why doe the disc
mar.2.18. of Iohn fast often, and pray, and the *disciples* of the Pha
also, but thine eate, and drinke?

34 And he sayd vnto them, Can ye make the chil
of the wedding chamber to fast, as long as the bridegr
is with them?

35 But the dayes wil come, euen when the bridegro
shalbe taken away from them: then shall they fast in th
dayes.

36 Againe he spake also vnto them a parable, No
putteth a piece of a new garment into an olde vesture:
then the new renteth it, and the piece *taken* out of t
new, agreeth not with the olde.

37 Also no man powreth newe wine into olde vess
for then the newe wine will breake the vessels, and it w
runne out, and the vessels wil perish:

38 But new wine must be powred into new vessels
both are preserued.

39 Also no man that drinketh olde wine, straightw
desireth new; for he saith, The olde is more profitable.

CHAP. VI.

1 *The disciples pul the eares of corne on the Sabbath. 6 Of
that had a withered hand. 13 The election of the Apost
20 The blessings and curses. 27 We must loue our enem
46 With what fruite the worde of God is to be heard.*

Mat.12.1. AND * it came to passe on a second solemne Sabbath, th
mar.2.23. he went through the corne fieldes, and his disci
plucked the eares of corne, and did eate, and rubbe th
in *their* hands.

2 And certaine of the Pharises said vnto them, Why
ye that which is not lawfull to doe on the Sabbath daye

1.Sam.21.6 3 Then Iesus answered them, and sayd, * Haue ye n
read this, that Dauid did when he him selfe was an hu
gred, and they which were with him,

4 How he went into the house of God, and tooke, an
ate the shewe bread, and gaue also to them which wer
Exo.29.33. with him, which was not lawful to eate, but for the *Pries
Leuit.8.31. onely?
and 24.9.

5 And he sayd vnto them, The Sonne of man is Lord
also of the Sabbath day.

6 ¶*I

6 ¶* It came to passe also on another Sabbath, that he entred into the Synagogue, and taught, and there was a man, whose right hand was dried vp. *Mat.12.9. mar.3.1.*

7 And the Scribes and Pharises watched him, whether he would heale on the Sabbath *day*, that they might finde accusation *against* him.

8 But he knewe their thoughtes, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Arise, and stand vp in the middest. And he arose, and stoode vp.

9 Then said Iesus vnto them, I wil aske you a question, whether is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to doe good, or to doe euill? to saue life, or to destroy?

10 And he beholde them all in compasse, and said vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he did so, and his hand was restored againe, as whole as the other.

11 Then they were filled full of madnes, and commuued one with another, what they might do to Iesus.

12 ¶ And it came to passe in those dayes, that he went out into a mountaine to pray, and spent the night in prayer to God.

13 And when it was day, * he called his disciples, and of them he chose twelue, which also he called Apostles. *Chap.9.1. mat.10.1.*

14 (Simon whom he named also Peter, and Andrewe his brother, Iames and Iohn, Philippe, and Bartlemewe: *mar.3.13. and 6.7.*

15 Matthewe, and Thomas: Iames *the sonne* of Alphe- us, and Simon called Zelous,

16 Iudas Iames *brother*, and Iudas Iscariot, which also was the traytour.)

17 Then he came downe with them, & stood in a plaine with the companie of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Iudea, and Hierusalem, and from the coast of Tyrus & Sidon, which came to heare him, and to be healed of their diseases:

18 And they that were vexed with foule spirits, and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touche him: for there went vertue out of him, and he healed them all.

20 ¶* And he lifted vp his eyes vpon his disciples, and said, Blessed *be* ye poore: for yours is the kingdome of God. *Mat.5.3.*

21 * Blessed *are* ye that hunger nowe: for ye shalbe satisfied. * Blessed *are* ye that weepe nowe: for ye shall laugh. *Isa.65.13. Isa.61.3.*

Mat.5.11. 22 *Bleſſed are ye when men hate you, and when t
ſeparate you, and reuile *you*, and put out your name as e
for the Sonne of mans ſake.

23 Reioyce ye in that day, and be glad: for behol
your rewarde *is* great in heauen: for after this maner th
fathers did to the Prophetes.

Amos 6. 1. 24 *But wo *be* to you *that are* riche: for ye haue r
ceiued your conſolation.

Iſa.65.13. 25 *Wo *be* to you that are full: for ye ſhall hunger. W
be to you that now laugh: for ye ſhal wayle and weepe.

26 Wo *be* to you when all men ſpeake well of you
ſo did their fathers to the falſe prophetes.

Mat.5.44. 27 ¶*But I ſay vnto you which heare, Loue your e
mies: doe well to them which hate you.

28 Bleſſe them that curſe you, and pray for them whi
hurt you.

Mat.5.39. 29 *And vnto him that ſmiteth thee on ỹ *one* cheek
1.Cor.6.7. offer alſo the other: * and him that taketh away thy clo
forbid not *to take thy* coate alſo.

30 Giue to euery man that asketh of thee: and of h
that taketh away the *things that be* thine, aske them not
gaine.

Mat.7.12. 31 *And as ye would that men ſhoulde doe to you,
doe ye to them likewiſe.

Mat.5.46. 32 *For if ye loue them which loue you, what tha
ſhall ye haue? for euen the ſinners loue thoſe that l
them.

33 And if ye doe good for them which doe good
you, what thanke ſhall ye haue? for euen the ſinners d
the ſame.

Mat.5.42. 34 * And if ye lende *to them* of whom ye hope to
deut.15.8. ceiue, what thanke ſhall ye haue? for euen the ſinners len
to ſinners, to receiue the like.

35 Wherefore loue ye your enemies, and doe good
and lende, looking for nothing againe, and your reward
Mat.5.45. ſhalbe great, and ye ſhalbe the children of * the moſt Hig
for he is kinde vnto the vnkinde, and to the euill.

36 Be ye therefore merciſull, as your Father alſo i
merciſull.

Mat.7.1. 37 ¶ *Iudge not, and ye ſhal not be iudged: condemn
not, and ye ſhall not be condemned: forgiue, and ye ſha
Mat.7.2. be forgiuen.

Mark.4.24. 38 Giue, and it ſhalbe giuen vnto you: *a good meaſur
preſſ

preſſed downe, ſhaken together and running ouer ſhal men giue into your boſome: for with what meaſure ye mete, with the ſame ſhall men mete to you againe.

39 And he ſpake a parable vnto them, * Can the blinde leade the blinde? ſhall they not both fall into the ditch? *Mat.15.14.*

40 *The diſciple is not aboue his maſter: but whoſoeuer will be a perfect diſciple, ſhalbe as his maſter. *Mat.10.24. iohn 13. 16.*

41 ¶*And why ſeeſt thou a mote in thy brothers eye, and conſidereſt not the beame, that is in thine owne eye? *and 15. 20. Mat.7.3.*

42 Either howe canſt thou ſay to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou ſeeſt not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Hypocrite, caſt out the beame out of thine owne eye firſt, and then ſhalt thou ſee perfectly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

43 ¶* For it is not a good tree that bringeth forth euil fruite: neither an euil tree, that bringeth forth good fruit. *Mat.7.17.*

44 *For euery tree is knowen by his owne fruite: * for neither of thornes gather men figges, nor of buſhes gather they grapes. *Mat.12.33. Mat.7.16.*

45 A good man out of the good treaſure of his heart bringeth forth good, and an euill man out of the euill treaſure of his heart bringeth forth euill: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth ſpeaketh.

46 ¶*But why call ye me Lorde, Lord, and doe not the things that I ſpeake? *Mat.7.21. rom.2.13.*

47 Whoſoeuer commeth to me, & heareth my words, and doeth the ſame, I wil ſhew you to whom he is like: *iames 1.21.*

48 He is like a man which built an houſe, and digged deepe, and laide the foundation on a rocke: and when the waters aroſe, the flood beat vpon that houſe, and could not ſhake it: for it was grounded vpon a rocke.

49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that built an houſe vpon the earth without foundation, againſt which the flood did beate, and it fell by and by: and the fall of that houſe was great.

CHAP. VII.

1 Of the Centurions ſeruant. 9 The Centurions faith. 11 The widowes ſonne raiſed from death at Nain. 19 Iohn ſendeth his diſciples to Chriſt. 33 His peculiar kinde of liuing. 37 The ſinfull woman waſheth Ieſus feete.

WHen * he had ended all his ſayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum. *Mat.8.5.*

2 And a certaine Centurions ſeruant was ſicke and re-
die to die, which was deare vnto him.

3 And when he heard of Ieſus, he ſent vnto him ỹ El-
ders of the Iewes, beſeeching him that he woulde come,
and heale his ſeruant.

4 So they came to Ieſus, and beſought him inſtantly,
ſaying that he was worthy that he ſhould doe this for him

5 For he loueth, *ſaid they*, our nation, and he hath buil
vs a Synagogue.

6 Then Ieſus went with them: but when he was now
not farre from the houſe, the Centurion ſent friendes to
him, ſaying vnto him, Lorde, trouble not thy ſelfe: for I am
not worthy that thou ſhouldeſt enter vnder my roofe:

7 Wherefore I thought not my ſelfe worthy to come
vnto thee: but ſay the word, and my ſeruant ſhalbe whole

8 For I likewiſe am a man ſet vnder authoritie, & haue
vnder me ſouldiers, and I ſay vnto one, Goe, and he goeth,
and to another, Come, & he commeth, and to my ſeruant,
Doe this, and he doeth it.

9 When Ieſus heard theſe thinges, he marueiled at
him, and turned him, and ſaide to the people that folowed
him, I ſay vnto you, I haue not found ſo great faith, no not
in Iſrael.

10 And when they that were ſent, turned backe to the
houſe, they found the ſeruant that was ſicke, whole.

11 And it came to paſſe the day after, that he went in-
to a citie called Nain, and many of his diſciples went with
him, and a great multitude.

12 Now when he came neere to the gate of the citie,
beholde, there was a dead man caried out, *who was* the on-
ly begotten ſonne of his mother, which was a widowe, and
much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lord ſawe her, he had compaſſion
on her, and ſaid vnto her, Weepe not.

14 And he went & touched the coffin (and they ỹ bare
him ſtood ſtil) and he ſaid, Yong man, I ſay vnto thee, Ariſe.

15 And he that was dead, ſate vp, and began to ſpeake,
and he deliuered him to his mother.

16 Then there came a feare on them all, and they glo-
rified God, ſaying, A great Prophet is riſen among vs, and
God hath viſited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went foorth throughout all
Iudea, and throughout all the region rounde about.

18 And

18 And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of all these things.

19 So Iohn called vnto him two certaine men of his disciples, and sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou he that should come, or shall we waite for another?

20 And when the men were come vnto him, they saide, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or shall we waite for an other?

21 And at that time, he cured many of their sicknesses, and plagues, and of euill spirits, and vnto many blinde men he gaue sight freely.

22 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Goe your wayes and shew Iohn, what thinges ye haue seene & heard: that the blinde see, the halt goe, the lepers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead are raysed, *and* the poore receiue the Gospel.

23 And blessed is he, that shal not be offended in me.

24 And when the messengers of Iohn were departed, he began to speake vnto the people, of Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernesse to see? A reede shaken with the winde?

25 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? beholde, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and liue delicately, are in Kings courtes.

26 But what went ye forth to see? A Prophet? yea, I say to you, and greater then a Prophet.

27 This is he of whom it is written, *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. *Mat. 3.1.*

28 For I say vnto you, there is no greater Prophet then Iohn, among them that are begotten of women: neuertheless, he that is the least in the kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 Then all the people that heard, and the Publicanes iustified God, being baptized with the baptisme of Iohn.

30 But the Pharises and the expounders of the Lawe despised the counsell of God against them selues, and *were* not baptized of him.

31 *And the Lord said, Whereunto shal I liken ỹ men of this generation? and what *thing* are they like vnto? *Mat. 11. 16.*

32 They are like vnto litle children sitting in the market place, and crying one to another, and saying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not daunced; we haue mourned

ned to you, and ye haue not wept.

33 For Iohn Baptiſt came, neither eating bread, nor drinking wine: and ye ſay, He hath the deuill.

34 The Sonne of man is come, and eateth and drinketh: and ye ſay, Beholde, a man *which is* a glutton, and a drinker of wine, a friende of Publicanes and ſinners:

35 But wiſedome is iuſtified of all her children.

36 ¶ And one of ỹ Phariſes deſired him that he would eate with him: and he went into the Phariſes houſe, and ſate downe at table.

37 And beholde, a woman in the citie, which was a ſinner, when ſhe knewe that Ieſus ſate at table in the Phariſes houſe, ſhe brought a boxe of oyntment.

38 *And ſhe ſtoode at his feete behinde him weeping, and began to waſh his feete with teares, & did wipe them with the heares of her head, and kiſſed his feete, & anointed them with the ointment.

Mar. 15. 42. *Iohn* 20. 11.

39 Nowe when the Phariſe which bade him, ſawe it, he ſpake within himſelfe, ſaying, If this man were a Prophet, he woulde ſurely haue knowen who, and what maner of woman this is which toucheth him: for ſhe is a ſinner.

40 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide vnto him, Simon, I haue ſomewhat to ſay vnto thee. And he ſaid, Maſter, ſay on.

41 There was a certeine lender which had two detters: the one ought fiue hundreth pence, and the other fiftie:

42 Whē they had nothing to pay, he forgaue thē both. Which of them therefore, tell *me*, will loue him moſt?

43 Simon anſwered, and ſaide, I ſuppoſe that he, to whom he forgaue moſt. And he ſaid vnto him, Thou haſt truely iudged.

44 Then he turned to the woman, & ſaid vnto Simon, Seeſt thou this woman? I entred into thine houſe, and thou gaueſt me no water to my feete: but ſhe hath waſhed my feete with teares, and wiped them with the heares of her head.

45 Thou gaueſt me no kiſſe: but ſhe, ſince the time I came in, hath not ceaſſed to kiſſe my feete.

46 Mine head with oyle thou diddeſt not anoynt: but ſhe hath anointed my feete with ointment.

47 Wherefore I ſay vnto thee, many ſinnes are forgiuen her: for ſhe loued much. To whom a litle is forgiuen, he doth loue a litle.

48 And he ſaid vnto her, Thy ſinnes are forgiuen thee.

49 And

49 And they that ſate at table with him, began to ſay within themſelues, Who is this that euen forgiueth ſinnes?

50 And he ſaide to the woman, Thy faith hath ſaued thee: goe in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

Women that miniſter vnto Chriſt of their ſubſtance. 4 The parable of the ſower. 16 The candle. 19 Chriſtes mother and brethren. 22 He rebuketh the windes. 26 Of Legion. 37 The Gadarenes reiect Chriſt. 41 Iairus daughter healed. 43 The woman delinered from the yſſue of blood. 52 Weeping for the dead.

AND it came to paſſe afterwarde, that he himſelfe went through euery citie and towne, preaching, and publiſhing the kingdome of God, and the twelue *were* with him,

2 And certaine women, which were healed of euil ſpirites, and infirmities, *as* *Marie which was called Magdalene, out of whom went ſeuen deuils, *Mar.16.9.*

3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza Herods ſteward, and Suſanna, and many other which miniſtred vnto him of their ſubſtance.

4 *Now when much people were gathered together, and were come vnto him out of all cities, he ſpake by a parable. *Mat.13.3.* *mark.4.1.*

5 A ſower went out to ſowe his ſeede, & as he ſowed, ſome fell by the wayes ſide, and it was troden vnder feete, and the foules of heauen deuoured it vp.

6 And ſome fell on the ſtones, and when it was ſprong vp, it withered away, becauſe it lacked moyſtnes.

7 And ſome fel among thornes, and the thornes ſprang vp with it, and choked it.

8 And ſome fell on good ground, and ſprang vp, & bare fruite, an hundreth folde. And as he ſaid theſe thinges, he cried, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 Then his diſciples asked him, demanding what parable that was.

10 And he ſaid, Vnto you it is giuen to knowe the ſecretes of the kingdome of God, but to other in parables, that when *they ſee, they ſhoulde not ſee, and when they heare, they ſhould not vnderſtand. *Iſai.6.9.* *mat.13.14.* *mark.4.12.*

11 *The parable is this, The ſeede is the worde of God. *iohn 12.40.* *actes 28.26.*

12 And they that are beſide ỹ way, are they that heare: afterwarde commeth the deuill, and taketh away the *rom.11.8.* *Mat.13.18.*

 mark.4.15.

worde out of their heartes, leaſt they ſhould beleeue, and be ſaued.

13 But they that are on the ſtones, *are they* which when they haue heard, receiue the word with ioye: but they haue no rootes, which for a while beleeue, but in the time of tentation goe away.

14 And that which fell among thornes, are they which haue heard, and after their departure are choked with cares and with riches, and voluptuous liuing, and bring forth no fruite.

15 But that *which fell* in good ground, are they which with an honeſt and good heart heare the word, and keepe it, and bring forth fruite with patience.

Chap.11.33 *mat.5.15.* *mar.4.21.* 16 ¶*No man when he hath lighted a candle, couereth it vnder a veſſell, neither putteth it vnder the bed, but ſetteth it on a candleſticke, that they that enter in, may ſee the light.

Chap.12.2. *mat.10.26.* *mark.4.22.* 17 *For nothing is ſecrete, that ſhall not be euident: neither any thing hid, that ſhall not be knowen, and come to light.

Chap.19.26 *mat.13.12.* *and 25.29.* *mar.4.25.* 18 Take heede therefore how ye heare: for* whoſoeuer hath, to him ſhalbe giuen: & whoſoeuer hath not, from him ſhalbe taken euen that which it ſeemeth ỹ he hath.

Mat.12.46. *mark.3.32.* 19 ¶*Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come neere to him for the preaſſe.

20 And it was tolde him *by certaine*, which ſaid, Thy mother and thy brethren ſtand without, and woulde ſee thee.

21 But he anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, My mother, and my brethren are theſe which heare the worde of God, and doe it.

Mat.8.23. *mark.4.36.* 22 ¶*And it came to paſſe on a certaine day, that he went into a ſhip with his diſciples, and he ſaid vnto them, Let vs goe ouer vnto the other ſide of the lake. And they lanched forth.

23 And as they ſayled, he fell a ſleepe, and there came downe a ſtorme of winde on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in ieopardie.

24 Then they went to him, and awoke him, ſaying, Maſter, Maſter, we periſh. And he aroſe, and rebuked the wind, and the wawes of water: and they ceaſſed, and it was calme.

25 Then he ſaid vnto them, Where is your faith? and they

they feared, and wondered among themselues, saying, What is this that commandeth both the windes and water, and they obey him?

26 ¶ So they sailed vnto the region of the Gadarenes, which is ouer against Galile. *Mat.8.28. mar.5.1.*

27 And as he went out to lande, there met him a certaine man out of the citie, which had deuils long time, & he ware no garment, neither abode in house, but in the graues.

28 And when he sawe Iesus, he cried out & fell downe before him, and with a loude voyce said, What haue I to do with thee, Iesus the Sonne of God the most High? I beseech thee torment me not:

29 For he commanded the foule spirite to come out of the man: (for oft times he had caught him: therfore he was bounde with chaines, and kept in fetters: but he brake the bands, and was caried of the deuil into wildernesses.)

30 Then Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? and he said, Legion, because many deuils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that he would not commãd them to go out into the deepe.

32 And there was there by, an herd of many swine, feeding on an hil: and the *deuils* besought him, that he would suffer them to enter into them. So he suffred them.

33 Then went the deuils out of the man, & entred into the swine: and the heard was caryed with violence from a steepe downe place into the lake, and was choked.

34 When the heardmen saw what was done, they fled: and when they were departed, they tolde it in the citie and in the countrey.

35 Then they came out to see what was done, & came to Iesus, and found the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, sitting at the feete of Iesus, clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afrayde.

36 They also which saw it, tolde them by what meanes he that was possessed with the deuil, was healed.

37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey about the Gadarenes, besought him, that he would depart from them: for they were taken with a great feare: and he went into the ship, and returned.

38 Then the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Iesus sent him away, saying,

39 Returne into thine owne house, and shewe what great

great things God hath done to thee. So he went his way, preached throughout all the citie, what great things Ie had done vnto him.

40 ¶And it came to paſſe, when Ieſus was come ag that the people receiued him: for they al wayted for him.

Mat.9.18. mar.5.22. 41 ¶*And behold, there came a man named Iairus, he was the ruler of the Synagogue, who fell down at Ie feete, & beſought him that he would come into his hou

42 For he had but a daughter only, about twelue ye of age, & ſhe lay a dying, (and as he went, the people thr ged him.

43 And a woman hauing an yſſue of blood, twel yeres long, which had ſpent all her ſubſtance vpon Phyſi ons, and could not be healed of any:

44 When ſhee came behinde *him*, ſhee touched th hemme of his garment, and immediately her yſſue of blo ſtanched.

45 Then Ieſus ſayd, Who is it that hath touched me When euery man denied, Peter ſaide and they that we with him, Maſter, the multitude thruſt thee, and treade o thee, and ſayeſt thou, Who hath touched me?

46 And Ieſus ſayde, Some one hath touched me: for perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 When the woman ſawe that ſhe was not hid, ſhe came trembling, and fell downe before him, and tolde h before all the people, for what cauſe ſhe had touched hi and how ſhe was healed immediatly.

48 And he ſayde vnto her, Daughter, be of good co fort: thy faith hath ſaued thee: go in peace.)

49 While he yet ſpake, there came one from the rule of the Synagogues houſe, which ſayd to him, Thy daugh ter is dead: diſeaſe not the Maſter.

50 When Ieſus heard it, he anſwered him, ſaying, Feare not: beleeue onely, and ſhe ſhalbe ſaued.

51 And when he went into the houſe, he ſuffered no man to go in with him, ſaue Peter, and Iames, & Iohn, & the father and mother of the mayde.

52 And all wept, and ſorowed for her: but hee ſaide, W pe not: for ſhe is not dead, but ſleepeth.

53 And they laught him to ſcorne, knowing that ſhee was dead.

54 So he thruſt them all out, & tooke her by the hand, and cryed, ſaying, Mayde, ariſe.

55 And

55 And her ſpirit came againe, & ſhe roſe ſtraightway: and he commanded to giue her meate.

56 Then her parents were aſtonied: but he commãded them that they ſhould tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 The Apoſtles are ſent to preach. 7 & 19 The common peoples opinion of Chriſt. 12 Of the fiue loaues & two fiſhes. 20 The Apoſtles confeſſion. 24 To loſe the life. 35 We muſt heare Chriſt. 37 The poſſeſſed of a ſpirit. 46 Strife among the Apoſtles for the Primacie. 49 One caſting out deuils in Chriſtes Name. 52 The Samaritans will not receiue Chriſt. 55 Reuenge forbidden. 57. 59. 61 Of three that would folow Chriſt, but on diuers conditions.

THen * called he his twelue diſciples together, and gaue them power and authoritie ouer all deuils, and to heale diſeaſes. *Mat.10.1. mar.3.13. & 6.7.*

2 *And he ſent them forth to preach the kingdome of God, and to cure the ſicke. *Mat.10.7.*

3 And he ſayd to them, *Take nothing to your iourney, neither ſtaues, nor ſcrippe, neither bread, nor ſiluer, neither haue two coates a piece. *Mat.10.9. mar.6.8.*

4 And whatſoeuer houſe ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And how many ſoeuer will not receiue you, when ye go out of that citie, * ſhake off the very duſt from your feete for a teſtimonie againſt them. *Chap.10.11. mat.10.14.*

6 And they went out, and went through euery towne preaching the Goſpel, and healing euery where. *mar.6.11. act.13.51.*

7 ¶ * Nowe Herod the tetrarche heard of al that was done by him: and he doubted, becauſe that it was ſayde of ſome, that Iohn was riſen againe from the dead: *Mat.14.1. mar.6.14.*

8 And of ſome, that Elias had appeared: and of ſome, that one of the olde Prophets was riſen againe.

9 Then Herod ſaid, Iohn haue I beheaded: who then is this of whom I heare ſuch things? and he deſired to ſee him.

10 ¶ * And when the Apoſtles returned, they told him what great things they had done. * Then he tooke them to him, and went aſide into a ſolitarie place, *neere* to the citie called Bethſaida. *Mar.6.30. Mat.14.13. mar.6.32.*

11 But when the people knew it, they folowed him: & he receiued them, and ſpake vnto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had neede to be healed.

12 *And

Mat. 14. 15. *mark.* 6. 35. *iohn* 6. 5.

12 *And whē the day began to weare away, the twe came, and ſayd vnto him, Sende the people away, that t may go into the townes and villages rounde about, & lod and get meate: for we are here in a deſert place.

13 But he ſayd vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. A they ſayde, We haue no mo but fiue loaues and two fi except we ſhould go and bye meat for all this people.

14 For they were about fiue thouſande men. Then ſayd to his diſciples, Cauſe them to ſit downe by fiftits i companie.

15 And they did ſo, and cauſed all to ſit downe.

16 Then he tooke the fiue loaues, & the two fiſhes, a looked vp to heauen, and bleſſed them, and brake, and gaue to the diſciples, to ſet before the people.

17 So they did all eate, and were ſatisfied: and ther was taken vp of that remained to them, twelue basket of broken meate.

Mat. 26. 13. *marke* 8. 27.

18 ¶ *And it came to paſſe as he was alone praying, his diſciples were with him: & he asked them, ſaying, Whom ſay the people that I am?

19 They anſwered, and ſayde, Iohn Baptiſt: and other ſay, Elias: and ſome ſay, that one of the olde Prophets is riſen againe.

20 And he ſayd vnto them, But whom ſay ye that I am Peter anſwered, and ſayd, That Chriſt of God.

Mat. 17. 22. *mark.* 8. 31. *Chap.* 14. 27. *mat.* 10. 38. *and* 16. 24. *mark.* 8. 34. *Chap.* 17. 33. *mat.* 10. 39. *and* 16. 25. *iohn* 12. 25. *Mat.* 16. 26. *mark.* 8. 36. *Chap.* 12. 9. *mat.* 10. 33. *mark.* 8. 38. 2. *tim.* 2. 12. *Mat.* 16. 28. *mark.* 9. 1.

21 And he warned and commanded them, that they ſhould tell that to no man,

22 Saying, *The Sonne of man muſt ſuffer many things, and be reproued of the Elders, and of the hie Prieſtes and Scribes, and be ſlayne, and the third day riſe againe.

23 ¶ *And he ſayd to them all, If any man will come after me, let him denie himſelfe, and take vp his croſſe dayly, and followe me.

24 * For whoſoeuer will ſaue his life, ſhall loſe it: and whoſoeuer ſhal loſe his life for my ſake, ỹ ſame ſhal ſaue it.

25 * For what auantageth it a man, if hee winne the whole world, and deſtroy himſelfe, or loſe himſelfe?

26 * For whoſoeuer ſhalbe aſhamed of mee, and of my wordes, of him ſhal the Sonne of man be aſhamed, when he ſhal come in his glorie, and *in the glorie* of the Father, and of the holy Angels.

27 * And I tell you of a ſuretie, there be ſome ſtanding here, which ſhall not taſte of death, till they haue ſeene the kingdom

kingdome of God.

28 *And it came to passe about an eyght dayes after those wordes, that he tooke Peter and Iohn, and Iames, and went vp into a mountaine to pray. *Mat.* 17.2. *mark.* 9.2.

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was changed, and his garment *was* white and glistred.

30 And behold, two men talked with him, which were Moses and Elias.

31 Which appeared in glorie, & tolde of his departing, which he should accomplish at Hierusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him, were heauy with sleepe, and when they awoke, they saw his glorie, and the two men standing with him.

33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter said vnto Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: let vs therefore make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias, and wist not what he sayd.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloude and ouershadowed them, & they feared when they were entring into the cloude.

35 *And there came a voyce out of the cloude, saying, This is that my beloued Sonne, heare him. 2.*Pet.* 1. 17

36 And when the voyce was past, Iesus was founde alone: and they kept it close, and told no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seene.

37 ¶And it came to passe on the next day, as they came downe from the mountaine, much people met him.

38 *And beholde, a man of the companie cryed out, saying, Master, I beseeche thee, behold my sonne: for he is all that I haue. *Mat.* 17.14. *mark.* 9.17.

39 And lo a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he cryeth, and he teareth him, that he fometh, and hardly departeth from him, when he hath bruised him.

40 Nowe I haue besought thy disciples to cast him out, but they could not.

41 Then Iesus answered, and sayde, O generation faithles, and crooked, howe long now shall I be with you, & suffer you? bring thy sonne hither.

42 And whiles he was yet cõming, the deuill rent him, and tare him: and Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirit, & healed the childe, and deliuered him to his father.

43 ¶And they were all amased at the mighty power of God: and while they all wondred at all things, which Iesus did,

did, he said vnto his disciples,

Mat.17.22. mar.9.31. 44 Marke these wordes diligently: * for it shal come to passe, that the Sonne of man shall bee deliuered into the handes of men.

45 But they vnderstoode not that worde: for it was hid from them, *so* that they could not perceiue it: and they feared to aske him of that worde.

Mat.18.1. mar.9.35. 46 ¶ * Then there arose a disputation among them, which of them should be the greatest.

47 When Iesus sawe the thoughts of their heartes, he tooke a litle childe, and set him by him,

48 And said vnto them, Whosoeuer receiueth this little childe in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer shall receiue me, receiueth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, he shalbe great.

Mar.9.38. 49 ¶ * And Iohn answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out deuils in thy Name, & we forbade him, because he followeth *thee* not with vs.

50 Then Iesus sayd vnto him, Forbid ye *him* not: for he that is not against vs, is with vs.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the dayes were accomplished, that he shoulde be receiued vp, he setted himself fully to go to Hierusalem,

52 And sent messengers before him: and they went and entred into a towne of the Samaritans, to prepare him *lodging*.

53 But they would not receiue him, because his behauiour was, as though he would go to Hierusalem.

54 And when his disciples, Iames and Iohn sawe it, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we cõmand, that fire come down *2.King.1.10* from heauen, and consume them, euen as * Elias did?

22,13. 55 But Iesus turned about, and rebuked them, and sayd, Ye know not of what spirit ye are.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroye mens liues, but to saue them. Then they went to another towne.

57 ¶ And it came to passe that as they went in the way, *Mat.8.19.* * a certaine man sayd vnto him, I wil follow thee, Lord, whithersoeuer thou goest.

58 And Iesus sayd vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birds of the heauen nestes, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to lay his head.

59 But he sayd vnto another, Follow me. And the same sayd, Lord, suffer me first to go and burie my father.

60 And

60 And Ieſus ſayde vnto him; Let the dead burie their dead: but go thou, and preache the kingdome of God.

61 Then another ſayd, I will followe thee, Lord: but let me firſt go bid them fare well, which are at mine houſe.

62 And Ieſus ſayd vnto him, No man that putteth his hande to the plough, and looketh backe, is apt to the kingdome of God.

CHAP. X.

The ſeuentie diſciples. 10 *The vnthankefull cities charged with impietie.* 17 *The diſciples returning home, are warned to be humble.* 30 *Who is our neighbour.* 38 *Of Martha and her ſiſter Marie.*

1 After * theſe things, the Lorde appoynted other ſeuentie alſo, and ſent them, two and two before him into euery citie and place, whither he himſelfe ſhould come. *Mat.10.1.*

2 And he ſaid vnto them, * The harueſt *is* great, but the labourers *are* few: pray therfore the Lord of the harueſt to ſend forth labourers into his harueſt. *Mat.9.37.*

3 * Go your wayes: beholde, I ſend you forth as lambes among wolues. *Mat.10.16.*

4 Beare no bagge, neither ſcrip, nor ſhooes, and * ſalute no man by the way. *2.Kin.4.29.*

5 * And into whatſoeuer houſe ye enter, firſt ſay, Peace be to this houſe. *Mat.10.12. mark.6.10.*

6 And if the ſonne of peace be there, your peace ſhall reſt vpon him: if not, it ſhal turne to you againe.

7 And in that houſe tarie ſtill, eating & drinking ſuch things as by them *ſhalbe ſet before you:* * for the labourer is worthy of his wages. Go not from houſe to houſe. *Deut.24.14. mat.10.10.*

8 * But into whatſoeuer citie yee ſhall enter, if they receiue you, eate ſuch things as are ſet before you, *1.tim.5.18. Mat.10.11.*

9 And heale the ſicke that are there, & ſaye vnto them, The kingdome of God is come neere vnto you.

10 But into whatſoeuer citie ye ſhall enter, if they will not receiue you, goe your wayes out into the ſtreetes of the ſame, and ſay,

11 Euen the very * duſt, which cleaueth on vs of your citie, we wipe off againſt you: notwithſtanding knowe this, that the kingdome of God was come neere vnto you. *Chap.9.5. acts.13.51. & 18.6.*

12 For I ſay to you, that it ſhalbe eaſier in that day for them of Sodom, then for that citie.

13 * *Wo be* to thee, Chorazine wo *be* to thee, Bethſaida: for if the miracles had bene done in Tyrus and Sidon, *Mat.11.21.*

Which

which haue bene done in you, they had a great while ... repented, sitting in sackecloth and ashes.

14 Therfore it shalbe easier for Tyrus, and Sidon, ... iudgement, then for you.

15 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to hea... shalt be thrust downe to hell.

*Mat.10.40. *Iohn 13. 20.* 16 ¶ *He that heareth you, heareth mee: and he ... despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, de... seth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the seuentie turned againe with ioye, say... Lord, euen the deuils are subdued to vs through thy N...

18 And he said vnto them, I saw Satan, like lightn... fall downe from heauen.

19 Beholde, I giue vnto you power to treade on ... pents, and Scorpions, and ouer all the power of the e... and nothing shal hurt you.

20 Neuertheles, in this reioyce not, that the spirits ... subdued vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your n... are written in heauen.

21 ¶ That same houre reioyced Iesus in the spirit, ... said, I cōfesse vnto thee, Father, Lord of heauen and ea... that thou hast hid these thinges from the wise and w... standing, and hast reuealed them to babes: euen so, Fa... because it so pleased thee. ‖

‖ Then he turned to his disciples, and saide, *is read in some copies.*

22 All thinges are giuen me of my Father: and no ... knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Father: neither wh... Father is, saue the Sonne, and he to whome the Sonne ... reueile him.

Mat. 13. 16. 23 ¶ And he turned to his disciples, and said secretly, *Blessed are the eyes, which see that ye see.

24 For I tell you that many Prophetes and Kinges ha... desired to see those things, which ye see, and haue not see... *them*: and to heare those thinges which ye heare, and ha... not heard *them*.

Mat. 22.35. Marke 12.28. 25 ¶ *Then beholde, a certaine Lawyer stoode vp, ... tempted him, saying, Master, what shal I do, to inherite et... nall life?

26 And he sayd vnto him, What is written in the La... how readest thou?

Deut.6.5. Leuit.19.18. 27 And he answered, and sayde, *Thou shalt loue thy Lorde God with all thine heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy strength, and with all thy thought, * and thy neighbour as thy selfe.

28 Then

28 Then he ſaide vnto him, Thou haſt anſwered right: this do, and thou ſhalt liue.

29 But hee willing to iuſtifie himſelfe, ſaide vnto Ieſus, Who is then my neighbour?

30 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid, A certaine man went downe from Hieruſalem to Iericho, and fell among theeues, and they robbed him of his rayment, & wounded him, and departed, leauing him halfe dead.

31 Now ſo it fell out, that there came downe a certaine Prieſt that ſame way, and when he ſaw him, he paſſed by on the other ſide.

32 And likewiſe alſo a Leuite, when he was come neere to the place, went and looked *on him*, and paſſed by on the other ſide.

33 Then a certaine Samaritane, as hee iourneyed, came neere vnto him, and when he ſawe him, he had compaſſion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound vp his wounds, & powred in oyle and wine, and put him on his owne beaſt, and brought him to an Inne, and made proviſion for him.

35 And on the morow when he departed, he tooke out two pence, and gaue them to the hoſt, and ſaide vnto him, Take care of him, & whatſoeuer thou ſpendeſt more, when I come againe, I wil recompenſe thee.

36 Which now of theſe three, thinkeſt thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theeues?

37 And he ſaide, He that ſhewed mercie on him. Then ſaid Ieſus vnto him, Go, and do thou likewiſe.

38 ¶ Nowe it came to paſſe as they went, that he entred into a certaine towne, & a certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her houſe.

39 And ſhe had a ſiſter called Marie, which alſo ſate at Ieſus feete, and heard his preaching.

40 But Martha was combred about much ſeruing, and came to him, & ſaid, Maſter, doeſt thou not care that my ſiſter hath left me to ſerue alone? bid her therfore, y she help me.

41 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou careſt, and art troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needefull, Marie hath choſen the good part, which ſhal not be taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 *He teacheth his Apoſtles to pray.* 14 *The dumme deuill driuen out.* 27 *A woman of the companie liſteth vp her*

voyce. 29 The Iewes require signes. 37 Hee being feasted of one Pharise reproueth the outward shew of holines.

AND so it was, that as he was praying in a certaine place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples.

Mat.6.9. 2 *And he said vnto them, Whē ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heauen, halowed be thy Name: Thy kingdome come: Let thy will be done, euen in earth, as *it is* in heauen.

3 Our daily bread giue vs for the day:

4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for euen we forgiue euery man that is indetted to vs: And leade vs not into temptation: but deliuer vs from euil.

5 ¶ Moreouer he saide vnto them, Which of you shall haue a friend, and shall go to him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friend, lend me three loaues?

6 For a friend of mine is come out of the way to mee, and I haue nothing to set before him:

7 And he within should answere, and say, Trouble mee not: the doore is now shut, and my children are with me in bed: I cannot rise and giue them to thee.

8 I say vnto you, though he would not arise & giue him, because he is his friend, yet doubtles because of his importunitie, he would rise, and giue him as many as he needed.

Mat.7.7. 9 *And I say vnto you, Aske, & it shalbe giuen you: seeke, *and* 21.22. and ye shall finde: knocke, and it shalbe opened vnto you.

mar. 11.24. 10 *For euery one that asketh, receiueth: and hee that *Iohn* 14.13. seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shalbe opened.

and 16.23. 11 *If a sonne shall aske bread of any of you that is a *Iam.*1.5. father, wil he giue him a stone? or if *he aske* a fish, wil he for *Mat.*7.8. a fish giue him a serpent?

*Mat.*7.9. 12 Or if he aske an egge, will he giue him a scorpion?

13 If ye then which are euill, can giue good giftes vnto your children, howe much more shall your heauenly Father giue the holy Ghost to them, that desire him?

*Mat.*9.32. 14 ¶ *Then he cast out a deuil which was dumme: and *and* 12.22. when the deuill was gone out, the dumme spake, & the people wondered.

*Mat.*9.34. 15 But some of thē said, *He casteth out deuils through *and* 12.24. Beelzebub the chiefe of the deuils.

*mar.*3.22. 16 And others tempted him, seeking of him a signe from heauen.

*Matt.*12.25. 17 But hee knewe their thoughtes, and said vnto them, *mar.*3.24. *Euery kingdome deuided against it selfe, shalbe desolate,

and

and an house *deuided* against an house, falleth.

18 So if Satan also be deuided against himselfe, howe shall his kingdome stande, because ye say that I cast out deuils through Beelzebub?

19 If I through Beelzebub cast out deuils, by whome doe your children cast them out? Therefore shall they be your iudges.

20 But if I by the finger of God cast out deuils, doubtles the kingdome of God is come vnto you.

21 When a strong man armed, keepeth his palace, the thinges that he possesseth, are in peace.

22 But when a stronger then hee, commeth vpon him, and ouercommeth him: hee taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and deuideth his spoyles.

23 Hee that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

24 * When the vncleane spirite is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest: and when hee findeth none, he saith, I wil returne vnto mine house whence I came out. *Mat.12.43.*

25 And when he commeth, he findeth it swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth hee, and taketh to him seuen other spirits worse then himselfe: and they enter in, and dwel there, * so the last state of that man is worse then the first. *Heb.6.4.*

27 ¶ And it came to passe as he said these things, a certaine woman of the company lifted vp her voyce, and saide vnto him, Blessed *is* the wombe that bare thee, & the pappes which thou hast sucked. *2.pet.2.20.*

28 But he saide, Yea, rather blessed *are* they that heare the word of God, and keepe it.

29 ¶ * And when the people were gathered thicke together, hee began to say, This is a wicked generation: they seeke a signe, and there shal no signe be giuen them, but the signe of * Ionas the Prophet. *Mat.12.38, 39. Ion.1.12.*

30 For as Ionas was a signe to the Niniuites: so shal also the Sonne of man be to this generation.

31 * The Queene of ỹ South shal rise in iudgement, with the men of this generation, and shal cõdemne them: for she came from the vtmost partes of the earth to heare the wisdome of Solomon, & behold, a greater then Solomon *is* here. *1.Kin.10.1. 2.chro.9.1.*

32 The men of Niniue shal rise in iudgement with this generation, & shal condemne it: for they * repented at the preaching *Ion.3.5.*

preaching of Ionas: & behold, a greater then Ionas is here.

Chap.8.16. mat.5.15. mar.4.21. 33 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a priuie place, neither vnder a buſhel: but on a candleſticke, that they which come in, may ſee the light.

Mat.6.22. 34 * The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is ſingle, then is thy whole body light: but if thine eye be euil, then thy body is darke.

35 Take heede therfore, that the light which is in thee, be not darkenes.

36 If therefore thy whole body *ſhalbe* light, hauing no part darke, then ſhall all be light, euen as when a candle doeth light thee with the brightnes.

37 ¶ And as he ſpake, a certaine Phariſe beſought him to dine with him: and he went in, and ſate downe at table.

38 And when the Phariſe ſawe it, he marueiled that he had not firſt waſhed before dinner.

Mat.23.25. 39 * And the Lorde ſaide to him, In deede ye Phariſes make cleane the outſide of the cup, and of the platter: but the inward part is full of rauening and wickednes.

40 Ye fooles, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within alſo?

41 Therefore, giue almes of thoſe thinges which you haue, and behold, all things ſhalbe cleane to you.

42 But wo *be* to you, Phariſes: for ye tythe the mynt, & the rewe, and all maner herbes, and paſſe ouer iudgement and the loue of God: theſe ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left the other vndone.

Chap.20.46. mat.23.6. mar.12.38, 39. Mat.23.27. 43 * Wo *be* to you, Phariſes: for ye loue the vppermoſt ſeates in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

44 Wo *be* to you, Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: * for ye are as graues which appeare not, and the men that walk ouer them, perceiue not.

45 ¶ Then anſwered one of the Lawyers, and ſaid vnto him, Maiſter, thus ſaying thou putteſt vs to rebuke alſo.

Mat.23.4. act.15.10. 46 And he ſaid, Wo *be* to you alſo, ye Lawyers: * for ye lade men with burdens grieuous to be borne, and ye your ſelues touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

Mat.23.29. 47 Wo *be* to you: * for ye builde the ſepulchres of the Prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 Truely ye beare witnes, & allow the deedes of your fathers: for they killed them, and ye build their ſepulchres.

49 Therefore ſaide the wiſdome of God, I will ſende them Prophetes and Apoſtles, and of them they ſhall ſlay, and

and persecute away,

50 That the blood of all the Prophetes, shed from the foudation of the world, may be required of this generation,

51 From the blood of *Abel vnto the blood of *Zacharias, which was slaine betweene the altar and the Temple: verely I say vnto you, it shalbe required of this generation. *Gene.4.8. 2.Chr.24.22*

52 Wo *be* to you Lawyers: for ye haue taken away the keye of knowledge: ye entred not in your selues, and them that came in, ye forbade.

53 And as he said these thinges vnto them, the Scribes and Pharises began to vrge him sore, and to prouoke him to speake of many things,

54 Laying wayte for him, and seeking to catche some thing of his mouth, whereby they might accuse him.

CHAP. XII.

1 The leauen of the Pharises. 5 Who is to be feared. 8 To confesse Christ. 17 The Parable of the rich man whose land was very fertil. 22 Not to care for earthly things, 31 but to seeke the kingdome of God. 39 The thiefe in the night. 51 Debate for the Gospels sake.

IN* the meane time, there gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, so y they trode one another: & he beganne to say vnto his disciples first, Take heed to your selues of the leauen of the Pharises, which is hypocrisie. *Mat.16.5. mar.8.14.*

2 *For there is nothing couered, that shall not be reuealed: neither hid, that shall not be knowen. *Mat.10.26. mar.4.22.*

3 Wherefore whatsoeuer ye haue spoken in darkenes, it shalbe heard in the light: and that which ye haue spoken in the eare, in secret places, shalbe preached on the houses.

4 *And I say vnto you, my friendes, be not afraide of them that kill the body, and after that are not able to do any more. *Mat.10.28.*

5 But I will forewarne you, whom ye shall feare: feare him which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell: yea, I say vnto you, him feare.

6 Are not fiue sparowes bought for two farthinges, *and* yet not one of them is forgotten before God? *1.Sam.14.*

7 *Yea, & all the heares of your head are numbred: feare not therefore: ye are more of value then many sparowes. *45.act.27.34 Chap.9.26.*

8 *Also I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse mee before men, him shall the Sonne of man confesse also before the Angels of God. *mat.10.32. mar.8.38. 2.tim.1.12.*

9 But hee that ſhall denie me before men, ſhalbe denied before the Angels of God.

*Mat.*12.31. *marke*3.28. *1.iohn.*5.15. 10 * And whoſoeuer ſhall ſpeake a worde againſt the Sonne of man, it ſhalbe forgiuen him: but vnto him, that ſhall blaſpheme the holy Ghoſt, it ſhall not be forgiuen.

*Mat.*10.19. *mar.*13.11. 11 *And when they ſhal bring you vnto ỹ Synagogues, and vnto the rulers and princes, take no thought howe, or what thing ye ſhall anſwere, or what ye ſhall ſpeake.

12 For the holy Ghoſt ſhal teach you in the ſame houre what ye ought to ſay.

13 And one of the company ſaide vnto him, Maſter, bid my brother deuide the inheritance with me.

14 And he ſaid vnto him, Man, who made me a iudge, or a deuider ouer you?

15 Wherefore he ſaide vnto them, Take heede, and beware of couetouſnes: for though a man haue aboundance, *yet* his life ſtandeth not in his riches.

16 And he put foorth a parable vnto them, ſaying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth fruits plenteouſly.

17 Therefore hee thought with himſelfe, ſaying, What ſhall I do, becauſe I haue not *rowme*, where I may lay vp my fruites?

18 And he ſaide, This wil I doe, I will pull downe my barnes, and builde greater, and therein will I gather all my fruites, and my goodes.

19 And I will ſay to my ſoule, Soule, thou haſt much goods laid vp for many yeeres: liue at eaſe, eate, drinke, and take thy paſtime.

20 But God ſaid vnto him, O foole, this night will they fetche away thy ſoule from thee: then whoſe ſhall thoſe thinges be which thou haſt prouided?

21 So *is* hee that gathereth riches to himſelfe, & is not rich in God.

22 And he ſpake vnto his diſciples, Therefore I ſay vnto you, *Take no thought for your life, what ye ſhal eate: neither for your body, what ye ſhal put on.

*Mat.*6.25. 1.*pet.*5.7. *Pſal.*55.23. 23 The life is more then meat: and the body *more* then the raiment.

24 Conſider the rauens: for they neither ſow nor reape: which neither haue ſtorehouſe nor barne, and *yet* God feedeth them: how much more are ye better then foules?

25 And which of you with taking thought, can adde to his ſtature one cubite?

26 If

...ler cast thee into prison.

I tel thee, thou shalt not depart thence, til thou hast ...d the vtmost mite.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the Galileans, 4 and those that were slaine vnder Si...am. 6 The fig tree that bare no fruite. 11 The woman ...ened with the spirit of infirmitie, that is, with a disease ...e in her by Satan, is healed. 19 The parable of the ...e of mustard seede. 21 Of leauen. 23 How fewe shall ...saued. 31 Herod that foxe.

...e were certaine men present at the same season, that ...ed him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had ...ed with their sacrifices.

And Iesus answered, and sayd vnto them, Suppose ye, ...t the Galileans were greater sinners then all the *other* ...eans, because they haue suffred such things?

I tell you, nay: but except ye amende your liues, ye ...l likewise perish.

Or thinke you that those eightene, vpon whome the ...r in Siloam fel, and slew them, were sinners aboue all ...t dwel in Hierusalem?

I tel you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shal ...wise perish.

¶ He spake also this parable, A certaine man had a ...e planted in his vineyarde: and he came & sought ...it thereon, and found none.

Then sayd he to the dresser of his vineyarde, Behold, ...se three yeres haue I come and sought fruite of the figge ...e and finde none: cut it downe: why keepeth it also the ...ground barren?

And he answered, and sayd vnto him, Lorde, let it a...e this yeere also, til I dig round about it, and doung it.

And if it beare fruite, *wel*: if not, then after thou shalt ...t it downe.

¶ And he taught in one of the Synagogues on the ...bbath day.

And behold, there was a woman which had a spi... of infirmitie eightene yeeres, and was bowed together, ...d could not lift vp *her selfe* in any wise.

When Iesus sawe her, he called her to him, and sayd ...to her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy disease.

And he layed his hands on her, and immediatly she ...s made straight againe, and glorified God.

And

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath day, and sayd vnto the people, There are sixe dayes in which men ought to worke: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 Then answered him the Lord, and said, Hypocrite doeth not eche one of you on the Sabbath *day* loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, and leade him away to the water?

16 And ought not this daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had bound, lo, eightene yeeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?

17 And when he sayd these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed: but all the people reioyced at all the excellent things, that were done by him.

Mat. 13.31. *mar.* 4.31. 18 ¶*Then said he, What is the kingdome of God like? or whereto shall I compare it?

19 It is like a graine of mustard seede, which a man tooke and sowed in his garden, and it grewe, and waxed a great tree, and the fowles of the heauen made nestes in the branches thereof.

Mat. 13.33. 20 ¶*And againe he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

21 It it like leauen, which a woman tooke, and hid in three peckes of flowre, til all was leauened.

Mat. 9.35. *mar.* 6.6. 22 ¶*And he went through all cities and townes, teaching, and iourneying towards Hierusalem.

23 Then sayd one vnto him, Lord, *are there* fewe that shalbe saued? And he said vnto them,

Mat. 7.13. 24 *Strine to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say vnto you, wil seeke to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When the good man of the house is risen vp, and hath shut to the doore, and ye begin to stand without, and to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs, and he shal answere & say vnto you, I know you not whence ye are,

26 Then shal ye begin to say, We haue eaten & drunke in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streetes.

Mat. 7.23. *and* 25.41. *Psal.* 6.8. 27 *But he shal say, I tel you, I know you not whence ye are: depart from me, all ye workers of iniquitie.

28 There shalbe weeping & gnashing of teeth when ye shal see Abraham and Isaac, and Iacob, & all the Prophets in the kingdome of God, and your selues thrust out at doores.

29 Then shal come *many* from the East, and from the West, and from the North, and from the South, and shall sit

at

26 If ye then be not able to do the leaſt thing, why take
ye thought for the remnant?
27 Conſider the lilies how they grow: they labour not,
neither ſpin they: yet I ſay vnto you, that Solomon himſelfe
in all his royaltie was not clothed like one of theſe.
28 If then God ſo clothe the graſſe which is to day in
the fielde, and to morowe is caſt into the ouen, howe much
more *wil he clothe* you, O ye of litle faith?
29 Therefore aske not what ye ſhall eate, or what ye
ſhall drinke, neither hang you in ſuſpenſe.
30 For all ſuch thinges the people of the worlde ſeeke
after: your Father knoweth ỹ ye haue need of theſe things.
31 But rather ſeeke ye after the kingdome of God, and
all theſe things ſhall be caſt vpon you.
32 Feare not, litle flocke: for it is your fathers pleaſure,
to giue you the kingdome.
33 ¶ *Sel that ye haue, & giue almes: make you bagges *Mat.6.20.
which waxe not olde, a treaſure that can neuer faile in hea-
uen, where no thiefe commeth, neither moth corrupteth.
34 For where your treaſure is, there will your heartes
be alſo.
35 ¶ *Let your loynes be gird about, and your lightes *1.Pet.1.13.
burning,
36 And ye your ſelues like vnto men that wayte for
their maſter, when he will returne from the wedding, that
when hee commeth and knocketh, they may open vnto him
immediatly.
37 Bleſſed *are* thoſe ſeruantes, whom the Lord when he
commeth ſhall finde waking: Verely I ſay vnto you, he will
gird himſelfe about, and make them to ſit downe at table,
and wil come foorth, and ſerue them.
38 And if he come in the ſecond watch, or come in the
third watch, & ſhal finde them ſo, bleſſed are thoſe ſeruants.
39 *Nowe vnderſtand this, that if the good man of the *Mat.24.43.
houſe had knowen at what houre the thiefe would haue *reuel.16.15.
come, he would haue watched, and would not haue ſuffred *and 3.3.
his houſe to be digged through.
40 Be ye alſo prepared therefore: for the Sonne of man
will come at an houre when ye thinke not.
41 Then Peter ſaid vnto him, Maſter, telleſt thou this
parable vnto vs, or euen to all?
42 And the Lord ſaide, Who is a faithfull ſteward, and
wiſe, whom the maſter ſhal make ruler ouer his houſehold,

Z

to giue them their portion of meate in ſeaſon?

43 Bleſſed *is* that ſeruant, whome his maſter when hee commeth, ſhall finde ſo doing.

44 Of a trueth I ſay vnto you, that he will make him ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But if the ſeruant ſay in his heart, My maſter doeth deferre his comming, and ſhal begin to ſmite the ſeruants and maidens, and to eate, and drinke, and to be drunken:

46 The maſter of that ſeruant wil come in a day whe he thinketh not, and at an houre when he is not ware of, & will cut him off, and giue him his portion with the vnbeleeuers.

47 ¶ And that ſeruant that knew his maſters will, and prepared not himſelfe, neither did according to his wil, ſhal be beaten with many *ſtripes*.

48 But he that knewe it not, and yet did commit things worthie of ſtripes, ſhalbe beaten with few *ſtripes*: for vnto whomſoeuer much is giuen, of him ſhalbe much required, and to whom men much commit, of more him wil they aske.

49 ¶ I am come to put fire on the earth, and what is my deſire, if it be already kindled?

50 Notwithſtanding I muſt be baptized with a baptiſme, and how am I grieued, till it be ended?

*Mat.*10.34. 51 * Thinke ye that I am come to giue peace on earth? I tell you, nay, but rather debate.

52 For from henceforth there ſhalbe fiue in one houſe deuided, three againſt two, and two againſt three.

53 The father ſhalbe deuided againſt the ſonne, and the ſonne againſt the father: the mother againſt the daughter, and her daughter againſt the mother: the mother in lawe againſt the daughter in lawe, and the daughter in lawe againſt her mother in lawe.

*Mat.*16.2. 54 ¶ * Then ſaid he to the people, When ye ſee a cloude riſe out of the Weſt, ſtraightway ye ſay, A ſhowre commeth, and ſo it is.

55 And when *ye ſee* the Southwinde blowe, ye ſay, that it will be hoate: and it commeth to paſſe.

56 Hypocrites, ye can diſcerne the face of the earth, and of the skie: but why diſcerne ye not this time?

57 Yea & why iudge ye not of your ſelues what is right?

*Mat.*5.25. 58 ¶ * While thou goeſt with thine aduerſarie to the ruler, as thou art in the way, giue diligence in the way, that thou mayeſt be deliuered from him, leaſt hee drawe thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the iayler, and

table in the kingdome of God.

30 * And beholde, there are last, which shalbe first, and there are first, which shalbe last. *Mat.* 19.30 *and* 20.16.

31 The same day there came certaine Pharises, and sayd vnto him, Depart, and goe hence: for Herod wil kil thee. *mar.* 6.31.

32 Then said he vnto them, Go ye and tel that foxe, Beholde, I cast out deuils, and wil heale stil to day, and to morowe, and the thirde day I shalbe perfected.

33 Nevertheles I must walke to day, & to morow, and the day folowing: for it can not be that a Prophet should perish out of Hierusalem.

34 * O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent to thee, howe often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne *gathereth* her broode vnder *her* winges, and ye would not! *Mat.* 23.37.

35 Beholde, your house is left vnto you desolate: and verely I tel you, ye shal not see me vntill *the time* come that ye shal say, Blessed *is* he that commeth in the Name of the Lorde.

CHAP. XIIII.

The dropsie healed on the Sabbath. 8 *The chiefe places at bankets.* 12 *The poore must be called to our feasties.* 16 *Of those that were bid to the great supper.* 23 *Some compelled to come in.* 28 *One about to builde a tower.*

AND it came to passe that when he was entred into the house of one of the chiefe Pharises on the Sabbath *day*, to eate bread, they watched him.

2 And beholde, there was a certaine man before him, which had the dropsie.

3 Then Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers and Pharises, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath *day*?

4 And they helde their peace. Then he tooke him, and healed him, and let him goe,

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you *shall haue* an asse, or an oxe fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?

6 And they could not answere him againe to those things.

7 ¶ He spake also a parable to ỹ ghestes, when he marked how they chose out the chief roomes, & said vnto them,

8 When thou shalt be bidden of any man to a wedding, set not thy selfe downe in the chiefe place, lest a more honorable man then thou, be bidden of him,

9 And

9 And he that bade both him and thee, come, and say to thee, Giue this man roome, and thou then begin with shame to take the lowest roome.

Prou. 25. 5. 10 *But when thou art bidden, go and sit downe in the lowest roome, that when he that bade thee, commeth, he may say vnto thee, Friend, sit vp hier: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at table with thee.

Chap. 18. 14. mat. 23. 12. 11 *For whosoeuer exalteth him selfe, shall be brought lowe, and he that humbleth him selfe, shalbe exalted.

12 ¶ Then sayde he also to him that had bidden him, Prou. 3. 27. Eccl. 4. 7. *When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friendes, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor the rich neighbours, least they also bid thee againe, and a recompence be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poore, the maimed, the lame, *and* the blinde,

14 And thou shalt be blessed, because they can not recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the iust.

15 ¶ Nowe when one of them that sate at table, heard these thinges, he sayde vnto him, Blessed *is he that eateth bread in the kingdome of God.

Mat. 22. 1. reue. 19. 9. 16 Then said he to him, *A certaine man made a great supper, and bade many,

17 And sent his seruant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come: for all things are nowe ready.

18 But they all with one *minde* began to make excuse. The first sayd vnto him, I haue bought a farme, and I must needes goe out and see it: I pray thee haue me excused.

19 And another sayd, I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, and I go to proue them: I pray thee haue me excused.

20 And another said, I haue married a wife, and therefore I can not come.

21 So that seruant returned, & shewed his master these things. Then was the good man of the house angrie, and sayd to his seruant, Goe out quickly into the streetes and lanes of the citie, and bring in hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the seruant sayd, Lorde, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is roome.

23 Then the Master sayd to the seruant, Goe out into the hie wayes, and hedges, and compell them to come in, that mine house may be filled.

24 For

24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shal taste of my supper.

25 Now there went great multitudes with him, and he turned and sayd vnto them,

26 *If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, & sisters; yea and his owne life also, he can not be my disciple. *Mat.10.37.*

27 *And whosoeuer beareth not his crosse, and cometh after me, can not be my disciple. *Chap.9.23. mat.16.24.*

28 For which of you minding to build a towre sitteth not downe before, and counteth the cost, whether he haue sufficient to performe it, *mar.8.34.*

29 Lest that after he hath layde the foundation, and is not able to performe it, all that beholde it, begin to mocke him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to make an end?

31 Or what King going to make warre against another King, sitteth not downe first, and taketh counsel, whether he be able with ten thousand, to meete him that commeth against him with twentie thousand?

32 Or els while he is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth peace.

33 So likewise, whosoeuer he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he can not be my disciple.

34 *Salt is good: but if salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shal it be salted? *Mat.5.13. mar.9.50.*

35 It is neither meete for the lande, nor yet for the dounghil, but men cast it out. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

CHAP. XV.

4 The parable of the lost sheepe, 8 Of the groat, 11 And of the prodigall sonne.

THen ‖ resorted vnto him all the Publicanes and sinners, to heare him. ‖ *Or, drew neere.*

2 Therefore the Pharises and Scribes murmured, saying, He receiueth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 Then spake he this parable to them, saying,

4 *What man of you hauing an hundreth sheepe, if he lose one of them, doeth not leaue ninetie and nine in the wildernes, and goe after that which is lost, vntil he finde it? *Mat.18.12.*

5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders with ioye.

6 And

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath day, and sayd vnto the people, There are sixe dayes in which men ought to worke: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 Then answered him the Lord, and said, Hypocrite, doeth not eche one of you on the Sabbath *day* loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, and leade him away to the water?

16 And ought not this daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had bound, lo, eighteene yeeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?

17 And when he sayd these things, all his aduersaries were ashamed: but all the people reioyced at all the excellent things, that were done by him.

Mat. 13.31. *mar.* 4.31. 18 ¶*Then said he, What is the kingdome of God like? or whereto shall I compare it?

19 It is like a graine of mustard seede, which a man tooke and sowed in his garden, and it grewe, and waxed a great tree, and the fowles of the heauen made nestes in the branches thereof.

Mat. 13.33. 20 ¶*And againe he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

21 It it like leauen, which a woman tooke, and hid in three peckes of flowre, til all was leauened.

Mat. 9.35. *mar.* 6.6. 22 ¶*And he went through all cities and townes, teaching, and iourneying towards Hierusalem.

23 Then sayd one vnto him, Lord, *are there* fewe that shalbe saued? And he said vnto them,

Mat. 7.13. 24 *Strine to enter in at the strake gate: for many, I say vnto you, wil seeke to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When the good man of the house is risen vp, and hath shut to the doore, and ye begin to stand without, and to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs, and he shal answere & say vnto you, I know you not whence ye are,

26 Then shal ye begin to say, We haue eaten & dronke in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streetes.

Mat. 7.23. *and* 25.41. *Psal.* 6.8. 27 *But he shal say, I tel you, I know you not whence ye are: depart from me, all ye workers of iniquitie.

28 There shalbe weeping & gnashing of teeth when ye shal see Abraham and Isaac, and Iacob, & all the Prophets in the kingdome of God, and your selues thrust out at doores.

29 Then shal come *many* from the East, and from the West, and from the North, and from the South, and shall sit

26 If ye then be not able to do the leaſt thing, why take
ye thought for the remnant?
27 Conſider the lilies how they grow: they labour not,
neither ſpin they: yet I ſay vnto you, that Solomon himſelfe
in all his royaltie was not clothed like one of theſe.
28 If then God ſo clothe the graſſe which is to day in
the fielde, and to morowe is caſt into the ouen, howe much
more *wil he clothe* you, O ye of litle faith?
29 Therefore aske not what ye ſhall eate, or what ye
ſhall drinke, neither hang you in ſuſpenſe.
30 For all ſuch thinges the people of the worlde ſeeke
for: & your Father knoweth ỹ ye haue need of theſe things.
31 But rather ſeeke ye after the kingdome of God, and
all theſe things ſhall be caſt vpon you.
32 Feare not, litle flocke: for it is your fathers pleaſure,
to giue you the kingdome.
33 ¶ *Sel that ye haue, & giue almes: make you bagges *Mat. 6. 20.
which waxe not olde, a treaſure that can neuer faile in hea-
uen, where no thiefe commeth, neither moth corrupteth.
34 For where your treaſure is, there will your heartes
be alſo.
35 ¶ *Let your loynes be gird about, and your lightes *1. Pet. 1. 13.
burning,
36 And ye your ſelues like vnto men that wayte for
their maſter, when he will returne from the wedding, that
when hee commeth and knocketh, they may open vnto him
immediatly.
37 Bleſſed *are* thoſe ſeruantes, whom the Lord when he
commeth ſhall finde waking: Verely I ſay vnto you, he will
girde himſelfe about, and make them to ſit downe at table,
and wil come foorth, and ſerue them.
38 And if he come in the ſecond watch, or come in the
third watch, & ſhal finde them ſo, bleſſed are thoſe ſeruants.
39 *Nowe vnderſtand this, that if the good man of the *Mat. 24. 43.
houſe had knowen at what houre the thiefe would haue *reuel. 16. 15.
come, he would haue watched, and would not haue ſuffred *and 3. 3.
his houſe to be digged through.
40 Be ye alſo prepared therefore: for the Sonne of man
will come at an houre when ye thinke not.
41 Then Peter ſaid vnto him, Maſter, telleſt thou this
parable vnto vs, or euen to all?
42 And the Lord ſaide, Who is a faithfull ſteward, and
wiſe, whom the maſter ſhal make ruler ouer his houſehold,

to giue them their portion of meate in season?

43 Blessed is that seruant, whome his master when hee commeth, shall finde so doing.

44 Of a trueth I say vnto you, that he will make him ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But if the seruant say in his heart, My master doeth deferre his comming, and shal begin to smite the seruants and maidens, and to eate, and drinke, and to be drunken:

46 The master of that seruant wil come in a day when he thinketh not, and at an houre when he is not ware of, & will cut him off, and giue him his portion with the vnbeleeuers.

47 ¶ And that seruant that knew his masters will, and prepared not himselfe, neither did according to his wil, shal be beaten with many *stripes*.

48 But he that knewe it not, and yet did commit things worthie of stripes, shalbe beaten with few *stripes*: for vnto whomsoeuer much is giuen of him shalbe much required, and to whom men much commit, of more him will they aske.

49 ¶ I am come to put fire on the earth, and what is my desire, if it be already kindled?

50 Notwithstanding I must be baptized with a baptisme, and how am I grieued, till it be ended?

Mat.10.34. 51 * Thinke ye that I am come to giue peace on earth? I tell you, nay, but rather debate.

52 For from henceforth there shalbe fiue in one house deuided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The father shalbe deuided against the sonne, and the sonne against the father: the mother against the daughter, and her daughter against the mother: the mother in lawe against the daughter in lawe, and the daughter in lawe against her mother in lawe.

Mat.16.2. 54 ¶ * Then said he to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the West, straightway ye say, A shower commeth, and so it is.

55 And when *ye see* the South winde blowe, ye say, that it will be hoate: and it commeth to passe.

56 Hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the earth, and of the skie: but why discerne ye not this time?

57 Yea & why iudge ye not of your selues what is right?

Mat.5.25. 58 ¶ * While thou goest with thine aduersarie to the ruler, as thou art in the way, giue diligence in the way, that thou mayest be deliuered from him, least hee drawe thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the iayler, and

at table in the kingdome of God.

30 * And beholde, there are last, which shalbe first, and there are first, which shalbe last. *Mat. 19.30 and 20.16.*

31 The same day there came certaine Pharises, and sayd vnto him, Depart, and goe hence: for Herod wil kil thee. *mar. 10.31.*

32 Then said he vnto them, Go ye and tel that foxe, Beholde, I cast out deuils, and wil heale stil to day, and to morowe, and the thirde day I shalbe perfected.

33 Neuertheles I must walke to day, & to morow, and the day following: for it can not be that a Prophet should perish out of Hierusalem.

34 * O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent to thee, howe often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne *gathereth* her broode vnder *her* winges, and ye would not! *Mat. 23.37.*

35 Beholde, your house is left vnto you desolate: and verely I tel you, ye shal not see me vntill *the time* come that ye shal say, Blessed *is* he that commeth in the Name of the Lorde.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The dropsie healed on the Sabbath. 8 The chiefe places at bankets. 12 The poore must be called to our feastes. 16 Of those that were bid to the great supper. 23 Some compelled to come in. 28 One about to builde a tower.

AND it came to passe that when he was entred into the house of one of the chiefe Pharises on the Sabbath *day*, to eate bread, they watched him.

2 And beholde, there was a certaine man before him, which had the dropsie.

3 Then Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers and Pharises, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath *day*?

4 And they helde their peace. Then he tooke him, and healed him, and let him goe,

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you *shall haue* an asse, or an oxe fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?

6 And they could not answere him againe to those things.

7 ¶ He spake also a parable to ỹ ghestes, when he marked how they chose out the chiefe roomes, & said vnto them,

8 When thou shalt be bidden of any man to a wedding, set not thy selfe downe in the chiefe place, lest a more honorable man then thou, be bidden of him,

9 And

9 And he that bade both him and thee, come, and say to thee, Giue this man roome, and thou then begin with shame to take the loweſt roome.

Prou. 25. 5. 10 * But when thou art bidden, go and ſit downe in the loweſt roome, that when he that bade thee, commeth, he may ſay vnto thee, Friend, ſit vp hier: then ſhalt thou haue worſhip in the preſence of them that ſit at table with thee.

Chap. 18. 14. *mat.* 23. 12. 11 * For whoſoeuer exalteth him ſelfe, ſhall be brought lowe, and he that humbleth him ſelfe, ſhalbe exalted.

12 ¶ Then ſayde he alſo to him that had bidden him, *Prou.* 3. 27. *Iob.* 4. 7. * When thou makeſt a dinner or a ſupper, call not thy friendes, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinſmen, nor the rich neighbours, leaſt they alſo bid thee againe, and a recompence be made thee.

13 But when thou makeſt a feaſt, call the poore, the maimed, the lame, *and* the blinde,

14 And thou ſhalt be bleſſed, becauſe they can not recompenſe thee: for thou ſhalt be recompenſed at the reſurrection of the iuſt.

15 ¶ Nowe when one of them that ſate at table, heard theſe thinges, he ſayde vnto him, Bleſſed *is* he that eateth bread in the kingdome of God.

Mat. 22. 1. *Reue.* 19. 9. 16 Then ſaid he to him, * A certaine man made a great ſupper, and bade many,

17 And ſent his ſeruant at ſupper time to ſay to them that were bidden, Come: for all things are nowe ready.

18 But they all with one *minde* began to make excuſe. The firſt ſayd vnto him, I haue bought a farme, and I muſt needes goe out and ſee it: I pray thee haue me excuſed.

19 And another ſayd, I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, and I go to proue them: I pray thee haue me excuſed.

20 And another ſaid, I haue married a wife, and therefore I can not come.

21 So that ſeruant returned, & ſhewed his maſter theſe things. Then was the good man of the houſe angrie, and ſayd to his ſeruant, Goe out quickly into the ſtreetes and lanes of the citie, and bring in hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the ſeruant ſayd, Lorde, it is done as thou haſt commanded, and yet there is roome.

23 Then the Maſter ſayd to the ſeruant, Goe out into the hie wayes, and hedges, and compell them to come in, that mine houſe may be filled.

24 For

24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shal taste of my supper.

25 Now there went great multitudes with him, and he turned and sayd vnto them,

26 *If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, & sisters; yea, and his owne life also, he can not be my disciple. *Mat.10.37.*

27 *And whosoeuer beareth not his crosse, and commeth after me, can not be my disciple. *Chap.9.23. mat.16.24.*

28 For which of you minding to build a towre sitteth not downe before, and counteth the cost, whether he haue sufficient to performe it, *mar.8.34.*

29 Lest that after he hath layde the foundation, and is not able to performe it, all that beholde it, begin to mocke him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to make an end?

31 Or what King going to make warre against another King, sitteth not downe first, and taketh counsel, whether he be able with ten thousand, to meete him that commeth against him with twentie thousand?

32 Or els while he is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth peace.

33 So likewise, whosoeuer he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he can not be my disciple.

34 *Salt is good: but if salt haue lost his sauour, wherewith shal it be salted? *Mat.5.13. mar.9.50.*

35 It is neither meete for the lande, nor yet for the dounghil, but men cast it out. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

CHAP. XV.

4 The parable of the lost sheepe, 8 Of the groat, 11 And of the prodigall sonne.

THen [Or, drewe neere.] resorted vnto him all the Publicanes and sinners, to heare him.

2 Therefore the Pharises and Scribes murmured, saying, He receiueth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 Then spake he this parable to them, saying,

4 *What man of you hauing an hundreth sheepe, if he lose one of them, doeth not leaue ninetie and nine in the wildernes, and goe after that which is lost, vntil he finde it? *Mat.18.12.*

5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders with ioye,

6 And

6 And when he commeth home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying vnto them, Reioyce with me: for I haue found my sheepe which was lost.

7 I say vnto you, that likewise ioye shalbe in heauen for one sinner that conuerteth, *more* then for ninetie and nine iust men, which neede none amendement of life.

8 Either what woman hauing ten groates, if she lose one groate, doeth not light a candle, & sweepe the house, and seeke diligently til she finde it?

9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and neighbours, saying, Reioyce with me: for I haue found the groate which I had lost.

10 Likewise I say vnto you, there is ioye in the presence of the Angels of God, for one sinner that conuerteth.

11 ¶ He sayd moreouer, A certain man had two sonnes,

12 And the yonger of them sayd to his father, Father, giue me the portion of the goods that falleth to me. So he deuided vnto them *his* substance.

13 So not many dayes after, when the yonger sonne had gathered all together, he tooke his iourney into a farre countrey, & there he wasted his goods with riotous liuing.

14 Now whē he had spent all, there arose a great dearth throughout that land: and he began to be in necessitie.

15 Then he went and claue to a citizen of that countrey, and he sent him to his farme, to feede swine.

16 And he would faine haue filled his belly with the huskes, that the swine ate: but no man gaue *them* him.

17 Then he came to him selfe, and sayd, How many hyred seruants at my fathers haue bread ynough, and I dye for hunger?

18 I wil rise and goe to my father, and say vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and before thee,

19 And am no more worthie to be called thy sonne: make me as one of thy hyred seruants.

20 So he arose and came to his father, and when he was yet a great way off, his father sawe him, and had compassion, and ranne and fel on his necke, and kissed him.

21 And the sonne said vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy sonne.

22 Then the father sayd to his seruants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feete,

23 And

23 And bring the fat calfe, and kill him, and let vs eate, and be merie:

24 For this my ſonne was dead, & is aliue againe: and he was loſt, but he is found. And they began to be merie.

25 Now the elder brother was in the field, and when he came and drew neere to the houſe, he heard melody, and dancing,

26 And called one of his ſeruants, and asked what thoſe things meant.

27 And he ſayd vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calfe, becauſe he hath receiued him ſafe and ſound.

28 Then he was angrie, and would not goe in: therefore came his father out and entreated him.

29 But he anſwered and ſayd to his father, Loe, theſe many yeres haue I done thee ſeruice, neither brake I at any time thy commandement, and yet thou neuer gaueſt me a kid, that I might make mery with my friends.

30 But when this thy ſonne was come, which hath deuoured thy goods with harlots, thou haſt for his ſake killed the fat calfe.

31 And he ſayd vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer with me, and all that I haue, is thine. It was meete that we ſhould make merie, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aliue againe: and he was loſt, but he is found.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The parable of the Steward accuſed to his maſter. 13 To ſerue two maſters. 16 The Lawe and the Prophets. 19 Of Diues and Lazarus.

AND he ſayd alſo vnto his diſciples, There was a certaine riche man, which had a ſteward, and he was accuſed vnto him, that he waſted his goods.

2 And he called him, and ſaid vnto him, How *is it* that I heare this of thee? Giue an accountes of thy ſtewardſhip: for thou maieſt be no longer ſteward.

3 Then the ſteward ſayd within himſelfe, What ſhall I doe? for my maſter taketh away from me the ſtewardſhip. I can not digge, *and* to begge I am aſhamed.

4 I know what I wil doe, that when I am put out of the ſtewardſhip, they may receiue me into their houſes.

5 Then called he vnto him euery one of his maſters detters, and ſayd vnto the firſt, Howe much oweſt thou vnto my maſter?

6 And

6 And he ſayd, An hundreth meaſures of oyle. And he ſayd to him, Take thy writing, and ſit downe quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then ſaid he to another, How much oweſt thou? And he ſayd, An hundreth meaſures of wheate. Then he ſayd to him, Take thy writing, and write foure ſcore.

8 And the Lord commended the vniuſt ſteward, becauſe he had done wiſely. Wherefore the children of this world are in their generation wyſer then the children of light.

9 And I ſay vnto you, Make you friends with the riches of iniquitie, that when ye ſhal want, they may receiue you into euerlaſting habitations.

10 He that is faithful in the leaſt, he is alſo faithful in much: and he that is vniuſt in the leaſt, is vniuſt alſo in much.

11 If then ye haue not bene faythfull in the wicked riches, who wil truſt you in the true *treaſure*?

12 And if ye haue not bene faythfull in another mans *goods*, who ſhal giue you that which is yours?

Mat.6.24. 13 *No ſeruaunt can ſerue two maſters: for eyther he ſhal hate the one, and loue the other: or els he ſhal leane to the one, and deſpiſe the other. Ye can not ſerue God and riches.

14 All theſe thinges heard the Phariſes alſo which were couetous, and they ſcoffed at him.

15 Then he ſayd vnto them, Ye are they, which iuſtifie your ſelues before men: but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly eſteemed among men, is abominable in the ſight of God.

Mat.11.12. 16 *The Lawe and the Prophets *endured* vntil Iohn: and ſince that time the kingdome of God is preached, and euery man preaſſeth into it.

Mat.5.18. 17 *Nowe it is more eaſie that heauen and earth ſhould paſſe away, then that one title of the Lawe ſhould fall.

Mat.5.32. and 19.9. 1.Cor.7.11. 18 *Whoſoeuer putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adulterie: and whoſoeuer marieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adulterie.

19 There was a certaine rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linnen, and fared wel and delicatly euery day.

20 Alſo there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was layde at his gate full of ſores,

21 And

21 And desired to be refreshed with the crummes that fell from the riche mans table: yea, and the dogges came and licked his sores.

22 And it was so that the begger died, and was caried by the Angels into Abrahams bosome. The rich man also died, and was buried.

23 And being in hell in torments, he lift vp his eyes, and sawe Abraham a farre off, and Lazarus in his bosome.

24 Then he cried, and said, Father Abraham, haue mercie on me, and send Lazarus that he may dippe the tippe of his finger in water, and coole my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receiuedst thy pleasures, and likewise Lazarus paines: nowe therefore is he comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 Besides all this, betweene you and vs there is a great gulfe set, so that they which would goe from hence to you, cannot: neither can they come from thence to vs.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house,

28 (For I haue fiue brethren) that he may testifie vnto them, least they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham said vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophetes: let them heare them.

30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one came vnto them from the dead, they will amend their liues.

31 Then he said vnto him, If they heare not Moses and the Prophetes, neither will they be persuaded, though one rise from the dead againe.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Offences. 3 We must forgiue him that trespasseth against vs. 10 We are vnprofitable seruants. 11 Of the ten lepers. 20 Of the comming of the kingdome of heauen. 33 False Christes. 36 After what maner Christes comming shalbe.

THen said he to the disciples, *It cannot be auoyded, but that offences will come, but wo *be* to him by whom they come. *Mat.18.7. mar.9.42.

2 It is better for him that a great milstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were cast into the sea, then that he should offende one of these litle ones.

3 ¶ Take heede to your selues: if thy brother trespasse

against thee, rebuke him: and if he repent, forgiue him.

Mat.18.21. 4 * And though he sinne against thee seuen times in a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, I repenteth me, thou shalt forgiue him.

5 ¶And the Apostles said vnto the Lord, Increase our faith.

Mat.17.20. 6 And the Lorde said, * Ifye had faith *as much* as a graine of mustard seede, and should say vnto this mulberie tree, Plucke thy selfe vp by the rootes, and plant thy selfe in the sea, it should euen obey you.

7 ¶Who is it also of you, that hauing a seruant plowing or feeding cattell, would say vnto him by and by, when he were come from the fielde, Goe, and sit downe at table?

8 And woulde not rather say to him, Dresse wherewith I may suppe, and girde thy selfe, and serue me, till I haue eaten and drunken, and afterwarde thou shalt eate and drinke?

9 Doeth he thanke that seruant, because he did that which was commanded vnto him? I trowe not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye haue done all those things, which are commanded you, say, We are vnprofitable seruants: we haue done that which was our duetie to doe.

11 ¶And so it was when he went to Hierusalem, that he passed through the middes of Samaria, and Galile.

12 And as he entred into a certaine towne, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood a farre of.

13 And they lift vp their voyces and saide, Iesus, Master, haue mercie on vs.

Leuit.14.2. 14 And when he sawe *them*, he said vnto them, * Goe, shewe your selues vnto the Priestes. And it came to passe, that as they went, they were clensed.

15 Then one of them, when he sawe that he was healed, turned backe, and with a loud voyce praised God,

16 And fell downe on his face at his feete, and gaue him thankes: and he was a Samaritan.

17 And Iesus answered, and saide, Are there not ten cleansed? but where *are* the nine?

18 There are none founde that returned to giue God praise, saue this stranger.

19 And he said vnto him, Arise, goe thy way, thy faith hath saued thee.

20 ¶And when he was demaunded of the Pharises, when the kingdome of God shoulde come, he answered them,

them, and saide, The kingdome of God commeth not with obseruation.

21 Neither shall men say, Lo here, or lo there: for behold, the kingdome of God is within you.

22 And he said vnto the disciples, The dayes will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 *Then they shall say to you, Behold here, or behold there: *but* goe not thither, neither followe them. *Mat.24.23. mar.13.21.*

24 For as the lightning that lightneth out of the one *part* vnder heauen, shineth vnto the other *part* vnder heauen, so shall the sonne of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many thinges, and be reproued of this generation.

26 *And as it was in the dayes of Noe, so shall it be in the dayes of the Sonne of man. *Gene.7.5. mat.24.38.*

27 They ate, they dranke, they maried wiues, and gaue in mariage vnto the day that Noe went into the Arke; and the flood came, and destroyed them all. *1.pet.3.20.*

28 *Likewise also, as it was in the dayes of Lot, they ate, they dranke, they bought, they solde, they planted, they built. *Gen.19.24.*

29 But in the day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rayned fire and brimstone from heauen, & destroyed them all.

30 After these *ensamples* shal it be in the day when the Sonne of man is reueiled.

31 At that day he that is vpon the house, and his stuffe in the house, let him not come downe to take it out: and he that is in the fielde likewise, let him not turne backe to that he left behinde.

32 *Remember Lots wife. *Gen.19.26.*

33 *Whosoeuer will seeke to saue his soule, shall lose it: and whosoeuer shall lose it, shall get it life. *Chap.9.24. mat.10.39*

34 *I tell you, in that night there shalbe two in one bed: the one shall be receiued, and the other shall be left. *mar.8.35. iohn 12.25. Mat.24.41.*

35 Two women shalbe grinding together: the one shalbe taken, and the other shalbe left.

36 Two shalbe in the fielde: one shalbe receiued, and another shalbe left.

37 And they answered, and said to him, Where, Lorde? And he said vnto them, *Whereseoeuer the body *is*, thither shall also the egles be gathered together. *Mat.24.28.*

CHAP. XVIII.

1 *The Parable of the vnrighteous iudge and the widowe.* 9 *Of the Phariſe and the Publicane.* 15 *Children are of the kingdome of heauen.* 22 *To ſell all and giue to the poore.* 28 *The Apoſtles forſake all.* 31 *Chriſt foretelleth his death.* 35 *The blinde man receiueth ſight.*

AND he ſpake alſo a parable vnto them, *to this ende, that* Rom. 12. 12. they *ought alwayes to pray, and not to waxe faint.* 1. theſ. 5. 17.

2 Saying, There was a iudge in a certaine citie, which feared not God, neither reuerenced man.

3 And there was a widowe in that citie, which came vnto him, ſaying, Doe me iuſtice againſt mine aduerſarie.

4 And he would not of a long time: but afterwarde he ſaide with himſelfe, Though I feare not God, nor reuerence man,

5 Yet becauſe this widowe troubleth me, I will doe her right, leſt at the laſt ſhe come and make me wearie.

6 And the Lord ſaid, Heare what ỹ vnrighteous iudge ſaith.

7 Now ſhal not God auenge his elect, which cry day and night vnto him, yea, though he ſuffer long for them?

8 I tell you he will auenge them quickely: but when the Sonne of man commeth, ſhal he finde faith on ỹ earth?

9 He ſpake alſo this parable vnto certaine which truſted in themſelues that they were iuſt, and deſpiſed others.

10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pray: the one a Phariſe, and the other a Publicane.

11 The Phariſe ſtood and prayed thus with himſelfe, O God, I thanke thee, that I am not as other men, extortioners, vniuſt, adulterers, or euen as this Publicane.

12 I faſt twiſe in the weeke: I giue tithe of all that euer I poſſeſſe.

13 But the Publicane ſtanding a farre off, would not lift vp ſo much as his eyes to heauen, but ſmote his breſt, ſaying, O God, be mercifull to me a ſinner.

14 I tell you, this man departed to his houſe iuſtified, rather then the other: * for euery man that exalteth himſelfe, ſhalbe brought lowe, and he that humbleth himſelfe, ſhalbe exalted. Chap. 14. 11. mat. 23. 12.

15 ¶ * They brought vnto him alſo babes ỹ he ſhould touche them. And when his diſciples ſawe it, they rebuked them. Mat. 19. 13. mar. 10. 13.

16 But Ieſus called them vnto him, and ſaid, Suffer the babes

babes to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

17 Verely I say vnto you, whosoeuer receiueth not the kingdome of God as a babe, he shall not enter therein.

18 *Then a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good master, what ought I to doe, to inherite eternall life? *Mat.19.16. mar.10.17.*

19 And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good, saue one, *euen* God.

20 Thou knowest the commandements, * Thou shalt not commit adulterie: Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare false witnesse: Honour thy father and thy mother. *Exod.20.13*

21 And he said, All these haue I kept from my youth.

22 Now when Iesus heard that, he said vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: Sell all that euer thou hast, and distribute vnto the poore, & thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come follow me.

23 But when he heard those things, he was very heauie: for he was marueilous riche.

24 And when Iesus sawe him very sorowfull, he sayde, With what difficultie shall they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God!

25 Surely it is easier for a camel to goe through a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 Then said they that heard it, And who then can be saued?

27 And he said, The things which are vnpossible with men, are possible with God.

28 ¶*Then Peter said, Loe, we haue left all, and haue followed thee. *Mat.19.27 mar.10.28.*

29 And he said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the kingdome of Gods sake,

30 Which shall not receiue much more in this worlde, and in the world to come life euerlasting.

31 ¶*Then Iesus tooke vnto him the twelue, and said vnto them, Beholde, we go vp to Hierusalem, and al things shalbe fulfilled to the Sonne of man, that are written by the Prophetes. *Mat.20.17. mar.10.32.*

32 For he shalbe deliuered vnto the Gentiles, and shalbe mocked, and shalbe spitefully entreated, and shalbe spitted on.

33 And when they haue ſcourged him, they will put him to death: but the third day he ſhall riſe againe.

34 But they vnderſtood none of theſe thinges, and this ſaying was hid from them, neither perceiued they the things, which were ſpoken.

Mat.20.29. mark.10.46 35 ¶* And it came to paſſe, that as he was come nere vnto Iericho, a certaine blinde man ſate by the way ſide, begging.

36 And when he heard the people paſſe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they ſaide vnto him, that Ieſus of Nazareth paſſed by.

38 Then he cryed, ſaying, Ieſus the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him that he ſhould holde his peace, but he cried much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

40 And Ieſus ſtoode ſtill, and commanded him to be brought vnto him. And when he was come nere, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I doe vnto thee? And he ſaid, Lord, that I may receiue my ſight.

42 And Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Receiue thy ſight: thy faith hath ſaued thee.

43 Then immediatly he receiued his ſight, and followed him, prayſing God: and all the people, when they ſawe *this*, gaue prayſe to God.

CHAP. XIX.

2 Zaccheus the Publicane. 13 Ten pieces of money deliuered to ſeruants to occupie withal. 29 Ieſus entreth into Hieruſalem. 41. He foretelleth the deſtruction of the citie with teares. 45 He caſteth the ſellers out of the Temple.

NOw when Ieſus entred and paſſed through Iericho,

2 Behold, there was a man named Zaccheus, which *was* the chiefe receiuer of the tribute, and he was riche.

3 And he ſought to ſee Ieſus, who he ſhoulde be, and could not for the preaſſe, becauſe he was of a lowe ſtature.

4 Wherefore he ran before, and climed vp into a wilde figge tree, that he might ſee him: for he ſhoulde come that *way*.

5 And when Ieſus came to the place, he looked vp, and ſawe him, and ſaide vnto him, Zaccheus, come downe at once: for to day I muſt abide at thine houſe.

6 Then

6 Then he came downe haſtily, and receiued him ioyfully.

7 And when all they ſawe it, they murmured, ſaying, that he was gone in to lodge with a ſinfull man.

8 And Zaccheus ſtood forth, and ſaid vnto the Lorde, Beholde, Lord, the halfe of my goodes I giue to the poore: and if I haue taken from any man by forged cauillation, I reſtore him foure folde.

9 Then Ieſus ſaid to him, This day is ſaluation come vnto this houſe, foraſmuch as he is alſo become the ſonne of Abraham.

10 *For the Sonne of man is come to ſeeke, and to ſaue that which was loſt. *Mat.18.11.*

11 And whiles they heard theſe things, he continued and ſpake a parable, becauſe he was nere to Hieruſalem, and becauſe alſo they thought that the kingdome of God ſhould ſhortly appeare.

12 He ſaid therefore, *A certaine noble man went into a farre countrey, to receiue for himſelfe a kingdome, and ſo to come againe. *Mat.25.14.*

13 And he called his ten ſeruants, and deliuered them ten pieces of money, and ſaide vnto them, Occupie till I come.

14 Now his citizēs hated him, & ſent an ambaſſage after him, ſaying, We wil not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to paſſe, when he was come againe, and had receiued his kingdome, that he commanded the ſeruants to be called to him, to whom he gaue his money, that he might know what euery man had gained.

16 Then came the firſt, ſaying, Lord, thy piece hath encreaſed ten pieces.

17 And he ſaid vnto him, Well, good ſeruant: becauſe thou haſt bene faithfull in a verie little thing, take thou authoritie ouer ten cities.

18 And the ſecond came, ſaying, Lord, thy piece hath encreaſed fiue pieces.

19 And to the ſame he ſaid, Be thou alſo *ruler* ouer fiue cities.

20 So the other came, and ſaide, Lorde, beholde thy piece, which I haue laid vp in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, becauſe thou art a ſtreight man: thou takeſt vp, that thou laiedſt not downe, and reapeſt that thou diddeſt not ſowe.

22 Then he ſaid vnto him, Of thine owne mouth will I iudge thee, O euill ſeruant, Thou kneweſt that I am a ſtreight man, taking vp that I laied not downe, and reaping that I did not ſowe.

23 Wherefore then gaueſt not thou my money into the banke, that at my comming I might haue required it with vantage?

24 And he ſaid to them that ſtoode by, Take from him that piece, and giue it him that hath ten pieces.

25 (And they ſaid vnto him, Lord, he hath ten pieces.)

Chap.8.18. mat.13.12. and v.5.29. mar.4.25. 26 *For I ſay vnto you, that vnto all them that haue, it ſhalbe giuen: and from him that hath not, euen that he hath, ſhalbe taken from him.

27 Moreouer, thoſe mine enemies, which woulde not that I ſhould reigne ouer them, bring hither, and ſlay them before me.

28 ¶And when he had thus ſpoken, he went forth before, aſcending vp to Hieruſalem.

Mat.21.1. mark.11.1. 29 *And it came to paſſe, when he was come neere to Bethphage, and Bethania, beſides the mount which is called *the mount* of Oliues, he ſent two of his diſciples,

30 Saying, Goe ye to the towne which is before *you*, wherein, aſſoone as ye are come, ye ſhall finde a colte tied, whereon neuer man ſate: looſe him, and bring him *hither*.

31 And if any man aske you, why ye looſe *him*, thus ſhall ye ſay vnto him, Becauſe the Lord hath neede of him.

32 So they that were ſent, went their way, and founde it as he had ſaid vnto them.

33 And as they were looſing the colte, the owners thereof ſaid vnto them, Why looſe ye the colt?

34 And they ſaid, The Lord hath neede of him.

Mat.21.7. iohn 12.14. 35 ¶*So they brought him to Ieſus, and they caſt their garments on the colte, and ſet Ieſus thereon.

36 And as he went, they ſpred their clothes in ỹ way.

37 And when he was now come nere to ỹ going downe of the mount of Oliues, the whole multitude of the diſciples began to reioyce, and to praiſe God with a loud voyce, for all the great workes that they had ſeene,

38 Saying, Bleſſed *be* the king that commeth in the name of the Lord: peace in heauen, and glorie in the higheſt *places*.

39 Then ſome of the Phariſes of the companie ſaid vnto him, Maiſter, rebuke thy diſciples.

40 But

40 But he answered, & said vnto them, I tell you, that if
these should hold their peace, the stones would cry.

41 ¶ * And when he was come neere, he beheld the *Chap. 19.*
Cite, and wept for it. *mat. 23.*

42 Saying, O if thou haddest euen knowen at the least *marke 13.*
this thy day those thinges, which *belong* vnto thy peace!
but now are they hid from thine eyes.

43 For the dayes shall come vpon thee, that thine ene-
mies shall cast a trenche about thee, & compasse thee rou-
and keepe thee in on euery side,

44 And shall make thee euen with the ground, and thy
children which are in thee, and they shall not leaue in thee
one vpon a stone, because thou knewest not that season
of thy visitation.

45 ¶ * He went also into the Temple, and began to cast *Mat. 21. 13.*
out them that solde therein, and them that bought,

46 Saying vnto them, It is written, * Mine house is the *Mar. 11. 17.*
house of prayer, *but ye haue made it a denne of theeues. *Isai. 56. 7.*

47 And he taught daily in the Temple. But the high *Ierem. 7. 11.*
Priestes and the Scribes, & the chiefe of the people sought
to destroy him.

48 But they coulde not finde what they might do to him:
for all the people hanged vpon him when they heard him.

CHAP. XX.

Christ auctoriseth Iohns baptisme. 9 The wickednesse of the Priestes is noted by the parable of the vineyarde and husbandmen. 22 To giue tribute to Cesar. 27 He pronounceth the Sadduces dawning the resurrection. 41 How Christ is the sonne of Dauid.

1 * It came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he *Mat. 21. 23.*
taught the people in the Temple, and preached the *mar. 11. 27.*
Gospell, the high Priestes and the Scribes came vpon him
with the Elders,

2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs by what authori-
tie thou doest these thinges, or who is he that hath giuen
thee this authoritie?

3 And he answered and said vnto them, I also will aske
you one thing: tell me therefore:

4 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men?

5 And they reasoned within themselues, saying, If we
shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then beleeued ye
him not?

6 But

6 But if we shal say, Of men, all the people will stone vs: for they be persuaded that Iohn was a Prophet.

7 Therefore they answered, that they coulde not tell whence it *was*.

8 Then Iesus said vnto them, Neither tell I you, by what authoritie I do these things.

Mat.21.33. mar.12.1. isa.5.1. ierem.2.21.

9 ¶ * Then began he to speake to the people this parable, A certaine man planted a vineyard, & let it forth to husbandmen: & went into a strange countrey, for a great time.

10 And at the time conuenient he sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they shoulde giue him of the fruite of the vineyard, but the husbandmen did beate him, and sent him away emptie.

11 Again he sent yet another seruant: & they did beate him, and soule entreated him, and sent him away emptie.

12 Moreouer he sent the third, and him they wounded and cast out.

13 Then said the Lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I wil send my beloued sonne: it may be that they wil do reuerence, when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned with themselues, saying, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, & killed him. What shal the Lord of ỹ vineyard therefore do vnto them?

16 He wil come and destroy these husbandmen, & will giue out his vineyarde to others. But when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

Psal.118.22. isa.28.16. acts.4.11. rom.9.33. 1.pet.2.8.

17 ¶ And he beheld them, & sayd, What meaneth then that is written, * The stone that the buylders refused, that is made the head of the corner?

18 Whosoeuer shal fall vpon that stone, shalbe broken: & on whomsoeuer it shal fall, it will grinde him to powder.

19 Then the hye Priestes, and the Scribes the same houre went about to lay hãds on him: (but they feared the people) for they perceiued that he had spoken this parable against them.

Mat.22.16. mar.12.13.

20 * And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, which should fayne themselues iust men, to take him in his talke, and to deliuer him vnto the power and authoritie of the gouernour.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master, we knowe that thou sayest, and teachest right, neyther doest thou accept

mans person, but teacheſt the way of God truely.
22 Is it lawful for vs to giue Ceſar tribute or no?
23 But he perceiued their craftines, & ſayd vnto them,
Why tempt ye me?
24 Shew me a penny. Whoſe image and ſuperſcription
is it? They anſwered, and ſayd, Ceſars.
25 Then he ſaid vnto them, * Giue then vnto Ceſar the *Rom.13.7.*
things which are Ceſars, and to God thoſe which are Gods.
26 And they could not reproue his ſaying before the
people: but they marueiled at his anſwere, and helde their
peace.
27 *Then came to him certaine of the Sadducees (which *Mat.22.23.*
ſay that there is any reſurrection) and they asked him, *mar.12.18.*
28 Saying, Maſter, * Moſes wrote vnto vs, If any mans *Deut.25.5.*
brother die hauing a wife, and hee die without children,
that his brother ſhould take *his* wife, and raiſe vp ſeede vn-
to his brother.
29 Now there were ſeuen brethren, and the firſt tooke
a wife, and he died without children.
30 And the ſecõd tooke the wife, & he died childleſſe.
31 Then the third tooke her: and ſo likewiſe the ſeuen
died, and left no children.
32 And laſt of all, the woman died alſo.
33 Therefore at the reſurrection, whoſe wife of them
ſhall ſhe be? for ſeuen had her to wife.
34 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto them, The chil-
dren of this world marie wiues, and are maryed.
35 But they which ſhalbe counted worthy to enioy that
worlde, and the reſurrection frõm the dead, neyther marrie
wiues, neither are maried.
36 For they can die no more, foraſmuch as they are e-
quall vnto the Angels, and are the ſonnes of God, ſince they
are the children of the reſurrection.
37 And that the dead ſhall riſe againe, euen * Moſes *Exod.3.6.*
ſhewed it beſides the buſhe, when he ſayde, The Lorde *is* the
God of Abraham, and the God of Iſaac, & the God of Iacob.
38 For he is not the God of the dead, but of thẽ which
liue: for all liue vnto him.
39 Then certaine of the Scribes anſwered, and ſayde,
Maſter, thou haſt well ſayd.
40 And after that, durſt they not aske him any thing
at all.
41 ¶ * Then ſayde he vnto them, Howe ſay they that *Mat.22.44.*
Chriſt *mar.12.35.*

Christ is Dauids sonne?

42 And Dauid himself saith in the booke of Psalmes,

Psal.110.1. *The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit at my right hand,

43 Till I shal make thine enemies thy footestoole.

44 Seeing Dauid calleth him Lord, how is he then his sonne?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people he said vnto his disciples,

Chap.11.43. mat.23.6. mar.12.38. 46 *Beware of the Scribes, which willingly go in long robes, & loue salutations in the markets, and the hiest seates in the assemblies, and the chiefe roomes at feastes:

47 Which deuoure widowes houses, & in shewe make long prayers: These shal receiue greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *The widowes liberalitie aboue her riches.* 5 *Of the time of the destruction of the Temple,* 19 *and Hierusalem.* 25 *The signes going before the last iudgement.*

Mar.12.41. AND* as he beheld, he saw the rich men, which cast their giftes into the treasurie.

2 And he saw also a certaine poore widowe which cast in thither two mites:

3 And he sayde, Of a trueth I saye vnto you, that this poore widowe hath cast in more then they all.

4 For they all haue of their superfluitie cast into the offrings of God; but she of her penurie hath cast in all the liuing that she had.

Chap.19.43. mat.24.1. mar.13.1. 5 *Now as some spake of the Temple, howe it was garnished with goodly stones, & with cõsecrate things, he said,

6 Are these the thinges that ye looke vpon? the dayes wil come wherein a stone shall not be left vpon a stone, that shal not be throwen downe.

7 Thẽ they asked him, saying, Master, but whẽ shal these things be? and what signe *shal* there *be* when these thinges shal come to passe?

Ephes.5.6. 2.thes.2.3. 8 *And he said, Take heede, that ye be not deceiued: for many wil come in my name, saying, I am *Christ*, and the time draweth neere: follow ye not them therefore.

9 And when ye heare of warres and seditions, be not afrayde: for these thinges must first come, but the ende followeth not by and by.

10 Then sayd he vnto them, Nation shal rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome,

11 *And

11 *And great earthquakes shalbe in diuers places, & *Mat.24.7.*
hunger and pestilence, and featefull things, & great signes *mar.13.8.*
shall there be from heauen.

12 But before all these, they shal lay their hands on you,
and persecute *you*, deliuering you vp to the assemblies, and
to prisons, and bring you before Kings and rulers for my
names sake.

13 And this shal turne to you, for a testimoniall.

14 *Lay it vp therefore in your hearts, that ye cast not *Chap.12.12.*
before hand, what ye shal answere. *mat.10.19.*

15 For I wil giue you a mouth & wisdom, whereagainst *mar.13.11.*
all your aduersaries shal not be able to speake, nor resist.

16 Yea, ye shalbe betrayed also of your parents, and of
your brethren, and kinsemen, and friendes, and *some* of you
shall they put to death.

17 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my Names sake.

18 *Yet there shal not one heare of your heads perish. *Mat.10.30.*

19 By your patience possesse your soules.

20 ¶ *And when ye see Hierusalem besieged with soul- *Dan.9.27.*
diers, then vnderstand that the desolation thereof is neere. *mat.24.15.*

21 Then let them which are in Iudea, flee to the mou- *mar.13.14.*
taines: and let them which are in the middes thereof, de-
part out: and let not them that are in the countrey, enter
therein.

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, to fulfill all
things that are written.

23 But wo *be* to them that be with childe, and to them
that giue sucke in those dayes: for there shall be great di-
stresse in this land, and wrath ouer this people.

24 And they shal fall on the edge of the sword, and shal
be led captiue into all nations, and Hierusalem shall be tro-
den vnder foote of the Gentiles, vntill the time of the Gen-
tiles be fulfilled.

25 *Then there shall be signes in the sunne, and in *Isa.13.10.*
the moone, and in the starres, and vpon the earth trouble a- *ezek.32.7.*
mong the nations with perplexitie: the sea and the waters *mat.24.29.*
shall roare. *mar.13.24.*

26 And mens hearts shall fayle them for feare, and for
looking after those things which shal come on the worlde:
for the powers of heauen shalbe shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Sonne of man come in a
cloude, with power and great glory.

28 And when these thinges beginne to come to passe,
then

Rom. 8.27. then looke vp, and lift vp your heads: * for your redemption draweth neere.

29 And he ſpake to them a parable, Beholde, the figge tree and all trees,

30 When they now ſhoote forth, ye ſeeing them, know of your owne ſelues, that ſommer is then neere.

31 So likewiſe ye, when ye ſee theſe thinges come to paſſe, know ye that the kingdome of God is neere.

32 Verely I ſay vnto you, This age ſhall not paſſe, till all *theſe* things be done.

33 Heauen and earth ſhall paſſe away, but my words ſhal not paſſe away.

Rom. 13.13. 34 * Take heede to your ſelues, leaſt at any time your hearts be oppreſſed with ſurfeting & drunkennes, & cares of this life, and leſt that day come on you at vnwares.

35 For as a ſnare ſhall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch therefore, and pray continually, that ye may be counted worthy to eſcape all theſe things that ſhal come to paſſe, and that ye may ſtand before the Sonne of man.

37 ¶Now in the day time he taught in the Temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the mount* of Olines.

38 And all the people came in the morning to him, for to heare him in the Temple.

CHAP. XXII.

3 Iudas ſelleth Chriſt. 7 The Apoſtles prepare the Paſſeouer. 24 They ſtriue who ſhalbe chiefeſt. 31 Satan deſireth them. 35 Chriſt ſheweth that they wanted nothing. 42 He prayeth in the mount. 44 He ſweateth blood. 50 Malchus eare cut off and healed. 57. 58. 60 Peter denieth Chriſt thriſe. 63 Chriſt is mocked and ſtrooken. 69 He confeſſeth himſelfe to be the Sonne of God.

Mat. 26.1. mar. 14.1. NOw * the feaſt of vnleauened bread drew neere, which is called the Paſſeouer.

2 And the hie Prieſtes and Scribes ſought howe they might kill him: for they feared the people.

Mat. 26.14. mar. 14.10. 3 * Then entred Satan into Iudas, who was called Iſcariot, and was of the nomber of the twelue.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the hye Prieſts and captaines, how he might betray him to them.

5 So they were glad, and agreed to giue him money.

6 And he conſented, and ſought opportunitie to betray him

vnto them, when the people were away.

7 ¶ * Then came the daye of vnleauened bread when the Passeouer must be sacrificed. *Mat.26.17. mar.14.13.*

8 And he sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Go and prepare vs the Passeouer, that we may eate it.

9 And they said to him, Where wilt thou, that we prepare it?

10 Then he said vnto them, Beholde, when ye be entred into the citie, there shal a man meete you, bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into the house that he entreth in,

11 And say vnto the good man of the house, The Master saith vnto thee, Where is the lodging where I shal eate my Passeouer with my disciples?

12 Then he shall shewe you a great hie chamber trimmed: there make it readie.

13 So they went, and found as he had sayde vnto them, and made readie the Passeouer.

14 *And when the houre was come, he sate down, and the twelue Apostles with him. *Mat.26.20. mark.14.17.*

15 Then he sayd vnto them, I haue earnestly desired to eate this Passeouer with you, before I suffer.

16 For I say vnto you, Henceforth I will not eate of it any more, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.

17 And he tooke the cup, and gaue thankes, and sayde, Take this, and deuide it among you,

18 For I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruite of the vine, vntil the kingdome of God be come.

19 *And he tooke bread, & when he had giuen thanks, he brake it, & gaue to them, saying, This is my body, which is giuen for you: do this in the remembrance of me. *Mat.26.26. mar.14.22. 1.cor.11.24*

20 Likewise also after supper *he tooke* ỹ cup, saying, This cup is that new Testamẽt in my blood, which is shed for you.

21 *Yet behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me at the table. *Mat.26 21. mar.14.18.*

22 And truely the Sonne of man goeth as it is appoynted: but wo *be* to that man, by whom he is betrayed. *psal.41.9.*

23 Then they beganne to enquire among themselues, which of them it should be, that should do that.

24 ¶ * And there arose also a strife among them, which of them should seeme to be the greatest. *Mat.20.25 mar.10.42.*

25 But he sayde vnto them, The Kinges of the Gentiles reigne ouer them, and they that beare rule ouer them, are called bountifull.

26 But

26 But ye *shal* not *be* so: but let the greatest among
be as the least: and the chiefest as he that serueth.
27 For who is greater, he that sitteth at table, or he
serueth? Is not he that sitteth at table? And I am among
as he that serueth.
28 And ye are they which haue continued with me
my tentations.
29 Therefore I appoynt vnto you a kingdome, as my
ther hath appoynted to me,
*Mat.*19.28. 30 *That yee may eate, and drinke at my table in
kingdome, and sit on seates, and iudge the twelue tribe
Israel.
1.*Pet.*5.8. 31 ¶And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, Beholde,* Sa
hath desired you, to winow you as wheate.
32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith fayle
therfore when thou art conuerted, strengthen thy bre
*Mat.*26.34. 33 *And he said vnto him, Lord, I am ready to go w
*mar.*14.39. thee into prison, and to death.
*Ioh.*13.38. 34 But he sayde, I tell thee, Peter, the cocke shall
crowe this daye, before thou hast thrise denyed that
knewest me.
*Mat.*10.9. 35 ¶ And he sayde vnto them,* When I sent you w
out bagge, and scrip, and shooes, lacked ye any thing?
they sayd, Nothing.
36 Then he said to them, But now he that hath a ba
let him take it, and likewise a scrip: and he that hath n
let him sell his coate, and bye a sworde.
37 For I say vnto you, That yet the same which is w
*Isa.*53.12. ten, must be performed in me,* Euen with the wicked
he nombred: for doubtles those thinges which *are wri*
of me, haue an ende.
38 And they said, Lord, beholde, here are two swor
And he sayd vnto them, It is ynough.
*Mat.*26.36. 39 ¶* And he came out, and went (as he was wont)
*mar.*14.32. the mount of Oliues: and his disciples also folowed him.
*Ioh.*18.1. 40 * And when he came to the place, he saide to the
*Mat.*26.41. Pray, lest ye enter into tentation.
*mar.*14.38. 41 And he was drawen aside from them about a ston
cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed,
42 Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take away this cup fro
me: neuertheless, not my wil, but thine be done.
43 And there appeared an Angel vnto him from he
uen, comforting him.

44 Be

44 But being in an agonie, hee prayed more earnestly: and his sweate was like droppes of blood, trickling downe to the ground.

45 And hee rose vp from prayer, and came to *his* disciples, and found them sleeping for heauines.

46 And he said vnto them, Why sleepe ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into tentation.

47 ¶ * And while he yet spake, beholde a companie, and hee that was called Iudas one of the twelue, went before them, and came neere vnto Iesus to kisse him. *Mat.26.47. mar.14.43. iohn 18.3.*

48 And Iesus saide vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou the Sonne of man with a kisse?

49 Nowe when they which were about him, sawe what would followe, they said vnto him, Lord, shall we smite with sworde?

50 And one of them smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and strooke off his right eare.

51 Then Iesus answered, & said, Suffer *them* thus farre: and he touched his eare, and healed him.

52 Then Iesus said vnto the hie Priests, and captaines of the Temple, and the Elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as vnto a theefe with swordes and staues?

53 When I was dayly with you in the Temple, ye stretched not foorth the handes against me: but this is your very houre, and the power of darkenes.

54 ¶ * Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him to y hie Priestes house. And Peter followed afarre off. *Mat. 26.58.*

55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the middes of the hal, and were set downe together, Peter also sate downe among them. *Mat.26. 58, 69. mar.14. 66. Iob 18.25*

56 And a certaine maide behelde him as he sate by the fire, and hauing well looked on him, said, This man was also with him.

57 But he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a litle while, another man saw him, & said, Thou art also of them. But Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of an houre after, a certaine other affirmed, saying, Verely euen this man was with him: for he is also a Galilean.

60 And Peter saide, Man, I knowe not what thou sayest. And immediatly while he yet spake, the cocke crewe,

61 Then the Lord turned backe, & looked vpon Peter: and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, howe hee had

Mat.26.34. iohn 13.38. said vnto him,*Before the cocke crow,thou ſhalt denie me thriſe.

62 And Peter went out,and wept bitterly.

Mat.26.67 mar. 14.65. 63 ¶*And the men that helde Ieſus, mocked him, and ſtrooke him.

64 And when they had blind folded him, they ſmote him on the face, and asked him, ſaying,Prophecie who it is that ſmote thee.

65 And many other things blaſphemouſly ſpake they againſt him.

Mat.27.1. mar.15.1. iohn 18.28. 66 * And aſſoone as it was day, the Elders of the people,and the hie Prieſtes and the Scribes came together, and led him into their councill,

67 Saying,Art thou that Chriſt? tell vs. And he ſaid vnto them,If I tell you,ye will not beleeue it.

68 And if alſo I aske you,ye will not anſwere me,nor let me goe.

69 Hereafter ſhall the Sonne of man ſit at the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then ſaid they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he ſaid to them,Ye ſay,that I am.

71 Then ſaid they,What neede we any further witnes? for we our ſelues haue heard it of his owne mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 He is accuſed before Pilate. 7 He is ſent to Herod. 11 He is mocked. 24 Pilate yeldeth him vp to the Iewes requeſt. 27 The women bewaile him. 33 He is crucified. 39 One of the theeues reuileth him: 43 The other is ſaued by faith. 45 He dieth. 53 He is buried.

THen the whole multitude of them aroſe,and led him vnto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuſe him,ſaying,We haue found this man peruerting the nation,* and forbidding to pay tribute to Ceſar,ſaying,That he is Chriſt a king.

Mat.22.21. mar.12.17. Mat.27.11. mar.15.2. iohn 18.33. 3 *And Pilate asked him, ſaying, Art thou the king of the Iewes? And he anſwered him, and ſaid,Thou ſayeſt it.

4 Then ſaide Pilate to the hie Prieſtes, and to the people,I finde no fault in this man.

5 But they were the more fierce,ſaying,He moueth the people,teaching throughout all Iudea,beginning at Galile, euen to this place.

6 Nowe when Pilate heard of Galile, he asked whether the man were a Galilean,

7 And

7 And when he knew that he was of Herodes iurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, which was also at Hierusalem in those dayes.

8 And when Herod sawe Iesus, hee was exceedingly glad: for hee was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and trusted to haue seene some signe done by him.

9 Then questioned he with him of many things: but he answered him nothing.

10 The hie Priestes also and Scribes stoode foorth, and accused him vehemently.

11 And Herod with his men of warre, despised him, and mocked him, and arrayed him in white, and sent him againe to Pilate.

12 And the same day Pilate & Herod were made friends together: for before they were enemies one to another.

13 ¶ Then Pilate called together the hie Priestes and the rulers, and the people,

14 *And said vnto them, Ye haue brought this man vnto me, as one that peruerted the people: and behold, I haue examined him before you, & haue found no fault in this man, of those things whereof ye accuse him: *Mat. 27.23. mar. 15.14. iohn 18.38.

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him: and lo, nothing worthy of death is done of him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose.

17 (For of necessitie hee must haue let one loose vnto them at the feast.)

18 Then all the multitude cried at once, saying, Away with him, and deliuer to vs Barabbas:

19 Which for a certaine insurrectiō made in the citie, and murther, was cast in prison.

20 Then Pilate spake againe to them, willing to let Iesus loose.

21 But they cryed, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him.

22 And he said vnto them the third time, But what euill hath he done? I finde no cause of death in him: I wil therefore chastise him, and let him loose.

23 But they were instant with loude voyces, and required that he might be crucified: and the voyces of them and of the hie Priestes preuayled.

24 So Pilate gaue sentence, that it should be as they required.

25 And he let loose vnto them him that for insurrection

and murther was caſt into priſon, whom they deſired, and deliuered Ieſus to do with him what they would.

Mat.27.32. mar.15.21. 26 ¶ * And as they led him away, they caught one Simon of Cyrene, comming out of the fielde, and on him they laide the croſſe, to beare it after Ieſus.

27 And there folowed him a great multitude of people, and of women, which women bewayled and lamented him.

28 But Ieſus turned backe vnto them, and ſaide, Daughters of Hieruſalem, weepe not for mee, but weepe for your ſelues, and for your children.

29 For behold, the dayes will come, when men ſhal ſay, Bleſſed *are* the barren, and the wombes that neuer bare, & the pappes which neuer gaue ſucke.

Iſa.2.19. hoſe.10.8. reuel.6.16. 30 Then ſhall they begin to ſay to the mountaines, * Fall on vs: and to the hilles, Couer vs.

1.Pet.4.17. 31 * For if they do theſe thinges to a greene tree, what ſhalbe done to the drye?

Mat.27.38. mar.15.27. ſohn 19.18. 32 * And there were two others, which were euill doers, led with him to be ſlaine.

33 And when they were come to the place, which is called Caluarie, there they crucified him, and the euill doers, one at the right hand, and the other at the left.

34 Then ſaide Ieſus, Father, forgiue them: for they know not what they do. And they parted his rayment, and caſt lottes.

35 And the people ſtoode, and behelde: and the rulers mocked him with them, ſaying, Hee ſaued others: let him ſaue himſelfe, if he be that Chriſt, the Choſen of God.

36 The ſouldiers alſo mocked him, and came and offred him vineger,

37 And ſayde, If thou be the King of the Iewes, ſaue thy ſelfe.

38 And a ſuperſcription was alſo written ouer him, in Greeke letters, and in Latin, and in Hebrewe, THIS IS THAT KING OF THE IEWES.

39 ¶ And one of the euill doers, which were hanged, rayled on him, ſaying, If thou be that Chriſt, ſaue thy ſelfe and vs.

40 But the other anſwered, & rebuked him, ſaying, Feareſt thou not God, ſeeing thou art in ỹ ſame condemnation?

41 Wee are in deede righteouſly *here*: for we receiue thinges worthy of that wee haue done: but this man hath done nothing amiſſe.

42 And

42 And he ſaid vnto Ieſus, Lorde, remember mee, when thou commeſt into thy kingdome.

43 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Verely I ſay vnto thee, to day ſhalt thou be with me in Paradiſe.

44 ¶ And it was about the ſixt houre: and there was a darkenes ouer all the land, vntill the ninth houre.

45 And the Sunne was darkened, and the vaile of the Temple rent through the middes.

46 And Ieſus cryed with a loude voyce, and ſaid, * Father, into thine handes I commende my ſpirit. And when he thus had ſaid, He gaue vp the ghoſt. *Pſal.31.6.*

47 ¶ Now when the Centurion ſaw what was done, he glorified God, ſaying, Of a ſuretie this man was iuſt.

48 And all the people that came together to that ſight, beholding the things, which were done, ſmote their breſtes, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance ſtoode afarre off, and the women that followed him from Galile, beholding theſe thinges.

50 ¶ * And beholde, there was a man named Ioſeph, which was a counſeller, a good man and a iuſt. *Mat.27.57. mar.15.43.*

51 Hee did not conſent to the counſell, and deede of them, *which was* of Arimathea, a citie of the Iewes: who alſo himſelfe wayted for the kingdome of God. *iohn 19.38.*

52 He went vnto Pilate, and asked the body of Ieſus,

53 And tooke it downe, & wrapped it in a linnen cloth, and layde it in a tombe hewen out of a rocke, wherein was neuer man yet layed.

54 And that day was the preparation, and the Sabbath drewe on.

55 And the women alſo that folowed after, which came with him from Galile, beheld the ſepulchre, and how his bodie was layde.

56 And they returned and prepared odours, and oyntmentes, and reſted the Sabbath *day* according to the commandement.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 The women come to the ſepulchre. 9 They report that which they heard of the Angels vnto the Apoſtles. 13 Chriſt doth accompanie two going to Emmaus. 27 He expoundeth the Scriptures vnto them. 39 He offereth himſelfe to his Apoſtles to be handled. 49 He promiſeth the holy Ghoſt. 51 He is carried vp into heauen.

Mar.16.1. *Ioh.20.1.* NOwe the *first *day* of the weeke earely in the morning, they came vnto the ſepulchre, and brought the odours, which they had prepared, and certaine *women* with them.

2 And they foũd ỹ ſtone rolled away frõ the ſepulchre,

3 And went in, but found not ỹ body of the Lord Ieſus.

4 And it came to paſſe, that as they were amaſed thereat, beholde, two men ſuddenly ſtoode by them in ſhining veſtures.

5 And as they were afraide, and bowed downe their faces to the earth, they ſaid to them, Why ſeeke ye him that liueth, among the dead?

Chap.9.22. *mat.17.23.* *mar.9.31.* 6 He is not here, but is riſen: remember *how he ſpake vnto you, when he was yet in Galile,

7 Saying, that the Sonne of man muſt be deliuered into the handes of ſinneſull men, and be crucified, and the third day riſe againe.

8 And they remembred his wordes,

9 And returned from the ſepulchre, and tolde all theſe thinges vnto the eleuen, and to all the remnant.

10 Nowe it was Marie Magdalene & Ioanna, and Marie the *mother* of Iames, and other women with them, which tolde theſe things vnto the Apoſtles.

11 But their wordes ſeemed vnto them, as a fained thing, neither beleeued they them.

Ioh.20.6. 12 *Then aroſe Peter, and ran vnto the ſepulchre, and looked in, and ſawe the linnen clothes layde by themſelues, and departed wondering in himſelfe at that which was come to paſſe.

Mar.16.12. 13 ¶ * And beholde, two of them went that ſame day to a towne which was from Hieruſalem about threeſcore furlongs, called Emmaus.

14 And they talked together of all theſe thinges that were done.

15 And it came to paſſe, as they communed together, and reaſoned, that Ieſus himſelfe drewe neere, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they coulde not knowe him.

17 And he ſaide vnto them, What maner of communications are theſe that ye haue one to another as ye walke, and are ſad?

18 And the one (named Cleopas) anſwered, and ſaide vnto him, Art thou onely a ſtranger in Hieruſalem, and haſt not

not knowen the thinges which are come to passe therein in these dayes?

19 And hee said vnto them, What thinges? And they saide vnto him, Of Iesus of Nazareth, which was a Prophet, mightie in deede and in worde before God, and all the people,

20 And howe the hie Priestes, and our rulers deliuered him to be condemned to death, and haue crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had bene he that should haue deliuered Israel, and as touching all these things, to day is the third day, that they were done.

22 Yea, and certaine women among vs made vs astonied, which came early vnto the sepulchre.

23 And when they found not his bodie, they came, saying, that they had also seene a vision of Angels, which saide that he was aliue.

24 Therefore certaine of them which were with vs, went to the sepulchre, and found it euen so as the women had said, but him they sawe not.

25 Then he said vnto them, O fooles and slowe of heart to beleeue all that the Prophets haue spoken!

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffred these thinges, and to enter into his glorie?

27 And he began at Moses, and at all the Prophetes, and interpreted vnto them in al the Scriptures the things which were *written* of him.

28 And they drew nere vnto ỹ towne, which they went to, but he made as though he would haue gone further.

29 But they constrayned him, saying, Abide with vs: for it is towards night, and the day is farre spent. So he went in to tary with them.

30 And it came to passe, as he sate at table with them, he tooke the bread, & blessed, and brake it, and gaue it to them.

31 Then their eyes were opened, and they knewe him: and he was no more seene of them.

32 And they saide betweene themselues, Did not our hearts burne within vs, while he talked with vs by the way, and when he opened to vs the Scriptures?

33 And they rose vp the same houre, and returned to Hierusalem, and found the Eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Which said, The Lord is risen in deede, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 Then they tolde what things *were* done in the way, and how he was knowen of them in breaking of bread.

Mar.16.14. Ioon 20.19. 36 ¶ And as they spake these thinges, Iesus himselfe stoode in the middes of them, and said vnto them, Peace be to you.

37 But they were abashed and afraide, supposing that they had seene a spirite.

38 Then he saide vnto them, Why are ye troubled? and wherefore do doutes arise in your heartes?

39 Behold mine hands and my feete: for it is I my selfe: handle me, and see: for a spirite hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me haue.

40 And when hee had thus spoken, he shewed them his handes and feete.

41 And while they yet beleeued not for ioye, and wondered, he said vnto them, Haue ye here any meate?

42 And they gaue him a piece of a broyled fishe, and of an honie combe,

43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them.

44 And he said vnto them, These are the wordes, which I spake vnto you while I was yet with you, that all must be fulfilled which are written of mee in the Lawe of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes.

45 Then opened he their vnderstãding, that they might vnderstand the Scriptures,

46 And said vnto them, Thus is it written, and thus it behoued Christ to suffer, and to rise againe from the dead the third day,

47 And that repentance, and remission of sinnes should be preached in his Name among all nations, beginning at Hierusalem.

48 Now ye are witnesses of these things.

Iohn 15.26. actis.1.4. 49 And beholde, I do sende the *promes of my Father vpon you: but tary ye in the citie of Hierusalem, vntil ye be endued with power from an hie.

50 Afterward he led them out into Bethania, and lift vp his handes, and blessed them.

Mar.16.19. actis.1.9. 51 And it came to passe, that as he blessed them, *he departed from them, and was caried vp into heauen.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioye,

53 And were continually in the Temple, praysing, and lauding God, Amen.

THE

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORding to Iohn.

CHAP. I.

That worde begotten of God before all worlds, 2 and which was euer with the Father, 14 is made man. 6. 7 For what end Iohn was sent from God: 16 His preaching of Christs office: 19. 20 The record that he bare giuen out vnto the Priests. 40 The calling of Andrew, 42 of Peter, 43 Philippe, 45 and Nathanael.

IN the beginning was that Worde, and that Worde was with God, and that Worde was God.

2 This same was in the beginning with God.

3 *All things were made by it, and without it was made nothing that was made. *Col.1.16.*

4 In it was life, and that life was that light of men.

5 And that light shineth in the darkenes, and the darkenes comprehended it not.

6 ¶ *There was a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn. *Mat.3.1. mar.1.4.*

7 *The* same came for a witnes, to beare witnes of that light, that all men through him might beleeue. *luke 3.2.*

8 He was not that light, but *was sent* to beare witnes of that light.

9 This was that true light, which lighteth euery man that commeth into the worlde.

10 He was in the world, and the world was *made by him: and the world knew him not. *Hebr.11.3.*

11 He came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not.

12 But as many as receiued him, to them he gaue prerogatiue to be the sonnes of God, *euen* to them that beleeue in his Name.

13 Which are borne not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 *And that Word was made flesh, and dwelt among vs, (and we *sawe the glorie thereof, as the glorie of the onely begotten *Sonne* of the Father) full of grace & trueth. *Mat.1.16. *Mat.17.2. 2.pet.1.17.*

15 ¶ Iohn bare witnes of him, and cryed, saying, This

was

was he of whom I ſayd, He that commeth after me, was before me: for he was better then I.

Col.1.19. *and 2.9.* 16 * And of his fulnes haue all we receiued, and grace for grace.

17 For the Lawe was giuen by Moſes: but grace, and trueth came by Ieſus Chriſt.

1.Tim.6.16. *1.Iohn.4.12.* 18 * No man hath ſeene God at any time: that onely begotten Sonne, which is in the boſome of the Father, he hath declared him.

19 ¶ Then this is the record of Iohn, when the Iewes ſent Prieſtes and Leuites from Hieruſalem, to aske him, Who art thou?

20 And he confeſſed and denied not, and ſayd plainely, *Act.13.25.* I * am not that Chriſt.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he ſayd, I am not. Art thou that Prophet? And he anſwered, No.

22 Then ſayd they vnto him, Who art thou, that we may giue an anſwere to them that ſent vs? what ſayeſt thou of thy ſelfe?

Iſa.40.3. *mat.3.3.* *luke 3.4.* 23 He ſaid, I * am the voyce of him that cryeth in the wildernes, Make ſtraight the way of the Lord, as ſayd the Prophet Eſaias.

24 Now they which were ſent, were of the Phariſes.

25 And they asked him, and ſayd vnto him, Why baptizeſt thou then, if thou be not that Chriſt, neither Elias, nor that Prophet?

26 Iohn anſwered them, ſaying, I baptize with water: but there is one among you, whom ye know not.

Mat.3.11. *mar.1.7.* *luke 3.16.* *actes 1.5.* *and 11.16.* *and 19.4.* 27 * He it is that commeth after me, which was before me, whoſe ſhoe latchet I am not worthie to vnloſe.

28 Theſe things were done in Bethabara beyond Iordan, where Iohn did baptize.

29 ¶ The next day Iohn ſeeth Ieſus comming vnto him, and ſaith, Behold that Lambe of God, which taketh away the ſinne of the world.

30 This is he of whom I ſaid, After me commeth a man, which was before me: for he was better then I,

31 And I knew him not: but becauſe he ſhould be declared to Iſrael, therfore am I come, baptizing with water.

Mat.3.16. *mar.1.10.* *luke 3.22.* 32 So Iohn bare record, ſaying, I behelde * that Spirit come downe from heauen, like a doue, and it abode vpon him,

33 And

33 And I knew him not: but he that ſent me to baptize with water, he ſayde vnto me, Vpon whom thou ſhalt ſee that Spirit come downe, and tarie ſtill on him, that is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghoſt.

34 And I ſawe, and bare recorde that this is that Sonne of God.

35 ¶ The next day, Iohn ſtoode againe, and two of his diſciples:

36 And he beheld Ieſus walking by, and ſayd, Beholde the Lambe of God:

37 And the two diſciples heard him ſpeake, and followed Ieſus.

38 Then Ieſus turned about, and ſawe them follow, and ſayd vnto them, What ſeeke ye? And they ſayd vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to ſay by interpretation, Maſter,) where dwelleſt thou?

39 He ſayd vnto them, Come, and ſee. They came and ſawe where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth houre.

40 Andrew, Simon Peters brother, was one of the two which had heard it of Iohn, and that folowed him.

41 The ſame found his brother Simon firſt, and ſaid vnto him, We haue found that Meſsias, which is by interpretation, that Chriſt.

42 And he brought him to Ieſus. And Ieſus behelde him, and ſaid, Thou art Simon the ſonne of Iona: thou ſhalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a ſtone.

43 ¶ The day folowing, Ieſus would goe into Galile, and found Philippe, and ſayd vnto him, Folowe me.

44 Now Philippe was of Bethſaida, the citie of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philippe found Nathanael, and ſayd vnto him, We haue found him, of whom * Moſes did write in the Lawe, and the * Prophets, Ieſus that ſonne of Ioſeph, that was of Nazareth.

46 Then Nathanael ſayd vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philippe ſayd to him, Come, and ſee.

47 Ieſus ſawe Nathanael comming to him, and ſayd of him, Behold, in deede an Iſraelite, in whom is no guyle.

48 Nathanael ſaid vnto him, Whence kneweſt thou me? Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Before that Philippe called thee, when thou waſt vnder the figge tree, I ſawe thee.

49 Nathanael

Gen. 49. 10. *deut.* 18. 18. *Iſai.* 4. 2. *and* 40. 10. *and* 45. 8. *iere.* 23. 5. *and* 33. 14. *etec.* 34. 23. *and* 37. 24. *dan.* 9. 24.

49 Nathanael answered, and sayd vnto him, Rabbi, thou art that Sonne of God: thou art that King of Israel.

50. Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Because I said vnto thee, I sawe thee vnder the figge tree, beleeuest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these.

51 And he sayd vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto you, hereafter shall ye see heauen open, and the Angels of God * ascending, and descending vpon that Sonne of man.

Gen. 28. 12.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ turneth water into wine, 11 which was the beginning of his miracles. 12 He goeth downe to Capernaum, from thence he goeth vp to Hierusalem, 15 and casteth the marchandise out of the Temple. 19 He foretelleth that the Temple, that is, his bodie, shalbe destroyed of the Iewes. 23 Many beleeue in him, seeing the miracles which he did.

AND the third day, was there a mariage in Cana, a towne of Galile, and the mother of Iesus was there.

2 And Iesus was called also, and his disciples vnto the mariage.

3 Nowe when the wine fayled, the mother of Iesus sayd vnto him, They haue no wine.

4 Iesus sayd vnto her, Woman, what haue I to do with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother said vnto the seruants, Whatsoeuer he saith vnto you, doe it.

6 And there were set there, sixe waterpots of stone, after the maner of the purifying of the Iewes, conteining two or three firkins a piece.

7 And Iesus sayd vnto them, Fill the waterpots with water. Then they filled them vp to the brimme.

8 Then he said vnto them, Drawe out nowe and beare vnto the gouernour of the feast. So they bare it.

9 Now when the gouernour of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, (for he knew not whence it was, but the seruants, which drew the water, knew) the gouernour of the feast called the bridegrome,

10 And sayd vnto him, All men at the beginning set forth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worse: *but* thou hast kept backe the good wine vntil nowe.

11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana a towne of Galile, and shewed forth his glorie: and his disciples beleeued on him.

12 After

12 After that, he went downe into Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: but they continued not many dayes there.

13 For the Iewes Passeouer was at hand. Therefore Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

14 And he found in the Temple those that solde oxen, and sheepe, and doues, & changers of money, sitting *there*.

15 Then he made a scourge of small cordes, and draue them all out of the Temple with the sheepe and oxen, and powred out the changers money, & ouerthrew the tables,

16 And sayd vnto them that solde doues, Take these things hence: make not my Fathers house, an house of marchandise.

17 And his disciples remembred, that it was written, *The zeale of thine house hath eaten me vp. *Psal.69.9.*

18 Then answered the Iewes, & said vnto him, What signe shewest thou vnto vs, that thou doest these things?

19 Iesus answered and said vnto them, *Destroy this Temple, and in three dayes I wil raise it vp againe. *Mat. 26. 61 and 27.40. mar.14.58. and 15.29.*

20 Then sayd the Iewes, Fourtie and sixe yeeres was this Temple a building, and wilt thou reare it vp in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the temple of his body.

22 Assoone therefore as he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that he thus sayd vnto them: and they beleeued the Scripture, and the worde which Iesus had sayd.

23 Now when he was at Hierusalem at the Passeouer in the feast, many beleeued in his Name, when they sawe his miracles which he did.

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe vnto them, because he knew them all,

25 And had no neede that any should testifie of man: for he knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 *Christ teacheth Nicodemus the very principles of Christian regeneration.* 14 *The serpent in the wildernes.* 23 *Iohn baptizeth,* 27 *and teacheth his, that he is not Christ.*

THere was nowe a man of the Pharises, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes.

2 This *man* came to Iesus by night, and sayd vnto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man could doe these miracles that thou doest, except

cept God were with him.

3 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Verely, vere
say vnto thee, except a man be borne againe, he can not
the kingdome of God.

4 Nicodemus sayd vnto him, How can a man be bo
which is olde? can he enter into his mothers womb
gaine, and be borne?

5 Iesus answered, Verely, verely I say vnto thee, ex
that a man be borne of water and of the Spirit, he can
enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh: and
that is borne of the Spirit, is spirit.

7 Marueile not that I sayd to thee, Ye must be b
againe.

8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou
rest the sound therof, but canst not tel whence it com
and whether it goeth: so is euery man that is borne o
Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered, and said vnto him, Howe
these things be?

10 Iesus answered, and sayd vnto him, Art thou a
cher of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, we speake tha
know, and testifie that we haue seene: but ye receiue
our witnes.

12 If when I tel you earthly things, ye beleeue not,
should ye beleeue, if I shal tel you of heauenly things?

13 For no man ascendeth vp to heauen, but he
hath descended from heauen, that Sonne of man which
in heauen.

Num.21.9. 14 * And as Moses list vp the serpent in the wilderne
chap.12.32. so must that Sonne of man be lift vp,

15 That whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not p
rish, but haue eternall life.

1.Iohn.4.9. 16 * For God so loued the world, that he hath gi
his onely begotten Sonne, that whosoeuer beleeueth
him, should not perish, but haue euerlasting life.

Chap.9.39. 17 * For God sent not his Sonne into the world, that h
and 12.47. should condemne the world, but that the world through
him might be saued.

18 He that beleeueth in him, is not condemned: but h
that beleeueth not, is condemned already, because he ha
not beleeued in the Name of ỹ only begotten Sonne of Go

19 * A

* And this is the condemnation, that that light *Chap.1.9.*
to the world, and men loued darkenes rather then
t, because their deedes were euil.
r euery man that euil doeth, hateth the light, nei-
meth to light, lest his deedes should be reproued.
ut he that doeth trueth, commeth to the light,
deedes might be made manifest, that they are
ht according to God.
¶ After these things came Iesus & his disciples into
d of Iudea, & there taryed with them, & * baptized. *Chap.4.1.*
And Iohn also baptized in Enon besides Salim, be-
ere was much water there: and they came, and
cized.
or Iohn was not yet cast into prison.
hen there arose a question betweene Iohns disci-
the Iewes, about purifiyng.
nd they came vnto Iohn, and sayd vnto him, Rab-
t was with thee beyond Iordan, to whom * thou *Chap.1.34.*
itnes, beholde, he baptizeth, and all men come to
ohn answered, and said, A man can receiue nothing,
t be giuen him from heauen.
e your selues are my witnesses, that * I sayd, I am *Chap.1.20.*
Christ, but that I am sent before him.
He that hath the bride, is the bridegrome: but the
the bridegrome which standeth and heareth him,
th greatly, because of the bridegromes voyce. This
therefore is fulfilled.
He must increase, but I must decrease.
he that is come from on hie, is aboue all: he that is
rth, is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth: he
come from heauen, is aboue all.
And what he hath seene and heard, that he testifi-
ut no man receiueth his testimonie.
He that hath receiued his testimonie, hath sealed
God is true. *Rom.3.4.*
For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the wordes of
for God giueth *him* not the Spirit by measure.
The Father loueth the Sonne, and hath * giuen all *Mat.11.27.*
things into his hand.
* He that beleeueth in the Sonne, hath euerlasting *Abac.2.4.*
and he that obeyeth not the Sonne, shall not see life, *1.Ioh.5.12.*
the wrath of God abideth on him.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

6 Iesus being wearie asketh drinke of the woman of S.
21 He teacheth the true worship. 26 He confe
he is the Messias. 32 His meate. 39 The Samari
leene in him. 46 He healeth the Rulers sonne.

NOwe when the Lord knewe, howe the Phari
heard, that Iesus made * and baptized moe di
then Iohn,

Chap.3.22.

2 (Though Iesus him selfe baptized not, but h
ciples)

3 He left Iudea, and departed againe into Galile

4 And he must nedes goe through Samaria.

5 Then came he to a citie of Samaria called
nere vnto ỹ possession that *Iacob gaue to his sonne

Gen.33.19. & 48.22. Iosh.24.32.

6 And there was Iacobs well. Iesus then we
the iourney, sate thus on the well: it was about
houre.

7 There came a woman of Samaria to drawe w
sus sayd vnto her, Giue me drinke.

8 For his disciples were gone away into the c
bye meate.

9 Then sayd the woman of Samaria vnto him, H
it, that thou being a Iewe, axest drinke of me, wh
woman of Samaria? For the Iewes meddle not wit
the Samaritanes.

10 Iesus answered and said vnto her, If thou
that gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, G
drinke, thou wouldest have asked of him, and he
haue giuen thee water liuing.

11 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, thou hast no
drawe with, and the well is deepe: from whence h
thou that water of life?

12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, whi
vs the well, and he him selfe drank thereof, and his
and his cattell?

13 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Whosoeu
drinketh of this water, shall thirst againe:

14 But whosoeuer drinketh of the water that
giue him, shall neuer thirst: but the wate
shall giue vnto him, shall be in him a well of water, springi
to euerlasting life.

15 The woman said vnto him, Sir, giue me of
that I may not thirst, neither come hither to dr

16

Iesus said vnto her, Go, call thine husband, and come

The woman answered, and said, I haue no husband.
said vnto her, Thou hast well said, I haue no husband.
For thou hast had fiue husbands, & he whom thou
is not thine husband: that saidest thou truely.
The woman said vnto him, Sir, I see that thou art a

Our fathers worshipped in this mountaine, and ye
in * Hierusalem is the place where men ought to *Deut.12.6.

said vnto her, Woman, beleeue me, the houre
when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor at
worship the Father.
worship that which ye * know not: we worship *2.King.17.29.
we know: for saluation is of the Iewes.
houre commeth, and now is, when the true
shall worship the Father in spirit, and trueth:
requireth euen such to worship him.
God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must *2.Cor.3.27.
and trueth.
said vnto him, I know well that Messias
which is called Christ: when he is come, he will
all things.
Iesus said vnto her, I am he, that speake vnto thee.
And vpon that, came his disciples, and marueiled
talked with a woman: yet no man saide vnto him,
seekest thou? or why talkest thou with her?
The woman then left her waterpot, and went her
into the citie, and said to the men,
Come, see a man which hath told me all things that
did: is not he that
Then they went out of the citie, & came vnto him.
In the meane while, his disciples prayed him, say-
eate.
He said vnto them, I haue meate to eate that ye

Then said the disciples betweene themselues, Hath
brought him meate?
Iesus said vnto them, My meate is that I may do the
that sent me, and finish his worke.
say not ye, There are yet foure moneths, and then
commeth harueste? Behold, I say vnto you, Lift vp your eyes,

Mat.9.37. *luke.10.2.* and looke on the regions: * for they are white already to harueſt.

36 And he that reapeth, receiueth rewarde, and gathereth fruite vnto life eternall, that both he that ſoweth, and he that reapeth, might reioyce together.

37 For herein is the ſaying true, that one ſoweth, and another reapeth.

38 I ſent you to reape that, whereon ye beſtowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labours.

39 Now many of the Samaritans of that citie beleeued in him, for the ſaying of the woman which teſtified, He hath tolde me all things that euer I did.

40 Then when the Samaritans were come vnto him, they beſought him, that he would tarie with them: and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many mo beleeued becauſe of his owne word.

42 And they ſaid vnto the woman, Nowe we beleeue not becauſe of thy ſaying: for we haue hearde him our ſelues, and know that this is in deede that Chriſt the Sauiour of the world.

43 ¶So two dayes after he departed thence, and went into Galile.

Mat.13.57. *mark.6.4.* *luke.4.24.* 44 For Ieſus himſelfe had * teſtified, that a Prophet hath none honour in his owne countrey.

45 Then when he was come into Galile, the Galilites receiued him, which had ſeene all the things that he did at Hieruſalem at the feaſt: for they went alſo vnto the feaſt.

Chap.2.11. 46 And Ieſus came againe into * Cana of Galile, where he had made of water, wine. And there was a certaine ruler, whoſe ſonne was ſicke at Capernaum.

47 When he heard ỹ Ieſus was come out of Iudea into Galile, he went vnto him, & beſought him that he would come downe, and heale his ſonne: for he was euen readie to die.

48 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto him, Except ye ſee ſignes and wonders, ye will not beleeue.

49 The ruler ſaid vnto him, Syr, goe downe before my ſonne dye.

50 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Goe thy way, thy ſonne liueth. And the man beleeued the worde that Ieſus had ſpoken vnto him, and went his way.

51 And as he was now going downe, his ſeruants met him, ſaying, Thy ſonne liueth.

52 Then

52 Then enquited he of them the houre when he began to amende. And they ſaide vnto him, Yeſterday the ſeuenth houre the feuer left him.

53 Then the father knewe, that it was the ſame houre in the which Ieſus had ſaide vnto him, Thy ſonne liueth. And he beleeued, and all his houſholde.

54 This ſecond miracle did Ieſus againe, after he was come out of Iudea into Galile.

CHAP. V.

2 One lying at the poole, 5 is healed of Chriſt on the Sabbath: 10 The Iewes that raſhly finde fault with that his deede, 17 he commeneth with the authoritie of his Father. 19. 20 He proueth his diuine power by many reaſons, 45 and with Moſes teſtimonie.

AFter* that, there was a feaſt of the Iewes, and Ieſus went vp to Hieruſalem. *Leuit.23.5. deut.16.1.*

2 And there is at Hieruſalem by ỹ place of the ſheepe, a poole called in Ebrew Bethesda, hauing fiue porches:

3 In the which lay a great multitude of ſicke folke, of blinde, halte, and withered, wayting for the mouing of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine ſeaſon into the poole, and troubled the water: whoſoeuer then firſt, after the ſtirring of the water, ſtepped in, was made whole of whatſoeuer diſeaſe he had.

5 And a certaine man was there, which had bene diſeaſed eight and thirtie yeeres.

6 When Ieſus ſawe him lie, and knewe that he nowe long time had bene diſeaſed, he ſaide vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The ſicke man anſwered him, Sir, I haue no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the poole: but while I am comming, an other ſteppeth downe before me.

8 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Riſe: take vp thy bed, and walke.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, & tooke vp his bed, and walked: and the ſame day was ỹ Sabbath.

10 The Iewes therefore ſaide to him that was made whole, It is the Sabbath *day*: * it is not lawfull for thee to carie thy bed. *Iere.17.22.*

11 He anſwered them, He that made me whole, he ſaid vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and walke.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which ſaid vnto thee, Take vp thy bed, and walke?

13 And he that was healed, knewe not who it was: for Ieſus had conueyed himſelfe away from the multitude that was in that place.

14 And after that, Ieſus found him in the Temple, and ſaid vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole: ſinne no more, leaſt a worſe thing come vnto thee.

15 ¶The man departed, and told the Iewes that it was Ieſus, which had made him whole.

16 And therefore the Iewes did perſecute Ieſus, and ſought to ſlay him, becauſe he had done theſe thinges on the Sabbath *day*.

17 But Ieſus anſwered them, My father worketh hitherto, and I worke.

Chap.7.19. 18 *Therefore the Iewes ſought the more to kill him: not only becauſe he had broken the Sabbath: but ſaid alſo that God was his Father, & made himſelfe equal with God.

19 Then anſwered Ieſus, and ſaid vnto them, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, The Sonne can doe nothing of himſelfe, ſaue that he ſeeth ỹ Father do: for whatſoeuer things he doeth, the ſame thinges doeth the Sonne in like maner.

20 For the Father loueth the Sonne, and ſheweth him all things, whatſoeuer he himſelfe doeth, and he wil ſhew him greater woorkes then theſe, that ye ſhoulde mar-ueile.

21 For likewiſe as the Father rayſeth vp the dead, and quickeneth them, ſo the Sonne quickeneth whom h' -ill.

22 For the Father iudgeth no man, but hath c' -mitted all iudgement vnto the Sonne,

23 Becauſe that all men ſhould honour the Sonne, as they honour ỹ Father: he that honoureth not the Sonne, the ſame honoureth not the Father, which hath ſent him.

24 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, he that heareth my worde, and beleeueth him that ſent me, hath euerlaſting life, and ſhall not come into condemnation, but hath paſſed from death vnto life.

25 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, the houre ſhall come, and nowe is, when the dead ſhall heare the voyce of the Sonne of God: and they that heare it, ſhall liue.

26 For as the Father hath life in himſelfe, ſo likewiſe hath he giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himſelfe.

27 And hath giuen him power alſo to execute iudgement, in that he is the Sonne of man.

28 Marueile not at this: for the houre ſhal come in the which

which all that are in the graues, shall heare his voyce.

29 And they shall come forth, * that haue done good, vnto the resurrection of life: but they that haue done euil, vnto the resurrection of condemnation. *Mat.25.46.*

30 I can doe nothing of mine owne selfe: as I heare, I iudge: and my iudgement is iust, because I seeke not mine owne will, but the will of the Father who hath sent me.

31 If I * should beare witnesse of my selfe, my witnesse were not true. *Chap.8.14.*

32 *There is an other that beareth witnesse of me, and I know that the witnes, which he beareth of me, is true. *Mat.3.17.*

33 * Ye sent vnto Iohn, and he bare witnesse vnto the trueth. *Chap.1.27.*

34 But I receiue not the recorde of man: neuertheles these things I say, that ye might be saued.

35 He was a burning, and a shining candle: and ye would for a season haue reioyced in his light.

36 But I haue greater witnesse then ỹ witnes of Iohn: for the workes which the Father hath giuen me to finish, the same workes that I do, beare witnes of me, that the Father sent me.

37 And the * Father himselfe, which hath sent me, beareth witnesse of me. Ye haue not heard his voyce at any time, * neither haue ye seene his shape. *Mat.3.17. and 17.5. Deut.4.12.*

38 And his worde haue ye not abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye beleeue not.

39 * Searche the Scriptures: for in them ye thinke to haue eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me. *Acts 17.11*

40 But ye wil not come to me, that ye might haue life.

41 I receiue not praise of men.

42 But I know you, ỹ ye haue not ỹ loue of God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and ye receiue me not: if an other shall come in his owne name, him will ye receiue.

44 How can ye beleeue, which receiue * honour one of an other, and seeke not the honour that commeth of God alone? *Chap.12.43*

45 Doe not thinke that I wil accuse you to my Father: there is one that accuseth you, *euen* Moses, in whō ye trust.

46 For had ye beleeued Moses, ye woulde haue beleeued me: * for he wrote of me. *Gene.3.15. and 22.18. and 49.10. Deut.18.15.*

47 But if ye beleeue not his writings, howe shall ye beleeue my wordes?

CHAP. VI.

5 Fiue thousand are fed with fiue loaues and two fishes. 14 Christ goeth apart from the people. 17 As his disciples were rowing, 19 he commeth to them walking on the water. 26 He reasoneth of the true, 27 and euerlasting 35 bread of life. 41. 52 The Iewes murmure, 60 and many of the disciples 66 depart from him. 69 The Apostles confesse him to be the Sonne of God.

AFter these thinges, Iesus went his way ouer the sea of Galile, which is Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude folowed him, because they saw his miracles, which he did on them that were diseased.

3 Then Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there he sate with his disciples.

Leui.23.7. deut.16.1. 4 Now the Passeouer, a * feast of the Iewes, was nere.

Mat.14.16. mar.6.37. luke 9.13. 5 *Then IESVS lift vp *his* eyes, & seeing that a great multitude came vnto him, he saide vnto Philippe, Whence shall we bye bread, that these might eate?

6 (And this he said to proue him: for he himself knew what he would doe.)

7 Philippe answered him, Two hundreth peniworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that euery one of them may take a litle.

8 Then said vnto him one of his disciples, Andrewe, Simon Peters brother,

9 There is a litle boye here, which hath fiue barlye loaues, and two fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Iesus said, Make the people sit downe. (Nowe there was much grasse in that place.) Then the men sate downe in number, about fiue thousand.

11 And Iesus tooke the bread, and gaue thankes, and gaue to the disciples, & the disciples to them that were set downe: and likewise of the fishes as much as they woulde.

12 And when they were satisfied, he said vnto his disciples, Gather vp the broken meate which remaineth, that nothing be lost.

13 Then they gathered it together, and filled twelue baskets with the broken meate of the fiue barlie loaues, which remained vnto them that had eaten.

14 Then the men, when they had seene ỹ miracle that Iesus did, said, This is of a trueth that Prophet that should come into the worlde.

15 When Iesus therefore perceiued that they woulde come,

come, & take him to make him a King, he departed againe into a mountaine himselfe alone.

16 ¶ When euen was nowe come, his disciples went downe vnto the sea,

17 * And entred into a ship, and went ouer the sea, towardes Capernaum: and nowe it was darke, and Iesus was not come to them. *Mat.14.25. mar.6.47.*

18 And the sea arose with a great winde that blewe.

19 And when they had rowed about fiue and twentie, or thirtie furlongs, they sawe Iesus walking on the sea, and drawing nere vnto the ship: so they were afraide.

20 But he said vnto them, It is I: be not afrayde.

21 Then willingly they receiued him into the ship, & the ship was by and by at the lande, whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, the people which stoode on the other side of the sea, sawe that there was none other ship there, saue that one, whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Iesus went not with his disciples in the ship, but that his disciples were gone alone,

23 And that there came other ships from Tiberias, neere vnto the place where they ate the bread, after the Lord had giuen thankes.

24 Nowe when the people sawe that Iesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also tooke shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Iesus.

25 And when they had founde him on the other side of the sea, they said vnto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Iesus answered them, and saide: Verely, verely, I say vnto you, ye seeke me not because ye sawe the miracles, but because ye ate of the loaues, and were filled.

27 Labour not for the meate which perisheth, but for the meate that endureth vnto euerlasting life, which the Sonne of man shall giue vnto you: for him hath * God the Father sealed. *Chap.1.32. mat.3.17. & 17.3.*

28 Then said they vnto him, What shall we doe, that we might worke the workes of God?

29 Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, * This is the worke of God, that ye beleeue in him, whom he hath sent. *1.Iohn.3.23*

30 They saide therefore vnto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see it, and beleeue thee? what doest thou worke?

31 Our fathers did eate Manna in the desert, as it is * written, He gaue them bread from heauen to eate. *Exo.16.14. nomb.11.7.*

 psal.78.25.

32 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, Moſes gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you that true bread from heauen.

33 For the bread of God is he which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world.

34 Then they ſaid vnto him, Lorde, euermore giue vs this bread.

35 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, I am that bread of life: he that commeth to me, ſhall not hunger, and he that beleueth in me, ſhall neuer thirſt.

36 But I ſaid vnto you, that ye alſo haue ſeene me, and beleeue not.

37 All that the Father giueth me, ſhall come to me: and him that commeth to me, I caſt not away.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine owne will, but his will which hath ſent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath ſent me, that of all which he hath giuen me, I ſhoulde loſe nothing, but ſhould raiſe it vp againe at the laſt day.

40 And this is the will of him that ſent me, that euery man which ſeeth the Sonne, and beleeueth in him, ſhoulde haue euerlaſting life: & I will raiſe him vp at the laſt day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, becauſe he ſaid, I am that bread, which is come downe from heauen.

Mat. 13. 55. 42 And they ſaid, * Is not this Ieſus that ſonne of Ioſeph, whoſe father and mother we knowe? how then ſayth he, I came downe from heauen?

43 Ieſus then anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Murmure not among your ſelues.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father, which hath ſent me, draw him: & I wil raiſe him vp at the laſt day.

Iſa. 54. 13. Ioue. 31. 33. 45 It is written in the * Prophets, And they ſhalbe all taught of God. Euery man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto me:

Mat. 11. 27. 46 *Not that any man hath ſeene the Father, ſaue he which is of God, he hath ſeene the Father.

47 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, He that beleeueth in me, hath euerlaſting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

Exo. 16. 15. 49 *Your fathers did eate Manna in ỹ wildernes, and are dead.

50 This is that bread, which commeth downe from heauen, that he which eateth of it, ſhould not die.

51 I am

51 I am that liuing bread, which came down from hea-
uen: if any man eate of this bread, he shal liue for euer: and
the bread that I will giue, is my flesh, which I will giue for
the life of the worlde.

52 Then the Iewes strone among themselues, saying,
How can this man giue vs *his* flesh to eate?

53 Then Iesus saide vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto
you, Except ye eate the flesh of the Sonne of man, & drinke
his blood, ye haue no life in you.

54 Whosoeuer *eateth my flesh, & drinketh my blood, 1. Cor. 11. 27
hath eternal life, and I wil rayse him vp at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meate in deede, and my blood is
drinke in deede.

56 He that eateth my flesh, & drinketh my blood, dwel-
leth in me, and I in him.

57 As that liuing Father hath sent mee, so liue I by the
Father, and he that eateth me, euen he shal liue by me.

58 This is that bread which came downe from heauen:
not as your fathers haue eaten Manna, & are dead. He that
eateth of this bread, shal liue for euer.

59 These thinges spake he in the Synagogue, as hee
taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples (when they heard
this) said, This is an hard saying: who can heare it?

61 But Iesus knowing in himselfe, that his disciples
murmured at this, said vnto them, Doeth this offend you?

62 *What* then if ye shoulde see that Sonne of man as-
cend vp *where he was before? Chap. 3. 13.

63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth: the flesh profi-
teth nothing: the wordes that I speake vnto you, are spirit & life.

64 But there are some of you that beleeue not: for Ie-
sus knew from the beginning, which they were that beleeu-
ed not, and who should betray him.

65 And he saide, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man
can come vnto me, except it be giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 From that time, many of his disciples went backe, &
walked no more with him.

67 Then said Iesus to the twelue, Wil ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Master, to whome
shal we go? thou hast the words of eternal life:

69 And we beleeue & knowe that thou art that Christ
that Sonne of the liuing God.

70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I *chosen you Mat. 26. 47.
twelue,

twelue, and one of you is a deuil?

71 Now he ſpake it of Iudas Iſcariot the *ſonne* of Simõ for he it was that ſhould betray him, though he was one of the twelue.

CHAP. VII.

2 *Chriſt, after his couſins were gone vp to the feaſt of Tabernacles,* 10 *goeth thither priuily.* 12 *The peoples ſundry opinions of him.* 14 *He teacheth in the Temple.* 32 *The Prieſts command to take him.* 41 *Striſe among the multitude about him,* 47 *and betweene the Phariſes & the officers that were ſent to take him,* 50 *and Nicodemus.*

AFter theſe things, Ieſus walked in Galile, and would not walke in Iudea: for the Iewes ſought to kill him.

Leuit. 23. 34. 2 Now the Iewes *feaſt of ỹ Tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore ſaid vnto him, Depart hence, and goe into Iudea, that thy diſciples may ſee thy workes that thou doeſt.

4 For there is no man that doeth any thing ſecretly, and he himſelfe ſeeketh to be famous. If thou doeſt theſe things, ſhew thy ſelfe to the world.

5 For as yet his brethren beleeued not in him.

6 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway readie.

7 The worlde can not hate you: but mee it hateth, becauſe I teſtifie of it, that the workes thereof are euill.

8 Go ye vp vnto this feaſt: I wil not go vp yet vnto this

Chap. 8. 20. feaſt: * for my time is not yet fulfilled.

9 ¶ Theſe things he ſayd vnto them, and abode ſtill in Galile.

10 But aſſoone as his brethrẽ were gone vp, then went he alſo vp vnto the feaſt, not openly, but as *it were* priuily.

11 Then the Iewes ſought him at the feaſt, and ſayde, Where is he?

12 And much murmuring was there of him among the people. Some ſayd, He is a good man: other ſayd, Nay: but he deceiueth the people.

13 Howbeit no man ſpake openly of him, for feare of the Iewes.

14 Nowe when halfe the feaſt was done, Ieſus went vp into the Temple and taught.

15 And the Iewes marueiled, ſaying, Howe knoweth this man the Scriptures, ſeeing that he neuer learned?

16 Ieſus anſwered them, and ſayde, My doctrine is not

mine,

mine,but his that ſent me.

17 If any man wil do his will,he ſhal knowe of the doctrine,whether it be of God,or whether I ſpeake of my ſelfe.

18 He that ſpeaketh of himſelfe, ſeeketh his own glorie: but he that ſeeketh his glory that ſent him, the ſame is true,and no vnrighteouſnes is in him.

19 * Did not Moſes giue you a Law,and *yet* none of you keepeth the Law? * Why go ye about to kill me? *Exod.24.3. Chap.5.18.*

20 The people anſwered,and ſayde, Thou haſt a deuil: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Ieſus anſwered, and ſayde to them, I haue done one worke,and ye all marueile.

22 * Moſes therefore gaue vnto you circumciſion,(not becauſe it is of Moſes, but of the * fathers,) and yee on the Sabbath *day* circumciſe a man. *Leuit. 12.3. Gen.17.10.*

23 If a man on the Sabbath receiue circumciſion, that the Lawe of Moſes ſhould not be broken,be ye angrie with mee, becauſe I haue made a man euery whit whole on the Sabbath *day*?

24 * Iudge not according to the appearance,but iudge righteous iudgement. *Deut. 1.16.*

25 ¶Then ſaid ſome of them of Hieruſalem, Is not this he,whome they go about to kill?

26 And behold,he ſpeaketh openly, & they ſay nothing to him: do the rulers knowe in deede that this is in deede that Chriſt?

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but whē that Chriſt commeth,no man ſhall know whence he is.

28 ¶Then cryed Ieſus in the Tēple as he taught,ſaying, Ye both know me,& know whence I am: yet am I not come of my ſelfe,but he that ſent me,is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I knowe him: for I am of him, and he hath ſent mee.

30 Then they ſought to take him, but no man layde hands on him,becauſe his houre was not yet come.

31 Now many of the people beleeued in him, and ſayd, When that Chriſt commeth,will he doe mo miracles then this man hath done?

32 The Phariſes heard that the people murmured theſe things of him, and the Phariſes,and high Prieſtes ſent officers to take him.

33 Then ſayde Ieſus vnto them, Yet am I a litle whyle with you,and then go I vnto him that ſent me.

34 *Ye

Chap.13.33 34 *Ye ſhal ſeeke me, and ſhal not finde *me*, and where I am, can ye not come.

35 Then ſaid the Iewes amongs themſelues, Whither wil he go, that we ſhal not finde him? Will he go vnto them that are diſperſed among the Grecians, & teach ỹ Grecians?

36 What ſaying is this that he ſaid, Ye ſhal ſeeke me, and ſhal not finde *me*? and where I am, can ye not come?

Leuit.23.36 37 Nowe in the laſt *and* * great daye of the feaſt, Ieſus ſtoode and cryed, ſaying, If any man thirſt, let him come vnto me, and drinke.

Deut.18.15 38 He that beleeueth in mee, * as ſayth the Scripture, out of his belly ſhal flowe riuers of water of life.

Ioel.2.28. 39 (*This ſpake he of the Spirit which they that beleeued in him, ſhould receiue: for the holy Ghoſt was not yet
acts.2.17. *giuen*, becauſe that Ieſus was not yet glorified.)

40 So many of the people, when they heard this ſaying,
Deut.18.15 ſayd, * Of a trueth this is that Prophet.

41 Other ſayd, This is that Chriſt: and ſome ſayde, But ſhal that Chriſt come out of Galile?

Mich.5.2. 42 * Sayeth not the Scripture that that Chriſt ſhall
mat.2.5. come of the ſeede of Dauid, and out of the towne of Bethleem, where Dauid was?

43 So was there diſſenſion among the people for him.

44 And ſome of them woulde haue taken him, but no man layde hands on him.

45 Then came the officers to the hie Prieſts & Phariſees, and they ſayd vnto them, Why haue ye not brought him?

46 The officers anſwered, Neuer mā ſpake like this mā.

47 Then anſwered them the Phariſes, Are yee alſo deceiued?

48 Doeth any of the rulers, or of the Phariſes beleeue in him?

49 But this people, which know not ỹ Law, are curſed.

Chap.3.2. 50 Nicodemus ſaid vnto them, (*he that came to Ieſus by night, and was one of them)

51 Doeth our Lawe iudge a man before it heare him,
Deut. 17.8. * and know what he hath done?
& 19.15. 52 They anſwered, and ſaide vnto him, Art thou alſo of Galile? Search & looke: for out of Galile ariſeth no Prophet.

53 And euery man went vnto his owne houſe.

CHAP. VIII.

3 *The woman taken in adultery,* 11 *hath her ſinnes forgiuen her.* 12 *Chriſt the light of the world.* 19 *The Phariſes aske*

where

where his Father is. 39 The sonnes of Abraham. 42 The sonnes of God. 44 The deuil the father of lying. 56 Abraham sawe Christs day.

1 Nd Iesus went vnto the mount of Oliues,

2 And earely in the morning came againe into the temple, & all the people came vnto him, and he sate down, and taught them.

3 Then the Scribes, and the Pharises brought vnto him a woman, taken in adulterie, and set her in the middes,

4 And sayde vnto him, Master, we founde this woman committing adulterie, euen in the very acte.

5 *Nowe Moses in our Lawe commanded, that such should be stoned: what sayest thou therefore? *Leuit.* 20.10

6 And this they sayde to tempt him, that they might haue, whereof to accuse him. But Iesus stouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground.

7 And while they continued asking him, he lift himself vp, and said vnto them, *Let him that is among you without sinne, cast the first stone at her. *Deut.* 17.7.

8 And againe he stouped down, & wrote on ỹ ground.

9 And when they heard it, being accused by their own conscience, they went out one by one, beginning at the eldest euen to the last: so Iesus was left alone, & the woman standing in the middes.

10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe againe, and saw no man, but the woman, he sayd vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, No man, Lord. And Iesus sayd, Neither do I condemne thee: go and sinne no more.

12 Then spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, I *am that light of the world: he that foloweth me, shal not walke in darkenes, but shal haue that light of life. *Chap.* 1.5. *&* 9.5.

13 The Pharises therefore said vnto him, Thou beareſt record of thy selfe: thy recorde is not true.

14 *Iesus answered, and sayde vnto them, Though I beare record of my selfe, *yet* my recorde is true: for I knowe whence I came, & whither I go: but ye can not tel whence I come, and whither I go. *Chap.* 5.31.

15 Ye iudge after the flesh: I iudge no man.

16 And if I also iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I, and the Father, that sent me. *Deut.* 17.6. *&* 19.15.

17 And it is also written in your Lawe, *that the testimonie of two men is true. *mat.* 18.16. *2.cor.* 13.1.

18 I am *heb.* 10.28.

18 I am one that beare witnes of my ſelfe, & the Fa
that ſent me, beareth witneſſe of me.

19 Then ſayde they vnto him, Where is that Father
thine? Ieſus anſwered, Ye neither know me, nor that Fathe
of mine. If ye had knowen me, ye ſhould haue knowen th
Father of mine alſo.

20 Theſe wordes ſpake Ieſus in the treaſurie, as he
taught in the Temple, and no man layd handes on him,
his houre was not yet come.

21 Then ſayd Ieſus againe vnto them, I go my way, a
ye ſhal ſeeke me, and ſhall die in your ſinnes. Whither I g
can ye not come.

22 Then ſaid the Iewes, Wil he kil himſelfe, becauſe h
ſayth, Whither I go, can ye not come?

23 And he ſayde vnto them, Ye are from beneath: I a
from aboue: ye are of this world: I am not of this world.

24 I ſayd therefore vnto you, That ye ſhall dye in yo
ſinnes: for except ye beleeue, that I am he, yee ſhall dye i
your ſinnes.

25 Then ſayd they vnto him, Who art thou? And Ieſu
ſayd vnto them, Euen the ſame thing that I ſayde vnto yo
from the beginning.

26 I haue many thinges to ſay, and to iudge of you: b
he that ſent me, is true, and the things that I haue heard
him, thoſe ſpeake I to the world.

27 They vnderſtoode not that he ſpake to them of t
Father.

28 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto them, When ye haue liſt vp t
Sonne of man, then ſhal ye know that I am he, and that I d
nothing of my ſelfe, but as my Father hath taught me, ſo I
ſpeake theſe things.

29 For he that ſent me, is with mee: the Father ha
not left me alone, becauſe I do alwayes thoſe thinges th
pleaſe him.

30 ¶ As he ſpake theſe things, many beleeued in him.

31 Then ſayde Ieſus to the Iewes which beleeued
him, If ye continue in my word, ye are verely my diſciples,

32 And ſhall knowe the trueth, and the trueth ſha
make you free.

33 They anſwered him, We be Abrahams ſeede, an
were neuer bonde to any man: why ſayeſt thou then, Ye ſh
be made free?

34 Ieſus anſwered them, Verely, verely I ſaye vn
yo

that whosoeuer committeth sinne, is the * seruant of *Rom.6.20.*
2.pet.2.19.

35 And the seruant abideth not in the house for euer: but the Sonne abideth for euer.

36 If that Sonne therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeede.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seede, but ye seeke to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father: and ye do that which ye haue seene with your father.

39 They answered, and sayde vnto him, Abraham is our father. Iesus said vnto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the workes of Abraham.

40 But nowe ye go about to kill mee, a man that haue tolde you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the workes of your father. Then sayd they to him, We are not borne of fornication: we haue one Father, which is God.

42 Therefore Iesus saide vnto them, If God were your Father, then would ye loue me: for I proceeded forth, and came from God, neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not vnderstand my talke? because ye can not heare my word.

44 * Ye are of your father the deuill, and the lustes of your father ye will do: he hath bene a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no trueth in him. When he speaketh a lie, then speaketh he of his owne: for he is a liar, and the father thereof. *1.Iohn.3.8.*

45 And because I tell you the trueth, ye beleeue mee not.

46 Which of you can rebuke me of sinne? and if I say the trueth, why do ye not beleeue me?

47 * He that is of God, heareth Gods wordes: ye therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God. *1.Iohn 4.6.*

48 Then answered the Iewes, and sayde vnto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a deuil?

49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill, but I honour my Father, and ye haue dishonoured me.

50 And I seeke not mine owne prayse: but there is one that seeketh it, and iudgeth.

51 Verely, verely I saye vnto you, If a man keepe my worde, he shall neuer see death.

52 Then

52 Then ſayd the Iewes to him, Nowe knowe we that thou haſt a deuil. Abraham is dead,& the Prophets, & thou ſayeſt,If a man keepe my word,he ſhal neuer taſte of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham,which is dead?& the Prophets are dead:whom makeſt thou thy ſelf?

54 Ieſus anſwered,If I honour my ſelfe,mine honour is nothing worth: it is my Father that honoureth me,whom ye ſay,that he is your God.

55 Yet ye haue not knowen him: but I knowe him,and if I ſhould ſay, I knowe him not, I ſhould be a liar like vnto you: but I know him,and keepe his word.

56 Your father Abraham reioyced to ſee my daye, and he ſaw it,and was glad.

57 Then ſayde the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fiftie yere olde,and haſt thou ſeene Abraham?

58 Ieſus ſayde vnto them, Verely,verely I ſay vnto you, Before Abraham was,I am.

59 Then tooke they vp ſtones, to caſt at him, but Ieſus hid himſelfe, and went out of the Temple: And he paſſed through the middes of them,and ſo went his way.

CHAP. IX.

1 Chriſt giueth ſight on the Sabbath daye, to him that was borne blinde: 13 Whom,after he had long reaſoned againſt the Phariſes, 22.35 and was caſt out of the Synagogue, 38 Chriſt endueth with the knowledge of the euerlaſting light.

AND as Ieſus paſſed by, he ſawe a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his diſciples asked him, ſaying, Maſter, who did ſinne,this man,or his parents,that he was borne blinde?

3 Ieſus anſwered, Neither hath this man ſinned, nor his parents, but that the workes of God ſhould be ſhewed on him.

4 I muſt worke the workes of him that ſent me, while it is day: the night commeth when no man can worke.

Chap.1.9.& 8.12.& 12. 35. 5 As long as I am in the worlde,* I am the light of the worlde.

6 Aſſone as he had thus ſpokē, he ſpate on the ground, and made clay of the ſpettle, and anoynted the eyes of the blinde with the clay,

7 And ſayd vnto him, Goe waſh in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation,Sent.) He went his way therefore,and waſhed,and came againe ſeeing.

8 New

8 Now the neighbours and they that had ſeene him before, when he was blinde, ſaide, Is not this he that ſate and begged?

9 Some ſaide, This is he: and other ſaid, He is like him: but he himſelfe ſaid, I am he.

10 Therefore they ſaid vnto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He anſwered, and ſaid, The man that is called Ieſus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and ſaid vnto me, Go to the poole of Siloam, and waſh. So I went, and waſhed, and receiued ſight.

12 Then they ſaid vnto him, Where is he? he ſaid, I can not tell.

13 ¶ They brought to the Phariſes him that was once blinde.

14 And it was the Sabbath *day*, when Ieſus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Phariſes alſo asked him, howe hee had receiued ſight. And he ſaid vnto them, He laid clay vpon mine eyes, and I waſhed, and do ſee.

16 Then ſaide ſome of the Phariſes, This man is not of God, becauſe hee keepeth not the Sabbath *day*. Others ſaid, How can a man that is a ſinner, do ſuch miracles? and there was a diſſenſion among them.

17 Then ſpake they vnto the blind againe, What ſayeſt thou of him, becauſe he hath opened thine eyes? And hee ſaid, He is a Prophet.

18 Then the Iewes did not beleeue him, (that hee had bene blind, and receiued his ſight) vntill they had called the parents of him that had receiued ſight.

19 And they asked them, ſaying, Is this your ſonne, whom ye ſay was borne blind? How doth he now ſee then?

20 His parents anſwered them, and ſaid, We know that this is our ſonne, and that he was borne blinde:

21 But by what meanes he now ſeeth, we know not: or who hath opened his eyes, can we not tel: he is old enough: aske him: he ſhall anſwere for himſelfe.

22 Theſe words ſpake his parents, becauſe they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had ordained already, that if any man did confeſſe that he was Chriſt, he ſhould be *excommunicate* out of the Synagogue.

23 Therfore ſaid his parents, He is old enough: aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that had bene

18 I am one that beare witnes of my ſelfe, & the Fa
that ſent me, beareth witneſſe of me.

19 Then ſayde they vnto him, Where is that Father
thine? Ieſus anſwered, Ye neither know me, nor that Fat
of mine. If ye had knowen me, ye ſhould haue knowen t
Father of mine alſo.

20 Theſe wordes ſpake Ieſus in the treaſurie, as h
taught in the Temple, and no man layd handes on him
his houre was not yet come.

21 Then ſayd Ieſus againe vnto them, I go my way, a
ye ſhal ſeeke me, and ſhall die in your ſinnes. Whither I
can ye not come.

22 Then ſaid the Iewes, Wil he kil himſelfe, becauſe
ſayth, Whither I go, can ye not come?

23 And he ſayde vnto them, Ye are from beneath: I
from aboue: ye are of this world: I am not of this world.

24 I ſayd therefore vnto you, That ye ſhall dye in yo
ſinnes: for except ye beleeue, that I am he, yee ſhall dy
your ſinnes.

25 Then ſayd they vnto him, Who art thou? And Ie
ſayd vnto them, Euen the ſame thing that I ſayde vnto y
from the beginning.

26 I haue many thinges to ſay, and to iudge of you: b
he that ſent me, is true, and the things that I haue heard
him, thoſe ſpeake I to the world.

27 They vnderſtoode not that he ſpake to them of
Father.

28 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto them, When ye haue liſt vp
Sonne of man, then ſhal ye know that I am he, and that I
nothing of my ſelfe, but as my Father hath taught me, h
ſpeake theſe things.

29 For he that ſent me, is with mee: the Father ha
not left me alone, becauſe I do alwayes thoſe thinges th
pleaſe him.

30 ¶ As he ſpake theſe things, many beleeued in him.

31 Then ſayde Ieſus to the Iewes which beleened
him, If ye continue in my word, ye are verely my diſciples,

32 And ſhall knowe the trueth, and the trueth ſha
make you free.

33 They anſwered him, We be Abrahams ſeede, an
were neuer bonde to any man: why ſayeſt thou then, Ye ſh
be made free?

34 Ieſus anſwered them, Verely, verely I ſaye vn
y

that whosoeuer committeth sinne, is the * seruant of *Rom.6.20.*
2.pet.2.19.

35 And the seruant abideth not in the house for euer: but the Sonne abideth for euer.

36 If that Sonne therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeede.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seede, but ye seeke to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father: and ye do that which ye haue seene with your father.

39 They answered, and sayde vnto him, Abraham is our father. Iesus said vnto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the workes of Abraham.

40 But nowe ye go about to kill mee, a man that haue tolde you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the workes of your father. Then sayd they to him, We are not borne of fornication: we haue one Father, which is God.

42 Therefore Iesus saide vnto them, If God were your Father, then would ye loue me: for I proceeded forth, and came from God, neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not vnderstand my talke? because ye can not heare my word.

44 *Ye are of your father the deuill, and the lustes of your father ye will do: he hath bene a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no trueth in him. When he speaketh a lie, then speaketh he of his owne: for he is a liar, and the father thereof. *1.Ioh.3.8.*

45 And because I tell you the trueth, ye beleeue mee not.

46 Which of you can rebuke me of sinne? and if I say the trueth, why do ye not beleeue me?

47 * He that is of God, heareth Gods wordes: ye therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God. *1.Iohn 4.6.*

48 Then answered the Iewes, and sayde vnto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a deuil?

49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill, but I honour my Father, and ye haue dishonoured me.

50 And I seeke not mine owne prayse: but there is one that seeketh it, and iudgeth.

51 Verely, verely I saye vnto you, If a man keepe my worde, he shall neuer see death.

52 Then

52 Then ſayd the Iewes to him, Nowe knowe we
thou haſt a deuil. Abraham is dead,& the Prophets, &
ſayeſt,If a man keepe my word,he ſhal neuer taſte of
53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham,wh
dead?& the Prophets are dead:whom makeſt thou thy
54 Ieſus anſwered,If I honour my ſelfe,mine hono
nothing worth: it is my Father that honoureth me,w
ye ſay,that he is your God.
55 Yet ye haue not knowen him: but I knowe him,
if I ſhould ſay, I knowe him not, I ſhould be a liar like
you: but I know him,and keepe his word.
56 Your father Abraham reioyced to ſee my daye,
he ſaw it,and was glad.
57 Then ſayde the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not
fiftie yere olde,and haſt thou ſeene Abraham?
58 Ieſus ſayde vnto them, Verely,verely I ſay vnto yo
Before Abraham was,I am.
59 Then tooke they vp ſtones, to caſt at him, but Ieſ
hid himſelfe, and went out of the Temple: And he paſſ
through the middes of them,and ſo went his way.

CHAP. IX.

1 Chriſt giueth ſight on the Sabbath daye, to him that
borne blinde: 13 Whom,after he had long reaſoned ag
the Phariſes, 22. 35 and was caſt out of the Synagogue,
Chriſt endueth with the knowledge of the euerlaſting ligh

AND as Ieſus paſſed by, he ſawe a man which was bli
from his birth.
2 And his diſciples asked him, ſaying, Maſter, who
ſinne,this man,or his parents,that he was borne blinde?
3 Ieſus anſwered, Neither hath this man ſinned, no
his parents, but that the workes of God ſhould be ſhew
on him.
4 I muſt worke the workes of him that ſent me, whil
it is day: the night commeth when no man can worke.
Chap.1.9.& 5 As long as I am in the worlde,* I am the light of the
8.12.& 12. worlde.
35.
6 Aſſone as he had thus ſpokē, he ſpate on the ground,
and made clay of the ſpettle, and anoynted the eyes of th
blinde with the clay,
7 And ſayd vnto him, Goe waſh in the poole of Siloa
(which is by interpretation,Sent:) He went his way the
fore,and waſhed,and came againe ſeeing.

8 Ne

8 Now the neighbours and they that had ſeene him before, when he was blinde, ſaide, Is not this he that ſate and begged?

9 Some ſaide, This is he: and other ſaid, He is like him: but he himſelfe ſaid, I am he.

10 Therefore they ſaid vnto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He anſwered, and ſaid, The man that is called Ieſus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and ſaid vnto me, Go to the poole of Siloam, and waſh. So I went, and waſhed, and receiued ſight.

12 Then they ſaid vnto him, Where is he? he ſaid, I can not tell.

13 ¶ They brought to the Phariſes him that was once blinde.

14 And it was the Sabbath *day*, when Ieſus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Phariſes alſo asked him, howe hee had receiued ſight. And he ſaid vnto them, He laid clay vpon mine eyes, and I waſhed, and do ſee.

16 Then ſaide ſome of the Phariſes, This man is not of God, becauſe hee keepeth not the Sabbath *day*. Others ſaid, How can a man that is a ſinner, do ſuch miracles? and there was a diſſenſion among them.

17 Then ſpake they vnto the blind againe, What ſayeſt thou of him, becauſe he hath opened thine eyes? And hee ſaid, He is a Prophet.

18 Then the Iewes did not beleeue him, (that hee had bene blind, and receiued his ſight) vntill they had called the parents of him that had receiued ſight.

19 And they asked them, ſaying, Is this your ſonne, whom ye ſay was borne blind? How doth he now ſee then?

20 His parents anſwered them, and ſaid, We know that this is our ſonne, and that he was borne blinde:

21 But by what meanes he now ſeeth, we know not: or who hath opened his eyes, can we not tel: he is old enough: aske him: he ſhall anſwere for himſelfe.

22 Theſe words ſpake his parents, becauſe they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had ordained already, that if any man did confeſſe that he was Chriſt, he ſhould be *excommunicate* out of the Synagogue.

23 Therfore ſaid his parēts, He is old enough: aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that had bene

blinde, and said vnto him, Giue glory vnto God: we know that this man is a sinner.

25 Then he answered, and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I cannot tell: one thing I know, that I was blind, and nowe I see.

26 Then said they to him againe, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I haue tolde you already, and ye haue not heard it: wherefore would ye heare it againe? will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then reuiled they him, and saide, Thou art his disciple: we be Moses disciples.

29 We know that God spake with Moses: but this man we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered, and saide vnto them, Doutles, this is a marueilous thing, that ye knowe not whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know, that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his wil, him heareth he.

32 Since the worlde began was it not heard, that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blinde.

33 If this man were not of God, hee could haue done nothing.

34 They answered, and said vnto him, Thou art altogether borne in sinnes, and doest thou teache vs? so they cast him out.

35 Iesus heard that they had cast him out: and when he had found him, he saide vnto him, Doest thou beleeue in the Sonne of God?

36 He answered, and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might beleeue in him?

37 And Iesus said vnto him, Both thou hast seene him, and he it is that talketh with thee.

38 Then he said, Lord, I beleeue, and worshipped him.

39 And Iesus said, I am come vnto iudgement into this world, that they which see not, might see: and that they which see, might be made blinde.

Chap. 3. 17. & 12. 47.

40 And some of the Pharises which were with him, heard these things, and said vnto him, Are we blinde also?

41 Iesus said vnto them, If ye were blind, ye should not haue sinne: but nowe ye say, We see: therefore your sinne remaineth.

CHAP.

Christ proueth that the Pharises are the euill shepheardes, 8 *and by many reasons, that himselfe* 11, 14 *is the good shepheard:* 19 *And thereof dissension ariseth.* 31 *They take vp stones,* 39 *and goe about to take him, but hee escapeth.*

VErely, verely I say vnto you, He that entreth not in by the doore into the sheepefold, but climeth vp another way, he is a thiefe and a robber.

2 But hee that goeth in by the doore, is the shepheard of the sheepe.

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheepe heare his voyce, and he calleth his owne sheepe by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he hath sent foorth his owne sheepe, hee goeth before them, and the sheepe followe him: for they know his voyce.

5 And they wil not follow a stranger, but they flee from him: for they know not the voyce of strangers.

6 This parable spake Iesus vnto them: but they vnderstood not what thinges they were, which he spake vnto them.

7 Then said Iesus vnto them againe, Verely, verely I say vnto you, I am that doore of the sheepe.

8 All, that euer came before mee, are theeues and robbers: but the sheepe did not heare them.

9 I am that doore: by me if any man enter in, he shalbe saued, and shall go in, and go out, and finde pasture.

10 The thiefe commeth not, but for to steale, and to kil, and to destroy: I am come that they might haue life, and haue it in aboundance.

11 *I am that good shepheard: that good shepheard giueth his life for his sheepe. *Isa.40.11. ezec.34.23.

12 But an hireling, and he which is not the shepheard, neither the sheepe are his owne, seeth the wolfe comming, and he leaueth the sheepe, & fleeth, and the wolfe catcheth them, and scattereth the sheepe.

13 So the hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe.

14 I am that good shepheard, and knowe mine, and am knowen of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, so know I the Father: and I lay downe my life for *my* sheepe.

16 Other sheepe I haue also, which are not of this fold:

them also must I bring, and they shall heare my voyce: and
Ezec.37.22. *there shalbe one sheepefolde, *and* one shepheard.
Isai.53.7. 17 Therefore doeth my Father loue me, because *I lay
downe my life, that I might take it againe.
18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it downe of my
selfe: I haue power to lay it downe, and haue power to
Acts.2.24. take it againe: this *commaundement haue I receiued of
my Father.
19 ¶ Then there was a dissension againe among the
Iewes for these sayings,
20 And many of them said, He hath a deuil, & is mad:
why heare ye him?
21 Others saide, These are not the wordes of him that
hath a deuil: can the deuil open the eyes of the blind?
22 And it was at Hierusalem the *feast of the* Dedica-
tion, and it was winter.
23 And Iesus walked in ỹ Temple, in Solomons porche.
24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and saide vn-
to him, Howe long doest thou make vs doubte? If thou be
that Christ, tell vs plainely.
25 Iesus answered them, I tolde you, and ye beleeue
not: the workes that I do in my Fathers Name, they beare
witnes of me.
26 But ye beleeue not: for ye are not of my sheepe, as I
said vnto you.
27 My sheepe heare my voyce, and I knowe them, and
they followe me,
28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, and they shall ne-
uer perish, neither shall any plucke them out of mine hand.
29 My Father which gaue *them* mee, is greater then all,
and none is able to take them out of my Fathers hand.
30 I and my Father are one.
Chap.8.59. 31 *Then ỹ Iewes againe tooke vp stones, to stone him.
32 Iesus answered them, Many good workes haue I
shewed you from my Father: for which of these workes do
ye stone me?
33 The Iewes answered him, saying, For ỹ good worke
we stone thee not, but for blasphemie, and that thou being a
man, makest thy selfe God.
34 Iesus answered them, Is it not written in your Lawe,
Psal.82.6. *I said, Ye are gods?
35 If he called them gods, vnto whom the word of God
was *giuen*, and the Scripture cannot be broken,

36 Say

36 Say ye of him, whome the Father hath ſanctified, and ſent into the worlde, Thou blaſphemeſt, becauſe I ſaid, I am the Sonne of God?

37 If I do not the workes of my Father, beleeue me not.

38 But if I doe, then though ye beleeue not mee, *yet* beleeue the workes, that ye may knowe and beleeue, that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

39 Againe they went about to take him: but he eſcaped out of their handes,

40 And went againe beyonde Iordan, into the place where Iohn firſt baptized, and there abode.

41 And many reſorted vnto him, and ſaide, Iohn did no miracle: but all things ỹ Iohn ſpake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleeued in him there.

CHAP. XI.

1 *Chriſt, to ſhewe that he is* 25 *the life and the reſurrection,* 14 *commeth to Lazarus being dead,* 17. 34 *and buried,* 43 *and rayſeth him vp.* 47 *As the Prieſts were conſulting together,* 49 *Caiaphas* 50 *prophecieth that one muſt dye for the people:* 56. 57 *They commande to ſeeke Chriſt out, and to take him.*

AND a certaine man was ſicke, *named* Lazarus of Bethania, the towne of Marie, and her ſiſter Martha.

2 (And it was that * Marie which anointed the Lorde with oyntment, and wiped his feete with her heare, whoſe brother Lazarus was ſicke.) *Chap* 12.3. *mat.*26.7.

3 Therefore *his* ſiſters ſent vnto him, ſaying, Lorde, behold, he whom thou loueſt, is ſicke.

4 When Ieſus heard it, he ſaid, This ſickenes is not vnto death, but for the glory of God, that the Sõne of God might be glorified thereby.

5 ¶Now Ieſus loued Martha and her ſiſter, and Lazarus.

6 And after he had heard that he was ſicke, yet abode he two dayes ſtill in the ſame place where he was.

7 Then after that, ſaid he to his diſciples, Let vs go into Iudea againe.

8 The diſciples ſaid vnto him, Maſter, the Iewes lately ſought to * ſtone thee, and doeſt thou goe thither againe? *Chap.*7.30. *and* 8.59. *and* 10.33.

9 Ieſus anſwered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If a man walke in the day, hee ſtumbleth not, becauſe he ſeeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walke in the night, hee ſtumbleth, becauſe there is no light in him.

11 Theſe thinges ſpake he, and after he ſaid vnto them, Our friend Lazarus ſleepeth: but I go to wake him vp.

12 Then ſaid his diſciples, Lord, if he ſleepe, he ſhalbe ſafe.

13 Howbeit, Ieſus ſpake of his death: but they thought that he had ſpoken of the naturall ſleepe.

14 Then ſaid Ieſus vnto them plainely, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your ſakes, that I was not there, that ye may beleeue: but let vs go vnto him.

16 Then ſaid Thomas (which is called Didymus) vnto his fellow diſciples, Let vs alſo goe, ỹ we may die with him.

17 ¶ Then came Ieſus, and found that he had lien in the graue foure dayes already.

18 (Nowe Bethania was neere vnto Hieruſalem, about fiftene furlongs off.)

19 And many of the Iewes were come to Martha and Marie to comfort them for their brother.

20 Then Martha, when ſhe heard that Ieſus was comming, went to meete him: but Marie ſate ſtill in the houſe.

21 Then ſaide Martha vnto Ieſus, Lord, if thou haddeſt bene here, my brother had not bene dead.

22 But nowe I know alſo, that whatſoeuer thou aſkeſt of God, God will giue it thee.

23 Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Thy brother ſhall riſe againe.

24 Martha ſaide vnto him, I knowe that he ſhall ryſe againe * in the reſurrection at the laſt day.

25 Ieſus ſaide vnto her, I am the reſurrection and the life: * hee that beleeueth in mee, though he were dead, yet ſhall he liue.

26 And whoſoeuer liueth, and beleeueth in me, ſhal neuer dye: Beleeueſt thou this?

27 She ſaid vnto him, Yea, Lord, I beleeue that thou art that Chriſt that Sonne of God, which ſhould come into the world.

28 ¶ And when ſhe had ſo ſaide, ſhe went her way, and called Marie her ſiſter ſecretely, ſaying, The maſter is come, and calleth for thee.

29 And when ſhe heard it, ſhe aroſe quickely, and came vnto him,

30 For Ieſus was not yet come into the towne, but was in the place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the houſe, and comforted her, when they ſawe Marie, that ſhe roſe vp haſtily, and went out, followed her, ſaying, She goeth vnto the

Chap. 5. 29.
Luke 14. 14.
Chap. 6. 35.

the graue, to weepe there.

32 Then when Marie was come where Ieſus was, and ſaw him, ſhe fell downe at his feete, ſaying vnto him, Lord, if thou haddeſt bene here, my brother had not bene dead.

33 When Ieſus therefore ſawe her weepe, and the Iewes *alſo* weepe which came with her, hee groned in the ſpirit, and was troubled in himſelfe,

34 And ſaid, Where haue ye laide him? They ſaid vnto him, Lord, come and ſee.

35 *And* Ieſus wept.

36 Then ſaid the Iewes, Behold, how he loued him.

37 And ſome of them ſaide, *Could not he, which opened the eyes of the blinde, haue made alſo, that this man ſhould not haue died? *Chap. 9.6.*

38 Ieſus therefore againe groned in him ſelfe, and came to the graue. And it was a caue, and a ſtone was laide vpon it.

39 Ieſus ſaid, Take ye away the ſtone. Martha the ſiſter of him that was dead, ſaid vnto him, Lord, he ſtinketh already: for he hath bene *dead* foure dayes.

40 Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if thou diddeſt beleeue, thou ſhouldeſt ſee the glory of God?

41 Then they tooke away ỹ ſtone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Ieſus lift vp his eyes, & ſaid, Father, I thanke thee, becauſe thou haſt heard me.

42 I knowe that thou heareſt me alwayes, but becauſe of the people that ſtand by, I ſaid it, that they may beleeue, that thou haſt ſent me.

43 As he had ſpoken theſe things, he cryed with a loud voyce, Lazarus, come foorth.

44 Then he that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foote with bands, and his face was bound with a napkin. Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Looſe him, and let him goe.

45 ¶ Then many of the Iewes, which came to Marie, & had ſeene the thinges, which Ieſus did, beleeued in him.

46 But ſome of them went their way to the Phariſes, and told them what things Ieſus had done.

47 Then gathered the hie Prieſtes, and the Phariſes a councill, and ſaide, What ſhall we do? For this man doeth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men wil beleeue in him, and the Romanes will come and take away both our place, and the nation.

49 Then one of them *named* Caiaphas, which was the hie Prieſt that ſame yeere, ſaide vnto them, Ye perceiue nothing at all,

Chap.18.14 50 * Nor yet doe you conſider that it is expedient for vs, that one man die for the people, and that the whole nation periſh not.

51 This ſpake he not of himſelfe: but being hie Prieſt that ſame yere, he prophecied that Ieſus ſhould die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation onely, but that he ſhoulde gather together in one, the children of God, which were ſcattered.

53 Then from that day foorth they conſulted together, to put him to death.

54 Ieſus therefore walked no more openly among the Iewes, but went thence vnto a countrey neere to the wildernes, into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his diſciples.

55 ¶ And the Iewes Paſſeouer was at hande, and many went out of the countrey vp to Hieruſalem before the Paſſeouer, to purifie themſelues.

56 Then ſought they for Ieſus, and ſpake among themſelues, as they ſtood in the Temple, What thinke ye, that he commeth not to the feaſt?

57 Nowe both the hie Prieſtes and the Phariſes had giuen a commaundement, that if any man knewe where he were, he ſhould ſhewe it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

2 As Chriſt is at ſupper with Lazarus, 3 Marie anointeth his feete. 5 Iudas findeth fault with her: 7 Chriſt defendeth her. 10 The Prieſtes would put Lazarus to death. 12 As Chriſt commeth to Hieruſalem, 18 the people meete him, 20 The Grecians deſire to ſee him. 42 The chiefe Rulers that beleeue in him, but for feare do not confeſſe him, 44 he exhorteth to faith.

Chap.26.7. mar.14.3. THen * Ieſus, ſixe dayes before the Paſſeouer, came to Bethania, where Lazarus was, who died, whome he had raiſed from the dead.

2 There they made him a ſupper, and Martha ſerued: but Lazarus was one of them that ſate at ye table with him.

3 Then tooke Marie a pound of oyntment of Spikenarde very coſtly, and anointed Ieſus feete, and wiped his feete

with her heare, and the house was filled with the sa-
our of the ointment.

4 Then said one of his disciples, *euen* Iudas Iscariot Si-
ons *sonne*, which should betray him:

5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundreth
ence, and giuen to the poore?

6 Now he sayd this, not that he cared for the poore, but
because he was a theefe, and *had the bagge, and bare that *Chap.13.29.*
which was giuen.

7 Then sayd Iesus, Let her alone: against the day of my
burying she kept it.

8 For the poore alwayes ye haue with you, but me ye
shal not haue alwayes.

9 Then much people of the Iewes knewe that he was
there: and they came, not for Iesus sake onely, but that
they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the
dead.

10 The hie Priests therefore consulted, that they might
put Lazarus to death also,

11 Because that for his sake many of the Iewes went
away, and beleeued in Iesus.

12 ¶ *On the morow a great multitude that were come *Mat.21.8.*
to the feast, when they heard that Iesus should come to *mar.11.8.*
Hierusalem, *luke 19.35.*

13 Tooke branches of palme trees: and went foorth
to meete him, and cryed, Hosanna, Blessed *is* the King of Is-
rael that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

14 And Iesus found a yong asse, and sate thereon, as it
is written,

15 *Feare not daughter of Sion: beholde, thy King *Zach.9.9.*
commeth sitting on an asses colte.

16 But his disciples vnderstood not these things at the
first: but when Iesus was glorified, then remembred they,
that these things were written of him, and that they had
done these things vnto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him, bare wit-
nesse that he called Lazarus out of the graue, and raised him
from the dead.

18 Therefore met him the people also, because they
heard that he had done this miracle.

19 And the Pharises sayd among themselues, Perceiue
ye how ye preuaile nothing? Beholde, the worlde goeth
after him.

20 ¶ Now

20 ¶ Nowe there were certaine Greekes among
that came vp to worship at the feast.

21 And they came to Philippe, which was of Be
da in Galile, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see
Iesus.

22 Philippe came and tolde Andrewe: and againe
drewe and Philippe tolde Iesus.

23 And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre
come, that the Sonne of man must be glorified.

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except the wh
corne fall into the ground and dye, it bideth alone: bu
it dye, it bringeth forth much fruite.

Mat. 10.39. 25 *He that loueth his life, shal lose it, and he that
and 16.25. teth his life in this world, shal keepe it vnto life eternall.
mar. 8.35. 26 *If any man serue me, let him follow me: for wh
luke 9.24. I am, there shal also my seruant be: and if any man serue
and 17.33. him wil my Father honour.
Chap. 17.24. 27 Now is my soule troubled: and what shall I say fa
ther, saue me from this houre: but therefore came I vn
this houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voy
from heauen, *saying*, I haue both glorified it, and wil gl
fie it againe.

29 Then said the people that stood by, and heard th
it was a thunder: other sayd, An Angel spake to him.

30 Iesus answered, and said, This voyce came not be
cause of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the iudgement of this world: now shal th
prince of this world be cast out.

Chap. 3.14. 32 *And I, if I were lift vp from the earth, wil dra
all men vnto me.

33 Nowe this said he, signifying what death he sho
dye.

34 The people answered him, We haue heard out
Psal. 89.36. the *Law, that that Christ bideth for euer: and howe sayest
and 110.4. thou, that that Sonne of man must be lift vp? Who is th
and 117.2. Sonne of man?
Isai 40.8. 35 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Yet a litle while is *the
ezech. 37.25. light with you: walke while ye haue that light, leste
Chap. 12. darkenes come vpon you: for he that walketh in the dar
knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye haue that light, beleeue in that light, t
ye may be the children of the light. These things

Iesus, and departed, and hid him selfe from them.

37 ¶ And though he had done so many miracles before them, *yet* beleeued they not on him,

38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled, that he sayd, * Lord, who beleeued our report? and to whom is the arme of the Lord reueiled? *Isai.53.1. rom.10.16.*

39 Therefore could they not beleeue, because that Esaias saith againe,

40 * He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor vnderstand with *their* heart, and should be conuerted, & I should heale them. *Isai.6.9. mat.13.14. mark.4.12. luke 8.10.*

41 These things said Esaias when he sawe his glorie, and spake of him. *actes 28 26. rom.11.8.*

42 Nevertheless, euen among the chiefe rulers, many beleeued in him: but because of the Pharises they did not confesse him, lest they should be *cast* out of the Synagogue.

43 * For they loued the prayse of men, more then the prayse of God. *Chap.5.44.*

44 And Iesus cryed, and sayd, He that beleeueth in me, beleeueth not in me, but in him that sent me.

45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

46 I * am come a light into the world, that whosoeuer beleeueth in me, should not abide in darkenes. *Chap.3.19. and 9.39.*

47 * And if any man heare my wordes, and beleeue not, I iudge him not: for I came not to iudge the world, but to sane the world. *Chap.3.17.*

48 He that refuseth me, and receiueth not my wordes, hath one that iudgeth him: * the worde that I haue spoken, it shal iudge him in the last day. *Mar.16.16.*

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the Father, which sent me, he gaue me a commaundement what I should say, and what I should speake.

50 And I know that his commaundement is life euerlasting: the things therefore that I speake, I speake *them* so as the Father sayd vnto me.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Christ rising from supper, 15 to commend humilitie to his Apostles, washeth their feete. 21 He noteth the traitour Iudas 26 with an euident token. 34 He commendeth charitie. 37.39 He foretelleth Peter of his deniall.

NOw * before the feast of ỹ Passeouer, when Iesus knew that his houre was come, that he should depart out of this *Mat.26.2. mar.14.1. luke 22.1.*

this world vnto the Father, forasmuch as he loued his owne which were in the world, vnto the end he loued them.

2 And when supper was done (and that the deuill had now put in the heart of Iudas Iscariot, Simons *sonne*, to betray him)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had giuen all things into his hands, and that he was come forth from God, and went to God,

4 He riseth from supper, and layeth aside *his vpper* garments, and tooke a towell, and girded him selfe.

5 After that, he powred water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples feete, & to wipe them with the towell wherewith he was girded.

6 Then came he to Simon Peter, who sayd to him, Lord, doest thou wash my feete?

7 Iesus answered and sayd vnto him, What I doe, thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know it hereafter.

8 Peter sayd vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou shalt haue no part with me.

9 Simon Peter sayd vnto him, Lord, not my feete onely, but also the hands and the head.

10 Iesus sayd to him, He that is washed, needeth not, *Chap.15.3.* saue to wash *his* feete, but is cleane euery whit: and *ye are cleane, but not all.

11 For he knew who should betray him: therefore said he, Ye are not all cleane.

12 ¶ So after he had washed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, he sayd vnto them, Know ye what I haue done to you?

13 Ye call me Master, and Lord, and ye say well: for so I am I.

14 If I then your Lord, and Master, haue washed your feete, ye also ought to wash one anothers feete.

15 For I haue giuen you an example, that ye should do, euen as I haue done to you.

Chap.15.20. mat.10.24. luke 6.40. 16 Verely, verely I say vnto you, *The seruant is not greater then his master, neither the ambassadour greater then he that sent him.

17 If ye know these things, blessed are ye, if ye do them.

18 ¶ I speake not of you all: I know whom I haue chosen: but *it is* that the Scripture might be fulfilled, *He that *Psal.41.9.* eateth bread with me, hath lift vp his heele against me.

19 I

19 From henceforth tel I you before it come, that when it is come to paſſe, ye might beleeue that I am he.

20 *Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, If I ſend any, he that receiueth him, receiueth me, and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that ſent me. *Mat.* 10. 40. *luke* 10. 16.

21 When Ieſus had ſayd theſe things, he was troubled in the Spirit, and teſtified, and ſayd, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, that one of you ſhal betray me.

22 *Then the diſciples looked one on another, douting whom he ſpake. *Mat.* 26. 21. *mar.* 14. 18.

23 Now there was one of his diſciples, which leaned on Ieſus boſome, whom Ieſus loued. *luke* 22. 21.

24 To him beckened therefore Simon Peter, that he ſhould aske who it was of whom he ſpake.

25 He then, as he leaned on Ieſus breaſt, ſayd vnto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Ieſus anſwered, He it is, to whom I ſhal giue a ſoppe, when I haue dipt it: and he wet a ſoppe, and gaue it to Iudas Iſcariot, Simons *ſonne*.

27 And after the ſoppe, Satan entred into him. Then ſayd Ieſus vnto him, That thou doeſt, doe quickly.

28 But none of them that were at table, knew, for what cauſe he ſpake it vnto him.

29 For ſome of them thought becauſe Iudas had the bagge, that Ieſus had ſayd vnto him, Bye thoſe things that we haue neede of againſt the feaſt: or that he ſhould giue ſome thing to the poore.

30 Aſſoone then as he had receiued the ſoppe, he went immediatly out, and it was night.

31 ¶ When he was gone out, Ieſus ſayd, Nowe is the Sonne of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God ſhall alſo glorifie him in him ſelfe, and ſhal ſtraightway glorifie him.

33 Litle children, yet a litle while am I with you: ye ſhal ſeeke me, but as I ſayd vnto the *Iewes, Whither I goe, can ye not come: alſo to you ſay I nowe, *Chap.* 7. 34.

34 *A newe commandement giue I vnto you, that ye loue one another: as I haue loued you, that ye alſo loue one another. *Chap.* 15. 12. *leui.* 19. 18. *mat.* 22. 39.

35 By this ſhall all men know that ye are my diſciples, if ye haue loue one to another. 1 *John* 4. 21.

36 Simon Peter ſayd vnto him, Lorde, whither goeſt thou? Ieſus anſwered him, Whither I go, thou canſt not follow

follow me now: but thou ſhalt follow me afterward.

37 Peter ſayd vnto him, Lord, why can I not follow thee
Mat.26.33. nowe? I *will lay downe my life for thy ſake.
mar.14.29. 38 Ieſus anſwered him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life
luke 22.33. for my ſake? Verely, verely I ſay vnto thee, The cocke ſhall not crowe, til thou haue denied me thrife.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 He comforteth his diſciples, 2. 7 declaring his diuinitie and the fruite of his death, 16 Promiſing the Comforter, 17 euen the holy Spirit, 26 whoſe office he ſetteth out, 27 He promiſeth his peace.

LEt not your heart be troubled: ye beleeue in God, beleeue alſo in me.

2 In my Fathers houſe are many dwelling places: if it were not ſo, I would haue tolde you: I goe to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I goe to prepare a place for you, I will come againe, and receiue you vnto my ſelf, that where I am, there may ye be alſo.

4 And whither I go, ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas ſayd vnto him, Lorde, we know not whither thou goeſt: how can we then know the way?

6 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, I am that Way, and that Trueth, and that Life. No man commeth vnto the Father, but by me.

7 If ye had knowen me, ye ſhould haue knowen my Father alſo: and from henceforth ye knowe him, and haue ſeene him.

8 Philippe ſayd vnto him, Lord, ſhew vs *thy* Father, and it ſufficeth vs.

9 Ieſus ſayd vnto him, I haue bene ſo long time with you, and haſt thou not knowen me, Philippe? he that hath ſeene me, hath ſeene my Father: howe then ſayeſt thou, Shewe vs *thy* Father?

10 Beleeueſt thou not, that I am in the Father, and the Father is in me? The wordes that I ſpeake vnto you, I ſpeake not of my ſelfe: but the father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the workes.

11 Beleeue me, that I *am* in the Father, and the Father *is* in me: at the leaſt, beleeue me for the very workes ſake.

Eſay.16.23. 12 Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, he that beleeueth in
mat.7.7. me, the workes that I doe, he ſhall doe alſo, and greater
mar.11.24. then theſe ſhal he doe: for I goe vnto my Father.
Ioan.15. 13 * And whatſoeuer ye aske in my Name, that will I

doe, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne.
14 If ye ſhal aske any thing in my Name, I wil doe it.
15 If ye loue me, keepe my commandements,
16 And I wil pray the Father, and he ſhal giue you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for euer,
17 *Euen* the Spirit of trueth, whom the world can not receiue, becauſe it ſeeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him: for he dwelleth with you, and ſhall be in you.
18 I wil not leaue you fatherles: *but* I wil come to you.
19 Yet a litle *while*, and the world ſhal ſee me no more, but ye ſhall ſee me: becauſe I liue, ye ſhal liue alſo.
20 At that day ſhal ye know that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.
21 He that hath my commaundements, and keepeth them, is he that loueth me: and he that loueth me, ſhalbe loued of my Father: and I wil loue him, and wil ſhew mine owne ſelfe to him.
22 Iudas ſayd vnto him (not Iſcariot) Lorde, what is the cauſe that thou wilt ſhew thy ſelfe vnto vs, and not vnto the worlde?
23 Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, If any man loue me, he wil keepe my worde, and my Father will loue him, and we wil come vnto him, and wil dwel with him.
24 He that loueth me not, keepeth not my wordes, and the worde which ye heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which ſent me.
25 Theſe things haue I ſpoken vnto you, being preſent with you.
26 But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghoſt, (*chap.* 15. 26)
whom the Father wil ſende in my Name, he ſhall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, which I haue tolde you.
27 Peace I leaue with you: my peace I giue vnto you: not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you. Let not your heart be troubled, nor feare.
28 Ye haue heard how I ſayd vnto you, I goe away, and wil come vnto you. If ye loued me, ye would verely reioyce, becauſe I ſayd, I goe vnto the Father: for the Father is greater then I.
29 And now haue I ſpoken vnto you, before it come, that when it is come to paſſe, ye might beleeue.
30 Hereafter wil I not ſpeake many thinges vnto you: for

for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nothing in me.

31 But *it is* that the world may know that I loue my Father: and as the Father hath commanded me, ſo I doe. Ariſe, let vs goe hence.

CHAP. XV.

1 *By the parable of the vine* 2 *and the branches*, 5. 6 *he declareth howe the diſciples may beare fruite.* 12. 17 *He commendeth mutuall loue.* 18 *He exhorteth them to beare afflictions patiently*, 20 *by his owne example.*

I Am that true vine, and my Father is that husbandman.

Mat. 15.13. 2 *Euery branche that beareth not fruite in me, he taketh away: and euery one that beareth fruite, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruite.

Chap. 13.10. 3 *Nowe are ye cleane through the worde, which I haue ſpoken vnto you.

4 Abide in me, and I in you: as the branche can not beare fruite of it ſelfe, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the vine: ye *are* the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the ſame bringeth forth much fruite: for without me can ye doe nothing.

Coloſ. 1.23. 6 *If a man abide not in me, he is caſt forth as a branch, and withereth: and men gather them, and caſt *them* into the fire, and they burne.

1. Joh. 3.22. 7 *If ye abide in me, and my wordes abide in you, aske what ye wil, and it ſhalbe done to you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye beare much fruite, and be made my diſciples.

9 As the Father hath loued me, ſo haue I loued you: continue in that my loue.

10 If ye ſhall keepe my commaundements, ye ſhall abide in my loue: as I haue kept my Fathers commaundements, and abide in his loue.

11 Theſe things haue I ſpoken vnto you, that my ioye might remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full.

Chap. 13.34. *1. theſ.* 4.9. *1. Joh.* 3.11. *and* 4.21. 12 *This is my commandement, That ye loue one another, as I haue loued you.

13 Greater loue then this hath no man, when any man beſtoweth his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye doe whatſoeuer I command you.

15 Henceforth, call I you not ſeruants: for the ſeruant knoweth

eth not what his master doeth: but I haue called you
des: for al things that I haue heard of my Father, haue
e knowen to you.

Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue chosen you, and
ined you, * that ye goe and bring foorth fruite, and *Mat.28.19.
your fruite remaine, that whatsoeuer ye shall aske of
Father in my Name, he may giue it you.

These thinges commande I you, that ye loue one a-
er.

If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me be-
you.

If ye were of the worlde, the world would loue his
but because ye are not of the worlde, but I haue cho-
out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

Remember the worde that I saide vnto you, * The *Chap.13.16
is not greater then his master. * If they haue per- *mat.10. 24.
me, they will persecute you also: if they haue kept *Mat.24.9.
ord, they will also keepe yours.

But * all these things will they doe vnto you for my *Chap.16.4.
es sake, because they haue not knowen him ỹ sent me.

If I had not come & spoken vnto them, they shoulde
ne had sinne: but nowe haue they no cloke for their

He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

If I had not done workes among them which none
er man did, they had not had sinne: but nowe haue
both seene, and haue hated both me, and my Father.

But *it is* that the worde might be fulfilled, that is
en in their Lawe, * They hated me without a cause. *Psal.35.19.

But when that Comforter shall come, * whom I wil *Chap.14.26
e vnto you from the Father, *euen* the Spirit of trueth, *luke 24.49.
which proceedeth of the Father, he shall testifie of me.

And ye shall witnes also, because ye haue bene with
me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

1 He foretelleth the disciples of persecution. 7 He promiseth the Comforter, and declareth his office. 21 He compareth the afflictions of his to a woman that trauaileth with child.

These thinges haue I said vnto you, that ye shoulde not
be offended.

They shall excommunicate you: yea, the time shall
come, that whosoeuer killeth you, wil thinke that he doeth
God seruice.

3 And these things will they do vnto you, because they haue not knowen the Father, nor me:

Chap. 15.21 4 *But these thinges haue I told you, that when the houre shal come, ye might remember, that I told you them. And these things said I not vnto you from the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I goe my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I haue said these things vnto you, your heartes are full of sorowe.

7 Yet I tell you the trueth, It is expedient for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away, that Comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart, I will send him vnto you.

8 And when he is come, he will reprone the worlde of sinne, and of righteousnes, and of iudgement:

9 Of sinne, because they beleeue not in me:

10 Of righteousnes, because I goe to my Father, and ye shall see me no more:

11 Of iudgement, because the prince of this worlde is iudged.

12 I haue yet many things to say vnto you, but ye cannot beare them now.

13 Howbeit, when he is come which is the Spirit of trueth, he will leade you into all trueth: for he shall not speake of himselfe, but whatsoeuer he shall heare, shall he speake, and he wil shew you the things to come.

14 He shall glorifie me: for he shall receiue of mine, and shall shew it vnto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shew it vnto you.

16 A litle *while*, and ye shall not see me: and againe a litle *while*, and ye shall see me: for I goe to the Father.

17 Then said *some* of his disciples among themselues, What is this that he saith vnto vs, A litle *while*, and ye shall not see me, and againe, a litle *while*, and ye shall see me, and, For I goe to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A litle *while*? we know not what he saith.

19 Now Iesus knewe that they woulde aske him, and said vnto them, Do ye enquire among your selues, of that I said, A litle *while*, and ye shall not see me: and againe, a litle *while*, and ye shall see me?

20 Verely, verely I say vnto you, that ye shall weepe and lament

ment, and the world shall reioyce: and ye shall sorow, but your sorowe shalbe turned to ioye.

21 A woman when she trauaileth, hath sorowe, because her houre is come: but assoone as she is deliuered of the childe, she remembreth no more the anguish, for ioye that a man is borne into the world.

22 And ye now therefore are in sorowe: but I will see you againe, and your hearts shall reioyce, and your ioye shall no man take from you.

23 And in that day shall ye aske me nothing. * Verely, verely I say vnto you, whatsoeuer ye shall aske the Father in my Name, he will giue it you. *Chap.14.13 mat.7.7. and 21.22. mar.11.24. luke 11.9. iames 1.5.*

24 Hitherto haue ye asked nothing in my Name: aske, and ye shall receiue, that your ioy may be full.

25 These thinges haue I spoken vnto you in parables: but the time will come, when I shall no more speake to you in parables: but I shall shewe you plainely of the Father.

26 At that day shall ye aske in my Name, and I say not vnto you, that I will pray vnto the Father for you:

27 For the Father himself loueth you, because ye haue loued me, * and haue beleeued that I came out from God. *Chap.17.8.*

28 I am come out from the Father, and came into the world: againe I leaue the world, and goe to the Father.

29 His disciples said vnto him, Lo, nowe speakest thou plainely, and thou speakest no parable.

30 Now knowe we that thou knowest all thinges, and needest not that any man should aske thee. By this we beleeue, that thou art come out from God.

31 Iesus answered them, Doe you beleeue now?

32 *Beholde, the houre commeth, and is already come, that ye shalbe scattered euery man into his owne, and shall leaue me alone: but I am not alone: for the Father is with me. *Mat.26.31. mar.14.27.*

33 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that in me ye might haue peace: in the worlde ye shall haue affliction, but be of good comfort: I haue ouercome the worlde.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ praieth that his glorie together with his Father may be made manifest. 9 He praieth for his Apostles, 20 and for all beleeuers.

THese things spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and said, Father, that houre is come: glorifie thy Sonne,

that thy Sonne alſo may glorifie thee,

Mat.28.18. 2 * As thou haſt giuen him power *ouer* all fleſh, that he ſhould giue eternall life to all them that thou haſt giuen him.

3 And this is life eternall, that they knowe thee to be the onely very God, and whom thou haſt ſent, Ieſus Chriſt.

4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finiſhed the worke which thou gaueſt me to doe.

5 And nowe glorifie me, thou Father, with thine owne ſelfe, with the glorie which I had with thee before the worlde was.

6 I haue declared thy Name vnto the men which thou gaueſt me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gaueſt them me, and they haue kept thy worde.

Chap.16.27 7 * Now they know that all thinges whatſoeuer thou haſt giuen me, are of thee.

8 For I haue giuen vnto them the wordes which thou gaueſt me, and they haue receiued *them*, and haue knowen ſurely that I came out from thee, and haue beleeued that thou haſt ſent me.

9 I pray for them: I pray not for the worlde, but for them which thou haſt giuen me: for they are thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them.

11 And nowe am I no more in the worlde, but theſe are in the worlde, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keepe them in thy Name, *euen* them whom thou haſt giuen me, that they may be one, as we *are*.

12 While I was with them in the worlde, I kept them in thy Name: thoſe that thou gaueſt me, haue I kept, and none of them is loſt, but the childe of perdition, that the

Pſal.109.7. * Scripture might be fulfilled.

13 And nowe come I to thee, and theſe thinges ſpeake I in the worlde, that they might haue my ioye fulfilled in themſelues.

14 I haue giuen them thy worde, and the worlde hath hated them, becauſe they are not of the world, as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou ſhouldeſt take them out of the world, but that thou keepe them from euill.

16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them with thy trueth: thy word is trueth.

18 As thou diddeſt ſend me into the worlde, ſo haue

ent them into the worlde.

19 And for their sakes sanctifie I my self, that they also may be sanctified through the trueth.

20 I pray not for these alone, but for them also which shall beleeue in me, through their word,

21 That they all may be one, as thou, O Father, *art* in me, and I in thee: *euen* that they may be also one in vs, that the worlde may beleeue that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory that thou gauest me, I haue giuen them, that they may be one, as we are one,

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loued them, as thou hast loued me.

24 *Father, I will that they which thou hast giuen me, be with me euen where I am, that they may beholde that my glory, which thou hast giuen me: for thou louedst me before the foundation of the world. *Chap.12.26.*

25 O righteous Father, the worlde also hath not knowen thee, but I haue knowen thee, & these haue knowen, that thou hast sent me.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy Name, and will declare it, that the loue wherewith thou hast loued me, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 By Christes power, whom Iudas betrayeth, 6 the souldiers are cast downe to the grounde. 13 Christ is led to Annas, and from him to Caiaphas. 22. 23 His answere to the officer that smote him with a rod. 28 Being deliuered to Pilate, 36 he declareth his kingdome.

WHen Iesus had spoken these things, he went forth with his disciples ouer the brooke* Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his disciples. *Mat.26.36. mar.14.32.*

2 And Iudas which betrayed him, knew also the place: for Iesus oftimes resorted thither with his disciples. *luke 22.39.*

3 *Iudas then, after he had receiued a bande of men and officers of the hie Priestes, and of the Pharises, came thither with lanternes and torches, and weapons. *Mat. 26. 47. mar.14.43. luke 22. 47.*

4 Then Iesus, knowing all things that should come vnto him, went forth and said vnto them, Whom seeke ye?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus said vnto them, I am he. Nowe Iudas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

6 Assoone then as he had said vnto them, I am he, they

went away backewardes, and fell to the ground.

7 Then he asked them againe, Whom seeke ye? And they said, Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus answered, I said vnto you, that I am he: therefore if ye seeke me, let these goe their way.

9 *This was* that the worde might be fulfilled which he
Chap. 17. 12. spake, * Of them which thou gauest me, haue I lost none.

10 Then Simon Peter hauing a sworde, drewe it, and smote the hie Priests seruant, & cut off his right eare. Now the seruants name was Malchus.

11 Then said Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sworde into the sheath: shall I not drinke of the cup which *my* Father hath giuen me?

12 Then the band and the captaine, and the officers of the Iewes tooke Iesus, and bounde him,

Luke 3. 2. 13 And led him away to * Annas first (for he was father in lawe to Caiaphas, which was the hie Priest that same yeere)

Chap. 11. 50 14 * And Caiaphas was he, that gaue counsell to the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man shoulde die for the people.

Mat. 26. 58. *mar.* 14. 54. *Luke* 22. 54. 15 ¶ * Now Simon Peter folowed Iesus, & another disciple, and that disciple was knowen of the hie Priest: therefore he went in with Iesus into the hall of the hie Priest.

16 But Peter stoode at the doore without. Then went out the other disciple which was knowē vnto ỹ hie Priest, and spake to her that kept the doore, & brought in Peter.

17 Then saide the maide that kept the doore, vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He saide, I am not.

18 And the seruants and officers stoode there, which had made a fire of coles: for it was colde, and they warmed themselues. And Peter also stoode among them, and warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ The hie Priest then asked Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the world: I euer taught in the Synagogue & in the Temple, whither the Iewes resort continually, and in secrete haue I said nothing.

21 Why askest thou me? aske them which heard me what I said vnto them: beholde, they knowe what I said.

22 When he had spoken these thinges, one of the officers which stoode by, smote Iesus with *his* rod, saying, Answerest

eſt thou the hie Prieſt ſo?

23 Ieſus anſwered him, If I haue euill ſpoken, beare witneſſe of the euill: but if I haue well ſpoken, why ſmiteſt thou me?

24 ¶ Nowe Annas had ſent him bound vnto Caiaphas the hie Prieſt.) *Mat.26.57. luke 22.54.*

25 * And Simon Peter ſtoode and warmed himſelfe, and they ſaide vnto him, Art not thou alſo of his diſciples? He denied it, and ſaid, I am not. *Mat.26.69. mar.14.69.*

26 One of the ſeruants of the hie Prieſt, his couſin whoſe eare Peter ſmote off, ſaid, Did not I ſee thee in the garden with him? *luke 22.55.*

27 Peter then denied againe, and immediatly ỹ cocke crewe.

28 ¶ * Then led they Ieſus from Caiaphas into ỹ common hall. Now it was morning, and they them ſelues went not into the common hall, leſt they ſhould be * defiled, but that they might eate the Paſſeouer. *Mat.27.2. mark.15.1. luke 23.1. Acts.10.28 and 11.3.*

29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and ſaid, What accuſation bring ye againſt this man?

30 They anſwered, & ſaid vnto him, If he were not an euill doer, we would not haue deliuered him vnto thee.

31 Then ſaid Pilate vnto them, Take ye him, and iudge him after your owne Lawe. Then the Iewes ſaid vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to death.

32 *It was* that the worde of Ieſus * might be fulfilled which he ſpake, ſignifiyng what death he ſhould die. *Mat.20.19.*

33 * So Pilate entred into ỹ common hall againe, & called Ieſus, & ſaid vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? *Mat.27.11. mark.15.2.*

34 Ieſus anſwered him, Sayeſt thou that of thy ſelfe, or did other tell it thee of me? *luke 23.3.*

35 Pilate anſwered, Am I a Iewe? Thine owne nation, and the hie Prieſtes haue deliuered thee vnto me. What haſt thou done?

36 Ieſus anſwered, My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this worlde, my ſeruants woulde ſurely fight, that I ſhoulde not be deliuered to the Iewes: but nowe is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate then ſaide vnto him, Art thou a King then? Ieſus anſwered, Thou ſayeſt that I am a King: for this cauſe am I borne, and for this cauſe came I into the worlde, that I ſhould beare witneſſe vnto the trueth: euery one that is of the trueth, heareth my voyce.

38 Pilate said vnto him, What is trueth? And when he had said that, he went out againe vnto the Iewes, and said vnto them, I finde in him no cause at all.

Mat.27. 15. mar.15.6. luke 23. 17. 39 *But you haue a custome, that I should deliuer you one loose at the Passeouer: will ye then that I loose vnto you the king of the Iewes?

Actes 3. 14 40 *Then cried they all againe, saying, Not him, but Barrabas: now this Barabbas was a murtherer.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Pilate, when Christ was scourged, 2 and crowned with thorne, 4 wat desirous to let him loose: 8 but being ouercome with the outrage of the Iewes, 16 he deliuereth him to be crucified. 26 Iesus committeth his mother to the disciple. 30 Hauing tasted vineger, he dieth: 34 and being dead, his side is pearced with a speare. 40 He is buried.

Mat.27.27. mar.15.16. THen *Pilate tooke Iesus and scourged him.

2 And the souldiers platted a crowne of thornes, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple garment.

3 And said, Haile, king of the Iewes. And they smote him with *their* roddes.

4 Then Pilate went forth againe, and saide vnto them, Beholde, I bring him forth to you, that ye may knowe, that I finde no fault in him at all.

5 Then came Iesus forth, wearing a crowne of thornes, and a purple garment. And *Pilate* said vnto them, Beholde the man.

6 Then when the hie Priestes and officers sawe him, they cryed, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him. *Pilate* said vnto them, Take ye him and crucifie *him:* for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Iewes answered him, We haue a lawe, and by our lawe he ought to die, because he made him selfe the Sonne of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate then heard that word, he was the more afraide,

9 And went againe into ỹ common hall, & saide vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gaue him none answere.

10 Then said Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not vnto me? Knowest thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to loose thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power at all against me, except it were giuen thee from aboue: therefore he that deliuered me vnto thee, hath ỹ greater sinne.

12 Pi-

12 From thence forth Pilate ſought to looſe him, but the Iewes cryed, ſaying, If thou deliuer him, thou art not Cæſars friend: *for* whoſoeuer maketh himſelfe a King, ſpeaketh againſt Ceſar.

13 ¶ When Pilate heard this worde, he brought Ieſus forth, and ſate downe in the iudgement ſeare in a place called the Pauement, and in Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the Preparation of the Paſſeouer, and about the ſixt houre: and he ſayd vnto the Iewes, Beholde your King.

15 But they cried, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate ſaid vnto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The high Prieſts anſwered, We haue no King but Ceſar.

16 Then deliuered he him vnto them, to be crucified. And they tooke Ieſus, and led him away. *Mat.27.32.*

17 And he bare his owne croſſe, and came into a place named *of dead mens* ſkulles, which is called in Hebrewe, Golgotha: *mar.15.25. luk.23.26.*

18 Where they crucified him, & two other with him, on either ſide one, and Ieſus in the middes.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote alſo a title, and put it on the croſſe, and it was written, IESVS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE IEWES.

20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for the place where Ieſus was crucified, was nere to the citie: and it was written in Hebrew, Greeke and Latin.

21 Then ſayde the hie Prieſtes of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Iewes, but that he ſaide, I am King of the Iewes.

22 Pilate anſwered, What I haue writtē, I haue writtē.

23 ¶ Then the * ſouldiers, when they had crucified Ieſus, tooke his garmentes (and made foure partes, to euery ſouldier a part) and *his* coate: and the coate was without ſeame wouen from the top throughout. *Mat.27.35. mar.15.24.*

24 Therefore they ſayde one to another, Let vs not deuide it, but caſt lots for it, whoſe it ſhalbe. *This was* that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which ſayth, * They parted my garments among them, and on my coate did caſt lottes. So the ſouldiers did theſe things indeede. *Pſal.22.18.*

25 ¶ Then ſtoode by the croſſe of Ieſus, his mother, and his mothers ſiſter, Marie *the wife of* Cleopas, and Marie Magdalene.

26 And when Ieſus ſawe his mother, and the diſciple ſtanding

ſtanding by, whom he loued, he ſayd vnto his mother, W
man, behold thy ſonne.

27 Then ſaid he to the diſciple, Behold thy mother:
from that houre, the diſciple tooke her home vnto him.

28 ¶After, whē Ieſus knew that all things were per-
Pſal.69.22. med, that the *Scripture might be fulfilled, he ſaid, I th

29 And there was ſet a veſſel full of vineger: and th
filled a ſpondge with vineger, and put it about an hyſſo
ſtalke, and put it to his mouth.

30 Nowe when Ieſus had receiued of the vineger, h
ſaid, It is finiſhed, & bowed his head, & gaue vp the ghoſ

31 The Iewes then (becauſe it was the Preparation, th
the bodies ſhould not remaine vpon the croſſe on the Sa
bath *day*: for that Sabbath was an hie day) beſought Pi
that their legges might be broken, and that they might
taken downe.

32 Then came the ſouldiers & brake the legges of th
firſt, and of the other, which was crucified with *Ieſus*.

33 But when they came to Ieſus, and ſawe that he wa
dead already, they brake not his legges.

34 But one of the ſouldiers with a ſpeare pearced hi
ſide, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 And he that ſawe it, bare recorde, and his recor
is true: and he knoweth that he ſayth true, that ye mig
beleeue it.

36 For theſe thinges were done, that the Scripture
Exod.12.46. ſhould be fulfilled, * Not a bone of him ſhalbe broken.
nom.9.12. 37 And againe another Scripture ſayth, * They ſhall lo
Zac.12.10. him whom they haue thruſt through.
Mat.27.57. 38 * And after theſe things, Ioſeph of Arimathea (wh
mar.15.42. was a diſciple of Ieſus, but ſecretely for feare of the Iewes)
luk.23.50. beſought Pilate that he might take downe the bodie of I
ſus. And Pilate gaue him licence. He came then and to
Ieſus bodie.

Chap.3.2. 39 And there came * alſo Nicodemus (which firſt cam
to Ieſus by night) and brought of myrrhe & aloes mingle
together about an hundreth pownd.

40 Then tooke they the bodie of Ieſus, & wrapped it
linnen clothes with the odours, as the maner of the Iew
is to burie.

41 And in that place where Ieſus was crucified, wa
garden, and in the garden a newe ſepulchre, wherein
neuer man yet layde.

42 Th

There then layde they Ieſus, becauſe of the Iewes preparation *day*, for the ſepulchre was neere.

CHAP. XX.

Marie bringeth worde that Chriſt is riſen: 3 Peter & Iohn ranne to ſee it. 15 Ieſus appeareth to Marie, 19 and to the diſciples that were together in the houſe. 25 Thomas, before faithleſſe, 29 now beleeueth.

1 NOw* the firſt *day* of the weeke came Marie Magdalene, early when it was yet darke, vnto the ſepulchre, & ſawe the ſtone taken away from the tombe. *Mar.16.1. luke 24.1.*

2 Then ſhe ranne, and came to Simon Peter, and to the other diſciple whom Ieſus loued, and ſaid vnto them, They haue taken away the Lorde out of the ſepulchre, and we know not where they haue layd him.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and the other diſciple, & came vnto the ſepulchre.

4 So they ranne both together, but the other diſciple did outrunne Peter, and came firſt to the ſepulchre.

5 And he ſtouped downe, and ſawe the linnen clothes lying: yet went he not in.

6 Then came Simon Peter following him, & went into the ſepulchre, and ſawe the linnen clothes lye,*

7 And the kerchiefe that was vpon his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it ſelfe.

8 Then went in alſo the other diſciple, which came firſt to the ſepulchre, and he ſaw it, and beleeued.

9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, That he muſt riſe againe from the dead.

10 And the diſciples went away againe vnto their own home.

11 ¶ *But Marie ſtoode without at the ſepulchre weeping: & as ſhe wept, ſhe bowed her ſelfe into the ſepulchre, *Mat.28.1. mar.16.5.*

12 And ſaw two Angels in white, ſitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feete, where the bodie of Ieſus had lyen.

13 And they ſaid vnto her, Woman, why weepeſt thou? She ſayd vnto them, They haue taken away my Lord, and I know not where they haue layd him.

14 When ſhe had thus ſaid, ſhe turned her ſelfe backe, and ſaw Ieſus ſtanding, and knew not that it was Ieſus.

15 Ieſus ſayth vnto her, Woman, why weepeſt thou? Whome ſeekeſt thou? She ſuppoſing that he had bene the gardiner,

gardiner, saide vnto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me where thou hast layd him, & I will take him away.

16 Iesus sayth vnto her, Marie. She turned her selfe, and sayd vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Iesus sayth vnto her, Touche mee not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, and to your Father, & to my God, and your God.

18 Marie Magdalene came & told the disciples that she had seen ỹ Lord, & that he had spokē these things vnto her.

Mar.16.14. *luk.24.36.* *1.cor.15.5.* 19 ¶* The same day then at night, which was the first *day* of the weeke, & when the doores were shut where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus and stoode in the mids, & said to them, Peace *be* vnto you.

20 And when he had so sayde, he shewed vnto them his handes, & his side. Then were the disciples glad when they had seene the Lord.

Mat.28.18. 21 *Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace *be* vnto you: as my Father sent me, so send I you.

22 And when he had said that, he breathed on them, and sayd vnto them, Receiue the holy Ghost.

23 Whosoeuers sinnes ye remit, they are remitted vnto them: & whosoeuers sinnes ye reteine, they are reteined.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore saide vnto him, We haue seene the Lorde: but he sayd vnto them, Except I see in his handes the print of the nayles, and put my finger into the print of the nailes, and put mine hand into his side, I will not beleeue it.

26 ¶ And eyght dayes after agayne his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. *Then* came Iesus, when the doores were shut, and stoode in the middes, and sayd, Peace *be* vnto you.

27 After, sayde he to Thomas, Put thy finger here, and see mine handes, and put foorth thine hand, and put it into my side, and be not faithles, but faithfull.

28 Then Thomas answered, and said vnto him, *Thou art* my Lord, and my God.

29 Iesus said vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seene mee, thou beleeuest: blessed *are* they that haue not seene and haue beleeued.

Chap.21.25. 30 ¶* And many other signes also did Iesus in the

re of his disciples, which are not written in this booke.

31 But these things are written, that ye might beleeue, Iesus is that Christ that Sonne of God, & that in beleeuing ye might haue life through his Name.

CHAP. XXI.

Iesus appeareth to his disciples as they were a fishing, 6. 7 whom they knowe by a miraculous draught of fishes. 15 He committeth the charge of the sheepe to Peter, 18 and foretelleth him of the maner of his death.

1 After these things, Iesus shewed himselfe againe to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias: & thus shewed he *himselfe:*

2 There were together Simon Peter, & Thomas, which is called Didymus, & Nathanael of Cana in Galile, and the sonnes of Zebedeus, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter said vnto them, I go a fishing. They sayd vnto him, We also will go with thee. They went their way and entred into a shippe straightway, and that night caught they nothing.

4 But when the morning was nowe come, Iesus stoode on the shore: neuertheles the disciples knewe not that it was Iesus.

5 Iesus then sayde vnto them, Syrs, haue ye any meate? They answered him, No.

6 Then he said vnto them, Cast out the net on the right side of the ship, & ye shal finde. So they cast out, & they were not able at all to drawe it, for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore said the disciple whome Iesus loued, vnto Peter, It is the Lord. When Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girded his coate to him (for he was naked) & cast himselfe into the sea.

8 But the other disciples came by shippe (for they were not farre from lande, but about two hundreth cubites) and they drewe the net with fishes.

9 Assoone then as they were come to lande, they sawe hoote coales, and fishe layde thereon, and bread.

10 Iesus sayde vnto them, Bring of the fishes, which ye haue nowe caught.

11 Simon Peter stepped forth & drew the net to lande, full of great fishes, an hundreth, fiftie and three: and albeit there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus sayde vnto them, Come, & dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? seeing they knew that he was the Lord.

13 Iesus

13 Ieſus then came and tooke bread, and gaue them, and fiſh likewiſe.

14 This is now ỹ third time that Ieſus ſhewed himſelf to his diſciples, after that he was riſen againe frō the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Ieſus ſaid to Simon Peter, Simon *the ſonne* of Iona, loueſt thou me more thē these? He ſaid vnto him, Yea Lorde, thou knoweſt that I loue thee. He ſayd vnto him, Feede my lambes.

16 He ſaide to him againe the ſecond time, Simon *the ſonne* of Iona, loueſt thou mee? He ſaid vnto him, Yea Lorde, thou knoweſt that I loue thee. He ſaid vnto him, Feede my ſheepe.

17 He ſayd vnto him the third time, Simon *the ſonne* of Iona, loueſt thou me? Peter was ſory becauſe he ſaid to him the third time, Loueſt thou me? and ſaide vnto him, Lorde, thou knoweſt all thinges: thou knoweſt that I loue thee. Ieſus ſayd vnto him, Feede my ſheepe.

18 Verely, verely I ſay vnto thee, When thou waſt yong, thou girdedſt thy ſelfe, & walkedſt whither thou wouldeſt: but when thou ſhalt be olde, thou ſhalt ſtretch forth thine handes, and another ſhall girde thee, & leade thee whither thou wouldeſt not.

19 And this ſpake he ſignifying by what death he ſhould glorifie God. And when he had ſayde this, he ſayde to him, Folowe me.

20 Then Peter turned about, & ſaw the diſciple whom Ieſus loued, folowing, which had alſo *leaned on his breſt at ſupper, and had ſaid, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? *Chap.13.23*

21 When Peter therefore ſawe him, he ſayd to Ieſus, Lord, what ſhal this man do?

22 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, If I wil that he tarie till I come, what is it to thee? folow thou me.

23 Then went this word abroad among the brethren, that this diſciple ſhould not die. Yet Ieſus ſaid not to him, he ſhall not die: but if I will that he tarie till I come, what is it to thee?

24 This is that diſciple, which teſtifieth of theſe things, and wrote theſe thinges, and we knowe that his teſtimonie is true.

25 *Now there are alſo many other things which Ieſus did, the which if they ſhould be written euery one, I ſuppoſe the worlde could not conteine the bookes that ſhould be written, Amen. *Chap.20.30*

THE ACTES OF THE HOLY APOSTLES WRITTEN BY Luke the Euangelist.

CHAP. I.

Luke tyeth this historie to his Gospel. 9 Christ being taken into heauen, 10 the Apostles 11 being warned by the Angels, 12 returne, 14 and giue themselues to prayer. 15 By Peters motion, 18 into Iudas the traytours place, Matthias is chosen.

THE former treatise, O Theophilus, of all that IESVS beganne to do and teache,

2 Vntil the day, that he was taken vp, after that he through the holie Ghost, had giuen commandements vnto the Apostles, whom he had chosen:

3 To whom also he presented himselfe aliue after that he had suffered, by many infallible tokens, being seene of them by the *space* of fourtie dayes, and speaking of those things which *appertaine* to the kingdome of God.

4 * And whē he had gathered *them* together, he commanded them, that they should not depart from Hierusalem, but to waite for the promes of the Father, * which, (saide he) ye haue heard of me: *Luk.24.49. Iohn 14.25.*

5 * For Iohn in deede baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost within these few dayes. *Chap.2.2. & 11.16.*

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lorde, wilt thou at this time restore the kingdome to Israel? *& 19.4. mat 3.11. mar.1.8.*

7 And he said vnto them, It is not for you to knowe the times, or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his owne power, *luk.3.16.*

8 * But ye shall receiue power of the holy Ghost, when he is come on you: and ye shalbe witnesses vnto me both in Hierusalem and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, & vnto the vttermost part of the earth. *Chap.2.2.*

9 * And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken vp: for a cloude tooke him vp out of their sight. *Luke24.51.*

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heauen, as he

he went, behold, two men ſtoode by them in white appa-
11 Which alſo ſayd, Ye men of Galile, why ſtand ye g-
zing into heauen? This Ieſus which is take vp from you in-
heauen, ſhal ſo come, as ye haue ſeene him go into heaue-
12 ¶ Then returned they vnto Hieruſalem from th-
mount that is called *the mount* of Oliues, which is neere t-
Hieruſalem, being from it a Sabbath *dayes* iourney.
13 And when they were come in, they went vp into a-
vpper chamber, where abode both Peter, and Iames, & Iohn,
and Andrewe, Philippe, and Thomas, Bartlemewe, and Ma-
thewe, Iames *the ſonne* of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and
Iudas Iames *brother*.
14 Theſe all continued with one accorde in prayer and
ſupplication with the women, and Marie the mother of Ie-
ſus, and with his brethren.
15 ¶ And in thoſe dayes Peter ſtoode vp in the midde-
of the diſciples, & ſaid (now the nomber of names that were
in one place were about an hundreth and twentie)
16 Ye men *and* brethren, this Scripture muſt needes
Pſal.41.9. haue bene fulfilled, which the * holy Ghoſt by the mouth
Iohn 13.27. of Dauid ſpake before of Iudas, which was * guide to them
that tooke Ieſus.
17 For he was nombred with vs, and had obteined fel-
lowſhip in this miniſtration.
18 He therefore hath purchaſed a fielde with the re-
Mat.27.5. warde of iniquitie: and when he * had throwen down him-
ſelfe headlong, he braſt a ſunder in the middes, and all his
bowels guſhed out.
19 And it is knowen vnto all the inhabitants of Hieru-
ſalem, in ſo much that that field is called in their owne lan-
guage, Aceldema, that is, The field of blood.
Pſal.69.26. 20 For it is written in the booke of Pſalmes, * Let his
Pſal.109.7. habitation be voyde, and let no man dwell therein: * alſo,
Let another take his charge.
21 Wherefore, of theſe men which haue companied
with vs, all the time that the Lorde Ieſus was conuerſant a-
mong vs,
22 Beginning from the baptiſme of Iohn vnto the daye
that he was taken vp from vs, muſt one of them be made a
witnes with vs of his reſurrection.
23 And they preſented two, Ioſeph called Barſabas,
whoſe ſurname was Iuſtus, and Matthias.
24 And they prayed, ſaying, Thou Lord, which knoweſt
the

the hearts of all men, shewe whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take the roume of this ministration and Apostleship, from which Iudas hath gone astray, to goe to his owne place.

26 Then they gaue foorth their lottes, and the lot fell on Matthias, & he was by a common consent counted with the Eleuen Apostles.

CHAP. II.

1 The Apostles 4 filled with the holy Ghost 8 speake with diuers tongues: 12 They are thought to be drunke, 15 but Peter disprooueth that: 34 He teacheth that Christ is the Messias: 37 and seeing the hearers astonied, 38 he exhorteth them to repentance.

AND when the day of Pentecost was come, they were all with one accorde in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heauen, as of a rushing *and* mightie winde, and it filled all the house where they sate.

3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like fire, and it sate vpon eche of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speake with other tongues, as the Spirit gaue them vtterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, men that feared God, of euery nation vnder heauen.

6 Now when this was noised, the multitude came together and were astonied, because that euery man heard them speake his owne language.

7 And they wondred all, and marueiled, saying among themselues, Behold, are not all these which speake, of Galile?

8 Howe then heare we euery man our owne language, wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the inhabitants of Mesopotamia, and of Iudea, and of Cappadocia, of Pontus, and Asia,

10 And of Phrygia, and Pamphylia, of Egypt, and of the parts of Libya, which is beside Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Iewes, and proselytes,

11 Cretes, and Arabians: we heard them speake in our owne tongues the wonderfull *workes* of God.

12 They were all then amased, and douted, saying one to another, What may this be?

13 And others mocked, & said, They are ful of new wi
14 ¶ But Peter standing with the Eleuen, lift vp his voy
and saide vnto them, Ye men of Iudea, *and* ye all that in
bite Hierusalem, be this knowen vnto you, and hearken v
to my wordes.
15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, since it
but the third houre of the day.
Ioel 2.28. 16 But this is that, which was spoke by ỹ Prophet *Ioe
Isa.44.3. 17 And it shalbe in the last dayes, saith God, I wil powr
out of my Spirit vpon all flesh, and your sonnes, and yo
daughters shall prophecie, and your yong men shall see vi
ons, and your olde men shall dreame dreames.
18 And on my seruants, and on mine handmaydes I wi
powre out of my Spirite in those dayes, and they shall pr
phecie.
19 And I will shewe wonders in heauen aboue, and t
kens in the earth beneath, blood, and fire, and the vapo
of smoke.
20 The Sunne shalbe turned into darkenes, and th
moone into blood, before that great and notable day of t
Lord come.
21 And it shalbe, that whosoeuer shal call on the Na
of the Lord, shalbe saued.
22 Ye men of Israel, heare these wordes, IESVS
Nazareth, a man approued of God among you with gr
workes, and wonders, and signes, which God did by him
the middes of you, as ye your selues also know:
23 Him, *I say*, being deliuered by the determinate co
sell, and foreknowledge of God, after you had taken, w
wicked handes you haue crucified and slaine.
24 Whom God hath raised vp, and loosed the sorow
of death, because it was vnpossible that he should be hol
of it.
Psal.16.9. 25 For Dauid saith concerning him, *I behelde
Lord alwayes before mee: for he is at my right hand, th
should not be shaken.
26 Therefore did mine heart reioyce, and my ton
was glad, and moreouer also my flesh shall rest in hope,
27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in graue,
ther wilt suffer thine Holy one to see corruption.
28 Thou hast shewed mee the wayes of life, and
make me full of ioye with thy countenance.
29 Men *and* brethren, I may boldly speake vnto yo

the Patriarche Dauid, * that he is both dead and buried, and his ſepulchre remayneth with vs vnto this day. *Chap.13.36. 1.king.2.10*

30 Therefore, ſeeing he was a Prophet, and knewe that God had *ſworne with an othe to him, that of the fruite of his loynes he would rayſe vp Chriſt concerning the fleſh, to ſet him vpon his throne, *Pſalm.132. 11.*

31 He knowing this before, ſpake of the reſurrection of Chriſt, that * his ſoule ſhould not be left in graue, neither his fleſh ſhould ſee corruption. *Chap.13.35. pſal.16.10.*

32 This Ieſus hath God raiſed vp, whereof we all are witneſſes.

33 Since then that hee by the right hand of God hath bene exalted, and hath receiued of his Father the promiſe of the holy Ghoſt, he hath ſhed foorth this which ye nowe ſee and heare.

34 For Dauid is not aſcended into heauen, but he ſaith, * The Lord ſaid to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, * *Pſal.110.1.*

35 Vntill I make thine enemies thy footeſtoole.

36 Therefore, let all the houſe of Iſrael know for a ſuretie, that God hath made him both Lorde, and Chriſt, this Ieſus, *I ſay*, whom ye haue crucified.

37 Now when they heard it, they were pricked in their heartes, and ſaide vnto Peter and the other Apoſtles, Men *and* brethren, what ſhall we doe?

38 Then Peter ſaide vnto them, Amend your liues, and be baptized euery one of you in the name of Ieſus Chriſt for the remiſsion of ſinnes: and ye ſhall receiue the gift of the holy Ghoſt.

39 For the promiſe *is made* vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarre off, *euen* as many as the Lord our God ſhall call.

40 * And with many other wordes he beſought & exhorted *them*, ſaying, Saue your ſelues from this frowarde generation.

41 Then they that gladly receiued his word, were baptized: and the ſame day, there were added *to the Church* about three thouſand ſoules.

42 And they continued in the Apoſtles doctrine, and fellowſhip, and breaking of bread, and prayers.

43 ¶ And feare came vpon euery ſoule: and many wonders and ſignes were done by the Apoſtles.

44 And all that beleeued, were in one place, and had all thinges common,

45 And they ſolde their poſſeſſions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery one had neede.

46 And they continued daily with one accorde in the Temple, and breaking bread at home, did eate their meate together with gladnes and ſinglenes of heart,

47 Prayſing God, and had fauour with all the people: and the Lord added to the Church from day to day, ſuch as ſhould be ſaued.

CHAP. III.

1 *Peter going vp into the Temple with Iohn,* 2 *healeth the creple.* 9 *To the people gathered together to ſee the miracle,* 12 *hee expoundeth the myſterie of our ſaluation through Chriſt,* 14 *accuſing their ingratitude,* 19 *and requiring their repentance.*

NOw Peter and Iohn went vp together into the Temple, at the ninth houre of prayer.

2 And a certaine man which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, was caried, whom they laid dayly at the gate of the Temple called Beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple.

3 Who ſeeing Peter and Iohn, that they would enter into the Temple, deſired to receiue an almes.

4 And Peter earneſtly beholding him with Iohn, ſayde, Looke on vs.

5 And hee gaue heede vnto them, truſting to receiue ſome thing of them.

6 Then ſaid Peter, Siluer and gold haue I none, but ſuch as I haue, that giue I thee: In the Name of Ieſus Chriſt of Nazareth, riſe vp and walke.

7 And he tooke him by the right hand, and lift *him* vp, and immediatly his feete & ankle bones receiued ſtrength.

8 And he leaped vp, ſtoode, and walked, and entred with them into the Temple, walking and leaping, and prayſing God.

9 And all the people ſaw him walke, and prayſing God.

10 And they knewe him, that it was hee which ſate for the almes at the Beautiful gate of the Temple: & they were amaſed, & ſore aſtonied at that, which was come vnto him.

11 ¶ And as the creeple which was healed, helde Peter and Iohn, all the people ran amaſed vnto them in the porche which is called Solomons.

12 So when Peter ſaw it, he anſwered vnto the people, Ye men of Iſrael, why marueile ye at this? or why looke ye

ſo

ſo ſtedfaſtly on vs, as though by our owne power or godlines, we had made this man goe?

13 The God of Abraham, and Iſaac, and Iacob, the* God of our fathers hath glorified his Sonne Ieſus, whom ye betrayed, and denied in the preſence of Pilate, when he had iudged him to be deliuered. *Chap.5.30.*

14 But ye denied the Holy one and the Iuſt, and deſired a murtherer to be giuen you,

15 And killed the Lord of life, whome God hath raiſed from the dead, whereof we are witneſſes.

16 And his Name hath made this man ſound, whom ye ſee, and knowe, through faith in his name: and the faith which is by him, hath giuen to him this perfite health of his whole body in the preſence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I know that through ignorance ye did it, as *did* alſo your gouernours.

18 But thoſe thinges which God before had ſhewed by the mouth of all his Prophetes, that Chriſt ſhould ſuffer, hee hath thus fulfilled.

19 Amende your liues therefore, and turne, that your ſinnes may be put away, when the time of refreſhing ſhall come from the preſence of the Lord.

20 And hee ſhall ſende Ieſus Chriſt, which before was preached vnto you,

21 Whome the heauen muſt conteine vntill the time that all thinges be reſtored, which God had ſpoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophets ſince the world began.

22 *For Moſes ſaid vnto the Fathers, The Lorde your God ſhall raiſe vp vnto you a Prophet, *euen* of your brethren like vnto me: ye ſhall heare him in all things, whatſoeuer he ſhall ſay vnto you. *Chap.7.37. deut.18.15.*

23 For it ſhalbe that euery perſon which ſhal not heare that Prophet, ſhalbe deſtroyed out of the people.

24 Alſo all the Prophets from Samuel, and thenceforth as many as haue ſpoken, haue likewyſe foretolde of theſe dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the Prophetes, and of the couenant, which God hath made vnto our fathers, ſaying to Abraham,* Euen in thy ſeede ſhall all the kinreds of the earth be bleſſed. *Gen.12.3. gal.3.8.*

26 Firſt vnto you hath God raiſed vp his Sonne Ieſus, and him he hath ſent to bleſſe you, in turning euery one of you from your iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Peter and Iohn* 3 *are taken and brought before the Counsell:* 7 *and* 19 *They speake boldly in Christes cause.* 24 *The disciples pray vnto God.* 32 *Many sell their possessions:* 36 *Of whom Barnabas is one.*

AND as they spake vnto the people, the Priests & the Captaine of the Temple, & the Sadducees came vpon them,

2 Taking it grieuously that they taught the people, and preached in Iesus *Name* the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they layd handes on them, and put them in hold, vntill the next day: for it was nowe euentide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word, beleeued, and the nomber of the men was about fiue thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morowe, that their rulers, and Elders, and Scribes, were gathered together at Hierusalem,

6 And Annas the chiefe Priest, and Caiaphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kinred of the hie Priestes.

7 And when they had set them before them, they asked, By what power, or in what Name haue ye done this?

8 Then Peter full of the holy Ghost, said vnto them, Ye rulers of the people, and Elders of Israel,

9 For asmuch as we this day are examined of the good deede *done* to the impotent man, *to wit*, by what meanes he is made whole,

10 Be it knowen vnto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of IESVS CHRIST of Nazareth, whome ye haue crucified, whome God raised againe from the dead, *euen* by him doeth this man stande here before you, whole.

Psa.118.22 11 * This is the stone cast aside of you builders, which
Isa.28.16. is become the head of the corner.
Mat.21.42. 12 Neither is there saluation in any other: for among
Mar.12.10. men there is giuen none other Name vnder heauen, where-
Luke 20.17. by we must be saued.
Rom 9.33. 13 Now when they saw the boldnes of Peter and Iohn,
1.Pet.2.7. and vnderstoode that they were vnlearned men and without knowledge, they marueiled, and knewe them, that they had bene with Iesus:

14 And beholding also the man which was healed standing with them, they had nothing to say against it.

15 Then they commanded them to go aside out of the

Councill,

Councill, and conferred among themselues,

16 Saying, What shall we do to these men? for surely a manifest signe is done by them, *and it is* openly knowen to all them that dwell in Hierusalem: and we cannot denie it.

17 But that it be noised no farther among the people, let vs threaten and charge them, that they speake hencefoorth to no man in this Name.

18 So they called them, and commanded them, that in no wise they should speake or teache in the Name of Iesus.

19 But Peter and Iohn answered vnto them, and sayde, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to obey you rather then God, iudge ye.

20 For we cannot but speake the thinges which we haue seene and heard.

21 So they threatened them, and let them go, & found nothing how to punish them, because of the people: for all men praised God for that which was done.

22 For the man was aboue fourtie yeres olde, on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 Then assoone as they were let go, they came to their fellowes, and shewed all that the hie Priests and Elders had said vnto them.

24 And when they heard it, they lift vp their voyces to God with one accorde, and saide, O Lorde, thou art the God which hast made the heauen, and the earth, the sea, and all things that are in them,

25 Which by the mouth of thy seruant Danid hast said, *Why did the Gentiles rage, and the people imagine vaine thinges? *Psal.2.1.*

26 The kings of the earth assembled, and the rulers came together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For doubtles, against thine holy Sonne Iesus, whom thou haddest anointed, both Herod & Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel gathered themselues together,

28 To doe whatsoeuer thine hand, and thy counsell had determined before to be done.

29 And now, O Lord, behold their threatnings, & graũt vnto thy seruants with all boldnes to speake thy worde,

30 So that thou stretche foorth thine hand, that healing, and signes, and wonders may be done by the Name of thine holy Sonne Iesus.

31 And when as they had prayed, the place was shaken

where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the worde of God boldely.

32 And the multitude of them that beleeued, were of one heart, and of one soule: neither any of them saide, that any thing of that which he possessed, was his owne, but they had all things *common.

*Chap. 2. 44.

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witnes of the resurrection of the Lorde Iesus: and great grace was vpon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them, that lacked: for as many as were possessours of landes or houses, sold them, and brought the price of the things that were sold,

35 And laide it downe at the Apostles feete, and it was distributed vnto euery man, according as he had neede.

36 Also Ioses which was called of the Apostles, Barnabas (that is by interpretation the sonne of consolation) being a Leuite, *and* of the countrey of Cyprus,

37 Where as he had land, solde it, and brought the money, and laid it downe at the Apostles feete.

CHAP. V.

1 *Ananias, for his deceit in keeping backe part of the price,* 5 *falleth downe dead,* 10 *and likewise Sapphira his wife.* 12 *Through diuers the Apostles miracles* 14 *the faith is increased.* 18 *The Apostles that were imprisoned* 19 *are deliuered by an Angel,* 26 *and being before the Synode of the Priestes,* 36 *through Gamaliels counsell they are kept aliue* 40 *and beaten:* 41 *They glorifie God.*

BVt a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, solde a possession,

2 And kept away *part* of the price, his wife also being of counsell, and brought a certaine part, and laide it downe at the Apostles feete.

3 Then said Peter, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart, that thou shouldest lie vnto the holy Ghost, and keepe away *part* of the price of this possession?

4 Whiles it remained, appertained it not vnto thee? & after it was solde, was it not in thine owne power? howe is it that thou hast conceiued this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God.

5 Now when Ananias heard these words, he fel downe, and gaue vp the ghost. Then great feare came on all them that heard these things.

6 And

6 And the yong men roſe vp, and tooke him vp, and caryed *him* out, and buried *him*.

7 And it came to paſſe about the ſpace of three houres after, that his wife came in, ignorant of ỹ which was done.

8 And Peter ſaid vnto her, Tel me, ſolde ye the lande for ſo much? And ſhe ſaid, Yea, for ſo much.

9 Then Peter ſayd vnto her, Why haue ye agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? beholde, the feete of them which haue buried thine husband, *are* at the doore, and ſhall carie thee out.

10 Then ſhe fel downe ſtraightway at his feete, and yeelded vp the ghoſt: and the yong men came in, & found her dead, and caried her out, & buried her by her husband.

11 And great feare came on all the Church, and on as many as heard theſe things.

12 Thus by the handes of the Apoſtles were many ſignes and wonders ſhewed among the people (and they were all with one accord in Solomons porche.

13 And of the other durſt no man ioyne him ſelfe to them: neuertheleſſe the people magnified them.

14 Alſo the number of them that beleeued in ỹ Lord, both of men and women, grewe more and more)

15 In ſo much that they brought the ſicke into the ſtreetes, and layd them on beddes and couches, that at the leaſt way the ſhadow of Peter, when he came by, might ſhadow ſome of them.

16 There came alſo a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hieruſalem, bringing ſicke folkes, & them which were vexed with vncleane ſpirits, who were all healed.

17 ¶ Then the chiefe Prieſt roſe vp, and all they that were with him (which was the ſecte of the Sadduces) and were full of indignation,

18 And layde handes on the Apoſtles, and put them in the common priſon.

19 But the Angel of the Lord, by night opened the priſon doores, and brought them forth, and ſaid,

20 Go your way, and ſtand in the temple, and ſpeake to the people, all the wordes of this life.

21 So when they heard it, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, and taught. And the chiefe Prieſt came, and they that were with him, and called the Counſel together, and all the Elders of the children of Iſrael, and ſent to the priſon, to cauſe them to be brought.

22 But

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned and tolde it,

23 Saying, Certainely we found the prison shut as sure as was possible, and the keepers standing without, before the doores: but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Then when the *chiefe* Priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the hie Priests heard these things, they doubted of them, whereunto this would growe.

25 Then came one and shewed them, saying, Beholde, the men that ye put in prison, are standing in the Temple, and teach the people.

26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violence (for they feared the people, least they should haue bene stoned).

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the Councill, and the chiefe Priest asked them,

28 Saying, Did not we straitly commaund you, that ye should not teach in this Name? and behold, ye haue filled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and ye would bring this mans blood vpon vs.

29 Then Peter and the Apostles answered, and said, We ought rather to obey God then men.

Chap. 3. 13. 30 The *God of our fathers hath raised vp Iesus, whom ye slewe, and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God lift vp with his right hand, *to be a* Prince and a Sauiour, to giue repentance to Israel, and forginenes of sinnes.

32 And we are his witnesses concerning these things which we say: yea, and the holy Ghost, whom God hath giuen to them that obey him.

33 Now when they heard it, they brast for anger, and consulted to slay them.

34 Then stoode there vp in the Councill a certaine Pharise named Gamaliel, a doctour of the Lawe, honoured of all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles forth a litle space,

35 And sayde vnto them, Men of Israel, take heede to your selues, what ye intend to doe touching these men.

36 For before these times, rose vp Theudas boasting him self, to whom resorted a number of men, about a foure hundreth, who was slaine: and they all which obeyed him were scattered, and brought to nought.

37 After

37 After this man, arose vp Iudas of Galile, in the dayes of the tribute, and drewe away much people after him: he also perished, & al that obeied him, were scattered abroad.

38 And now I say vnto you, refraine your selues from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell, or this worke be of men, it wil come to nought:

39 But if it be of God, ye can not destroy it, least ye be found euen fighters against God.

40 And to him they agreed, and called the Apostles: and when they had beaten them, they commaunded that they should not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them goe.

41 So they departed from the Councill, reioycing, that they were counted worthie to suffer rebuke for his name.

42 And dayly in the Temple, and from house to house they ceassed not to teach, and preach Iesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

1 The Apostles 3 appoint the office of Deaconship 5 to seuen chosen men: 8 Of whom Steuen, full of faith, is one: 12 He is taken 13 and accused as a transgressour of Moses Law.

AND in those dayes, as the number of the disciples grew, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians towards the Hebrewes, because their widowes were neglected in the dayly ministring.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples together, and sayd, It is not meete that we should leaue the worde of God to serue the tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, looke ye out among you seuen men of honest report, and full of the holy Ghost, and of wisedome, which we may appoint to this businesse.

4 And we wil giue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministration of the worde.

5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Steuen a man full of fayth and of the holy Ghost, and *Phillippe, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a Proselyte of Antiochia. *Chap. 21.8.*

6 Which they set before the Apostles, and they prayed, and layed their hands on them.

7 And the worde of God increased, and the number of the disciples was multiplied in Hierusalem greatly, and a great companie of the Priests were obedient to the fayth.

8 ¶ Now Steuen ful of fayth and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 Then

9 Then there aroſe certaine of the Synagogne, which are called Libertines, & Cyrenians, and of Alexandria, and of them of Cilicia, and of Aſia, and diſputed with Steuen.

10 But they were not able to reſiſt the wiſedome, and the Spirit by the which he ſpake.

11 Then they ſuborned men, which ſayde, We haue heard him ſpeake blaſphemous words againſt Moſes, & God.

12 Thus they moued the people and the Elders, and the Scribes: and running vpon him, caught him, & brought him to the Council,

13 And ſet forth falſe witneſſes, which ſayd, This man ceaſeth not to ſpeake blaſphemous wordes againſt this holy place, and the Lawe.

14 For we haue heard him ſay, that this Ieſus of Nazareth ſhall deſtroy this place, and ſhal change the ordinances, which Moſes gaue vs.

15 And as all that ſate in the Council, looked ſtedfaſtly on him, they ſawe his face as *it had bene* the face of an Angel.

CHAP. VII.

1 *Steuen pleading his cauſe ſheweth that God choſe the Fathers,* 20 *before Moſes was borne,* 47 *and before the Temple was built:* 44 *And that all outward ceremonies were ordeined according to the heauenly Patterne:* 54 *The Iewes gnaſhing their teeth,* 59 *ſtone him.*

THen ſayd the chiefe Prieſt, Are theſe things ſo?

2 And he ſaid, Ye men, brethren and fathers, hearken. *That God of glorie appeared vnto our father Abraham, while he was in Meſopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And ſayd vnto him, Come out of thy countrey, and from thy kinred, and come into the land which I ſhal ſhewe thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran. And after that his father was dead, God brought him from thence into this land, wherein ye nowe dwell,

5 And he gaue him none inheritance in it, no, not the bredth of a foote: yet he promiſed that he would giue it to him for a poſſeſſion, and to his ſeede after him, when as yet he had no childe.

6 But God ſpake thus, that his *ſeede ſhould be a ſojourner in a ſtrange land, and that they ſhould keepe it in bondage, and entreate it euil foure hundreth yeeres.

7 But

Gen. 12.4.

Gen. 15.13.

7 But the nation to whom they shalbe in bondage, will I iudge, saith God: and after that, they shall come foorth, and serue me in this place.

8 *He gaue him also the couenant of circumcision: and so *Abraham* begate *Isaac, and circumcised him the eight day: and Isaac *begate* *Iacob, and Iacob the twelue *Patriarkes. *Gen.17.9.* *Gen.21.3.* *Gen.25.24.* *Gen.29.33.* *& 30.5.* *& 35.23.*

9 And the Patriarkes moued with enuie solde *Ioseph into Egypt: but God was with him,

10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions, and *gaue him fauour and wisedome in the sight of Pharao King of Egypt, who made him gouernour ouer Egypt, and *ouer* his whole house. *Gen.37.28.* *Gen.41.37.*

11 ¶ Then came there a famine ouer all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction, that our fathers found no sustenance.

12 But when *Iacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he sent our fathers first: *Gen.42.1.*

13 *And at the second time, Ioseph was knowen of his brethren, & Iosephs kinred was made knowen vnto Pharao. *Gen.45.4.*

14 Then sent Ioseph & caused his father to be brought, and all his kinred, euen three score and fiftene soules.

15 So *Iacob went downe into Egypt, and he *dyed, and our fathers, *Gen.46.5.* *Gen.49.33.*

16 And were remoued into Sychem, and were put in the sepulchre, that Abraham had bought *for money of the sonnes of Emor, *sonne* of Sychem. *Gen.23.16.*

17 But when the time of the promes drew nere, which God had sworne to Abraham, the people *grewe and multiplied in Egypt, *Exod.1.7.*

18 Till another King arose, which knew not Ioseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kinred, and euil intreated our fathers, and made them to cast out their yong children, that they should not remaine aliue.

20 *The same time was Moses borne, and was acceptable vnto God, which was nourished vp in his fathers house three moneths. *Exod.2.2.*

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaos daughter tooke him vp, and nourished him for her owne sonne.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisedome of the Egyptians, and was mightie in wordes and in deedes.

23 Now when he was full fourtie yere olde, it came into his heart to visite his brethren, the children of Israel.

24 *And

Exo.2.11. 24 *And when he sawe one *of them* suffer wrong, he defended him, and auenged his quarell that had the hard done to him, and smote the Egyptian.

25 For he supposed his brethren would haue vnderstand, that God by his hand should giue them deliuerance: but they vnderstood it not.

Exo.2.13. 26 *And the next day, he shewed him selfe vnto them as they stroue, and would haue set them at one againe, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren: why do ye wrong one to another?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a prince, and a iudge ouer vs?

28 Wylt thou kill me, as thou diddest the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled Moses at that saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begate two sonnes.

30 And when fourtie yeeres were expired, there appeared to him in the * wildernes of mount Sina, an Angel of the Lord in a flame of fire, in a bush.

Exod.3.2.

31 And when Moses sawe it, he wondred at the sight: and as he drew neere to consider it, the voyce of the Lord came vnto him, *saying*,

32 I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not beholde it.

33 Then the Lord said to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feete: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground.

34 I haue seene, I haue seene the affliction of my people, which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groning, and am come downe to deliuer them: and nowe come, and I wil send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they forsooke, saying, Who made thee a prince and a iudge? the same God sent for a prince, and a deliuerer by the hand of the Angel, which appeared to him in the bush.

Exo.7.8.9. 10.11.14. *chapters.* 36 He * brought them out, doing wonders, and miracles in the land of Egypt, and in the red sea, and in the wildernesse * fourtie yeeres.

Exo.16.1. *Chap.*3.22. *deut.*18.15. 37 This is that Moses, which sayd vnto the children of Israel, * A Prophet shall the Lorde your God raise vp vnto you, *euen* of your brethren, like vnto me: him shal ye heare.

Exo.19.2. 38 * This is he that was in the Congregation, in the wildernesse with the Angel, which spake to him in mount Sina, and with our fathers, who receiued the liuely oracles

eles to giue vnto vs.

39 To whom our Fathers would not obey, but refused, and in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt:

40 Saying vnto Aaron, *Make vs gods that may go before vs: for we know not what is become of this Moses that brought vs out of the land of Egypt. *Exo.32.1.*

41 And they made a calfe in those dayes, and offered sacrifice vnto the idole, and reioyced in the workes of their owne handes.

42 Then God turned him selfe away, and gaue them vp to serue the hoste of heauen, as it is written in the booke of the Prophets, *O house of Israel, haue ye offered to me slayne beastes and sacrifices by the space of fourtie yeeres in the wilderneſſe? *Amos.5.25*

43 And ye tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch, and the starre of your god Remphan, figures, which ye made to worship them: therefore I wil carie you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witneſſe in the wilderneſſe, as he had appointed, speaking vnto *Moſes, that he ſhould make it according to the faſhion that he had ſeene. *Exo.25.40. hebr.8.5.*

45 *Which *tabernacle* alſo our fathers receiued, and brought in with Ieſus into the poſſeſſion of the Gentiles, which God draue out before our fathers, vnto the dayes of Dauid: *Joſh.3.14.*

46 *Who found fauour before God, and deſired that he might finde a tabernacle for the God of Iacob. *2.Sam.7.2. pſal.132.5.*

47 *But Solomon built him an houſe. *1.Chro.17.*

48 Howbeit the moſt High *dwelleth not in temples made with hands, as ſaith the Prophet, *12.1.king. 6.1.*

49 *Heauen *is* my throne, and earth *is* my footeſtoole: what houſe wil ye builde for me, ſaith the Lorde? or what place is it that I ſhould reſt in? *Chap.17.24. Iſa.66.1.*

50 Hath not mine hand made all theſe things?

51 *Ye ſtiffnecked and of vncircumciſed hearts and eares, ye haue alwayes reſiſted the holy Ghoſt: as your fathers *did*, ſo *doe* you. *Iere.9.26. ezek.44.9.*

52 Which of the Prophets haue not your fathers perſecuted? and they haue ſlaine them, which ſhewed before of the comming of that Iuſt, of whom ye are nowe the betrayers and murtherers,

53 *Which haue receiued the Lawe by the ordinance of Angels, and haue not kept it. *Exo.19.16. gala.3.19.*

54 But

54 But when they heard these things, their hearts
for anger, and they gnashed at him with *their* teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked stedf
into heauen, and saw the glory of God, and Iesus stan
at the right hand of God,

56 And sayd, Behold, I see the heauens open, and
Sonne of man standing at the right hand of God.

57 Then they gaue a shout with a loud voyce, and
ped their eares, and ranne vpon him violently all at on

58 And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him:
the witnesses layd downe their clothes at a yong m
scete, named Saul.

59 And they stoned Stenen, who called on *God*, & s
Lord Iesus, receiue my spirite.

60 And he kneeled downe, and cryed with a lo
voyce, Lord, lay not this sinne to their charge. And w
he had thus spoken, he slept.

CHAP. VIII.

*2 The godly make lamentation for Stenen. 3 Saul ma
hauock of the Church. 5 Philippe preacheth Christ a
maria. 9 Simon Magus 18 his couetousnes reproued.
Philippe 27 commaunded to the Ethiopian Eunuche, 38
baptizeth him.*

AND Saul consented to his death, and at that time, th
was a great persecution against the Church which
at Hierusalem, and they were all scattered abroad thr
the regions of Iudea and of Samaria, except the Apos

2 Then *certaine* men fearing God, caryed Sten
mongs them, *to be buryed*, and made great lamentati
him.

3 But Saul made hauocke of the Church, and ent
into euery house, and drewe out both men and women
put them into prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went
and fro preaching the worde.

5 ¶ Then came Philippe into the citie of Samaria,
preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people gaue heede vnto those things w
Philippe spake, with one accord, hearing and seeing the
miracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirits crying with a loude voyce, c
and many taken
and lame, were healed:

8

8 And there was great ioy in that citie.

9 And there was before in ỹ citie a certaine man cal-
led Simon, which vsed witchcraft, & bewitched the people
of Samaria, saying that he himselfe was some great man.

10 To whom they gaue heede from the least to the
greatest, saying, This man is that great power of God.

11 And they gaue heede vnto him, because that of long
time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But assoone as they beleeued Philippe, which preа-
ched the things that concerned the kingdome of God, and
the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized both men
and women.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleeued also, and was bapti-
zed, and continued with Philippe, and wondred, when he
saw the signes and great miracles which were done.

14 ¶Now when the Apostles, which were at Hierusa-
lem, heard say, that Samaria had receiued ỹ worde of God,
they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Which when they were come downe, prayed for
them, that they might receiue the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet, he was fallen downe on none of them,
but they were baptized onely in the Name of the Lorde
Iesus.)

17 Then laide they their hands on them, and they re-
ceiued the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon sawe, that through laying on of
the Apostles hands the holy Ghost was giuen, he offered
them money,

19 Saying, Giue me also this power, that on whomsoe-
uer I lay the hands, he may receiue the holy Ghost.

20 Then saide Peter vnto him, Thy money perish with
thee, because thou thinkest that the gift of God may be
purchased with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor felowship in this busi-
nesse: for thine heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and pray
God, that if it be possible, the thought of thine heart may
be forgiuen thee.

23 For I see that thou art in the gall of bitternesse, and
in the bond of iniquitie.

24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord
for me, that none of these thinges which ye haue spoken,
come vpon me.

25 ¶So they, when they had teſtified and preached the word of the Lorde, returned to Hieruſalem, and preached the Goſpel in many townes of the Samaritanes.

26 Then the Angel of the Lorde ſpake vnto Philippe, ſaying, Ariſe, and go towarde the South vnto the way that goeth downe from Hieruſalem vnto Gaza, which is waſte.

27 And he aroſe and went on: and beholde, a certaine Eunuche of Ethiopia, Candaces the Queene of the Ethiopians chiefe Gouernour, who had the rule of all her treaſure, and came to Hieruſalem to worſhip:

28 And as he returned ſitting in his charet, he read Eſaias the Prophet.

29 Then the Spirit ſaid vnto Philippe, Goe neere and ioyne thy ſelfe to yonder charet.

30 And Philippe ranne thither, and heard him reade the Prophet Eſaias, and ſaid, But vnderſtandeſt thou what thou readeſt?

31 And he ſaid, Howe can I, except I had a guide? And he deſired Philippe, that he would come vp & ſit with him.

32 Nowe the place of the Scripture which he read, Eſa.53.7. was this, *He was led as a ſheepe to the ſlaughter: and like a lambe dumme before his ſhearer, ſo opened he not his mouth.

33 In his humilitie his iudgement hath bene exalted: but who ſhall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 Then the Eunuche anſwered Philippe, and ſaide, I pray thee of whom ſpeaketh the Prophet this? of himſelfe, or of ſome other man?

35 Then Philippe opened his mouth, and began at the ſame Scripture, and preached vnto him Ieſus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water, and the Eunuche ſaid, See, here is water: what doeth let me to be baptized?

37 And Philippe ſaid vnto him, If thou beleeueſt with all thine heart, thou mayeſt. Then he anſwered, and ſaide, I beleeue that that Ieſus Chriſt is that Sonne of God.

38 Then he commanded the charet to ſtand ſtill: and they went downe both into the water, both Philippe and the Eunuche, and he baptized him.

39 And aſſone as they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lorde caught away Philippe, that the Eunuche ſaw him no more: ſo he went on his way reioycing.

40 But

40 But Philippe was found at Azotus, and he walked to and fro preaching in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

CHAP. IX.

2. Saul going towards Damascus, 4 is strooken downe to the ground of the Lord: 10 Ananias is sent, 18 to baptize him. 23 The laying awaite of the Iewes 25 he escapeth, being let downe through the wall. 33 Peter cureth Aeneas of the palsie, 36 and by him Tabitha being dead 40 is restored to life.

AND * Saul yet breathing out threatninges and slaughter, against the disciples of the Lord, went vnto the hie Priest, *Rom.9.5. galat.1.13.*

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the Synagogues, that if he found any that were of that way (eyther men or women) he might bring them bounde vnto Hierusalem.

3 Now as he iourneied, it came to passe that as he was come nere to Damascus, * suddenly there shined rounde about him a light from heauen. *Chap.22.6. 1.cor.15.8.*

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voyce, saying to him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kicke against prickes.

6 He *then* both trembling, and astonied, said, Lord, what wilt thou that I doe? And the Lord saide vnto him, Arise, and goe into the citie, and it shalbe tolde thee what thou shalt doe.

7 The men also which iourneyed with him, stoode amased, hearing *his* voyce, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the ground, & opened his eyes, *but* saw no man. Then led they him by the hand, & brought him into Damascus,

9 Where he was three dayes without sight, and neither ate nor dranke.

10 And there was a certaine disciple at Damascus named Ananias. And to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am *here*, Lord.

11 Then the Lord sayde vnto him, Arise, and goe into the streete which is called Straight, and seeke in the house of Iudas after one called Saul of Tarsus: for beholde he prayeth.

12 (And he ſawe in a viſion a man named Ananias coming in *to him*, & putting his handes on him, that he might receiue his ſight.)

13 Then Ananias anſwered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, how much euil he hath done to thy Saintes at Hieruſalem.

14 Moreouer, here he hath authoritie of ỹ hie Prieſts, to binde all that call on thy Name.

15 Then the Lorde ſaid vnto him, Goe thy way: for he is a choſen veſſell vnto me, to beare my name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Iſrael.

16 For I will ſhewe him, howe many thinges he muſt ſuffer for my Names ſake.

17 Then Ananias went his way, and entred into that houſe, and put his hands on him, and ſaid, Brother Saul, the Lord hath ſent me (*euen* Ieſus that appeared vnto thee in the way as thou cameſt) that thou mighteſt receiue thy ſight, and be filled with the holy Ghoſt.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as *it had bene* ſcales, and ſuddenly he receiued ſight, and aroſe, and was baptized,

19 And receiued meate, and was ſtrengthened. So was Saul certaine dayes with the diſciples which were at Damaſcus.

20 And ſtraightway he preached Chriſt in the Synagogues, that he was that Sonne of God,

21 So that all that heard him, were amaſed, and ſaid, Is not this he, that made hauocke of them which called on this Name in Hieruſalem, and came hither for that intent, that he ſhould bring them bound vnto the hie Prieſtes?

22 But Saul increaſed the more in ſtrength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damaſcus, confirming, that this was that Chriſt.

23 And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke counſell together, to kill him,

24 But their laying awaite was knowen of Saul: nowe they * watched the gates day and night, that they might kill him. 2. *Cor.* 11. ꝯ 2.

25 Then the diſciples tooke him by night, and put him through the wall, and let him downe by a rope in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Hieruſalem, he aſſaied to ioyne himſelfe with the diſciples: but they were afraid of him, and beleeued not that he was a diſciple.

27 But

27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apoſtles, and declared to them howe he had ſeene the Lord in the way, and that he had ſpoken vnto him, and howe he had ſpoken boldely at Damaſcus in the Name of Ieſus.

28 And he was conuerſant with them at Hieruſalem,

29 And ſpake boldely in the Name of the Lorde Ieſus, and ſpake and diſputed againſt the Grecians: but they went about to ſlay him.

30 But when the brethren knewe it, they brought him to Ceſarea, and ſent him forth to Tarſus.

31 Then had the Churches reſt through all Iudea, and Galile, and Samaria, and were edified and walked in the feare of the Lorde, and were multiplied by the comfort of the holy Ghoſt.

32 And it came to paſſe, as Peter walked throughout all *quarters*, he came alſo to the ſaintes which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certaine man, named Aeneas, which had kept his couch eight yeeres, and was ſicke of the palſie.

34 Then ſaide Peter vnto him, Aeneas, Ieſus Chriſt maketh thee whole: ariſe and truſſe thy conche together. And he aroſe immediatly.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, ſawe him, and turned to the Lord.

36 There was alſo at Ioppa a certaine *woman*, a diſciple named Tabitha (which by interpretation is called Dorcas) ſhe was full of good workes and almes which ſhe did.

37 And it came to paſſe in thoſe dayes, that ſhe was ſicke and died: and when they had waſhed her, they layde her in an vpper chamber.

38 Now foraſmuch as Lydda was neere to Ioppa, and the diſciples had heard that Peter was there, they ſent vnto him two men, deſiring that he would not delay to come vnto them.

39 Then Peter aroſe and came with them: and when he was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber, where all the widowes ſtood by him weeping, and ſhewing the coates and garments whith Dorcas made, while ſhe was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled downe, & praied, and turned him to the body, and ſaid, Tabitha, ariſe. And ſhe opened her eyes, and when ſhe ſaw Peter, ſate vp.

41 Then he gaue her the hand and lift her vp, and cal-led the Saintes and widowes, and reſtored her aliue.

42 And it was knowen throughout all Ioppa, and ma-ny beleeued in the Lord.

43 And it came to paſſe that he taried many dayes in Ioppa with one Simon a tanner.

CHAP. X.

1 *Cornelius,* 4 *at the Angels commandement,* 5 *ſendeth for Peter,* 11 *who alſo by a viſion* 15. 20 *is taught not to deſpiſe the Gentiles:* 34 *He preacheth the Goſpel to Cor-nelius and his houſhold.* 45 *Who hauing receiued the holy Ghoſt,* 47 *are baptized.*

FVrthermore there was a certaine man in Ceſarea called Cornelius, a captaine of the band called ỹ Italian *band,*

2 A deuout man, and one that feared God with all his houſhold, which gaue much almes to the people, & prayed God continually.

3 He ſawe in a viſion euidently (about the ninth houre of the day) an Angel of God comming in to him, and ſaying vnto him, Cornelius.

4 But when he looked on him, he was afraid, and ſaide, What is it, Lord? And he ſaide vnto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come vp into remembrance before God.

5 Now therefore ſende men to Ioppa, and call for Si-mon, whoſe ſurname is Peter.

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whoſe houſe is by the ſea ſide: he ſhal tell thee what thou oughteſt to do.

7 And when the Angel which ſpake vnto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his ſeruants, and a ſouldier that feared God, one of them that waited on him,

8 And tolde them all things, and ſent them to Ioppa.

9 On the morowe as they went on their iourney, and drewe neere vnto the citie, Peter went vp vpon the houſe to pray, about the ſixt houre.

10 Then waxed he an hungred, and would haue eaten: but while they made *ſome thing* ready, he fel into a trance.

11 And he ſawe heauen opened, and a certaine veſſell come downe vnto him, as *it had bene* a great ſheete, knit at the foure corners, and was let downe to the earth.

12 Wherein were all maner of foure footed beaſtes of the earth, and wilde beaſtes and creeping thinges, and foules of the heauen.

13 And there came a voyce to him, Ariſe, Peter: kill, and eate.

14 But

14 But Peter ſaid, Not ſo, Lord: for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is polluted, or vncleane.

15 And the voyce *ſpake* vnto him againe the ſeconde time, The things that God hath purified, polute thou not.

16 This was ſo done thriſe: and the veſſell was drawen vp againe into heauen.

17 ¶Nowe while Peter douted in himſelfe what this viſion which he had ſeene, meant, beholde, the men which were ſent from Cornelius, had enquired for Simons houſe, and ſtoode at the gate,

18 And called, and asked, whether Simon, which was ſurnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 And while Peter thought on the viſion, the Spirit ſaid vnto him, Beholde, three men ſeeke thee.

20 Ariſe therefore, and get thee downe, and goe with them, and doute nothing: for I haue ſent them.

21 ¶Then Peter went downe to the men, which were ſent vnto him from Cornelius, and ſaide, Beholde, I am he whom ye ſeeke: what is the cauſe wherefore ye are come?

22 And they ſaid, Cornelius the captaine, a iuſt man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Iewes, was warned from heauen by an holy Angel, to ſende for thee into his houſe, and to heare thy wordes.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them, and the next day, Peter went forth with them, & certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him.

24 ¶And the day after, they entred into Ceſarea. Nowe Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinſemen, and ſpeciall friends.

25 And it came to paſſe as Peter came in, that Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feete, and worſhipped him.

26 But Peter tooke him vp, ſaying, Stand vp: for euen I my ſelfe am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he came in, and founde many that were come together.

28 And he ſaid vnto them, Ye know that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Iewe, to companie, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath ſhewed me, that I ſhould not call any man polluted, or vncleane.

29 Therefore came I vnto you without ſaying nay, whē I was ſent for. I aske therefore, for what intent haue ye ſent for me?

30 Then Cornelius saide, Foure dayes agoe, about this houre I fasted, and at the ninth houre I prayed in mine house, & behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And saide, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter (he is lodged in the house of Simon a tanner by the sea side) who when he commeth, shall speake vnto thee.

33 Then sent I for thee immediatly, and thou hast well done to come. Nowe therefore are we all here present before God, to heare all things y are cõmanded thee of God.

34 Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and said, Of a trueth
Deut.10.17 I perceine, that * God is no accepter of persons.
2.chro.19. 35 But in euery nation he that feareth him, and
7.iob.34. worketh righteousnesse, is accepted with him.
29.rom.2. 36 Ye knowe the worde which God hath sent to the
11.gal.2.6. children of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ, which
eph.6.9.col. is Lord of all.
3.25.1.pet. 37 *Euen* the word which came through all Iudea, * be-
1.17. ginning in Galile, after the baptisme which Iohn preached,
Luke 4. 14. 38 *To wit*, howe God anointed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the deuill: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the lande of the Iewes, and in Hierusalem, whom they slew, hanging him on a tree.

40 Him God raysed vp the thirde day, and caused that he was shewed openly:

41 Not to all the people, but vnto the witnesses chosen before of God, *euen* to vs which did eate and drinke with him, after he arose from the dead.

42 And he commanded vs to preach vnto the people, and to testifie, that it is he that is ordeined of God a iudge of quicke and dead.

Chap.15.9. 43 To him also, giue all the * Prophets witnesse, that
Iere.31.34. through his Name all that beleeue in him, shal receiue re-
mich.7.18. mission of sinnes.

44 While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the worde.

45 So they of the circumcision which beleeued, were astonied, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles

Gentiles also was powred out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speake with tongues, & magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which haue receiued ỹ holy Ghost, as wel as we?

48 So he cõmanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tary certaine dayes.

CHAP. XI.

2 *Peter being accused for going to the Gentiles,* 5 *defendeth himselfe.* 22 *Barnabas is sent to Antiochia,* 26 *where the disciples are called Christians:* 28 *And there Agabus foretelleth a famine to come.*

NOwe the Apostles and the brethren that were in Iudea, heard, that the Gentiles had also receiued the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they of the circumcision contended against him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncircumcised, & hast eaten with them.

4 Then Peter began, and expounded *the thing* in order to them, saying,

5 I was in the citie of Ioppa, praying, and in a trance I sawe *this* vision, A certaine vessel comming downe as *it had bene* a great sheete, let down from heauen by the foure corners, and it came to me.

6 Towarde the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw foure footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, & creeping things, and fowles of the heauen.

7 Also I heard a voyce, saying vnto me, Arise, Peter: slay and eate.

8 And I said, God forbid, Lord: for nothing polluted or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voyce answered me the second time frõ heauen, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not.

10 And this was done three times: and all were taken vp againe into heauen.

11 Then beholde, immediately there were three men already come vnto the house, where I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me.

12 And the Spirit sayde vnto me, that I should go with them, without douting: moreouer these sixe brethren came with me, and we entred into the mans house.

13 And he shewed vs, howe he had seene an Angell in his

his houſe, which ſtood and ſayd to him, Send men to Ioppe, and call for Simon, whoſe ſurname is Peter.

14 He ſhal ſpeake words vnto thee, whereby both thou and all thine houſe ſhalbe ſaued.

15 And as I beganne to ſpeake, the holy Ghoſt fell on them, * euen as vpon vs at the beginning.

Chap.2.4.

16 Then I remembred the word of the Lord, howe he ſayd, * Iohn baptized with water, but ye ſhall be baptized with the holy Ghoſt.

Chap.1.5. & 19.4. mat.3.11. mar.1.8. luk.3.16. iohn 1.26.

17 For as much then as God gaue them a like gift, as *he did* vnto vs, when we beleeued in the Lorde Ieſus Chriſt, who was I, that I could let God?

18 When they heard theſe thinges, they helde their peace, and glorified God, ſaying, Then hath God alſo to the Gentiles granted repentance vnto life.

19 ¶ And they which were * ſcattered abroad becauſe of the affliction that aroſe about Steuen, went throughout til they came vnto Phenice and Cyprus, and Antiochia, preaching the word to no man, but vnto the Iewes only.

Chap.8.1.

20 Now ſome of them were men of Cyprus & of Cyrene, which when they were come into Antiochia, ſpake vnto the Grecians, and preached the Lord Ieſus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them, ſo that a great nomber beleeued and turned vnto the Lord.

22 Then tidings of thoſe thinges came vnto the eares of the Church, which was in Hieruſalem, & they ſent forth Barnabas, that he ſhould go vnto Antiochia.

23 Who when he was come and had ſeen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted all, that with purpoſe of heart they would continue in the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, & full of the holy Ghoſt, & faith, and much people ioyned themſelues vnto the Lord.

25 ¶ Then departed Barnabas to Tarſus to ſeeke Saul:

26 And when he had founde him, he brought him vnto Antiochia, & it came to paſſe that a whole yeere they were conuerſant with the Church, and taught much people, inſo much ſ the diſciples were firſt called Chriſtiãs in Antiochia.

27 In thoſe dayes alſo came Prophetes from Hieruſalem vnto Antiochia.

28 And there ſtoode vp one of them named Agabus, & ſignified by the Spirit, that there ſhould be great famine throughout all the world, which alſo came to paſſe vnder Claudius Ceſar.

29 Then

29 Then the disciples, euery man according to his habilitie, purposed to sende succour vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iudea.

30 Which thing they also did, & sent it to the Elders, by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

2 Herod killeth Iames with the sworde: 4 And imprisoneth Peter, 8 whome the Angel deliuereth. 20 Herod being offended with them of Tyrus, 21 is pacified: 22 And taking the honour due to God, to himselfe, 23 hee is eaten with wormes, and so dyeth.

NOw about that time, Herod the King stretched forth *his* hands to vexe certaine of the Church,

2 And he killed Iames the brother of Iohn with the sworde.

3 And when he sawe that it pleased the Iewes, he proceeded further, to take Peter also (then were the dayes of vnleauened bread.)

4 And when he had caught him, he put him in prison, & deliuered him to foure quaternions of souldiers to be kept, intending after ỹ Passeouer to bring him forth to ỹ people.

5 So Peter was kept in prison, but earnest prayer was made of the Church vnto God for him.

6 And when Herod would haue brought him out vnto the people, the same night slept Peter betweene two souldiers, bound with two chaynes, and the keepers before the doore, kept the prison.

7 *And behold, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, and a light shined in the house, and he smote Peter on the side, & raysed him vp, saying, Arise quickly. And his chaines fell off from *his* handes. (*hap. 5. 19.*

8 And the Angel said vnto him, Gird thy selfe, & binde on thy sandales. And so he did. Then he said vnto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 So *Peter* came out and followed him, and knew not that it was true, which was done by the Angel, but thought he had seene a vision.

10 Nowe when they were past the first and the second watch, they came vnto the yron gate, that leadeth vnto the citie, which opened to them by it owne accorde, and they went out, and passed through one streete, and by and by the Angel departed from him.

11 ¶ And when Peter was come to himselfe, he sayde,

Now

Now I know for a trueth, that the Lord hath ſent his Angel, and hath deliuered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the wayting for of the people of the Iewes.

12 And as he conſidered *the thing*, he came to ỹ houſe of Marie, the mother of Iohn, whoſe ſurname was Marke, where many were gathered together, and prayed.

13 And when Peter knocked at the entrie doore, a mayde came forth to hearken, named Rhode.

14 But when ſhe knewe Peters voyce, ſhee opened not the entrie *doore* for gladnes, but ran in, and told how Peter ſtoode before the entrie.

15 But they ſayde vnto her, Thou art mad. Yet ſhe affirmed it conſtantly, that it was ſo. Then ſayde they, It is his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking, and when they had opened it, and ſaw him, they were aſtonied.

17 And he beckened vnto them with the hand, to hold their peace, and tolde them howe the Lorde had brought him out of the priſon. And he ſayd, Go ſhewe theſe things vnto Iames and to the brethren: and he departed & went into another place.

18 ¶Now aſſoone as it was day, there was no ſmal trouble among the ſouldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had ſought for him, and founde him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded them to be led to be puniſhed. And he went down from Iudea to Ceſarea, and *there* abode.

20 Then Herod was angry with them of Tyrus & Sidon, but they came all with one accorde vnto him, & perſuaded Blaſtus the Kings Chamberlaine, & they deſired peace, becauſe their countrey was nouriſhed by the Kings *land*.

21 And vpon a day appoynted, Herod arayed himſelfe in royall apparel, and ſate on the iudgement ſeate, and made an oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a ſhoute, *ſaying*, The voyce of God, and not of man.

23 But immediatly the Angel of the Lorde ſmote him, becauſe he gaue not glory vnto God, ſo that he was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghoſt.

24 And the word of God grewe, and multiplied.

25 So Barnabas and Saul returned from Hieruſalem, when they had fulfilled their office, and tooke with them Iohn, whoſe ſurname was Marke.

CHAP.

The holy Ghost commandeth that Paul and Barnabas be separated vnto him. 6 At Paphus 8 Elymas the sorcerer 11 is stroken blinde: 14 From whence being come to Antiochia 17 they preach the Gospel, 45 the Iewes vehemently withstanding them.

THere were also in the Church that was at Antiochia, certaine Prophets & teachers, as Barnabas, & Simeon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manahen (which had bene brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch) and Saul.

2 Nowe as they ministred to the Lorde, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas & Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them.

3 Then fasted they and prayed, and layde their handes on them, and let them go.

4 And they, after they were sent foorth of the holie Ghost, came downe vnto Seleucia, & from thence they sayled to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: & they had also Iohn to *their* minister.

6 So when they had gone throughout the yle vnto Paphus, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false prophet, being a Iewe, named Barieſus,

7 Which was with the Deputie Sergius Paulus, a prudent man. He called vnto him Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the worde of God.

8 But Elymas, the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstoode them, and sought to turne away the Deputie from the faith.

9 Then Saul (which also *is called* Paul) being full of the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtiltie and all mischiefe, the childe of the deuil, & enemie of all righteousnes, wilt thou not cease to peruert the strayte wayes of the Lord?

11 Nowe therefore beholde, the hand of the Lorde *is* vpon thee, and thou shalt be blinde, and not see the sunne for a season. And immediatly there fell on him a mist and a darkenes, and he went about, seeking some to leade him by the hand.

12 Then the Deputie when he saw what was done, beleeued, and was astonied at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and they that were with him, were departed by ship from Paphus, they came to Perga *a citie* of Pamphylia:

Pamphylia: then Iohn departed from them, and returned to Hierusalem.

14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antiochia *a citie* of Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sate downe.

15 And after the lecture of the Lawe and Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye haue any worde of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stoode vp and beckened with the hand, and said, Men of Israel, and ye that feare God, hearken.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt in the lande of
Exod.1.9. *Egypt, & with an *high arme brought them out thereof.
Exod.13.14 18 And about the time *of fourtie yeeres, suffered he
Exod.16.1. their maners in the wildernes.

19 And he destroyed seuen nations in the land of Cha-
Ios.14.1. naan, and *deuided their land to them by lot.
Iudg.3.9. 20 Then afterward hee gaue vnto them *Iudges about foure hundreth and fiftie yeres, vnto *the time of* Samuel the prophet.

1.Sam.8.5. 21 So after that, they desired a *King, and God gaue
1.Sam.9.15 vnto them *Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Be-
& 10.1. niamin, *by the space* of fourtie yeres.
1.Sam.16.13 22 And after he had taken him away, he raysed vp *Da-
nid to be their King, of whome he witnessed, saying, I haue found Dauid *the sonne* of Iesse, a man after mine own heart, which wil do all things that I will.

Psal.89.21. 23 Of this mans seede hath God *according to *his* pro-
Isa.11.1. mise raysed vp to Israel, the Sauiour Iesus:
Mal.3.1. 24 When *Iohn had first preached before his cōming
mat.3.1. the baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel.
mark.1.2. 25 And when Iohn had fulfilled *his* course, hee sayde,
luke 3.2. *Whom ye thinke that I am, I am not he: but behold, there
Mat.3.11. commeth one after mee, whose shooe of *his* feete I am not
mar.1.7. worthie to loose.
Iohn 1.20. 26 Ye men and brethren, children of the generation of Abraham, and whosoeuer among you feareth God, to you is the word of this saluation sent.

27 For the inhabitants of Hierusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the wordes of the Prophets, which are read euery Sabbath *daye*, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him.

28 And

28 And though they founde no cause of death *in him*, yet desired they Pilate to kill him. *Mat.27.22.*

29 And when they had fulfilled all thinges that were written of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, & put him in a sepulchre. *mark.15.13 luke 23.23. iohn 19.6.*

30 But God * rayſed him vp from the dead. *Mat.28.2.*

31 And he was ſeene many dayes of them, which came vp with him from Galile to Hieruſalem, which are his witneſſes vnto the people. *mar.16.6. luke 24.6. iohn 20.19.*

32 And wee declare vnto you, that touching the promiſe made vnto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled it vnto vs their children, in that he rayſed vp Ieſus, euen as it is written in the ſecond Pſalme, * Thou art my Sonne: this day haue I begotten thee. *Pſal.2.7. heb.1.5.*

34 Now as concerning that he rayſed him vp from the dead, no more to returne to corruption, he hath ſayd thus, * I will giue you the holy things of Dauid, which are faithful. *& 5.5. Iſa.55.3.*

35 Wherefore he ſayeth alſo in another place, * Thou wilt not ſuffer thine Holy one to ſee corruption. *Chap.2.31. pſal.16.11.*

36 Howbeit, Dauid after he had ſerued his time by the counſel of God, he * ſlept, and was layd with his fathers, & ſawe corruption. *Chap.2.29. 1.king.2.10.*

37 But he whom God rayſed vp, ſaw no corruption.

38 Be it knowen vnto you therefore, men *and* brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiuenes of ſinnes.

39 And from all thinges, from which ye coulde not be iuſtified by the Law of Moſes, by him euery one that beleeueth, is iuſtified.

40 Beware therefore leſt that come vpon you, which is ſpoken of in the Prophets,

41 * Behold, ye deſpiſers, and wonder, and vaniſh away: for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke which ye ſhall not beleeue, if a man would declare it you. *Habak.1.5.*

42 ¶ And when they were come out of the Synagogue of the Iewes, the Gentiles beſought, that they would preach theſe wordes to them the next Sabbath *day*.

43 Now when the congregation was diſſolued, many of the Iewes, and Proſelytes that feared God, followed Paul & Barnabas, which ſpake to them, and exhorted them to continue in the grace of God.

44 And the next Sabbath *day* came almoſt the whole citie together, to heare the word of God.

45 But

45 But when the Iewes sawe the people, they were ful of enuie, and spake against those things, which were spoken of Paul contrarying *them*, and raylyng on *them*.

46 Then Paul & Barnabas spake boldly, and said, It was necessary that ỹ word of God should first haue bene spoken vnto you: but seeing ye put it from you, & iudge your selues vnworthie of euerlasting life, lo, we turne to the Gentiles.

Esa.49.6. 47 For so hath the Lord commanded vs, *saying*, *I haue made thee a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be the saluation vnto the ende of the worlde.

48 And when the Gentiles heard it, they were glad, & glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordeined vnto eternal life, beleeued.

49 Thus the word of the Lord was published throughout the whole countrey,

50 But the Iewes stirred *certaine* deuoute and honorable women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and raysed persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coastes.

Chap. 18.6. mat. 10.14. mar.6.11. luke 9.5. 51 But they *shooke off the dust of their feete against them, and came vnto Iconium.

52 And the disciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas 5 are persecuted from Iconium. 6 At Lystra Paul 10 healeth a cripple: 13 They are about to do sacrifice vnto them, 15 but they forbid it: 19 Paul by the persuasion of certaine Iewes, is stoned: 23 From thence passing through diuers churches, 26 they returne to Antiochia.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes and of the Grecians beleeued.

2 And the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp, & corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles against the brethren.

3 So therefore they abode there a long time, & spake boldely in the Lord, which gaue testimony vnto the word of his grace, and caused signes and wonders to be done by their handes.

4 But the multitude of the citie was deuided: & some were with the Iewes, and some with the Apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to doe them vio-

le-

violence, and to ſtone them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lyſtra, & Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region round about,

7 And there preached the Goſpel.

8 ¶ Now there ſate a certaine man at Lyſtra, impotent in his feete, which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked.

9 Hee heard Paul ſpeake: who beholding him, and perceyuing that he had faith to be healed,

10 Said with a loude voyce, Stand vpright on thy feete. And he leaped vp, and walked.

11 Then when the people ſawe what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, ſaying in the ſpeach of Lycaonia, Gods are come downe to vs in the likenes of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter: and Paul, Mercurius, becauſe he was the chiefe ſpeaker.

13 Then Iupiters prieſt, which was before their citie, brought bulles with garlandes vnto the gates, and would haue ſacrificed with the people.

14 But when the Apoſtles, Barnabas and Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, & ran in among the people, crying,

15 And ſaying, O men, why doe ye theſe thinges? We are euen men ſubiect to the like paſsions that ye be, and preache vnto you, that ye ſhoulde turne from theſe vaine things vnto the liuing God, * which made heauen & earth, and the ſea, and all things that in them are: *Gene.1.1. pſal.146.5.*

16 Who in times paſt *ſuffred all the Gentiles to walke in their owne wayes. *reuel.14.7. Pſal.81.13.*

17 Neuertheles, he left not himſelfe without witnes, in that he did good *and* gaue vs raine from heauen, and fruitfull ſeaſons, filling our hearts with foode, and gladnes. *rom.1.24.*

18 And ſpeaking theſe things, ſcarſe appeaſed they the multitude, that they had not ſacrificed vnto them.

19 Then there came certaine Iewes from Antiochia & Iconium, which when they had perſwaded the people, *ſtoned Paul, and drewe him out of the citie, ſuppoſing he had bene dead. *2.Cor.11.25*

20 Howbeit, as the diſciples ſtood round about him, he aroſe vp, and came into the citie, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And after they had preached the glad tidings of the Goſpell to that citie, and had taught many, they returned to Lyſtra, and to Iconium, and to Antiochia,

45 But when the Iewes sawe the people, they were ful of enuie, and spake against those things, which were spoken of Paul contrarying *them*, and railing on *them*.

46 Then Paul & Barnabas spake boldly, and said, It was necessary that ỹ word of God should first haue bene spoken vnto you: but seeing ye put it from you, & iudge your selues vnworthie of euerlasting life, lo, we turne to the Gentiles.

Esa.49.6. 47 For so hath the Lord commanded vs, *saying*, *I haue made thee a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be the saluation vnto the ende of the worlde.

48 And when the Gentiles heard it, they were glad, & glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained vnto eternal life, beleeued.

49 Thus the word of the Lord was published throughout the whole countrey,

50 But the Iewes stirred *certaine* deuoute and honorable women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coastes.

Chap.18.6. mat.10.14. mar.6.11. luke 9.5. 51 But they *shooke off the dust of their feete against them, and came vnto Iconium.

52 And the disciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas 5 are persecuted from Iconium: 6 & Lystra Paul 10 healeth a creeple: 13 They are about to sacrifice vnto them, 15 but they forbid it: 19 Paul by the perswasion of certaine Iewes, is stoned: 23 Frō thence passing through diuers churches, 26 they returne to Antioche.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake that a great multitude both of the Iewes and of the Grecians beleeued.

2 And the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp, & corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles against the brethren.

3 So therefore they abode there a long time, & spake boldely in the Lord, which gaue testimony vnto the worde of his grace, and caused signes and wonders to be done by their handes.

4 But the multitude of the citie was deuided: & some were with the Iewes, and some with the Apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to doe them violence

violence, and to stone them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra, & Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region round about,

7 And there preached the Gospel.

8 ¶ Now there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feete, which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked.

9 Hee heard Paul speake: who beholding him, and perceyuing that he had faith to be healed,

10 Said with a loude voyce, Stand vpright on thy feete. And he leaped vp, and walked.

11 Then when the people sawe what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speach of Lycaonia, Gods are come downe to vs in the likenes of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter: and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker.

13 Then Iupiters priest, which was before their citie, brought bulles with garlandes vnto the gates, and would haue sacrificed with the people.

14 But when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, & ran in among the people, crying,

15 And saying, O men, why doe ye these thinges? We are euen men subiect to the like passions that ye be, and preache vnto you, that ye shoulde turne from these vaine things vnto the liuing God, * which made heauen & earth, and the sea, and all things that in them are: *Gene. 1.1. psal. 146.5.*

16 Who in times past * suffred all the Gentiles to walke in their owne wayes. *reuel. 14.7. Psal. 81.13.*

17 Neuertheles, he left not himselfe without witnes, in that he did good *and* gaue vs raine from heauen, and fruitfull seasons, filling our heartes with foode, and gladnes. *rom. 1.20.*

18 And speaking these things, scarse appeased they the multitude, that they had not sacrificed vnto them.

19 Then there came certaine Iewes from Antiochia & Iconium, which when they had perswaded the people, * stoned Paul, and drewe him out of the citie, supposing he had bene dead. *2. Cor. 11.25*

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he arose vp, and came into the citie, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And after they had preached the glad tidings of the Gospell to that citie, and had taught many, they returned to Lystra, and to Iconium, and to Antiochia,

22 Confirming the diſciples heartes,& exhorting them to continue in the faith, *affirming* that we muſt through many afflictions enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordayned them Elders by election in euery Church, and prayed, and faſted, they commended them to the Lord in whom they beleeued.

24 Thus they went throughout Piſidia, and came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the worde in Perga, they came downe to Attalia.

Chap.13.3. 26 And thence ſailed to Antiochia, *from whence they had bene commended vnto the grace of God, to the worke which they had fulfilled.

27 And when they were come and had gathered the Church together, they rehearſed all the things that God had done by them, and howe hee had opened the doore of faith vnto the Gentiles.

28 So there they abode along time with the diſciples.

CHAP. XV.

1 *Certaine goe about to bring in circumciſion at Antiochia:* 6 *About which matter the Apoſtles conſult:* 19 *and what muſt be done* 23 *they declare by letters.* 36 *Paul & Barnabas* 39 *are at great variance.*

THen came downe certaine from Iudea, and taught the brethren, *ſaying*, Except ye be circumciſed after the maner of Moſes, ye cannot be ſaued.

2 And when there was great diſſenſion and diſputation by Paul and Barnabas againſt them, they ordained that Paul and Barnabas, and certaine other of them, ſhould goe vp to Hieruſalem vnto the Apoſtles and Elders about this queſtion.

3 Thus being brought forth by the Church, they paſſed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conuerſion of the Gentiles, & they brought great ioy vnto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Hieruſalem, they were receiued of the Church, and of the Apoſtles and Elders, and they declared what thinges God had done by them.

5 But *ſaid they*, certaine of the ſect of the Phariſes, which did beleeue, roſe vp, ſaying, that it was needefull to circumciſe them, & to command *them* to keepe the Law of Moſes.

6 Then the Apoſtles & Elders came together to looke to this matter.

7 And

7 And when there had bene great disputation, Peter
rose vp, and said vnto them, * Ye men *and* brethren, ye know *Chap.* 10. 20.
that a good while agoe, among vs God chose out *me*, that *and* 11. 13.
the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the worde of the
Gospell, and beleeue.

8 And God which knoweth ȳ hearts, bare them witnes,
ingiuing vnto them the holy Ghost euen as *he did* vnto vs.

9 And hee put no difference betweene vs and them, af-
ter that * by faith he had purified their hearts. *Chap.* 10. 43

10 Now therefore, why tempt ye God, to * lay a yoke on 1. *cor.* 1. 2.
the disciples neckes, which neither our fathers, nor we were *Mat.* 23. 4.
able to beare?

11 But we beleeue, through the grace of the Lord Iesus
Christ to be saued, euen as they *do*.

12 Then all the multitude kept silence, and heard Bar-
nabas and Paul, which tolde what signes and wonders God
had done among the Gentiles by them.

13 And when they helde their peace, Iames answered,
saying, Men *and* brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon hath declared, howe God first did visite the
Gentiles, to take *of them* a people vnto his Name.

15 And to this agree the wordes of the Prophets, as it
is written,

16 * After this I will returne, and will builde againe the *Amos.* 9. 11
tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe, and the ruines
thereof wil I build againe, and I will set it vp,

17 That the residue of men might seeke after the Lord,
and all the Gentiles vpon whome my Name is called, saith
the Lord which doeth all these thinges.

18 From the beginning of the world, God knoweth all
his workes.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that wee trouble not
them of the Gentiles that are turned to God,

20 But that we send vnto them, that they abstaine them
selues from filthinesse of idols, and fornication, & that that
is strangled, and from blood.

21 For Moses of olde time hath in euery citie them that
preach him, seeing he is read in the Synagogues euery Sab-
bath *day*.

22 Then it seemed good to the Apostles and Elders
with the whole Church, to send chosen men of their owne
companie to Antiochia with Paul & Barnabas: *to wit*, Iudas
whose surname was Barsabas, and Silas, which were chiefe

men among the brethren,

23 And wrote letters by them after this maner, THE APOSTLES, and the Elders, and the brethren, vnto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antiochia, and in Syria, and in Cilicia, ſende greeting.

24 Foraſmuch as wee haue heard, that certaine which went out from vs, haue troubled you with wordes, & cumbred your mindes, ſaying, Ye muſt be circumciſed and keepe the Lawe: to whom we gaue no ſuch commandement,

25 It ſeemed therefore good to vs, when we were come together with one accorde, to ſende choſen men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that haue giuen vp their liues for the Name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

27 We haue therefore ſent Iudas and Silas, which ſhall alſo tell you the ſame things by mouth.

28 For it ſeemed good to the holy Ghoſt, & to vs, to lay no more burden vpon you, then theſe neceſſarie things,

29 *That is*, that ye abſtaine from things offred to idoles, and blood, and that that is ſtrangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keepe your ſelues, ye ſhall do well. Fare ye well.

30 Now when they were departed, they came to Antiochia, and after that they had aſſembled the multitude, they deliuered the Epiſtle.

31 And when they had read it, they reioyced for the conſolation.

32 And Iudas and Silas being Prophetes, exhorted the brethren with many wordes, and ſtrengthened them.

33 And after they had taried there a ſpace, they were let goe in peace of the brethren vnto the Apoſtles.

34 Notwithſtanding Silas thought good to abide there ſtill.

35 Paul alſo and Barnabas continued in Antiochia, teaching & preaching with many other, the word of the Lord.

36 ¶ But after certaine dayes, Paul ſaid vnto Barnabas, Let vs returne, and viſite our brethren in euery citie, where wee haue preached the worde of the Lorde, *and ſee* howe they do.

37 And Barnabas counſelled to take with them Iohn, called Marke.

38 But Paul thought it not meete to take him vnto their companie, which departed from them from Pamphy-

lia,

lia, and went not with them to the worke.

39 Then were they ſo ſtirred, that they departed aſunder one from the other, ſo that Barnabas tooke Marke, and ſailed vnto Cyprus.

40 And Paul choſe Silas and departed, being commended of the brethren vnto the grace of God.

41 And hee went through Syria and Cilicia, ſtabliſhing the Churches.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Paul having circumciſed Timotheus, 12 being at Philippi, 14 inſtructeth Lydia in the faith: 16 The ſpirit of diuination 18 is by him caſt out: 20 and for that cauſe 22 they are whipped, 24 and impriſoned: 26 Through an earthquake 27 the priſon doores are opened. 31. 32 The iailer receiueth the faith.

THen came hee to Derbe and to Lyſtra: and behold, a certaine diſciple was there named *Timotheus, a womans ſonne, which was a Ieweſſe and beleeued, but his father was a Grecian,

Rom. 16. 21. philip. 2. 19. 1. theſ. 3. 2.

2 Of whom the brethren which were at Lyſtra and Iconium, reported well.

3 Therefore Paul would that he ſhould go foorth with him, and tooke and circumciſed him, becauſe of the Iewes, which were in thoſe quarters: for they knew all, that his father was a Grecian.

4 And as they went through the cities, they deliuered them the decrees to keepe, ordained of the Apoſtles and Elders, which were at Hieruſalem.

5 And ſo were the Churches ſtabliſhed in the faith, and encreaſed in number daily.

6 ¶ Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, they were forbidden of the holy Ghoſt to preache the word in Aſia.

7 Then came they to Myſia, and ſought to goe into Bithynia: but the Spirit ſuffred them not.

8 Therfore they paſſed through Myſia, and came downe to Troas,

9 Where a viſion appeared to Paul in the night. There ſtoode a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, ſaying, Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

10 And after hee had ſeene the viſion, immediatly wee prepared to goe into Macedonia, being aſſured that the Lord had called vs to preach the Goſpel vnto them.

11 Then went we forth from Troas, and with a ſtraight courſe came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis,

12 ¶ And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie in the partes of Macedonia, & whoſe inhabitants came from Rome to dwell there, and wee were in that citie abiding certaine dayes.

13 And on the Sabbath day, we went out of the citie beſides a Riuer, where they were wont to pray: and we ſate downe, and ſpake vnto the women, which were come together.

14 And a certaine woman named Lydia, a ſeller of purple, of the citie of the Thyatirians, which worſhipped God, heard *vs*: whoſe heart the Lorde opened, that ſhe attended vnto the thinges, which Paul ſpake.

15 And when ſhe was baptized, and her houſholde, ſhe beſought vs, ſaying, If ye haue iudged me to be faithfull to the Lorde, come into mine houſe, and abide *there*: and ſhe conſtrained vs.

16 And it came to paſſe that as we went to prayer, a certaine maid hauing a ſpirit of diuination, mette vs, which gate her maſters much vantage with diuining.

17 She followed Paul and vs, and cryed, ſaying, Theſe men are the ſeruants of the moſt high God, which ſhew vnto you the way of ſaluation.

18 And this did ſhe many dayes: but Paul being grieued, turned about, and ſaid to the ſpirit, I commaund thee in the Name of Ieſus Chriſt, that thou come out of her. And hee came out the ſame houre.

19 Now when her maſters ſawe that the hope of their gaine was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the market place vnto the magiſtrates,

20 And brought them to the gouernours, ſaying, Theſe men which are Iewes, trouble our citie,

21 And preach ordinances which are not lawful for vs to receiue, neither to obſerue, ſeeing we are Romanes.

22 The people alſo roſe vp together againſt them, and the gouernours rent their clothes, and commaunded *them* to be beaten with roddes.

23 And when they had beaten them ſore, they caſt *them* into priſon, commanding the Iayler to keepe them ſurely.

24 Who hauing receiued ſuch commaundement, caſt them into the inner priſon, and made their feete faſt in the ſtockes.

25 Nowe

25 Nowe at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, *and* ſung Pſalmes vnto God: and the priſoners heard them.

26 And ſuddenly there was a great earthquake, ſo that the foundation of the priſon was ſhaken: and by and by all the doores opened, and euery mans bands were looſed.

27 Then the keeper of ỹ priſon waked out of his ſleepe, and when he ſawe the priſon doores open, he drewe out his ſword and would haue killed himſelfe, ſuppoſing the priſoners had bene fled.

28 But Paul cried with a loud voyce, ſaying, Do thy ſelfe no harme: for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and leaped in, and came trembling, and fell downe before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and ſaide, Syrs, what muſt I do to be ſaued?

31 And they ſaid, Beleeue in the Lord Ieſus Chriſt, and thou ſhalt be ſaued, and thine houſholde.

32 And they preached vnto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his houſe.

33 Afterwarde hee tooke them the ſame houre of the night, and waſhed *their* ſtripes, and was baptized with all that belonged vnto him, ſtraightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his houſe, hee ſet meate before them, & reioyced that he with al his houſholde beleeued in God.

35 And when it was day, the gouernours ſent the ſergeants, ſaying, Let thoſe men go.

36 Then the keeper of the priſon tolde theſe words vnto Paul, *ſaying*, The gouernours haue ſent to looſe you: now therefore get you hence, and go in peace.

37 Then ſaid Paul vnto them, After that they haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, which are Romanes, they haue caſt vs into priſon, and nowe would they put vs out priuily? nay verely: but let them come and bring vs out.

38 And the ſergeants tolde theſe wordes vnto the gouernours, who feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 Then came they and prayed them, & brought them out, and deſired them to depart out of the citie.

40 And they went out of the priſon, and entred into *the houſe of* Lydia: and when they had ſeene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Paul at Theſſalonica 3 preaching Chriſt, 6. 7 is intertained of Iaſon: 10 He is ſent to Berea: 15 from thence comming to Athens, 19 in Mars ſtreet 23 he preacheth the liuing God to them vnknowen, 34 and ſo, many are conuerted to Chriſt.

NOw as they paſſed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Theſſalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes.

2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them, and three Sabbath *dayes* diſputed with them by the Scriptures,

3 Opening, and alleadging that Chriſt muſt haue ſuffered, and riſen againe from the dead: & this is Ieſus Chriſt, whom, *ſaid he*, I preach to you.

4 And ſome of them beleeued, and ioyned in company with Paul and Silas: alſo of the Grecians that feared God a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a fewe.

5 But the Iewes which beleeued not, moued with enuie, tooke vnto them certaine vagabondes & wicked fellowes, and when they had aſſembled the multitude, they made a tumult in the citie, and made aſſault againſt the houſe of Iaſon, & ſought to bring them out to the people.

6 But when they found them not, they drew Iaſon and certaine brethren vnto the heades of the citie, crying, Theſe are they which haue ſubuerted the ſtate of the world, and here they are,

7 Whome Iaſon hath receiued, and theſe all do againſt the decrees of Ceſar, ſaying that there is another King, one Ieſus.

8 Then they troubled the people, and the heades of the citie, when they heard theſe things.

9 Notwithſtanding when they had receiued ſufficient aſſurance of Iaſon and of the other, they let them go.

10 And the brethren immediatly ſent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea, which when they were come thither, entred into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 Theſe were alſo more noble men then they which were at Theſſalonica, which receiued the word with all readines, and ſearched the Scriptures dayly, whether thoſe thinges were ſo.

12 Therefore many of them beleeued, and of honeſt women, which were Grecians, and men not a fewe.

13 ¶ But when the Iewes of Theſſalonica knewe, that the worde of God was alſo preached of Paul at Berea, they came

came thither also, and moued the people.

14 But by and by the brethren sent away Paul to goe as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that did conduct Paul, brought him vnto Athenes: and when they had receiued a commandement vnto Silas and Timotheus that they should come to him at once, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirite was stirred in him, when he saw the citie subiect to idolatrie.

17 Therefore he disputed in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with them that were religious, and in the market dayly with whomsoeuer he met.

18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicures, and of the Stoickes, disputed with him, and some saide, What will this babbler say? Others said, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods (because he preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection)

19 And they tooke him, and brought him into Mars streete, saying, May we not know, what this newe doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certaine strange things vnto our eares: we would know therefore, what these things meane.

21 For all the Athenians, and strangers which dwelt there, gaue them selues to nothing els, but either to tel, or to heare some newes.

22 Then Paul stoode in the middes of Mars streete, and said, Ye men of Athenes, I perceine that in all things ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and behelde your deuocions, I found an altar wherein was written, VNTO THE VNKNOWEN GOD. Whom ye then ignorantly worship, him shew I vnto you.

24 God that made the world, and all things that are therein, seeing that he is Lord of heauen and earth, * dwelleth not in temples made with hands, *Chap.7.48.*

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands, as though *Psal.50.8.* hee needed any thing, seeing hee giueth to all life and breath and all things,

26 And hath made of one blood al mankind, to dwel on all the face of the earth, & hath assigned the seasons which were ordeined before, and the bounds of their habitation,

27 That

27 That they ſhould ſeeke the Lord, if ſo be they might haue groped after him, and found *him*, though doubtleſs he be not farre from euery one of vs.

28 For in him we liue, and moue, and haue our being, as alſo certaine of your owne Poets haue ſayd, for we are alſo his generation.

Iſai.40.19. 29 *Forasmuch then, as we are the generation of God, we ought not to thinke that the godhead is like vnto golde or ſiluer, or ſtone grauen by arte and the inuention of man.

30 And the time of this ignorance God regarded not: but now he admoniſheth all men euery where to repent.

31 Becauſe he hath appointed a day in the which he will iudge the worlde in righteouſnes, by that man whome he hath appointed, *whereof* he hath giuen an aſſurance to all men, in that he hath raiſed him from the dead.

32 Now when they heard of the reſurrection from the dead, ſome mocked, and other ſayd, We will heare thee againe of this thing.

33 And ſo Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit certaine men claue vnto Paul, & beleeued: among whom was alſo Denis Areopagita, and a woman named Damaris, and other with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 As Paul at Corinth 6 taught the Gentiles, 9 the Lorde comforteth him. 12 He is accuſed before Gallio, 16 but in vaine: 18 From thence he ſaileth to Syria, 19 and ſo to Epheſus: 23 At Galatia and Phrygia he ſtrengtheneth the diſciples. 24 Apollos being more perfectly inſtructed by Aquila, 28 preacheth Chriſt with great efficacie.

AFter theſe thinges, Paul departed from Athenes, and came to Corinthus,

Rom.16.3. 2 And found a certaine Iewe named * Aquila, borne in Pontus, lately come from Italie, and his wife Priſcilla, (becauſe that Claudius had commaunded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and he came vnto them.

3 And becauſe he was of the ſame craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for their craft was to make tents.)

4 And he diſputed in the Synagogue euery Sabbath *day*, and exhorted the Iewes, and the Grecians.

5 Now when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul forced in ſpirite, teſtified to the Iewes that

Chap.13.51. Ieſus was the Chriſt.

mat.10.14. 6 And when they reſiſted and blaſphemed, he *ſhooke

his raiment, and said vnto them, Your blood *be* vpon your owne head: I am cleane: from henceforth wil I goe vnto the Gentiles.

7 So he departed thence, and entred into a certaine mans house, named Iustus, a worshipper of God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue.

8 And *Crispus the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, beleeued in the Lord with all his houshold: and many of the Corinthians hearing it, beleeued and were baptized. *1.Cor. 1.14.

9 Then said the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Feare not, but speake, and holde not thy peace.

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall lay *handes* on thee to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this citie.

11 So he continued there a yere and sixe moneths, and taught the worde of God among them.

12 ¶Now when Gallio was Deputie of Achaia, the Iewes arose with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the iudgement seate,

13 Saying, This felow perswadeth men to worship God otherwise then the Law appointeth.

14 And as Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio sayd vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or an euil deede, O ye Iewes, I would according to reason maintaine you.

15 But if it be a question of wordes, and names, and of your Law, looke ye to it your selues: for I will be no iudge of those things.

16 And he draue them from the iudgement seate.

17 Then tooke all the Grecians Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the iudgement seate: but Gallio cared nothing for those things.

18 But when Paul had taryed there yet a good while, he tooke leaue of the brethren, and sailed into Syria (and with him Priscilla and Aquila) after that he had shorne his head in Cenchrea: for he had a *vowe. *Chap.21.24. num.16.18.

19 Then he came to Ephesus, & left them there: but he entred into the Synagogue and disputed with the Iewes.

20 Who desired him to tarie a longer time with them: but he would not consent,

21 But bade them farewel, saying, I must needes keepe this feast that commeth, in Hierusalem: but I wil returne againe vnto you,* if God will. So he sailed from Ephesus. *1.Cor.4.19. iam.4.15.

22 ¶And when he came downe to Cesarea, he went vp

to Hieru-

to Hieruſalem: and when he had ſaluted the Church, he went downe vnto Antiochia.

23 Nowe when he had taryed *there* a while, he departed, and went through the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia by order, ſtrengthening all the diſciples.

1.Cor.1.12. 24 And a certaine Iewe named * Apollos, borne at Alexandria, came to Epheſus, an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures.

25 The ſame was inſtructed in the way of the Lord, and he ſpake feruently in the Spirit, and taught diligently the things of the Lorde, and knewe but the baptiſme of Iohn onely.

26 And he began to ſpeake boldely in the Synagogue. Rom. 16.3. Whom when * Aquila and Priſcilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was minded to goe into Achaia, the brethren exhorting him, wrote to the diſciples to receiue him: and after he was come thither, he holpe them much which had beleeued through grace.

28 For mightily he confuted publikely the Iewes, with great vehemencie, ſhewing by the Scriptures, that Ieſus was that Chriſt.

CHAP. XIX.

1 *Certaine diſciples at Epheſus, 3 hauing only receiued Iohns baptiſme, 2 & knew not the viſible gifts of the holy Ghost wherewith God had beautified his Sonnes kingdome, 5 are baptized in the Name of Ieſus. 13 The Iewiſh exorciſts 16 are beaten of the deuil. 19 Coniuring bookes are burnt. 24 Demetrius 29 raiſeth ſedition againſt Paul.*

AND it came to paſſe, while Apollos was at Corinthus, that Paul when he paſſed through the vpper coaſtes, came to Epheſus, and found certaine diſciples,

2 And ſayd vnto them, Haue ye receiued the holy Ghost ſince ye beleeued? And they ſayd vnto him, We haue not ſo much as heard whether there be an holy Ghoſt.

3 And he ſaid vnto them, Vnto what were ye then baptized? Chap.1.5.& 2.2.& 11. And they ſayd, Vnto Iohns baptiſme.

4 Then ſaid Paul, * Iohn verely baptized with the baptiſme of repentance, ſaying vnto the people, that they ſhould 26.mat.3. 11.mar.1.8. beleeue in him, which ſhould come after him, that is, 1 Iuke 3.16. Chriſt Ieſus.

Iohn 1.26. 5 And when they heard it, they were baptized in the

Name of the Lorde Ieſus.

6 So Paul layd his hands vpon them, & the holy Ghoſt came on them, and they ſpake the tongues, and prophecied.

7 And all the men were about twelue.

8 ¶Moreouer he went into the Synagogue, and ſpake boldly for the ſpace of three moneths, diſputing and exhorting to the things that *appertaine* to the kingdome of God.

9 But when certaine were hardened, & diſobeied, ſpeaking euil of the way *of God* before the multitude, he departed from them, and ſeparated the diſciples, and diſputed dayly in the ſchole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this was done by the ſpace of two yeeres, ſo that all they which dwelt in Aſia, heard the worde of the Lord Ieſus, both Iewes and Grecians.

11 And God wrought no ſmall miracles by the handes of Paul.

12 So that from his body were brought vnto the ſicke, kercheſs or handkercheſs, and the diſeaſes departed from them, and the euil ſpirits went out of them.

13 Then certaine of the vagabond Iewes, exorciſts, tooke in hand to name ouer them which had euil ſpirits, the Name of the Lord Ieſus, ſaying, We adiure you by Ieſus, whom Paul preacheth.

14 (And there were certaine ſonnes of Sceua a Iewe, the Prieſt, *about* ſeuen which did this)

15 And the euil ſpirit anſwered, and ſayd, Ieſus I acknowledge, and Paul I know: but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the euil ſpirit was, ranne on them, and ouercame them, and preuailed againſt them, ſo that they fled out of that houſe, naked, and wounded.

17 And this was knowen to all the Iewes & Grecians alſo, which dwelt at Epheſus, and feare came on them all, and the Name of the Lord Ieſus was magnified,

18 And many that beleeued, came and confeſſed, and ſhewed their workes.

19 Many alſo of them which vſed curious artes, brought their bookes, and burned them before all men, and they counted the price of them, and found it fiftie thouſande *pieces* of ſiluer.

20 So the word of God grewe mightily, & preuailed.

21 ¶Now when theſe things were accompliſhed, Paul purpoſed by the Spirit to paſſe through Macedonia and Achaia, and to goe to Hieruſalem, ſaying, After I haue

beene

bene there, I must also see Rome.

22 So sent he into Macedonia two of them that ministred vnto him, Timotheus and Erastus, *but* he remained in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small trouble about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrius a siluersmith, which made siluer temples of Diana, brought great gaines vnto the craftes men,

25 Whom he called together, with the workemen of like things, and sayd, Syrs, ye know that by this craft we haue our goods:

26 Moreouer ye see and heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia this Paul hath perswaded, and turned away much people, saying, That they be no gods which are made with hands.

27 So ỹ not only this thing is dangerous vnto vs, that this our portion shalbe reproued, but also that the temple of the great goddesse Diana should be nothing esteemed, & that it would come to passe that her magnificence, which all Asia and the world worshippeth, should be destroyed.

28 Now when they heard it, they were ful of wrath, and cryed out, saying, Great *is* Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole citie was ful of confusion, and they rushed into the common place with one assent, & caught * Gaius, & * Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, and Pauls companions of his iourney.

Rom.16.23.
1.cor.1.14.
Col.4.10.

30 And when Paul would haue entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 Certaine also of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that he would not present him selfe in the common place.

32 Some therefore cryed one thing, and some another: for the assemblie was out of order, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And *some* of the companie drewe foorth Alexander, the Iewes thrusting him forwardes. Alexander then beckened with the hand, and would haue excused the matter to the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Iewe, there arose a shoute almost for the space of two houres, of all men crying, Great *is* Diana of the Ephesians.

35 Then the towne clarke when hee had stayed the people,

people, sayd, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is it that knoweth not howe that the citie of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of *the image* which came downe from Iupiter?

36 Seeing then that no man can speake against these things, ye ought to be appeased, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye haue brought hither these men, which haue neither committed sacrilege, neither doe blaspheme your goddesse.

38 Wherefore, if Demetrius and the craftes men which are with him, haue a matter against any man, the lawe is open, and there are Deputies: let them accuse one another.

39 But if ye inquire any thing concerning other matters, it may be determined in a lawfull assemblie.

40 For we are euen in ieopardie to be accused of this dayes sedition, forasmuch as there is no cause, whereby we may giue a reason of this concourse of people.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he let the assemblie depart.

CHAP. XX.

1 *Paul appointeth to goe to Macedonia:* 7 *In Troas preaching vntil midnight,* 9 *Eutychus fel downe dead out of a window:* 10 *he raiseth him to life.* 15 *At Myletum,* 17 *hauing called the Elders of Ephesus together,* 23 *he declareth what things shal come vpon him selfe,* 28 *and others.*

NOw after the tumult was appeased, Paul called the disciples vnto him, and embraced them, and departed to goe into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone through those partes, & had exhorted them with many wordes, he came into Grecia.

3 And hauing taried *there* three moneths, because the Iewes layd wayt for him, as he was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to returne through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berea, and of them of Thessalonica, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus, and of them of Asia, Tychicus, and Trophimus.

5 These went before, and taried for vs at Troas.

6 And we sailed forth from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleauened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fiue dayes, where we abode seuen dayes.

7 And the first day of the weeke, the disciples being come together to breake bread, Paul preached vnto them, ready

ready to depart on the morow, & continued the preach vnto midnight.

8 And there were many lightes in an vpper chamb where they were gathered together.

9 And there ſate in a window a certaine yong man med Eutychus, fallen into a deepe ſleepe: and as Paul long preaching, he ouercome with ſleepe, fell downe the third loft, and was taken vp dead.

10 But Paul went downe, and layd him ſelfe vpon and embraced him, ſaying, Trouble not your ſelues: for life is in him.

11 Then when *Paul* was come vp againe, and had bro ken bread, and eaten, hauing ſpoken a long while till dawning of the day, he ſo departed.

12 And they brought the boy aliue, and they were not a litle comforted.

13 ¶ Then we went before to ſhip, and ſailed vnto the *citie* Aſſos, that we might receiue Paul there: for ſo he appointed, and would him ſelfe goe a foote.

14 Now when he was come vnto vs to Aſſos, and we had receiued him, we came to Mitylenes.

15 And we ſailed thence, and came the next day ouer againſt Chios, and the next day we arriued at Samos, and taryed at Trogyllium: the next day we came to Miletum.

16 For Paul had determined to ſaile by Epheſus, because he would not ſpend the time in Aſia: for he hasted to be, if he could poſsible, at Hieruſalem, at the day of Pentecoſte.

17 ¶ Wherefore from Miletum, he ſent to Epheſus, and called the Elders of the Church.

18 Who when they were come to him, he ſayde vnto them, Ye know from the firſt day that I came into Aſia, after what maner I haue bene with you at all ſeaſons,

19 Seruing the Lord with all modeſtie, and with many teares, and tentations, which came vnto me by the lyings awayte of the Iewes,

20 And how I kept backe nothing that was profitable, but haue ſhewed you, and taught you openly and throughout euery houſe,

21 Witneſsing both to the Iewes, and to the Grecians the repentance toward God, and fayth toward our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

22 And now beholde, I goe bound in the ſpirit vnto Hieruſalem,

salem, and know not what things shall come vnto me

23 Saue that the holy Ghost witnesseth in euery citie, saying that bondes and afflictions abide me.

24 But I passe not at all, neither is my life deare vnto me, so that I may fulfill my course with ioy, and the ministration which I haue receiued of the Lord Iesus, to testifie the Gospel of the grace of God.

25 And nowe beholde, I know that henceforth ye all, among whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue kept nothing backe, but haue shewed you all the counsell of God.

28 Take heede therefore vnto your selues, and to all the flocke, whereof the holy Ghost hath made you Ouerseers, to feede the Church of God, which he hath purchased with that his owne blood.

29 For I knowe this, that after my departing shall grieuous wolues enter in among you, not sparing the flocke.

30 Moreouer of your owne selues shall men arise speaking peruerse things, to draw disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by *the space* of three yeres I ceased not to warne euery one, both night and day with teares.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, & to the worde of his grace, which is able to build further, & to giue you an inheritance, among al them which are sanctified.

33 I haue coueted no mans siluer nor gold, nor apparel.

34 Yea, ye know, that these hands haue ministred vnto my neceſsities, and to them that were with me. 1.*Cor.* 4.12.

35 I haue shewed you al things, how that so labouring, ye ought to support the weake, and to remember ỹ words of the Lord Iesus, howe that he said, It is a blessed thing to giue, rather then to receiue. 1.*Thes.* 2. 9. 2.*Thes.* 3.8.

36 And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled downe, and prayed with them all.

37 Then they wept all aboundantly, and fell on Pauls necke, and kissed him,

38 Being chiefly sory for the wordes which he spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him vnto the ship.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Paul goeth toward Hierusalem: 8 At Cesarea he talketh with Philippe the Euangelist: 10 Agabus foretelleth him of his bondes. 17 After he came to Hierusalem, 26 and into the Temple, 27 the Iewes laid handes on him: 32 Lysias the Captaine taketh him from them.

AND as we launched forth, & were departed from them, we came with a straight course vnto Coos, and the day folowing vnto the Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara.

2 And we founde a ship that went ouer vnto Phenice, and went aboard, and set forth.

3 And when we had discouered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed toward Syria, and arriued at Tyrus: for there the ship vnladed the burden.

4 And when we had founde disciples, we taried there seuen dayes. And they tolde Paul through the Spirit, that he should not goe vp to Hierusalem.

5 But when the dayes were ended, we departed and went our way, and they al accompanied vs with *their* wines and children, euen out of the citie: and we kneeling downe on the shore, prayed.

6 Then when we had embraced one another, we tooke ship, and they returned home.

7 And when we had ended the course from Tyrus, we arriued at Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day, Paul and we that were with him, departed, and came vnto Cesarea: and we entred into the house of * Philippe the Euangelist, which was one of the seuen *Deacons*, and abode with him. *Chap. 6. 5.*

9 Now he had foure daughters virgins, which did prophecie.

10 And as we taried there many dayes, there came a certaine Prophet from Iudea, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come vnto vs, he tooke Pauls girdle, and bound his owne hands and feete, and sayde, Thus sayth the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem bind the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we had heard these things, both we and other of the same place besought him that he woulde not goe vp to Hierusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, and said, What do ye weeping and

and breaking mine heart? For I am readie not to be bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus.

14 So when he woulde not be perswaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those dayes we trussed vp our fardels, and went vp to Hierusalem.

16 There went with vs also *certaine* of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an olde disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Hierusalem, the brethren receiued vs gladly.

18 And the next day Paul went in with vs vnto Iames, and all the Elders were there assembled.

19 And when he had embraced them, he told by order all things, that God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministration.

20 So when they heard it, they glorified God, and said vnto him, Thou seest, brother, howe many thousand Iewes there are which beleeue, and they are all zealous of the Lawe:

21 Now they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes, which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, and saiest, that they ought not to circumcise their sonnes, neither to liue *after* the customes.

22 What is then *to be done?* the multitude must needes come together: for they shall heare that thou art come.

23 Doe therefore this that we say to thee. We haue foure men, which haue made a vowe,

24 Them take, and purifie thy selfe with them, and contribute with them, that they may * shaue their heads: and all shall knowe, that those thinges, whereof they haue bene informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy selfe also walkest and keepest the Lawe. *Chap. 18. 18 num. 6. 18.*

25 For as touching the Gentiles, which beleeue, we haue written, and determined that they obserue no such thing, but that they keepe them selues from things offered to idoles, and from blood, and from that that is strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul tooke the men, and the next day was purified with them, and entred into the Temple, declaring the accomplishment of the dayes of the purification, vntil that an offering should be offered for euery one of them.

27 And when the ſeuen dayes were almoſt ended, the Iewes which were of Aſia (when they ſawe him in ỹ Temple) mooued all the people, and laid handes on him,

28 Crying, Men of Iſrael, helpe: this is the man that teacheth all men euery where againſt the people, and the Lawe, and this place: moreouer, he hath brought Greciens into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 For they had ſeene before Trophimus an Epheſian with him in the citie, whom they ſuppoſed that Paul had brought into the Temple.

30 Then all the citie was moued, and the people ranne together: and they tooke Paul and drewe him out of the Temple, and forthwith the doores were ſhut.

31 But as they went about to kill him, tydings came vnto the chiefe Captaine of the band, that all Hieruſalem was on an vproare.

32 Who immediatly tooke ſouldiers and Centurions, and ran downe vnto them: and when they ſawe the chiefe Captaine and the ſouldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chiefe Captaine came nere and tooke him, and commanded him to be bounde with two chaines, and demaunded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And one cried this, another that, among the people. So when he coulde not know the certaintie for the tumult, he commanded him to be lead into the caſtel.

35 And when he came vnto the grieces, it was ſo that he was borne of the ſouldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul ſhoulde haue bene lead into the caſtel, he ſaid vnto the chiefe Captaine, May I ſpeake vnto thee? Who ſaid, Canſt thou *ſpeake* Greeke?

38 Art not thou the Egyptian who before theſe dayes rayſed a ſedition, and lead out into the wilderneſſe foure thouſand men that were murtherers?

39 Then Paul ſayde, Doubtles I am a man which am a Iewe, and citizen of Tarſus, a famous citie of Cilicia, and I beſeech thee, ſuffer me to ſpeake vnto the people.

40 And when he had giuen him licence, Paul ſtoode on the grieces, and beckened with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made great ſilẽce, he ſpake vnto them in the Hebrewe tongue, ſaying,

CHAP.

1 *Paul yeeldeth a reason of his faith,* 22 *and the Iewes heare him a while:* 23 *But so soone as they cried out,* 24 *he is commanded to be scourged and examined,* 27 *and so declareth that he is a citizen of Rome.*

YE men, brethren and Fathers, heare my defence now towardes you.

2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence, and he sayd)

3 I am verely a man, *which am* a Iewe, borne in Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought vp in this citie at the feete of Gamaliel, and instructed according to the perfect maner of the Law of the Fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day.

4 And I persecuted this way vnto the death, binding and deliuering into prison both men and women.

5 As also the chiefe Priest doeth beare me witnesse, and all the companie of the Elders: of whom also I receiued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damascus to bring them which were there, bounde vnto Hierusalem, that they might be punished.

6 ¶And so it was, as I iourneyed and was come nere vnto Damascus about noone, that suddenly there shone from heauen a great light rounde about me.

7 So I fell vnto the earth, and heard a voyce, saying vnto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 Then I answered, Who art thou, Lorde? And he sayde to me, I am Iesus of Nazareth, whom thou persecutest.

9 Moreouer they that were with me, sawe in deede a light and were afraide: but they hearde not the voyce of him that spake vnto me.

10 Then I said, What shall I doe Lord? And the Lorde sayd vnto me, Arise, and goe into Damascus: and there it shalbe tolde thee of all thinges, which are appointed for thee to doe.

11 So when I coulde not see for the glorie of that light, I was lead by the hand of them that were with me, and came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias a godly man, as perteining to the Lawe, hauing good report of all the Iewes which dwelt there,

13 Came vnto me, and stoode, and saide vnto me, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight: and that same houre I looked

vpon him.

14 And he ſaid, The God of our fathers hath appoin-
thee, that thou ſhouldeſt knowe his will, and ſhoulde-
that Iuſt one, and ſhouldeſt heare the voyce of his mou-

15 For thou ſhalt be his witneſſe vnto all men of the
things, which thou haſt ſeene and heard.

16 Nowe therefore why tarieſt thou? Ariſe, and be
baptized, and waſh away thy ſinnes, in calling on the Name
of the Lord.

17 ¶And it came to paſſe, that when I was come a-
gaine to Hieruſalem, and prayed in the Temple, I was in a
traunce,

18 And ſawe him ſaying vnto me, Make haſte, and get
thee quickly out of Hieruſalem: for they will not receiue
thy witneſſe concerning me.

19 Then I ſaid, Lord, they knowe that I priſoned, and
beat in euery Synagogue them that beleeued in thee.

20 And when ỹ blood of thy martyr Steuen was ſhed,
I alſo ſtood by, and conſented vnto his death, and kept the
clothes of them that ſlew him.

21 Then he ſaid vnto me, Depart: for I will ſend thee
farre hence vnto the Gentiles.

22 ¶And they heard him vnto this worde, *but* then
they lift vp their voyces, and ſaide, Away with ſuch a fel-
lowe from the earth: for it is not meete that he ſhoulde
liue.

23 And as they cryed and caſt off their clothes, and
threwe duſt into the aire,

24 The chiefe captaine commaunded him to be lead
into the caſtel, and bade that he ſhould be ſcourged, and
examined, that he might knowe wherefore they cryed ſo
on him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul ſaid vnto
the Centurion that ſtood by, Is it lawful for you to ſcourge
one that is a Romane, and not condemned?

26 Now when the Centurion heard it, he went, & told
the chiefe captaine, ſaying, Take heede what thou doeſt: for
this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chiefe captaine came, and ſaid to him, Tel
me, art thou a Romane? And he ſaid, Yea.

28 And the chiefe captaine anſwered, With a great
ſumme obteined I this freedome. Then Paul ſayd, But I was
ſo borne.

29 Then

29 Then straighway they departed from him, which
shulde haue examined him: and the chiefe captaine also
was afraide, after he knewe that he was a Romane, and
that he had bound him.

30 On the next day, because he would haue knowen the
certaintie wherfore he was accused of the Iewes, he loosed
him from *his* bondes, and commanded the hie Priestes and
all their Councel to come *together*: and he brought Paul,
and set him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 *As Paul pleadeth his cause,* 2 *Ananias commaundeth*
them to smite him: 7 *Dissension among his accusers.* 11
God encourageth him. 14 *The Iewes laying waite for Paul,*
20 *is declared vnto the chiefe captaine:* 27 *He sendeth*
him to Felix the Gouernour.

AND Paul behelde earnestly the Councel, and sayde, Men
and brethren, I haue in all good conscience serued God
vntill this day.

2 Then the hie Priest Ananias commaunded them
that stoode by, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then said Paul to him, God will smite thee, thou whi-
ted wall: for thou sittest to iudge me according to the
Lawe, and transgressing the Lawe, commandest thou me to
be smitten?

4 And they that stoode by, saide, Reuilest thou Gods
hie Priest?

5 Then sayd Paul, I knew not, brethren, that he was the
hie Priest: for it is written, * Thou shalt not speake euill of *Exod.22.27*
the Ruler of thy people.

6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were of
the Sadduces, and the other of the Pharises, he cried in the
Councel, Men *and* brethren, * I am a Pharise, the sonne of *Chap.24.20*
a Pharise: I am accused of the hope and resurrection of the *philip.3.5.*
dead.

7 And when he had said this, there was a dissension be-
tweene the Pharises and the Sadduces, so that the multi-
tude was diuided.

8 *For the Sadduces say that there is no resurrection, *Mat.22.23.*
neither Angel, nor spirit: but the Pharises confesse both.

9 Then there was a great crie: and the Scribes of the
Pharises part rose vp, and stroue, saying, We finde none euil
in this man: but if a spirit or an Angel hath spoken to him,
let vs not fight against God.

10 And when there was a great diſſenſion, the chief captaine, feating leſt Paul ſhould haue bene pulled in peeces of them, commanded the ſouldiers to go downe, and take him from among them, & to bring him into the caſtel.

11 ¶ Now the night following the Lord ſtood by him, and ſayd, Be of good courage, Paul: for as thou haſt teſtified of me in Hieruſalem, ſo muſt thou beare witneſſe alſo at Rome.

12 And when the day was come, certaine of the Iewes made an aſſemblie, and bound themſelues with a curſe, ſaying, that they woulde neither eate nor drinke, till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then fourtie, which had made this conſpiracie.

14 And they came to the chiefe Prieſts & Elders, and ſaid, We haue bound our ſelues with a ſolemne curſe, that we will eate nothing, vntill we haue ſlaine Paul.

15 Now therefore, ye and the Councel ſignifie to the chiefe captaine, that he bring him foorth vnto you to morowe, as though ye would know ſomething more perfectly of him, and we, or euer he come nere, will be readie to kill him.

16 But when Pauls ſiſters ſonne heard of their laying awaite, he went, & entred into the caſtel, and tolde Paul.

17 And Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, and ſayd, Take this yong man hence vnto the chiefe captaine: for he hath a certaine thing to ſhewe him.

18 So he tooke him & brought him to the chiefe captaine, and ſaide, Paul the priſoner called me vnto him, and praied me to bring this yong man vnto thee, which hath ſome thing to ſay vnto thee.

19 Then the chiefe captaine tooke him by the hand, and went apart with him alone, and asked him, What haſt thou to ſhewe me?

20 And he ſayde, The Iewes haue conſpired to deſire thee, that thou wouldeſt bring forth Paul to morowe into the Councel, as though they woulde inquire ſomewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But let them not perſwade thee: for there lie in waite for him of them, more then fourtie men, which haue bound themſelues with a curſe, that they will neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and now are they ready, and waite for thy promes.

22 The

22 The chiefe captaine then let the yong man depart, and he had charged him to vtter it to no man, that he had shewed him these things.

[Greeke, *that thou hast shewed these things to me.*

23 And he called vnto him two certaine Centurions, saying, Make ready two hundreth souldiers that they may go to Cesarea, and horsemen three score and ten, and two hundreth with dartes, at the third houre of the night.

24 And let them make ready an horse that Paul beyng set on, may be brought safe vnto Felix the Gouernour.

25 And he wrote an epistle in this maner:

26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most noble Gouernour Felix sendeth greeting.

27 As this man was taken of the Iewes, & should haue bene killed of them, I came vpon them with the garison, & rescued him, perceiuing that he was a Romane.

28 And when I would haue knowen ỹ cause, wherfore they accused him, I brought him forth into their Councel.

29 *There* I perceiued that he was accused of questions of their Lawe, but had no crime worthie of death, or of bondes.

30 And when it was shewed me, howe that the Iewes layd wayte for the man, I sent *him* straightway to thee, and commanded his accusers to speake before thee the thinges that they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 And the next day, they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned vnto the Castel.

33 Now whē they came to Cesarea, they deliuered the Epistle to the Gouernor, and presented Paul also vnto him.

34 So when the Gouernour had read it, he asked of what prouince he was: and when he vnderstoode that he was of Cilicia,

35 I will heare thee, sayd he, when thine accusers also are come, and commanded him to be kept in Herods iudgement hall.

CHAP. XXIIII.

2 *Tertullus accuseth Paul.* 10 *He answereth for himselfe.* 25 *He preacheth Christ to the Gouernour and his wife.* 27 *Felix hopeth but in vayne, for euer a bribe, and also going from his office leaueth Paul in prison.*

NOw after fiue dayes, Ananias the hie Priest came down with the Elders, and *with* Tertullus a certaine oratour, which

which appeared before the Gouernour against Paul.

2 And when he was called foorth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that wee haue obtained great quietnes through thee, and that many worthie things are done vnto this nation through thy prouidence,

3 We acknowledge it wholy, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankes.

4 But that I be not tedious vnto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldest heare vs of thy courtesie a fewe words.

5 Certainly we haue found this man a pestilent fellow, & a mouer of sedition among all the Iewes throughout the world, & a chiefe mainteiner of the sect of the Nazarites.

6 And hath gone about to pollute the Temple: therefore we tooke him, and would haue iudged him according to our Lawe:

7 But the chiefe captaine Lysias came vpon vs, & with great violence tooke him out of our hands,

8 Commanding his accusers to come to thee: of whom thou mayest (if thou wilt enquire) knowe all these thinges whereof we accuse him.

9 And ỹ Iewes likewise affirmed, saying that it was so.

10 Then Paul, after that the gouernour had beckened vnto him that he should speake, answered, I doe the more gladly answere for my self, for as much as I know that thou hast bene of many yeres a iudge vnto this nation,

11 Seeing that thou mayest knowe, that there are but twelue dayes since I came vp to worship in Hierusalem.

12 And they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man, neither making vproare among the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the citie.

13 Neither can they proone the things, whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way (which they call heresie) so worshippe I the God of my fathers, beleeuing all thinges which are written in the Lawe and the Prophets,

15 And haue hope towards God, that the resurrection of the dead, which they themselues looke for also, shall be both of iust and vniust.

16 And herein I endeuour my selfe to haue alwayes a cleare conscience toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many yeres, I came and brought almes to my nation and offrings.

18 At

18 At what time, certaine Iewes of Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult.

19 Who ought to haue bene present before thee, and accuse me, if they had ought against me.

20 Or let these themselues say, if they haue founde any euill thing in me, while I stoode in the Councill,

21 Except *it be* for this one voyce, that I cried standing among them, Of the resurrection of the dead am I accused of you this day.

22 Nowe when Felix heard these thinges, he deferred them, & said, When I shall more perfectly know the things which concerne this waye, by the comming of Lysias the chiefe Captaine, I wil decise your matter.

23 Then he commanded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and that he shoulde haue ease, and that he shoulde forbid none of his acquaintance to minister vnto him, or to come vnto him.

24 ¶ And after certaine dayes, came Felix with his wife Drusilla, which was a Ieweesse, & he called forth Paul, and heard him of the faith in Christ.

25 And as he disputed of righteousnesse & temperance, and of the iudgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time, and when I haue conuenient time, I wil call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money shoulde haue bene giuen him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftener, and communed with him.

27 When two yeres were expired, Porcius Festus came into Felix roume: and *Felix* willing to get fauour of the Iewes, left Paul bound.

CHAP. XXV.

1 Festus succeeding Felix, 6 commandeth Paul to be brought forth. 11 Paul appealeth vnto Cesar. 14 Festus openeth Pauls matter to King Agrippa, 23 and bringeth him before him, 27 that he may vnderstand his cause.

WHen Festus was then come into the prouince, after three dayes he went vp from Cesarea vnto Hierusalē.

2 Then the high Priest, & the chiefe of the Iewes appeared before him against Paul: and they besought him,

3 And desired fauour against him, that he would sende for him to Hierusalem: and they layde waite to kill him by the way.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul shoulde bee kept at Cesarea,

Cesarea, and that he himself would shortly depart thi-

5 Let them therefore, sayde he, which among you a-able, come downe with vs: and if there be any wickedne-in the man, let them accuse him.

6 ¶Now when he had taried among them no more th-ten dayes, he went downe to Cesarea, & the next day sate in the iudgement seate, and commanded Paul to be brought.

7 And whē he was come, the Iewes which were com-from Hierusalem, stoode about him, and layd many & grie-uous complaints against Paul, whereof they could make no playne proofe,

8 Forasmuch as he answered, that he had neither offen-ded any thing against the law of the Iewes, neither against the temple, nor against Cesar.

9 Yet Festus willing to get fauour of the Iewes, answe-red Paul and said, Wilt thou go vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before me?

10 Then sayd Paul, I stand at Cesars iudgement seate, where I ought to be iudged: to the Iewes I haue done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I haue done wrong, or committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these thinges whereof they accuse me, no man, to pleasure them, can deliuer me to them: I appeale vnto Cesar.

12 Then when Festus had spoken with the Councel, he answered, Hast thou appealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou goe.

13 ¶And after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Ber-nice came downe to Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And when they had remained there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in prison by Felix,

15 Of whom whē I came to Hierusalem, the hie Priests and Elders of the Iewes informed me, and desired to haue iudgement against him.

16 To whom I answered, that it is not the maner of the Romanes for fauour to deliuer any man to the death, before that he which is accused, haue the accusers before him, and haue place to defend himselfe, concerning the crime.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without delay the day following I sate on the iudgement seate, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whome when the accusers stoode vp, they brought

no crime of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certaine questions against him of their own superstition, & of one Iesus which was dead, whome Paul affirmed to be alive.

20 And because I doubted of such maner of question, I asked him whether he would go to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things.

21 But because he appealed to be reserued to the examination of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, till I might send him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa sayd vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morow, said he, thou shalt heare him.

23 And on the morowe when Agrippa was come and Bernice with great pompe, & were entred into the Commō hall with the chiefe captaines and chiefe men of the citie, at Festus commandement Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus saide, King Agrippa, & all men which are present with vs, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue called vpon me, both at Hierusalem, and here, crying, that he ought not to liue any longer.

25 Yet haue I found nothing worthy of death, that he hath committed: neuertheles, seeing that he hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him.

26 Of whom I haue no certaine thing to write vnto my Lorde: wherefore I haue brought him forth vnto you, and specially vnto thee, King Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somewhat to write.

27 For me thinketh it vnreasonable to send a prisoner, and not to shew the causes which are *layde* against him.

CHAP. XXVI.

2 Paul in the presence of Agrippa, 4 declareth his life frō his childhood, 16 & his calling, 22 with such efficacie of words, 28 that almost he perswadeth him to Christianitie: 30 but he and his companie depart doing nothing in Pauls matter.

THen Agrippa sayde vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. So Paul stretched foorth the hande, and answered for himselfe.

2 I thinke my selfe happie, King Agrippa, because I shall answere this day before thee of all the things whereof I am accused of the Iewes.

3 Chiefly, because thou hast knowledge of al customes, and questions which are among the Iewes: wherfore, I beseeche thee, to heare me patiently.

4 As

4 As touching my life from *my* childehood, and how it was from the beginning among mine owne nation at Ieruſalem, know all the Iewes,

5 Which knew me heretofore, euen from mine elder (if they would teſtifie) that after the moſt ſtraite ſect of our religion I liued a Phariſe.

6 And nowe I ſtand and am accuſed for the hope of the promes made of God vnto our fathers.

7 Whereunto our twelue tribes inſtantly ſerning God day and night, hope to come: for the which hopes ſake, O King Agrippa, I am accuſed of the Iewes.

8 Why ſhoulde it be thought a thing incredible vnto you, that God ſhould rayſe againe the dead?

9 I alſo verely thought in my ſelfe, that I ought to do many contrarie thinges againſt the Name of IESVS of Nazareth.

Chap. 8, 3. 10 * Which thing I alſo did in Hieruſalem: for many of the Saintes I ſhut vp in priſon, hauing receiued authoritie of the high Prieſtes, & when they were put to death, I gaue *my* ſentence.

11 And I puniſhed them throughout all the Synagogues, and compelled them to blaſpheme, and being more mad againſt them, I perſecuted them, euen vnto ſtrange cities.

Chap. 9, 2. 12 At which time, euen as I went to * Damaſcus with authoritie, and commiſsion from the high Prieſts,

13 At midday, O King, I ſawe in the waye a light from heauen, paſsing the brightnes of the ſunne, ſhine rounde about me, and them which went with me.

14 So when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voyce ſpeaking vnto me, and ſaying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou mee? It is hard for thee to kicke againſt prickes.

15 Then I ſayd, Who art thou, Lord? And he ſaid, I am Ieſus whom thou perſecuteſt.

16 But riſe & ſtand vp on thy feete: for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpoſe, to appoint thee a miniſter and a witnes, both of the things which thou haſt ſeene, and of the things in the which I wil appeare vnto thee,

17 Deliuering thee from this people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I ſend thee,

18 To open their eyes, that they may turne from darkenes to light, & from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receiue forgiuenes of ſinnes, and inheritance among them,

which are sanctified by faith in me.

19 Wherefore, King Agrippa, I was not disobedient
vnto the heauenly vision,

20 But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, & at Hie- (*Chap. 9.22, 26. & 13.4*)
rusalem, and throughout all the coastes of Iudea, and *then* to
the Gentiles, that they should repent, and turne to God, and
do works worthy amendement of life.

21 For this cause the Iewes caught me in the *Temple, (*Chap. 21.30*)
and went about to kill me.

22 Neuertheless, I obteined helpe of God, and conti-
nue vnto this day, witnessing both to small and to great, say-
ing none other thinges, then those which the Prophets and
Moses did say should come,

23 *To wit*, that Christ should suffer, and that he should
be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shewe
light vnto this people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus answered for himselfe, Festus sayde
with a loude voyce, Paul, thou art besides thy selfe: much
learning doeth make thee mad.

25 But he sayde, I am not mad, O noble Festus, but I
speake the wordes of trueth and sobernes.

26 For the King knoweth of these things, before whom
also I speake boldly: for I am persuaded that none of these
thinges are hid from him: for this thing was not done in a
corner.

27 O King Agrippa, beleeuest thou the Prophetes? I
know that thou beleeuest.

28 Then Agrippa said vnto Paul, Almost thou persuadest
me to become a Christian.

29 Then Paul said, I would to God that not onely thou,
but also all that heare me to day, were both almost, & alto-
gether such as I am, except these bondes.

30 And when he had thus spoken, the King rose vp, and
the gouernour, and Bernice, and they that sate with them.

31 And when they were gone apart, they talked be-
tweene themselues, saying, This man doeth nothing wor-
thie of death, nor of bondes.

32 Then said Agrippa vnto Festus, This man might haue
bene loosed, if he had not appealed vnto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Paul 7. 9 foretelleth the peril of the viage, 11 but he is not beleeued. 14 They are tossed to & fro with the tempest, 21. 41 & suffer shipwrack: 34 yet all safe & sound 44 escape to land.

Nowe

NOwe when it was concluded, that we shoulde
Italie, they deliuered both Paul & certaine o
ners vnto a Centurion named Iulius, of the band of
2.Cor.11.25 2 And * we entred into a ship of Adramittium
sing to sayle by the coastes of Asia, and launched
had Aristarchus of Macedonia, a Thessalonian, wit
3 And the next daye wee arriued at Sidon: an
courteously intreated Paul, and gaue him liberte to
to his friends, that they might refresh him.
4 And from thence we launched, and sayled h
Cyprus, because the windes were contrarie.
5 Then sayled we ouer the sea by Cilicia, & Pam
and came to Mira, *a citie* in Lycia.
6 And there the Centurion found a ship of Alex
saylyng into Italie, and put vs therein.
7 And when we had sayled slowly many dayes, &
were come against Gnidum, because the winde suffe
not, we sayled hard by Candie, neere to Salmone.
8 And with much a do sayled beyond it, and came
a certaine place called the Faire hauens, neere vnto
which was the citie Lasea.
9 So when much time was spent, and sayling was
ieopardous, because also the Fast was nowe passed, Pa
horted *them*,
10 And sayd vnto them, Syrs, I see that this viage wi
with hurt and much damage, not of the lading and s
onely, but also of our liues.
11 Neuertheleſſe the Centurion beleeued rather
gouernour and the master of the shippe, then those thing
which were spoken of Paul.
12 And because the hauen was not commodious
winter in, many tooke counsell to depart thence, if by
meanes they might attaine to Phenice, *there* to wi
which is an hauen of Candie, and lyeth toward the Sou
west and by West, and Northwest and by West.
13 And when the Southerne winde blewe softly, th
supposing to obteine their purpose, loosed neerer, and
led by Candie.
14 But anon after, there arose by it a stormie winde
led Euroclydon.
15 And when the shippe was caught, & could not
the winde, we let her go, and were caried away.
16 And we ranne vnder a litle yle named Clauda

much a do to get the boat.

17 Which they tooke vp and vſed all helpe, vndergirding the ſhip, fearing leſt they ſhould haue fallen into Syrtes, they ſtrake ſaile, and ſo were caried.

18 The next day when we were toſſed with an exceeding tempeſt, they lightned the ſhip.

19 And the third day we caſt out with our own handes the furniture of the ſhip.

20 And when neither ſunne nor ſtarres in many dayes appeared, and no ſmall tempeſt lay vpon vs, all hope that we ſhould be ſaued, was then taken away.

21 But after long abſtinence, Paul ſtoode forth in the middes of them, and ſaid, Syrs, ye ſhould haue harkened to me, and not haue looſed from Candie: ſo ſhould ye haue gained this hurt and loſſe.

22 But nowe I exhort you to be of good courage: for there ſhalbe no loſſe of any mans life among you, ſaue of the ſhip only.

23 For there ſtoode by me this night the Angel of God, whoſe I am, and whom I ſerue,

24 Saying, Feare not, Paul: for thou muſt be brought before Ceſar: and loe, God hath giuen vnto thee freely all that ſaile with thee.

25 Wherefore, ſirs, be of good courage: for I beleeue God, that it ſhalbe ſo as it hath bene tolde me.

26 Howbeit, we muſt be caſt into a certaine yland.

27 And when the fourteenth night was come, as we were caried to and fro in the Adriaticall *ſea* about midnight, the ſhipmen deemed that ſome countrey approched vnto them,

28 And ſounded, and found it twentie fathoms; and when they had gone a litle further, they ſounded againe, and found fiftene fathoms.

29 Then fearing leſt they ſhould haue fallen into ſome rough places, they caſt foure ancres out of the sterne, and wiſhed that the day were come.

30 Nowe as the mariners were about to flee out of the ſhip, & had let downe the boate into the ſea vnder a colour as though they would haue caſt ancres out of the fore ſhip,

31 Paul ſaid vnto the Centurion and the ſouldiers, Except theſe abide in the ſhip, ye cannot be ſaſe.

32 Then the ſouldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let it fall away.

33 And when it began to be day, Paul exhorted them all to take meate, saying, This is the fourteenth day that ye haue taried, and continued fasting, receiuing nothing:

34 Wherefore I exhort you to take meat: for this is for your safegarde: for there shall not an heare fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he tooke bread, and gaue thankes to God, in presence of them all, and brake it, and began to eate.

36 Then were they all of good courage, and they also tooke meate.

37 Nowe we were in the ship in all two hundreth three score and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten ynough, they lightned the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the country, but they spied a certaine creeke with a bank, into the which they were minded (if it were possible) to thrust in the ship.

40 So when they had taken vp the ancres, they committed *the ship* vnto the sea, and loosed the rudder bondes, and hoised vp the maine saile to the winde, and dreweto the shore.

41 And when they fel into a place, where two seas met, they thrust in the shippe: and the forepart stucke fast, and could not be mooued, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waues.

42 Then the souldiers counsell was to kil the prisoners, lest any of them, when hee had swomme out, shoulde flee away.

43 But the Centurion willing to saue Paul, stayed them from *this* counsell, and commaunded that they that coulde swimme, should cast themselues first into the sea, and go out to land:

44 And the other, some on boardes, and some on certaine *pieces* of the shippe: and so it came to passe that they came all safe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

2 *The Barbarians courteste towardes Paul and his company.* 3 *A viper on Pauls hand:* 6 *Hee shaketh it off without harme:* 8 *Publius* 9 *and others are by him healed.* 11 *They depart from Melita,* 16 *and come to Rome.* 17 *Paul preacheth to the Iewes* 20 *the cause of his comming:* 23 *He preacheth Iesus* 30 *two yeere.*

And

And when they were come safe, then they knewe that the yle was called Melita.

2 And the Barbarians shewed vs no litle kindnes: for they kindled a fire, & receiued vs enery one, because of the present showre, and because of the colde.

3 And when Paul had gathered a nomber of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, & leapt on his hand.

4 Nowe when the Barbarians sawe the worme hang on his hand, they saide among themselues, This man surely is a murtherer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet Vengeance hath not suffred to liue.

5 But hee shooke off the worme into the fire, and felt no harme.

6 Howbeit they waited when he should haue swolne, or fallen downe dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and sawe no inconuenience come to him, they changed their mindes and said, That he was a God.

7 In the same quarters, the chiefe man of ỹ yle (whose name was Publius) had possessions: the same receiued vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteously.

8 And so it was, that the father of Publius lay sicke of the fener, & of a bloodie flixe: to whom Paul entred in, and when he prayed, he laid *his* handes on him, and healed him.

9 When this then was done, other also in the yle, which had diseases, came to him and were healed,

10 Which also did vs great honour: and when we departed, they laded vs with things necessarie.

11 ¶ Nowe after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the yle, whose badge was Castor and Pollux.

12 And when we arriued at Syracuse, we taried *there* three dayes.

13 And from thence we set a compasse, & came to Rhegium: and after one day, the Southwinde blewe, and we came the second day to Putioli:

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarie with them seuen dayes, and so we went toward Rome.

15 ¶ And from thence, when the brethren heard of vs, they came to meete vs at the Market of Appius, and at the three tauernes, whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and waxed bolde.

16 So when we came to Rome, the Cẽturion deliuered

the priſoners to the generall captaine: but Paul was ſuffred to dwel by himſelfe with a ſouldier that kept him.

17 And the third day after, Paul called the chiefe of the Iewes together: and when they were come, hee ſaide vnto them, Men *and* brethren, though I haue committed nothing againſt ỹ people, or lawes of the fathers, *yet* was I deliuered priſoner from Hieruſalem into the handes of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me goe, becauſe there was no cauſe of death in me.

19 But when the Iewes ſpake contrarie, I was conſtrained to appeale vnto Ceſar, not becauſe I had ought to accuſe my nation of.

20 For this cauſe therefore haue I called for you, to ſee *you*, and to ſpeake with *you*: for that hope of Iſraels ſake, I am bound with this chaine.

21 Then they ſaide vnto him, We neither receiued letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither came any of the brethren that ſhewed or ſpake any euil of thee.

22 But we will heare of thee what thou thinkeſt: for as concerning this ſecte, we knowe that euery where it is ſpoken againſt.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many vnto him into *his* lodging, to whom he expounded and teſtified the kingdome of God, and perſwading them thoſe things that concerne Ieſus, both out of the Lawe of Moſes, and out of the Prophets, from morning to night.

24 And ſome were perſwaded with the thinges which were ſpoken, and ſome beleeued not.

25 Therfore when they agreed not among themſelues, they departed, after that Paul had ſpoken one worde, *to wit*, Well ſpake the holy Ghoſt by Eſaias the Prophet vnto our Fathers,

Iſa.6.9. *mat.13.14.* *mar.4.12.* *luke 8.10.* *iohn 12.40.* *Rom.11.8.*

26 Saying, *Goe vnto this people, and ſay, By hearing ye ſhall heare, and ſhall not vnderſtand, and ſeeing ye ſhall ſee, and not perceiue.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed fat, and their eares are dull of hearing, and with their eyes haue they winked, leaſt they ſhould ſee with *their* eyes, and heare with *their* eares, and vnderſtand with *their* heartes, and ſhould returne that I might heale them.

28 Be it knowen therefore vnto you, that this ſaluation of God is ſent to the Gentiles, and they ſhall heare it.

29 And when hee had ſaide theſe thinges, the Iewes departed,

departed, and had great reasoning among themselues.

30 And Paul remained two yeres full in an house hired for himselfe, and receiued all that came in vnto him,

31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and teaching those things, which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with all boldnes of speache, without let.

THE EPISTLE OF THE APOSTLE PAVL TO THE ROMANES.

CHAP. I.

1 He first sheweth on what authoritie his Apostleship standeth: 15 Then he cõmendeth the Gospel, 16 by which God setteth out his power to those that are saued 17 by faith, 21 but were guiltie of wicked vnthankefulnes to God. 26 For which his wrath was worthily powred on them, 29 so that they ranne headlong into all kindes of sinne.

PAVL a seruant of IESVS CHRIST, called *to be* an Apostle, * put aparte *to preach* the Gospell of God, *Acts. 13. 1.*

2 (Which he had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy Scriptures)

3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lorde (which was made of the seede of Dauid, according to the flesh,

4 And declared mightily *to be* the Sonne of God, touching the Spirite of sanctification by the resurrection from the dead)

5 By whome we haue receiued grace and Apostleship (that obedience might be giuen vnto the faith) for his Name among all the Gentiles,

6 Among whom ye be also the called of Iesus Christ:

7 To all *you* that be at Rome beloued of God, called *to be* Saintes: Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

8 First I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, because your faith is published throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witnes, (whom I serue in my spirite in the Gospell of his Sonne) that without ceasing I make mention of you:

10 Alwayes in my prayers, beſeeching, that by ſome meanes, one time or other I might haue a proſperous iourney by the will of God, to come vnto you.

11 For I long to ſee you, that I might beſtowe among you ſome ſpirituall giſt, that you might be ſtrengthened:

12 That is, that I might be comforted together with you, through *our* mutuall faith, both yours and mine.

13 Nowe my brethren, I would that ye ſhould not be ignorant, how that I haue oftentimes purpoſed to come vnto you (but haue bene let hitherto) that I might haue ſome fruit alſo among you, as *I haue* among the other Gentiles.

14 I am detter both to the Grecians, and to the Barbarians, both to the wiſe men and vnto the vnwiſe.

15 Therefore, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the Goſpell to you alſo that are at Rome.

16 For I am not aſhamed of the Goſpel of Chriſt: for it is the power of God vnto ſaluation to euery one that beleeueth, to the Iewe firſt, and alſo to the Grecian.

17 For by it the righteouſnes of God is reueiled from faith to faith: as it is written, *The iuſt ſhall liue by faith. *Abak. 2. 4.

18 For the wrath of God is reueiled from heauen againſt all vngodlines, and vnrighteouſnes of men, which withholde the trueth in vnrighteouſnes,

19 For aſmuch as that, which may be knowen of God, is manifeſt in them: for God hath ſhewed it vnto them.

20 For the inuiſible thinges of him, that is, his eternall power and Godhead, are ſeene by ỹ creation of the world, being conſidered in *his* workes, to the intent that they ſhould be without excuſe:

21 Becauſe that when they knewe God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankefull, but became vaine in their thoughts, & their fooliſh heart was ful of darkenes.

22 When they profeſſed themſelues to be wiſe, they became fooles.

23 For they turned the glory of the incorruptible God to the ſimilitude of the image of a corruptible man, and of birdes, and foure footed beaſtes, and of creeping things.

24 Wherefore alſo God gaue them vp to their hartes luſtes, vnto vncleannes, to defile their owne bodies betweene themſelues:

25 Which turned the trueth of God vnto a lie, & worſhipped and ſerued the creature, forſaking the Creator, which is bleſſed for euer, Amen.

26 For

26 For this cause God gaue them vp vnto vile affections: for euen their women did change the natural vse into that which is against nature.

27 And likewise also the men left the natural vse of the woman, and burned in their lust one towarde another, and man with man wrought filthines, & receiued in themselues such recompence of their errour, as was meete.

28 For as they regarded not to acknowledge God, *euen* so God deliuered them vp vnto a reprobate minde, to doe those things which are not conuenient,

29 Being full of all vnrighteousnes, fornication, wickednes, couetousnes, maliciousnes, full of enuie, of murther, of debate, of deceite, taking all thinges in the euill part, whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, doers of wrong, proude, boasters, inuenters of euil thinges, disobedient to parents, without vnderstanding, couenant breakers, without natural affection, such as can neuer be appeased, mercilesse.

31 Which men, though they knew ỹ Lawe of God, how that they which commit such thinges, are worthie of death, *yet* not onely do ỹ same, but also fauour them that do them.

CHAP. II.

1 *He bringeth all before the iudgement seat of God.* 12 *The excuse, that the Gentiles might pretend* 14 *of ignorance, he taketh quite away.* 17 *He vrgeth the Iewes with the written Lawe,* 23 *in which they boasted:* 27 *And so maketh both Iewe and Gentile alike.*

THerefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoeuer thou art that condemnest: for in that that thou condemnest another, thou condemnest thy selfe; for thou that condemnest, doest the same things.

2 But we know that ỹ iudgement of God is according to trueth, against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O thou man, that condemnest them which do such thinges, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the iudgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his bountifulnes, and patience, and long sufferance, not knowing that the bountifulnes of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But thou, after thine hardenes, and heart that cannot repent, * heapest vp as a treasure vnto thy selfe wrath against the day of wrath, and of the declaration of the iust iudgement of God, *Iam.5.3.

*Pſal.*62.12. *mat.*16.27. *reuel.*22.12. 6 *Who will rewarde euery man according to his workes:

7 *That is*, to them which through patiẽce in well doing, ſeeke glory, and honour, and immortalitie, euerlaſting life:

8 But vnto them that are contentious and diſobey the trueth, & obey vnrighteouſnes, *ſhalbe* indignation & wrath.

9 Tribulation and anguiſh *ſhalbe* vpon the ſoule of euerie man that doeth euill: of the Iewe firſt, and *alſo* of the Grecian.

10 But to euerie man that doeth good, *ſhalbe* glorie, and honour, and peace, to the Iewe firſt, and *alſo* to the Grecian.

11 For there is no reſpect of perſons with God.

12 For as many as haue ſinned without the Lawe, ſhall periſh alſo without the Lawe: and as many as haue ſinned in the Lawe, ſhalbe iudged by the Lawe,

13 (For the hearers of the Lawe *are* not righteous before God: but the doers of the Lawe ſhalbe iuſtified.

14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Lawe, do by nature the things *contained* in the Lawe, they hauing not the Lawe, are a Lawe vnto themſelues,

15 Which ſhew the effect of the Lawe written in their hearts, their cõſcience alſo bearing witnes, & their thoughts accuſing one another, or excuſing,)

16 At the day when God ſhal iudge the ſecrets of men by Ieſus Chriſt, according to my Goſpell.

17 ¶ Beholde, thou art called a Iewe, and reſteſt in the Lawe, and glorieſt in God,

18 And knoweſt *his* will, and ‖ trieſt the things that diſſent from it, in that thou art inſtructed by the Lawe:

‖ Or alloweſt the things that are excellent.

19 And perſwadeſt thy ſelfe that thou art a guide of the blinde, a light of them which *are* in darkenes,

20 An inſtructer of them which lacke diſcretion, a teacher of the vnlearned, which haſt the forme of knowledge, and of the trueth in the Lawe.

21 Thou therefore, which teacheſt another, teacheſt thou not thy ſelfe? thou that preacheſt, A man ſhould not ſteale, doeſt thou ſteale?

22 Thou that ſayeſt, A man ſhould not commit adulterie, doeſt thou cõmit adulterie? thou that abhorreſt idoles, committeſt thou ſacrilege?

23 Thou that glorieſt in the Lawe, through breaking the Lawe, diſhonoureſt thou God?

24 For

24 For the Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, * as it is written. *Isa.52.5.*

25 For circumcision verely is profitable, if thou doe the Law: but if thou be a transgressour of the Law, thy circumcision is made vncircumcision. *Ezek.36.20.*

26 Therfore if the vncircumcision keepe the ordinances of the Law, shal not his vncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

27 And shal not vncircumcision which is by nature (if it keepe the Law) condemne thee which by the letter and circumcision art a transgressour of the Lawe?

28 For he is not a Iewe, which is one outward: neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh.

29 But he is a Iewe which is one within, and the circumcision is of the heart, in the spirit, not in the letter, whose prayse is not of men, but of God.

CHAP. III.

1 He giueth the Iewes some preferment, for the couenants sake, 4 but yet such, as wholy dependeth on Gods mercie. 9 That both Iewes and Gentiles are sinners, 11 he proueth by Scripture: 19 and shewing the vse of the Lawe, 28 He concludeth that we are iustified by fayth.

WHat is then the preferment of the Iewe? or what is the profite of circumcision?

2 Much euery maner of way: for chiefly, because vnto them were of credite committed the oracles of God.

3 For what, though some did not beleeue: shall their vnbeliefe make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, and euery man a lyar, as it is written, That thou mightest be iustified in thy wordes, and ouercome, when thou art iudged.

5 Now if our vnrighteousnes commend the righteousnes of God, what shal we say? Is God vnrighteous which punisheth? (I speake as a man.)

6 God forbid: els how shal God iudge the world?

7 For if the verity of God hath more abounded through my lye vnto his glorie, why am I yet condemned as a sinner?

8 And (as we are blamed, and as some affirme that we say) why doe we not euill, that good may come thereof? whose damnation is iust.

9 What then? are we more excellent? No, in no wise: for we haue alreadie prooued, that all, both Iewes & Gentiles are vnder sinne,

10 As

Pſal.14.1, 3.and 53. 1,3. 10 As it is written, * There is none righteous, no not one.

11 There is none that vnderſtandeth: there is none that ſeeketh God.

12 They haue all gone out of the way: they haue bene made altogether vnprofitable: there is none that doeth good, no not one.

Pſal.5.10. Pſal.140.3. 13 * Their throat is an open ſepulchre: they haue vſed their tongues to deceite: * the poyſon of aſpes *is* vnder their lippes.

Pſal.10.7. 14 * Whoſe mouth is ful of curſing and bitternes.

Iſai.59.7. 15 * Their feete are ſwift to ſhead blood.

16 Deſtruction and calamitie *are* in their wayes,

17 And the way of peace they haue not knowen.

Pſal.36.1. 18 * The feare of God is not before their eyes.

19 Now we know that whatſoeuer the Lawe ſaieth, it ſayth it to them which are vnder the Law, that euery mouth may be ſtopped, and all the world be ſubiect to the iudgement of God.

20 Therefore by the workes of the Law ſhal no fleſh be iuſtified in his ſight: for by the Lawe *commeth* the knowledge of ſinne.

21 But now is the righteouſnes of God made manifeſt without the Lawe, hauing witneſſe of the Law and of the Prophets,

22 *To wit*, the righteouſnes of God by the faith of Ieſus Chriſt, vnto all, and vpon all that beleeue.

23 For there is no difference: for all haue ſinned, and are depriued of the glorie of God,

24 And are iuſtified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Chriſt Ieſus,

25 Whome God hath ſet forth *to be* a reconciliation through faith in his blood to declare his righteouſnes, by the forgiuenes of the ſinnes that are paſſed,

26 Through the patience of God, to ſhewe at this time his righteouſnes, that he might be iuſt, and a iuſtifier of him which is of the fayth of Ieſus.

27 Where is then the reioycing? It is excluded. By what Law? of workes? Nay: but by the Law of fayth.

28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is iuſtified by fayth without the workes of the Lawe.

29 *God*, is he the God of the Iewes onely, and not of the Gentiles alſo? Yes, euen of the Gentiles alſo.

30 For

30 For it is one God who ſhall iuſtifie circumciſion of faith, and vncircumciſion through fayth.

31 Doe we then make the Lawe of none effect through faith? God forbid: yea, we eſtabliſh the Lawe.

CHAP. IIII.

He proueth that which he ſayd before of faith, by the example of Abraham, 3. 6 and the teſtimonie of the Scriptures: and ten times in the chapter he beateth vpon this worde imputation.

WHat ſhal we ſay then, that Abraham our father hath found concerning the fleſh?

2 For if Abraham were iuſtified by workes, he hath wherein to reioyce, but not with God.

3 For what ſayeth the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, and it was counted to him for righteouſnes.

4 Now to him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour, but by dette:

5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeueth in him that iuſtifieth the vngodly, his fayth is counted for righteouſneſſe.

6 Euen as Dauid declareth the bleſſednes of the man, vnto whome God imputeth righteouſnes without workes, ſaying,

7 Bleſſed *are* they, whoſe iniquities are forgiuen, and whoſe ſinnes are couered.

8 Bleſſed *is* ỹ man, to whom the Lord imputeth not ſinne.

9 *Came* this bleſſednes then vpon the circumciſion *only*, or vpon the vncircumciſion alſo? For we ſay, that faith was imputed vnto Abraham for righteouſnes.

10 How was it then imputed? when he was circumciſed, or vncircumciſed? not when he was circumciſed, but when he was vncircumciſed.

11 After, he receiued the ſigne of circumciſion, *as* the ſeale of the righteouſnes of the faith which he had, when he was vncircumciſed, that he ſhould be the father of all them that beleeue, not being circumciſed, that righteouſnes might be imputed to them alſo,

12 And the father of circumciſion, not vnto them only which are of the circumciſion, but vnto them alſo that walke in the ſteppes of the faith of our father Abraham, *which he had* when he was vncircumciſed.

13 For the promiſe that he ſhould be the heire of the world, was not *giuen* to Abraham, or to his ſeede, through the

the Lawe, but through the righteousnes of fayth.

14 For if they which are of the Lawe, *be* heires, fayth is made voyde, and the promise is made of none effect.

15 For the Law causeth wrath: for where no Lawe is, there *is* no transgression.

16 Therefore *it is* by fayth, that *it might come* by grace, and the promise might be sure to all the seede, not to that onely which is of the Lawe: but also to that which is of the fayth of Abraham, who is the father of vs all.

17 (As it is written, I haue made thee a father of many nations) *euen* before God whom he beleeued, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those thinges which be not, as though they were.

18 Which *Abraham* aboue hope, beleeued vnder hope, that he should be the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken *to him*, So shal thy seede be.

19 And he not weake in the faith, considered not his owne body, which was now dead, being almost an hundreth yeere olde, neither the deadnes of Saras wombe.

20 Neither did hee doute of the promise of GOD through vnbeliefe, but was strengthened in the fayth, and gaue glorie to God,

21 Being fully assured that he which had promised, was also able to doe it.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousnesse.

23 Now it is not written for him onely, that it was imputed to him for righteousnes,

24 But also for vs, to whom it shalbe imputed *for righteousnesse*, which beleeue in him that raised vp Iesus our Lorde from the dead,

25 Who was deliuered *to death* for our sinnes, and is risen againe for our iustification.

CHAP. V.

1 *He amplifieth* 2 *Christes righteousnes, which is laid holde on by fayth,* 5 *who was giuen for the weake,* 8 *and sinfull.* 14 *He compareth Christ with Adam,* 17 *Death with Life,* 20 *and the Lawe with Grace.*

THen being iustified by fayth, we haue peace toward God through our Lord Iesus Christ.

Ephe. 2. 18. 2 *By whom also through fayth, we haue had this accesse into this grace, wherein we stand, and reioyce vnder the hope of the glory of God.

3 Neither

3 Neither *that* onely, but alſo we * reioyce in tribulati- *Jam.1.2.*
on, knowing that tribulation bringeth forth patience,
4 And patience experience, and experience hope,
5 And hope maketh not aſhamed, becauſe the loue of God is ſhed abroad in our hearts by the holy Ghoſt, which is giuen vnto vs.
6 For Chriſt, when we were yet of no ſtrength, at *his* time, dyed for the * vngodly. *Heb.9.14.*
7 Doutles, one wil ſcarce die for a righteous man: but *1.pet.3.18.*
yet for a good man it may be that one dare die.
8 But God ſetteth out his loue towardes vs, ſeeing that while we were yet ſinners, Chriſt died for vs.
9 Much more then, being now iuſtified by his blood, we ſhalbe ſaued from wrath through him.
10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Sonne, much more being reconciled, we ſhalbe ſaued by his life,
11 And not only *ſo*, but we alſo reioyce in God through our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, by whom we haue now receiued the atonement.
12 Wherefore, as by one man ſinne entred into the world, and death by ſinne, and ſo death went ouer all men: in whom all men haue ſinned.
13 For vnto the time of the Law was ſinne in the world, but ſinne is not imputed, while there is no Lawe.
14 But death reigned from Adam to Moſes, euen ouer them alſo that ſinned not after the like maner of the tranſgreſsion of Adam, which was the figure of him that was to come.
15 But yet the gift is not ſo, as is the offence: for if through the offence of that one, many be dead, much more the grace of GOD, and the gift by grace, which is by one man Ieſus Chriſt, hath abounded vnto many.
16 Neither is the gift *ſo*, as *that which entred in* by one that ſinned: for the ſault *came* of one *offence* vnto condemnation; but the gift *is* of many offences to iuſtification.
17 For if by the offence of one, death reigned through one, much more ſhal they which receyue that aboundance of grace, and of that gift of that righteouſnes, reigne in life through one, *that is*, Ieſus Chriſt.
18 Likewiſe then as by the offence of one, *the fault came* on all men to condemnation, ſo by the iuſtifying of one, *the benefite abounded* toward all men to the iuſtification of life.
19 For

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made
sinners, so by that obedience of that one shall many also be
made righteous.

20 Moreouer the Lawe entred thereupon that the of-
fence should abound: neuertheles, where sinne abounded,
there grace abounded much more:

21 That as sinne had reigned vnto death, so might
grace also reigne by righteousnes vnto eternal life, through
Iesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

1 *He commeth to sanctification, without which, that no man
putteth on Christes righteousnesse, he proueth 4 by an argu-
ment taken of Baptisme: 12 and thereupon exhorteth
to holinesse of life, 16 briefely making mention of the Law
transgressed.*

WHat shall we say then? Shall we continue still in sinne,
that grace may abound? God forbid.

2 How shal we, that are dead to sinne, liue yet therein?

Gala.3.27. 3 Know ye not, that * all we which haue bene baptized
into Iesus Christ, haue bene baptized into his death?

Col.2.12. 4 * We are buried then with him by baptisme into his
death, that like as Christ was raised vp from the dead to
Ephe.4.23. the glorie of the Father, so we also should * walke in new-
Coloss.3.8. nes of life.

heb.12.1. 5 * For if we be planted with him to the similitude of
1.pet.2.1. his death, euen so shall we be *to the similitude* of his resur-
2.Cor.6.14. rection,

2.tim.2.11. 6 Knowing this, that our olde man is crucified with
him, that the body of sinne might be destroyed, that hence-
forth we should not serue sinne.

7 For he that is dead, is freed from sinne.

8 Wherefore, if we be dead with Christ, we beleeue
that we shal liue also with him,

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dy-
eth no more: death hath no more dominion ouer him.

10 For in that he died, he died once to sinne: but in that
he liueth, he liueth to God.

11 Likewise thinke ye also, that ye are dead to sinne, but
are aliue to God in Iesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sinne reigne therefore in your mortal body,
that ye should obey it in the lustes thereof.

13 Neither giue ye your members *as* weapons of vn-
righteousnes vnto sinne: but giue your selues vnto God, as
they

that are aliue from the dead, and *giue* your members
weapons of righteousnes vnto God.

14 For sinne shal not haue dominion ouer you: for ye
are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace.

15 What then? shal we sinne, because we are not vn-
der the Law, but vnder grace? God forbid.

16 *Know ye not, that to whomsoeuer ye giue your *Iohn 8.34.
selues as seruants to obey, his seruants ye are to whom ye 2.pet.2.19.
obey, whether it be of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vn-
to righteousnes?

17 But God *be* thanked, that ye haue bene the seruants
of sinne, but ye haue obeyed from the heart vnto the forme
of the doctrine, whereunto ye were deliuered.

18 Being then made free from sinne, ye are made the
seruants of righteousnes.

19 I speake after the maner of man, because of the infir-
mitie of your flesh: for as ye haue giuen your members ser-
uants to vncleannes and to iniquitie, to *commit* iniquitie, so
now giue your members seruants vnto righteousnesse in
holinesse.

20 For when ye were the seruants of sinne, ye were
free from righteousnes.

21 What fruite had ye then in those things, whereof ye
are now ashamed? For the end of those things *is* death.

22 But now being freed from sinne, and made seruants
vnto God, ye haue your fruite in holines, and the end, euer-
lasting life.

23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God
is eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lorde.

CHAP. VII.

*1 He declareth what it is, to be no more vnder the Law, 2 by
an example taken of the Lawe of marriage: 7. 12 And
least the Lawe should seeme faultie, 14 he prooueth, that
our sinne is the cause, 13 that the same is an occasion of
death, 17 which was giuen vs, vnto life: 21 He setteth out
the battaile betweene the flesh and the spirit.*

KNowe ye not, brethren, (for I speake to them that know
the Law) that the Lawe hath dominion ouer a man as
long as he liueth?

2 *For the woman which is in subiection to a man, is *1.Cor.7.39.
bound by the Law to the man, while he liueth: but if the
man be dead, she is deliuered from the Law of the man.

3 So then, if while the man liueth, she take another
man,

Mat.5.32. man, she shall be called an * adultéresse: but if the ... dead, she is free from the Lawe, so that she is not ... téresse, though she take another man.

4 So ye, my brethren, are dead also to the Lawe ... body of Christ, that ye should be vnto an other, even ... him that is raised vp from the dead, that we should ... forth fruite vnto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the affections of ... which were by the Law, had force in our members, to ... forth fruite vnto death.

6 But now we are deliuered from the Lawe, he ... dead in whome we were holden, that we should ser... newnes of Spirit, and not in the oldenes of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? *Is* the Law sinne? God ... bid. Nay, I knew not sinne, but by the Lawe: for I ... *Exod.20.17.* knowen lust, except the Law had sayd, * Thou shalt ... *deut.5.21.*

8 But sinne tooke an occasion by the commande... and wrought in me all maner of concupiscence: for ... out the Lawe sinne *is* dead.

9 For I once was aliue, without the Law: but when ... commandement came, sinne reuiued,

10 But I died: and the same commandement which ... *ordeined* vnto life, was found *to be* vnto me vnto death.

11 For sinne tooke occasion by the commandeme... and deceiued me, and thereby slew *me*.

1.Tim.1.8. 12 Wherefore the Law *is* * holy, and that comma... ment *is* holy, and iust, and good.

13 Was that then which is good, made death ... me? God forbid: but sinne, that it might appeare ... wrought death in me by that which is good, that ... might be out of measure sinful by the commandement.

14 For we know that the Law is spiritual, but I am ... nall, solde vnder sinne.

15 For I alowe not that which I do: for what I would ... that doe I not: but what I hate, that doe I.

16 If I doe then that which I would not, I consent ... the Law, that *it is* good.

17 Now then, it is no more I, that doe it, but sinne ... dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me, that is, in my flesh, dwe... no good thing: for to wil is present with me: but I fin... meanes to performe that which is good.

19 For I doe not the good thing, which I would,

the euil, which I would not, that doe I.

20 Now if I doe that I woulde not, it is no more I that doe it, but the sinne that dwelleth in me.

21 I finde then that when I woulde doe good, I am thus yoked, that euill is present with me.

22 For I delite in the Lawe of God, concerning the inner man:

23 But I see another lawe in my members, rebelling against the lawe of my minde, and leading me captiue vnto the lawe of sinne, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am, who shal deliuer me frō the bodie of this death!

25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord. Then I my selfin my minde serue the Law of God, but in my flesh the lawe of sinne.

CHAP VIII.

1 *He concludeth that there is no condemnation to them, who are grafted in Christ through his Spirit,* 3 *howsoeuer they be as yet burdened with sinnes:* 9 *for they liue through that Spirit,* 14 *whose testimonie* 15 *driueth away all feare,* 28 *and relieueth our present miseries.*

NOw then there *is* no condemnation to them that are in Christ Iesus, which walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the Lawe of the Spirit of life, *which is* in Christ Iesus, hath freed me from the lawe of sinne and of death.

3 For (that that was impossible to the Lawe, inasmuch as it was weake, because of the flesh) God sending his owne Sonne, in the similitude of sinfull flesh, and for sinne, condemned sinne in the flesh,

4 That that righteousnesse of the Lawe might be fulfilled in vs, which walke not after ỹ flesh, but after ỹ Spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, sauour the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the thinges of the Spirit.

6 For the wisedome of the flesh *is* death: but the wisedome of the Spirit *is* life and peace,

7 Because the wisedome of the flesh *is* enimitie against God: for it is not subiect to the Lawe of God, neither in deede can be.

8 So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God.

9 Now ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, because the Spirit of God dwelleth in you: but if any man hath not

not the Spirit of Christ, the same is not his.

10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead, because of sinne: but the Spirit *is* life for righteousnes sake.

11 But if the Spirit of him that raised vp Iesus from the dead, dwell in you, he that raised vp Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies, by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore brethren, we are detters not to the flesh, to liue after the flesh:

13 For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye mortifie the deedes of the body by the Spirit, ye shall liue.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.

15 For ye haue not receiued the Spirit of bondage to feare againe: but ye haue receiued the Spirit of adoption, whereby we crye Abba, Father.

16 The same Spirit beareth witnesse with our Spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 If *we be* children, *we are* also heires, euen the heires of God, and heires annexed with Christ: if so be that we suffer with him, that we may also be glorified with him.

18 For I count that the afflictions of this present time *are* not worthie of the glory, which shalbe shewed vnto vs.

19 For the feruent desire of the creature wayteth when the sonnes of God shalbe reueiled,

20 Because the creature is subiect to vanitie, not of it owne will, but by reason of him, which hath subdued it vnder hope,

21 Because the creature also shall be deliuered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious libertie of the sonnes of God.

22 For we know that euery creature groneth with vs also, and trauaileth in paine together vnto this present.

23 And not onely *the creature*, but we also which haue the first fruites of ỹ Spirit, euen we do sighe in our selues, waiting for the adoption, *euen* ỹ *redemption of our body.

Luke 21.28

24 For we are saued by hope: but hope that is seene, is not hope: for how can a man hope for that which he seeth?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, we doe with patience abide for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we knowe not what to pray as we ought: but the Spirit it selfe maketh request for vs with sighes, which can not be expressed.

expressed.

27 But he that searcheth the heartes, knoweth what is the meaning of the Spirit: for he maketh request for the Saintes, according to *the will of* God.

28 Also we knowe that all thinges worke together for the best vnto them that loue God, euen to them that are called of *his* purpose.

29 For those which he knewe before, he also predestinate to be made like to the image of his Sonne, that he might be the first borne among many brethren.

30 Moreouer whom he predestinate, them also he called, and whom he called, them also he iustified, and whom he iustified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these thinges? If God be on our side, who *can be* against vs?

32 Who spared not his owne Sonne, but gaue him for vs all *to death*, how shall he not with him, giue vs all things also?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods chosen? *it is* God that iustifieth,

34 Who shal condemne? *it is* Christ which is dead, yea or rather, which is risen againe, who is also at the right hand of God, and maketh request also for vs.

35 Who shall separate vs from the loue of Christ? shall tribulation or anguish, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill, or sworde?

36 As it is written, * For thy sake are we killed all day long: we are counted as sheepe for the slaughter. *Psal.44.22.*

37 Neuertheles, in all these thinges we are more then conquerours through him that loued vs.

38 For I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shall be able to separate vs from the loue of God, which is in Christ Iesus our Lord.

CHAP. IX.

1 *He answereth an obiection, that might be brought on the Iewes behalfe,* 7 *and telleth of two sortes of Abrahams children,* 15 *and that God worketh all things in this matter according to his will,* 20 *euē as the potter doth.* 24.30 *He proueth aswel the calling of the Gentiles,* 31 *as also the reiecting of the Iewes,* 25.27 *by the testimonies of the Prophets.*

I Say the trueth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience bearing me witnesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I haue great heauinesse, and continuall sorowe in mine heart.

3 For I would wishe my selfe to be separate frō Christ, for my brethren that are my kinsemen according to the flesh,

4 Which are the Israelites, to whome *pertaineth* the
Chap.2.17. adoption, and the glorie, and the * Couenants, and the gi-
ephe.2.12. uing of the Law, and the seruice *of God*, and the promises:

5 Of whom *are* the fathers, and of whom concerning the flesh, Christ *came*, who is God ouer all, blessed for euer, Amen.

Chap.2.28. 6 * Notwithstanding it can not be that the worde of God shoulde take none effect: for all they are not Israel, which are of Israel:

7 Neither *are they* all children, because they are the
Gene.21.12 seede of Abraham: but, * In Isaac shall thy seede be called:
hebr.11.18. 8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh, are
Galat.4.28. not the children of God: but the * children of the promes, are counted for the seede.

Gene.18.10 9 For this is a worde of promes, * In this same time will I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne.

Gene.25.21. 10 Neither *he* onely *felt this*, but also * Rebecca when she had conceiued by one *euen* by our father Isaac.

11 For yer *the children* were borne, and when they had neither done good nor euill (that the purpose of God might remaine according to election, not by workes, but by him that calleth)

Gen.25.23. 12 It was said vnto her, * The elder shall serue the yonger.

Malac.1.2. 13 As it is written, * I haue loued Iacob, and haue hated Esau:

14 What shall we say then? Is there vnrighteousnesse with God? God forbid.

Exo.33.19. 15 For he saith to Moses, * I will haue mercie on him, to whom I will shew mercie: and will haue compassion on him, on whom I will haue compassion.

16 So then *it is* not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that sheweth mercie.

Exod.9.16. 17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharao, * For this same purpose haue I stirred thee vp, that I might shewe my power in thee, and that my Name might be declared throughout

out all the earth.

18 Therefore he hath mercie on whom he will, and whom he will, he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then vnto me, Why doeth he yet complaine? for who hath resisted his will?

20 But, O man, who art thou which pleadest against God? shall the *thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? *Isai.45.9.

21 *Hath not the potter power of the clay to make of the same lumpe one vessell to honour, and another vnto dishonour? *Iere.18.6.

22 *What* and if God would, to shewe his wrath, and to make his power knowen, suffer with long patience the vessels of wrath, prepared to destruction?

23 And that he might declare the riches of his glorie vpon the vessels of mercie, which he hath prepared vnto glorie?

24 Euen vs, whom he hath called, not of the Iewes only, but also of the Gentiles,

25 As he saith also in Osee, *I wil cal them, My people, which were not my people: and her, Beloued, which was not beloued. *Hose.2.23. 1.pet.2.10.

26 And it shalbe in the place where it was saide vnto them, *Ye are not my people, that there they shall be called, The children of the liuing God. *Hose.1.10.

27 Also Esaias cryeth concerning Israel, *Though the nomber of the children of Israel were as the sande of the sea, *yet* shall *but* a remnant be saued. *Isa.10.21.

28 For he will make his account, and gather it into a short summe with righteousnes: for the Lord will make a short count in the earth.

29 *And as Esaias saide before, Except the Lorde of hostes had left vs a seede, we had bene made as Sodom, and had bene like to Gomorrha. *Isa.1.9.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not righteousnes, haue attained vnto righteousnes, euen the righteousnesse which is of faith.

31 But Israel which folowed the Law of righteousnes, could not attaine vnto the Law of righteousnesse.

32 Wherefore? Because *they sought it* not by faith, but as *it were* by the workes of the Lawe: for they haue stumbled at the stumbling stone, *Psal.118.22.Isa 8.14 & 28.16.

33 As it is written, *Beholde, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, *1.pet.2.6.

ſtone, and a rocke to make men fall: and euery one that beleeueth in him, ſhall not be aſhamed.

CHAP. X.

1 He handleth the effects of election, 3 that ſome refuſe, and ſome embrace 4 Chriſt, who is the ende of the Lawe. 15 He ſheweth that Moſes foretolde the calling of the Gentiles, 20 and Eſaias the hardening of the Iewes.

BRethren, mine heartes deſire and prayer to God for Iſrael is, that they might be ſaued.

2 For I beare them recorde, that they haue the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they, being ignorant of ỹ righteouſnes of God, and going about to ſtabliſh their owne righteouſnes, haue not ſubmitted themſelues to the righteouſnes of God.

Gal.3.24. 4 * For Chriſt *is* the ende of the Lawe for righteouſnes vnto euery one that beleeueth.

5 For Moſes *thus* deſcribeth the righteouſneſſe which *Leui.18.5.* is of the Lawe, * That the man which doeth theſe things, *ezek.20.11.* ſhall liue thereby.

Galat.3.12. 6 But the righteouſnes which is of faith, ſpeaketh on *Deut.30.12* this wiſe, * Say not in thine heart, Who ſhall aſcende into heauen? (that is to bring Chriſt from aboue)

7 Or, Who ſhall deſcende into the deepe? (that is to bring Chriſt againe from the dead)

Deut.30.14 8 But what ſaith it? * The worde is neere thee, *euen* in thy mouth, and in thine heart. This is the worde of faith which we preach.

9 For if thou ſhalt confeſſe with thy mouth the Lorde Ieſus, and ſhalt beleeue in thine heart, that God rayſed him vp from the dead, thou ſhalt be ſaued:

10 For with the heart man beleeueth vnto righteouſneſſe, and with the mouth man confeſſeth to ſaluation.

Iſa.28.16. 11 For the Scripture ſaith, * Whoſoeuer beleeueth in him, ſhall not be aſhamed.

12 For there is no difference betweene the Iewe and the Grecian: for he that is Lorde ouer all, is riche vnto all that call on him.

Ioel.1.38. 13 * For whoſoeuer ſhall call vpon the Name of the Lord, ſhalbe ſaued.

14 But how ſhall they call on him, in whom they haue not beleeued? and howe ſhal they beleeue in him, of whom they haue not heard? and howe ſhall they heare without a preacher?

15 And

15 And how ſhall they preach, except they be ſent? as it is written, * Howe beautifull are the feete of them which bring glad tidings of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! *Iſai.52.7. nahum.1.15*

16 But they haue not all obeyed the Goſpel: for Eſaias ſayth, * Lord, who hath beleeued our report? *Iſai.52.1.*

17 Then ſaith *is* by hearing, and hearing by the worde of God. *iohn 12.38.*

18 But I demaunde, Haue they not heard? * No doubte their ſounde went out through all the earth, and their wordes into the endes of the worlde. *Pſal.19.3.*

19 But I demaunde, Did not Iſrael know? First Moſes ſaith, * I will prouoke you to enuie by a nation that is not *my* nation, and by a fooliſh *nation* I will anger you. *Deut.32.21*

20 * And Eſaias is bolde, and ſaith, I was found of them that ſought me not, and haue bene made manifeſt to them that asked not after me. *Iſai.65.1.*

21 And vnto Iſrael he ſayth, * All the day long haue I ſtretched forth mine hand vnto a diſobedient, and gainſaying people. *Iſai.65.2.*

CHAP. XI.

1 *Leſt the caſting off of the Iewes ſhoulde be limited according to the outwarde appearance,* 4 *he ſheweth that Elias was in times paſt deceiued,* 16 *and that, ſeeing they haue an holy roote,* 23 *many of them likewiſe ſhalbe holy.* 18. 21 *He exhorteth the Gentiles to be humble,* 33 *and crieth out, that Gods iudgements are vnſearcheable.*

I Demaund then, Hath God caſt away his people? God forbid: for I alſo am an Iſraelite, of the ſeede of Abraham, of the tribe of Beniamin.

2 God hath not caſt away his people which he knewe before. Knowe ye not what the Scripture ſaith of Elias, how he communeth with God againſt Iſrael, ſaying,

3 * Lorde, they haue killed thy Prophetes, and digged downe thine altars: and I am left alone, and they ſeeke my life? *1.King.19.10.*

4 But what ſaith the anſwere of God to him? * I haue reſerued vnto my ſelfe ſeuen thouſand men, which haue not bowed the knee to Baal. *1.King.19.18.*

5 Euen ſo then at this preſent time is there a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if *it be* of grace, it is no more of workes: or els were grace no more grace: but if it be of workes, it is no

more grace: or els were worke no more worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obteined that he ſeeketh: but the election hath obteined it, and the reſt haue been hardened,

Iſa.6.9. and 29.10. mat. 13.14. iohn. 12.40. acts. 28.26. 8 According as it is written, *God hath giuen them the ſpirit of ſlumber: eyes that they ſhoulde not ſee, and eares that they ſhould not heare vnto this day.

Pſal.69.23. 9 And Dauid ſayth, *Let their table be made a ſnare and a net, and a ſtumbling blocke, euen for a recompence vnto them.

10 Let their eyes be darkened that they ſee not, and bowe downe their backe alwayes.

11 I demaunde then, Haue they ſtumbled, that they ſhould fall? God forbid: but through their fall, ſaluation *commeth* vnto ỹ Gentiles, to prouoke them to followe.

12 Wherefore if the fall of them *be* the riches of the world, and the diminiſhing of them the riches of the Gentiles, how much more ſhall their aboundance *be*?

13 For *in that* I ſpeake to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the Apoſtle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office,

14 *To trie if* by any meanes I might prouoke them of my fleſh to ſolow them, and might ſaue ſome of them.

15 For if the caſting away of them *be* the reconciling of the worlde, what *ſhall* the receiuing *be*, but life from the dead?

16 For if the firſt frutes *be* holy, ſo *is* ỹ whole lumpe: and if the roote be holy, ſo *are* the branches.

Leui.22.6. 17 *And though ſome of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde Oliue tree, waſt graft in for them, & made partaker of the roote, & fatnes of the Oliue tree:

18 Boaſt not thy ſelfe againſt the branches: and if thou boaſt thy ſelfe, thou beareſt not the roote, but the roote thee.

19 Thou wilt ſay then, The branches are broken off, that I might be graft in.

20 Well: through vnbeliefe they are broken off, and thou ſtandeſt by fayth: be not hie minded, but feare.

21 For if God ſpared not the naturall branches, *take heede*, leſt he alſo ſpare not thee.

22 Beholde therefore the bountifulnes, and ſeueritie of God: toward them which haue fallen, ſeueritie: but toward thee, bountifulnes, if thou continue in *his* bountifulnes; or els thou ſhalt alſo be cut off.

23 And

23 And they also, if they abide not still in vnbeliefe, shal be grafted in: for God is able to graffe them in againe.

24 For if thou wast cut out of the Oliue tree, which was wilde by nature, and wast grafted contrary to nature in a right Oliue tree, how much more shal they that are by nature, be grafted in their owne Oliue tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorāt of this secret (least ye should be arrogant in your selues) that partly obstinacie is come to Israel, vntill the fulnes of the Gentiles be come in.

26 And so all Israel shalbe saued, as it is written, *The deliuerer shall come out of Sion, and shal turne awaye the vngodlines from Iacob. *Isa.59.20.*

27 And this is my couenant to them, *When I shal take away their sinnes. *Isai.27.9.*

28 As concerning the Gospell, *they are* enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloued for the fathers sakes.

29 For the giftes and calling of God are without repentance.

30 For euen as ye in time past haue not beleeued God, yet haue now obteined mercy through their vnbeliefe:

31 Euen so now haue they not beleeued by the mercie *shewed* vnto you, that they also may obtaine mercy.

32 For God hath shut vp all in vnbeliefe, that he might haue mercie on all.

33 O the deepenes of the riches, both of the wisdome, and knowledge of God! howe vnsearchable arē his iudgements, and his wayes past finding out!

34 *For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord? or who was his counsellour? *Iob.41.2. isai.40.13.*

35 Or who hath giuen vnto him first, and he shalbe recompensed? 1.cor.2.16.

36 For of him, & through him, & for him are all things: to him *be* glory for euer. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

1 *He exhorteth 2 to that worship which is acceptable to God.* 9 *To loue vnfained,* 14. 20 *euen towards our enemies.*

I Beseeche you therefore brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye giue vp your bodies a liuing sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, *which is* your reasonable seruing of God.

2 And fashion not your selues like vnto this worlde, but be ye changed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may

Ephes.5.17. may *proone what that good, and acceptable and perfect
1.Thes.4.3. wil of God is.

3 For I say through the grace that is giuen vnto me, to euery one that is among you, that no man presume to vnderstand aboue that which is meete to vnderstand, but that he vnderstand according to sobrietie, as God hath dealt to e-
1.Cor.12.11 uery man the * measure of faith.
ephes.4.7. 4 For as we haue many members in one bodie, and all members haue not one office,

5 So we being many are one body in Christ, and euery one, one anothers members.

1.Pet.4.10. 6 *Seeing then that we haue giftes that are diuers, according to the grace that is giuen vnto vs, whether *we haue* prophecie, *let vs prophecie* according to the proportion of faith.

7 Or an office, *let vs waite* on the office: or he that teacheth, on teaching:

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that distributeth, *let him do it* * with simplicitie: he that ruleth, with
Mat.6.2. *2.cor.9.7.* diligence: he that sheweth mercy, with chearefulnes.
Amos 5.15 9 *Let* loue *be* without dissimulation. * Abhorre that which is euill, and cleaue vnto that which is good.
Ephes.4.2. 10 *Be affectioned to loue one another with brotherly
1.pet.2.17. loue. In giuing honour, go one before another,

11 Not slouthful to do seruice: feruent in spirit: seruing the Lord,
1.Pet.5.8. 12 Reioycing in hope, pacient in tribulation, * continu-
Luk.18.1. ing in prayer:
1.cor.16.1. 13 * Distributing vnto the necessities of the Saintes
Heb.13.2. * giuing your selues to hospitalitie.
1.pet.4.13. 14 * Blesse them which persecute you: blesse, *I say*, and
Mat.5.44. curse not.
Pro.3.7. 15 Reioyce with them that reioyce, and weepe with
isa.5.11. them that weepe.
Pro.20.22. 16 Be of like affection one towardes another: * be not
mat.5.39. hie minded: but make your selues equall to them of the
2.cor.8.11. lower sort: be not wise in your selues.
1.pet.3.9. 17 * Recompense to no man euill for euill: procure
Heb.12.14. things honest in the sight of all men.
Eccle.2.18. 18 * If it be possible, as much as in you is, haue peace
mat.5.39. with all men.
Deut.32.35. 19 Dearely beloued, * auenge not your selues, but giue
heb.10.30. place vnto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance is mine: I
will

will repay, sayth the Lord.

20 *Therefore, if thine enemie hunger, feede him: if he thirst, giue him drinke: for in so doing, thou shalt heape coales of fire on his head. *Pro.25.22.*

21 Be not ouercome of euill, but ouercome euill with goodnes.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *He willeth that we submit our selues to Magistrates:* 8 *To loue our neighbours:* 12 *To liue vprightly,* 14 *and to put on Christ.*

LEt *euery soule be subiect vnto the higher powers: for there is no power but of God: and the powers that be, are ordeined of God. *Tit.3.1. 1.pet.2.13.

2 Whosoeuer therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receiue to themselues condemnation.

3 For Magistrates are not to be feared *for* good works, but *for* euill. Wilt thou then be without feare of ỹ power? do well: so shalt thou haue prayse of the same.

4 For he is the minister of God for thy wealth, but if thou doe euill, feare: for he beareth not the sworde for nought: for he is the minister of God to take vengeance on him that doeth euill.

5 Wherefore ye must be subiect, not because of wrath onely, but also for conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause ye paye also tribute: for they are Gods ministers, applying themselues for the same thing.

7 *Giue to all men therefore their duetie: tribute, to whom *ye owe* tribute: custome, to whom custome: feare, to whom feare: honour, to whome *ye owe* honour. *Mat.22.21.

8 Owe nothing to any man, but to loue one another: for he that loueth another, hath fulfilled the Law.

9 For this, * Thou shalt not cõmit adulterie, Thou shalt not kil, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnes, Thou shalt not couet: and if there be any other commãdement, it is briefly cõprehended in this saying, *euen* in this, *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Exod.20.14 deut.5.18. Lev.19.18.

10 Loue doeth not euill to his neighbour: therefore is loue the * fulfilling of the Lawe. mat.22.39. mar.12.31. gal.5.14. iam.2.8.

11 And that, considering the season, that *it is* nowe time that we should arise from sleepe: for nowe is our saluation neerer, then when we beleeued it. 1.Tim.1.1.

12 The night is past, and the daye is at hande: let vs therefore

therefore caſt away the workes of darkenes, and let vs put on the armour of light,

13 So that we walke honeſtly, as in the daye: not in
Luk.21.34. *gluttonie, and drunkennes, neither in chambering & wantonnes, nor in ſtriſe and enuying:

* Gal.5.16. 14 *But put ye on the Lord IESVS CHRIST, and
1.pet.2.11. take no thought for the fleſh, to *fulfill* the luſtes of it.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 He willeth that we ſo deale with the weake in faith, 15 that through our fault they be not offended. 10 And on the other ſide he commandeth them not raſhly to iudge of the ſtronger. 19 That within the boundes of edification 20 and charitie, 22 Chriſtian libertie may conſiſt.

HIm that is weake in the faith, receiue vnto you, *but* not for controuerſies of diſputations.

2 One beleeueth that he may eate of all thinges: and another, which is weake, eateth herbes.

3 Let not him that eateth, deſpiſe him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, condemne him that eateth: for God hath receiued him.

Lam.4.12. 4 * Who art thou that condemneſt another mans ſeruant? he ſtandeth or falleth to his owne maſter: yea, he ſhal be eſtabliſhed: for God is able to make him ſtand.

5 This man eſteemeth one day abque another day, and another man counteth euery daye alike: let euery man be fully perſuaded in his minde.

6 He that obſerueth the day, obſerueth it to the Lord: and he that obſerueth not the daye, obſerueth it not to the Lord. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord: for he giueth God thankes: and he that eateth not, eateth not, to the Lord, and giueth God thankes.

7 For none of vs liueth to himſelfe, neither doeth any dye to himſelfe.

8 For whether we liue, we liue vnto the Lord: or whether we die, we die vnto the Lord: whether we liue therefore, or die, we are the Lordes.

9 For Chriſt therefore died & roſe againe, & reuiued, that he might be Lord both of the dead and the quicke.

10 But why doeſt thou condemne thy brother? or why
2.Cor.5.10. doeſt thou deſpiſe thy brother? *for we ſhal all appeare before the iudgement ſeate of Chriſt.

Iſa.45.23. 11 For it is written, * I liue, ſayth the Lord, and euery
phil.2.10. knee ſhal bowe to me, & all tongues ſhal confeſſe vnto God.

12 So

12 So then euery one of vs shall giue accountes of him selfe to God.

13 Let vs not therfore iudge one another any more: but vse *your* iudgement rather in this, that no man put an occasion to fall, or a stumbling blocke before *his* brother.

14 I know, & am perſuaded through the Lord Ieſus, that there is nothing vncleane of it ſelfe: but vnto him that iudgeth any thing to be vncleane, to him *it is* vncleane.

15 But if thy brother be grieued for the meate, nowe walkeſt thou not charitably: * deſtroye not him with thy meate, for whom Chriſt dyed. *1.Cor.8.11.*

16 Cauſe not your commoditie to be euil ſpoken of.

17 For the kingdome of God, is not meate nor drinke, but righteouſnes, and peace, and ioye in the holy Ghoſt.

18 For whoſoeuer in theſe things ſerueth Chriſt, is acceptable vnto God, and is approued of men.

19 Let vs then followe thoſe thinges which concerne peace, and wherewith one may edifie another.

20 Deſtroy not the worke of God for meates ſake: * all things in deede are pure: but *it is* euill for the man which eateth with offence. *Tit.1.15.*

21 * *It is* good neither to eate fleſh, nor to drinke wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother ſtumbleth, or is offended, or made weake: *2.Cor. 8.13*

22 Haſt thou faith? haue it with thy ſelfe before God: bleſſed *is* he that condemneth not himſelfe in that thing which he alloweth.

23 For he that doubteth, is condemned if he eate, becauſe *he eateth* not of faith: and whatſoeuer is not of faith, is ſinne.

CHAP. XV.

1 *The ſtronger muſt imploye their ſtrength to ſtrengthen the weake,* 3 *by Chriſtes example,* 7 *who receiued* 8 *not onely the Iewes,* 10 *but alſo the Gentiles.* 15 *The cauſe why he wrote this Epiſtle.*

WE which are ſtrong, ought to beare the infirmities of the weake, and not to pleaſe our ſelues.

2 *Therefore* let euery man pleaſe his neighbour in that that is good to edification.

3 For Chriſt alſo would not pleaſe himſelfe, but as it is written, * The rebukes of them which rebuke thee, fell on me. *Pſal.69.10*

4 For whatſoeuer thinges are written aforetime, are written

written for our learning, that we through patience, & comfort of the Scriptures might haue hope.

5 Nowe the God of patience and consolation giue you
1. Cor. 1. 10. that ye be * like minded one towardes another, according to Christ Iesus,

6 That yee with one minde, *and* with one mouth may prayse God, euen the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receiue ye one another, as Christ also receiued vs to the glory of God.

8 Nowe I say, that Iesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision, for the trueth of God, to confirme the promises *made* vnto the fathers.

9 And let the Gentiles praise God for *his* mercy, as it is
Psal. 18. 50. written, * For this cause I wil confesse thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name.

Deut. 32. 43 10 And againe he saith, * Reioyce, ye Gentiles with his people.

Psal. 117. 1. 11 And againe, * Prayse the Lorde, all ye Gentiles, and laude ye him, all people together.

Isai. 11. 10. 12 And againe Esaias sayth, * There shalbe a roote of Iesse, & he that shal rise to reigne ouer the Gentiles, in him shal the Gentiles trust.

13 Nowe the God of hope fill you with all ioy, & peace in beleeuing, that ye may abounde in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that yee also are full of goodnes, and filled with all knowledge, and are able to admonish one another.

15 Nenertheles brethren, I haue somewhat boldely after a sorte written vnto you, as one that putteth you in remembrance, through the grace that is giuen me of God,

16 That I should be the minister of Iesus Christ toward the Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God, that the offring vp of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17 I haue therefore whereof I may reioyce in Christ Iesus in those things which *pertaine* to God.

18 For I dare not speake of any thing, which Christ hath not wrought by me, *to make* the Gentiles obedient in word and deede,

19 With the power of signes & wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God: so that from Hierusalē, & round about vnto Illyricum, I haue caused to aboūd ỹ Gospel of Christ.

20 Yea,

20 Yea, so I enforced my selfe to preach the Gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I shoulde haue buylt on another mans foundation.

21 But as it is written, *To whome he was not spoken of, they shall see *him*, and they that heard not, shall vnderstand *him*. *Isa.52.15.*

22 *Therefore also I haue bene oft let to come vnto you: *Chap.1.11.*

23 But nowe seeing I haue no more place in these quarters, and also haue *bene desirous many yeeres agone to come vnto you, *1.Thes.1.17*

24 When I shall take my iourney into Spaine, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my iourney, and to be brought on my way thitherwarde by you, after that I haue bene somewhat filled with your *companie*.

25 But nowe goe I to Hierusalem, to minister vnto the Saintes.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia & Achaia, to make a certaine distribution vnto the poore Saintes which are at Hierusalem.

27 For it hath pleased them, and their detters are they: *for if the Gentiles be made partakers of their spirituall things, their duetie is also to minister vnto them in carnall things. *1.Cor.9.11.*

28 When I haue therefore performed this, and haue sealed them this fruite, I wil passe by you into Spaine.

29 And I know when I come, that I shall come to you with abundance of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ.

30 Also brethren, I beseeche you for our Lorde Iesus Christs sake, and for the loue of the spirit, that ye woulde striue with me by prayers to God for me,

31 That I may be deliuered from them which are disobedient in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue to doe at Hierusalem, may be accepted of the Saintes,

32 That I may come vnto you with ioye by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Thus the God of peace *be* with you all. Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *He commendeth Phebe.* 3 *He sendeth greeting to manie,* 17 *and warneth to beware of them which are the causes of diuision.*

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of the Church of Cenchrea:

2 That

2 That yee receiue her in the Lorde, as it becommeth Saintes, & that ye assist her in whatsoeuer busines she needeth of your ayde: for she hath giuen hospitalitie vnto many, and to me also.

Act.18.3. 3 Greete * Priscilla, and Aquila my fellowe helpers in Christ Iesus,

4 (Which haue for my life layde downe their owne necke. Vnto whom not I onely giue thankes, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles)

5 Likewise greete the Church that is in their house. Salute my beloued Epenetus, which is the first fruites of Achaia in Christ.

6 Greete Marie which bestowed much labour on vs.

7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my cosins and fellow prisoners, which are notable among the Apostles, and were in Christ before me.

8 Greete Amplias my beloued in the Lord.

9 Salute Vrbanus our fellowe helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloued.

10 Salute Apelles approoued in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus *friendes*.

11 Salute Herodion my kinseman. Greete them which are of the *friendes* of Narcissus which are in the Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena & Tryphosa, which *women* labour in the Lord. Salute the beloued Persis, which *woman* hath laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lorde, and his mother and mine.

14 Greete Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Mercurius, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus and Iulias, Nereas, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the Saints which are with them.

1.Cor.16.20 16 Salute one another with an * holy kisse. The Chur-
2.cor.13.12 ches of Christ salute you.

1.pet.5.14. 17 ¶ Nowe I beseeche you brethren, marke them diligently which cause diuision and offences, contrarie to the
2.Iohn 10. doctrine which ye haue learned, and * anoyde them.

18 For they that are such, serue not the Lorde Iesus Christ, but their owne bellies: and with fayre speach & flattering deceiue the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad among all: I am glad therefore of you: but yet I would haue you wise, vnto that which is good, and simple concerning euill.

20 The

20 The God of peace shall tread Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you.

21 * Timotheus my helper, and Lucius, and Iason, and Sosipater my kinsmen, salute you. *Acts.16.1. philip.2.19.*

22 I Tertius, which wrote out this Epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church saluteth you. Erastus the steward of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

25 * To him nowe that is of power to establish you according to my Gospell, and preaching of Iesus Christ, * by the reuelation of the mysterie, which was kept secret since the world began: *Ephe.3.20. Ephe.3.9. colos.1.26. 2.tim.1.10. tit.1.2.*

26 (But nowe is opened, and published among all nations by the Scriptures of the Prophets, at the commaundement of the euerlasting God for the obedience of faith.)

27 To God, *I say*, onely wise, be praise through Iesus Christ for euer. Amen.

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, *and* sent by Phebe, seruant of the Church, which is at Cenchrea.

THE FIRT EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 *After the salutation,* 10 *which in effect is an exhortation,* 12 *he reprehendeth the Corinthians sectes and diuisions,* 17 *and calleth them from pride to humilitie:* 20 *For, ouerthrowing all worldly wisdome,* 23. 25 *he aduanceth onely the preaching of the crosse.*

PAVL called *to be* an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, through the will of God, and *our* brother Sosthenes, *Acts.15.9. 1.thes.4.7.*

2 Vnto the Church of God which is at Corinthus, to them that are * sanctified in Christ Iesus, * Saints by calling, * with all that call on the Name of our Lorde Iesus Christ in euery place, both their *Lord*, and ours: *Rom.1.7. ephe.1.1. colos.1.22. 1.tim.1.9. tit.1.1.*

3 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

4 I thanke my God alwayes on your behalfe for the grace of God, which is giuen you in Ieſus Chriſt,

5 That in all thinges ye are made riche in him, in all kinde of ſpeache, and in all knowledge:

6 As the teſtimonie of Ieſus Chriſt hath bene cõfirmed in you:

Philip.3.20. Tit.2.11. 7 So that ye are not deſtitute of any gift: * waiting for the appearing of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

1.Theſ.3.13. and 5.23. 8 *Who ſhall alſo confirme you vnto the end, that ye may be blameleſſe in the day of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

1.Theſ.5.24. 9 * God is faithful, by whom ye are called vnto the fellowſhip of his Sonne Ieſus Chriſt our Lord.

10 Nowe I beſeech you, brethren, by the Name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, that ye all ſpeake one thing, & that there be no diſſenſions among you; but be ye knit together in one minde, and in one iudgement.

11 For it hath bene declared vnto me, my brethren, of you by them that are of the houſe of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Nowe this I ſay, that euery one of you ſaith, I am *Act.18.24.* Pauls, and I am *Apollos, and I am Cephas, and I am Chriſts.

13 Is Chriſt deuided? was Paul crucified for you? either were ye baptized into the name of Paul?

Acts.18.8. 14 I thanke God, that I baptized none of you, but *Criſpus, and Gaius,

15 Leſt any ſhoulde ſay, that I had baptized into mine owne name.

16 I baptized alſo the houſhold of Stephanas: furthermore know I not, whether I baptized any other.

17 For Chriſt ſent me not to baptize, but to preach the *Chap.2.13.* Goſpell, not with * wiſdome of wordes, leſt the croſſe of *2.pet.1.16.* Chriſt ſhould be made of none effect.

18 For that preaching of the croſſe is to them that pe- *Rom.1.16.* riſh, fooliſhnes: but vnto vs, which are ſaued, it is the *powet of God.

Iſai.29.14. 19 For it is written, *I will deſtroy the wiſdome of the wiſe, and will caſt away the vnderſtanding of the prudent.

20 Where is the wiſe? where is the Scribe? where is the diſputer of this worlde? hath not God made the wiſdome of this world fooliſhnes?

21 For ſeeing the world by wiſdome knewe not God in the

the wiſdome of God, it pleaſed God by the fooliſhnes of preaching to ſaue them that beleeue:

22 *Seeing alſo that the Iewes require a ſigne, and the Grecians ſeeke after wiſdome. *Mat.* 12.38.

23 But wee preache Chriſt crucified: vnto the Iewes, euen a ſtumbling blocke, and vnto the Grecians, fooliſhnes:

24 But vnto them which are called, both of the Iewes and Grecians, *we preach* Chriſt, the power of God, and the wiſdome of God.

25 For the fooliſhnes of God is wiſer then men, and the weakenes of God is ſtronger then men.

26 For brethren, you ſee your calling, how that not many wiſe men after the fleſh, not many mightie, not many noble *are called.*

27 But God hath choſen the fooliſh things of the world to confound the wiſe, & God hath choſen the weake things of the world, to confound the mightie things.

28 And vile thinges of the world and things which are deſpiſed, hath God choſen, & things which are not, to bring to nought things that are,

29 That no fleſh ſhould reioyce in his preſence.

30 But ye are of him in Chriſt Ieſus, who of God is made vnto vs wiſdome and righteouſnes, and ſanctification, and redemption,

31 That, according as it is written, *He that reioyceth, let him reioyce in the Lord. *Ier.* 9.24. 2. *Cor.* 10.17

CHAP. II.

1 Hee ſetteth downe a platforme of his preaching, 4 which was baſe in reſpect of mans wiſdome, 7. 13 but noble in reſpect of the ſpiritual power and efficacie, 14 and ſo concludeth that fleſh and blood cannot rightly iudge thereof.

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with *excellencie of words, or of wiſdome, ſhewing vnto you the teſtimonie of God. *Chap.* 1.17.

2 For I eſteemed not to knowe any thing among you, ſaue Ieſus Chriſt, and him crucified.

3 *And I was among you in weakenes, and in feare, and in much trembling. *Acts.* 18.1.

4 Neither *ſtood* my word, and my preaching in the *enticing ſpeache of mans wiſdome, but in plaine euidence of the Spirit and of power, *Chap.* 1.17. 2. *pet.* 1.16.

5 That your faith ſhould not be in the wiſdome of men, but in the power of God.

6 And wee ſpeake wiſdome among them that are perfect: not the wiſdome of this world, neither of the princes of this world, which come to nought.

7 But we ſpeake the wiſdome of God in a myſterie, euen the hid *wiſdome*, which God had determined before the world, vnto our glory.

8 Which none of the princes of this worlde hath knowen: for had they knowen it, they would not haue crucified the Lord of glorie.

Iſai.64.4. 9 But as it is written, *The things which eye hath not ſeene, neither eare hath heard, neither came into mans heart, are, which God hath prepared for them that loue him.

10 But God hath reueiled *them* vnto vs by his Spirit: for the Spirit ſearcheth all things, yea, the deepe things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the thinges of a man, ſaue the ſpirit of a man, which is in him? euen ſo the thinges of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Nowe we haue receiued not the ſpirit of the world, but the Spirit, which is of God, that we might knowe the things that are giuen to vs of God.

Chap. 2. 17. *2 pet. 1.16.* 13 Which thinges alſo we ſpeake, not in the *words which mans wiſdome teacheth, but which the holy Ghoſt teacheth, comparing ſpirituall things with ſpirituall things.

14 But the naturall man perceiueth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are fooliſhnes vnto him: neither can he knowe *them*, becauſe they are ſpiritually diſcerned.

15 But he that is ſpirituall diſcerneth all things: yet he himſelfe is iudged of no man.

Iſai.40.13. *Rom.11.34.* 16 *For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord, that he might inſtruct him? But we haue the minde of Chriſt.

CHAP. III.

1 He yeeldeth a reaſon why he preached ſmall matters vnto them: 4 He ſheweth how they ought to eſteeme of miniſters: 6 the miniſters office. 10 A true forme of edifying. 16 He warneth the Corinthians, that they be not drawne away to prophane thinges, 18 through the proude wiſdome of the fleſh.

AND I coulde not ſpeake vnto you, brethren, as vnto ſpirituall men, but as vnto carnall, *euen* as vnto babes in Chriſt.

2 I gaue you milke to drinke, and not meate: for ye were not yet able *to beare it*, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas *there is* among you

enuying, and ſtrife, and diuiſions, are ye not carnall, and walke as men?

4 For when one ſaith, I am Pauls, and another, I am Apollos, are ye not carnall?

5 Who is Paul then? and who is Apollos, but the miniſters by whome ye beleeued, and as the Lord gaue to euery man?

6 I haue planted, Apollos watred, but God gaue the encreaſe.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth, any thing, neither he that watreth, but God that giueth the increaſe.

8 And hee that planteth, and he that watreth, are one, * and euery man ſhall receiue his wages, according to his labour. *Pſal.62.12. galat.6.5.*

9 For wee together are Gods labourers: ye are Gods husbandrie, *and* Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God giuen to mee, as a skilfull maſter builder, I haue layed the foundation, and another buildeth thereon: but let euery man take heede how he buildeth vpon it.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that which is layed, which is Ieſus Chriſt.

12 And if any man builde on this foundation, golde, ſilver, precious ſtones, timber, haye, *or* ſtubble,

13 Enery mans worke ſhalbe made manifeſt: for the day ſhal declare it, becauſe it ſhalbe reueiled by the fire: and the fire ſhall trie euery mans worke of what ſort it is.

14 If any mans worke, that he hath built vpon, abide, he ſhall receiue wages.

15 If any mans worke burne, he ſhall loſe, but he ſhalbe ſaued himſelfe: neuertheles yet as it were by the fire.

16 *Knowe ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? *Chap.6.19. 2.cor.6.16.*

17 If any man deſtroy the Temple of God, him ſhal God deſtroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which ye are.

18 Let no man deceiue himſelfe: If any man among you ſeeme to be wiſe in this worlde, let him be a foole, that hee may be wiſe.

19 For the wiſdome of this world is fooliſhnes with God: for it is written, *He catcheth the wiſe in their owne craftines. *Iob.5.13.*

20 * And againe, the Lord knoweth that the thoughts of the wiſe be vaine. *Pſal.44.11.*

21 Therefore let no man reioyce in men: for al things are yours.

22 Whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death: whether they be things present, or things to come, *euen* all are yours,

23 And ye Christes, and Christ Gods.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Bringing in the definition of a true Apostle,* 7 *he sheweth that humilitie ought rather to be an honour then a shame vnto him.* 9 *He bringeth in proofe, whereby it may euidently appeare,* 10 *that he neither had care of glorie,* 11 *nor of his bellie.* 17 *He commendeth Timothie.*

LEt a man so thinke of vs, as of the ministers of Christ, and disposers of the secrets of God:

2 And as for the rest, it is required of the disposers, that euery man be found faithfull.

3 As touching me, I passe very litle to be iudged of you, or of mans iudgement: no, I iudge not mine owne selfe.

4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not thereby iustified: but he that iudgeth me, is the Lord.

Mat.7.1. 5 Therefore * iudge nothing before the time, vntil the Lord come, who will lighten thinges that are hid in darkenes, and make the counsels of the hearts manifest: and then shall euery man haue praise of God.

6 Nowe these thinges, brethren, I haue figuratiuely applied vnto mine owne selfe and Apollos, for your sakes, that ye might learne by vs, that no man presume aboue that which is written, that one swell not against another for any mans cause.

7 For who separateth thee? and what hast thou, that thou hast not receiued? if thou hast receiued it, why reioycest thou, as though thou haddest not receiued it?

8 Now ye are full: now ye are made riche: ye reigne as kings without vs, and would to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you.

9 For I thinke that God hath set foorth vs the last Apostles, as men appointed to death: for we are made a gasing stocke vnto the world, and to the Angels, and to men.

10 We *are* fooles for Christes sake, and ye *are* wise in Christ: we *are* weake, and ye *are* strong: ye *are* honourable, and we *are* despised.

11 Vnto this houre we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, & haue no certaine dwelling place,

12 * And

12 *And labour, working with our owne hands: we are reuiled, and *yet* we blesse: we are persecuted, *and* suffer it. *Acts.20.34. 1.thess.2.9.*

13 *We are euill spoken of, and we pray: we are made as the filth of the world, the offskowring of all things, vnto this time. *2.thess.3.8. Mat.5.44. luke 23.34. acts.7.60.*

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloued children I admonish you.

15 For though ye haue tenne thousand instructours in Christ, yet *haue ye* not many fathers: for in Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel.

16 Wherefore, I pray you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus, which is my beloued sonne, and faithful in the Lord, which shal put you in remembrance of my wayes in Christ as I teach euery where in euery Church.

18 Some are puffed vp as though I would not come to you.

19 But I will come to you shortly, *if the Lord will, and will knowe, not the wordes of them which are puffed vp, but the power. *Acts.19.21 iam.4.15.*

20 For ȳ kingdom of God *is not* in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? shall I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue, and in the Spirit of meekenes?

CHAP. V.

1 That they haue winked at him who committed incest with his mother in Lawe, 2.6 he sheweth should cause them rather to be ashamed, then to reioyce: 10 Such kinde of wickednes is to be punished with excommunication, 12 lest other be infected with it.

IT is heard certainely *that there is* fornication among you, and such fornication as is not once named among the Gentiles, that one should haue his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed vp and haue not rather sorowed, that he which hath done this deede, might be put from among you.

3 For I verely as absent in body, but present in spirit, haue determined already as though I were present, that he that hath thus done this thing,

4 When ye are gathered together, and my spirit, in the Name of our Lorde Iesus Christ, that such one, *I say*, by the power of our Lord Iesus Christ,

5 Be deliuered vnto Satan, for ȳ destruction of ȳ flesh, that the Spirit may be saued in the day of the Lord Iesus.

haue his wife, & let euery woman haue her owne husband.

1.Pet.3.7. 3 * Let the husband giue vnto the wife due benevolence, and likewise also the wife vnto the husband.

4 The wife hath not the power of her owne body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not the power of his owne body, but the wife.

5 Defraude not one another, except *it be* with consent for a time, that ye may giue your selues to fasting and prayer, and againe come together that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speak this by permission, not by cõmandement.

7 For I would that all men were euen as I my selfe *am*: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this maner, and another after that.

8 Therefore I say vnto the vnmaried, and vnto the widowes, It is good for them if they abide euen as I *doe*.

9 But if they can not abstaine, let them mary: for it is better to mary then to burne.

Mat.5.32. *and* 19.9. mar.10.11, 12. luke 16. 18. 10 * And vnto the married I commaund, not I, but the Lord, let not the wife depart from her husband.

11 But and if she depart, let her remaine vnmarried, or be reconciled vnto her husband, & let not the husband put away *his* wife.

12 But to the remnant I speake, *and* not the Lord, If any brother haue a wife, that beleeueth not, if she be content to dwel with him, let him not forsake her.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeueth not, if he be content to dwell with her, let her not forsake him:

14 For the vnbeleeuing husband is sanctified to the wife, and the vnbeleeuing wife is sanctified to the husband, els were your children vncleane: but now are they holy.

15 But if the vnbeleeuing depart, let him depart: a brother or a sister is not in subiection in such things: but God hath called vs in peace.

16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt saue thine husband? Or what knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt saue thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to euery man, as the Lord hath called euery one, so let him walke: and so ordaine I, in all Churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not gather *his vncircumcision*: is any called vncircumcised? let him

not be circumciſed.

19 Circumciſion is nothing, and vncircumciſion is nothing, but the keeping of the commandements of God.

20 *Let euery man abide in the ſame vocation where- 1.Tim.6.2.
in he was called.

21 Art thou called *being* a ſeruant? care not for it: but if yet thou maieſt be free, vſe it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord *being* a ſeruant, is the Lords freeman: likewiſe alſo he that is called *being* free, is Chriſtes ſeruant.

23 *Ye are bought w a price: be not the ſeruants of men. (1.chap.6.20.

24 Brethren, let euery man, wherein he was called, 1.pet.1.18,
therein abide with God. 19.

25 Now concerning virgins, I haue no commaunde-
ment of the Lord: but I giue mine aduiſe, as one that hath
obtained mercie of the Lord to be faithfull.

26 I ſuppoſe then this to be good for the preſent ne-
ceſſitie: *I meane* that it is good for a man ſo to be.

27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? ſeeke not to be looſed:
art thou looſed from a wife? ſeeke not a wife.

28 But if thou takeſt a wife, thou ſinneſt not: and if a
virgin marie, ſhe ſinneth not: neuertheles, ſuch ſhall haue
trouble in the fleſh: but I ſpare you.

29 And this I ſay, brethren, becauſe the time is ſhort,
hereafter that both they which haue wiues, be as though
they had none:

30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not:
and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and
they that bye, as though they poſſeſſed not:

31 And they that vſe this worlde, as though they vſed
it not: for the faſhion of this world goeth away.

32 And I would haue you without care. The vnmarri-
ed careth for the things of the Lorde, howe he may pleaſe
the Lord.

33 But he that is married, careth for the things of the
world, how he may pleaſe *his* wife.

34 There is difference alſo betweene a virgine and a
wife: the vnmaried woman careth for the thinges of the
Lorde, that ſhe may be holy, both in body and in ſpirit: but
ſhe that is married, careth for the things of the world, how
ſhe may pleaſe her husband.

35 And this I ſpeake for your owne commoditie, not to
tangle you in a ſnare, but that *ye follow* that, which is honeſt,
and

and that ye may cleaue fast vnto ỹ Lord without separation.

36 But if any man thinke that it is vncomely for his virgine, if she passe the flower of *her* age, and neede so require, let him doe what he will, hee sinneth not: let them be maried.

37 Nevertheless, he that standeth firme in his heart, that he hath no neede, but hath power ouer his owne will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he wil keepe his virgine, he doeth wel.

38 So then he that giueth her to mariage, doeth well, but he that giueth her not to mariage, doeth better.

39 The wife is bound by the Lawe, as long as her husband * liueth: but if her husband be dead, she is at libertie to marie with whom she wil, onely in the Lord.

Rom.7.1.

40 But she is more blessed, if she so abide, in my iudgement: * and I thinke that I haue also the Spirit of God.

1.Thes.4.8.

CHAP. VIII.

1 From this place vnto the end of the tenth Chapter, he willeth them not to be at the Gentiles prophane bankets. 8 He restraineth the abuse of Christian libertie, 11 and sheweth that knowledge must be tempered with charitie.

AND as touching things sacrificed vnto idoles, we know that we all haue knowledge: knowledge puffeth vp, but loue edifieth.

2 Now, if any man thinke that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man loue God, the same *is* knowen of him.

4 Concerning therefore the eating of things sacrificed vnto idoles, we know that an idole *is* nothing in the world, and that there *is* none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heauen, or in earth, (as there be many gods, and many lordes)

6 Yet vnto vs there *is* but one God, *which is* that Father, of whom are all things, and we in him: and * one Lord Iesus Christ, by whom *are* all things, and we by him.

Chap.12.3.
Iohn 13.13.

7 But euery man hath not that knowledge: for many hauing conscience of the idole, vntil this houre, eate as a thing sacrificed vnto the idole, and so their conscience being weake, is defiled.

8 But meate maketh not vs acceptable to God, for neither if we eate, haue we the more: neither if we eate not, haue we the lesse.

9 But

9 But take heede leaſt by any meanes this power of
ours be an occaſion of falling, to them that are weake.
10 For if any man ſee thee which haſt knowledge, ſit at
table in the idols temple, ſhall not the conſcience of him
which is weake, be boldened to eate thoſe thinges which
are ſacrificed to idoles?
11 And through thy knowledge ſhall the *weake bro- *Rom. 14.15
ther periſh, for whom Chriſt dyed.
12 Now when ye ſinne ſo againſt the brethren, and
wound their weake conſcience, ye ſinne againſt Chriſt.
13 *Wherefore if meate offend my brother, I wil eate *Rom. 14.21.
no fleſh while the world ſtandeth, that I may not offend my
brother.

CHAP. IX.

1 He declareth, that from the libertie which the Lorde gaue him, 15 he willingly abſteined, 18. 22 leſt in things indifferent he ſhould offend any. 24 He ſheweth that our life is like vnto a race.

AM I not an Apoſtle? am I not free? haue I not ſeene Ieſus
Chriſt our Lord? are ye not my worke in the Lord?
2 If I be not an Apoſtle vnto other, yet doutles I am
vnto you: for ye are the ſeale of mine Apoſtleſhip in ỹ Lord.
3 My defence to them that examine me, is this,
4 Haue we not power to eate and to drinke?
5 Or haue we not power to leade about a wife being a
ſiſter, as wel as the reſt of the Apoſtles, and as the brethren
of the Lord and Cephas?
6 Or I onely and Barnabas, haue not we power not to
worke?
7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne coſt?
who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruite there-
of? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of
the flocke?
8 Say I theſe things according to man? ſaieth not the
Law the ſame alſo?
9 For it is written in the Lawe of Moſes, *Thou ſhalt *Deu. 25.4.
not muſſell the mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the 1. tim. 5.18.
corne: doeth God take care for oxen?
10 Either ſaith he it not altogether for our ſakes? For
our ſakes no dout it is written, that he which eareth, ſhould
eare in hope, and that he that threſheth in hope, ſhould be
partaker of his hope.
11 *If we haue ſowen vnto you ſpiritual things, *is it* a *Rom. 15.27.
great

great thing if we reape your carnall things?

12 If others with you be partakers of *this* power, are not we rather? neuertheleſſe, we haue not vſed this power, but ſuffer all things, that we ſhould not hinder the Goſpel of Chriſt.

13 Doe ye not know, that they which miniſter about
Deut. 18.1. the * holy things, eate of the things of the Temple? and they which waite at the altar, are partakers with the altar?

14 So alſo hath the Lorde ordeined, that they which preach the Goſpel, ſhould liue of the Goſpel.

15 But I haue vſed none of theſe things: neither wrote I theſe things, that it ſhould be ſo done vnto me: for it were better for me to die, then that any man ſhould make my reioycing vaine.

16 For though I preach the Goſpel, I haue nothing to reioyce of: for neceſsitie is layd vpon me, and woe is vnto me, if I preach not the Goſpel.

17 For if I doe it willingly, I haue reward, but if I doe it againſt my will, *notwithſtanding* the diſpenſation is committed vnto me.

18 What is my reward then? verely that when I preach the Goſpel, I make the Goſpel of Chriſt free that I abuſe not mine authoritie in the Goſpel.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet haue I made my ſelfe ſeruant vnto all men, that I might winne the more.

Act. 16.3. 20 * And vnto the Iewes, I become as a Iew, that I might
Gala. 2.3. winne the Iewes: to them that are vnder the Law, as *though I were* vnder the Lawe, that I may winne them that are vnder the Law:

21 To them that are without Lawe, as *though I were* without Law (when I am not without Law as pertaining to God, but *am* in the Lawe through Chriſt) that I may winne them that are without Law:

22 To the weake I become as weake, that I may winne the weake: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes ſaue ſome.

23 And this I doe for the Goſpels ſake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know ye not, that they which runne in a race, runne all, yet one receiueth the price? ſo runne ye that ye may obtaine.

25 And euery man that proueth maſteries, abſtaineth from all things: and they *doe it* to obtaine a corruptible crowne: but we for an vncorruptible.

26 I there-

26 I therefore ſo runne, not as vncertainely: ſo fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre.

27 But I beate downe my body, and bring it into ſubiection, leſt by any meanes after that I haue preached to other, I my ſelfe ſhould be reproued.

CHAP. X.

If God ſpared not the Iewes, neither wil he ſpare thoſe who are of like condition, 3. 4 touching the outward ſignes of his grace. 14 That it is abſurd, that ſuch ſhould be partakers of the table of deuils, who are partakers of the Lordes ſupper. 24 To haue conſideration of our neighbour in things indifferent.

MOreouer, brethren, I would not that ye ſhould be ignorant, that all our fathers were vnder * that cloude, and all paſſed through that * ſea, *Exo.13.21. num.9.18.*

2 And were all baptized vnto Moſes, in that cloude, and in that ſea, *Exo.14.22.*

3 * And did all eate the ſame ſpirituall meate, *Exod.16.15.*

4 * And did all drinke the ſame ſpirituall drinke (for they dranke of the ſpirituall Rocke that followed them: and the Rocke was Chriſt.) *Exod.17.6. num.20.10. & 21.16.*

5 But with many of them God was not pleaſed: for they were * ouerthrowen in the wildernes. *Num.26.65*

6 Now theſe things are our enſamples, to the intent that we ſhould not luſt after euil things * as they alſo luſted. *Num.11.4.*

7 Neither be ye idolaters as *were* ſome of them, as it is written, * The people ſate downe to eate and drinke, and roſe vp to play. *& 26.64. pſal.106.14. Exo.32.6.*

8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as ſome of them committed fornication, and fell in one * day three & twentie thouſand. *Num.25.9.*

9 Neither let vs tempt Chriſt, as ſome of them alſo tempted *him*, and * were deſtroyed of ſerpents. *Num.21.6.*

10 Neither murmure ye, as ſome of them * alſo murmured, and were deſtroyed of the deſtroyer. *pſal.106.14. Num.14.37.*

11 Now all theſe things came vnto them for enſamples, and were written to admoniſh vs, vpon whome the endes of the world are come. *iudg.8.24.*

12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh he ſtandeth, take heede leſt he fall.

13 There hath no tentation taken you, but ſuch as appertaineth to man: and God is faythful, which wil not ſuffer you to be tempted aboue that you be able, but will euen

giue

gine the issue with the tentation, that ye may be able to beare it.

14 Wherefore my beloued, flee from idolatrie.

15 I speake as vnto them which haue vnderstanding: iudge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we breake, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

17 For we that are many, are one bread and one body, because we all are partakers of one bread.

18 Behold Israel *which is* after the flesh: are not they which eate of the sacrifices partakers of the altar?

19 What say I then? that the idole is any thing? or that that which is sacrificed to idoles, is any thing?

20 *Nay*, but that these things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to deuils, and not vnto God: and I would not that ye should haue felowship with the deuils.

21 Ye can not drinke the cup of the Lorde, and the cup of the deuils. Ye can not be partakers of the Lordes table, and of the table of deuils.

22 Doe we prouoke the Lord to anger? are we stronger then he?

Chap.6.12. 23 * All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not.

24 Let no man seeke his owne, but euery man another's wealth.

25 Whatsoeuer is solde in the shambles, eate ye, and aske no question for conscience sake.

Psal.24.1. 26 * For the earth *is* the Lords, and all that therein is.

27 If any of them which beleeue not, call you *to a feast*, and if ye wil goe, whatsoeuer is set before you, eate, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say vnto you, This is sacrificed vnto idoles, eate it not, because of him that shewed it, & for the conscience (for the earth *is* the Lords, & all that therein is)

29 And the conscience I say, not thine, but of that other: for why should my libertie be condemned of another mans conscience?

30 For if I through *Gods* benefite be partaker, why am I euil spoken of, for that wherefore I giue thankes?

Coloss.3.17. 31 * Whether therefore ye eate, or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye doe, doe all to the glorie of God.

32 Giue

32 Giue none offence, neither to the Iewes, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God:

33 Euen as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine owne profite, but *the profite* of many, that they might be saued.

CHAP. XI.

1 He blameth the Corinthians for that in their holy assemblies, 4 men doe pray hauing their heads couered, 6 and women bare headed, and because their meetings tended to euil: 21 who mingled prophane banketts with the holy Supper of the Lord, 23 which he requireth to be celebrated according to Christes institution.

BE * ye followers of me, euen as I am of Christ. 2.*Thes.*3.9.

2 Nowe brethren, I commend you, that ye remember all my things, & keepe the ordinances, as I deliuered them to you.

3 But I will that ye knowe, that Christ is the * head of euery man: and the man is the womans head: and God is Christs head. *Ephes.*5.23.

4 Euery man praying or prophecying hauing *any thing* on his head, dishonoreth his head.

5 But euery woman that prayeth or prophecieth bare headed, dishonoreth her head: for it is euē one very thing, as though she were shauen.

6 Therefore if the woman be not couered, let her also be shorne: and if it be shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be couered.

7 For a man ought not to couer *his* head: forasmuch as he is the * image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man. *Gen.*1.26. & 5.1. &

8 For the man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man. 9.6. *Coloss.* 3.10.

9 *For the man was not created for the womans sake: but the woman for the mans sake. *Gen.*2.22.

10 Therefore ought the woman to haue power on *her* head, because of the Angels.

11 Nevertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man, so is the man also by the woman: but all things are of God.

13 Iudge in your selues, is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vncouered?

14 Doeth not nature it selfe teache you, that if a man

haue long heare, it is a shame vnto him?

15 But if a woman haue long heare, it is a praise vnto her: for her heare is giuen her for a couering.

16 But if any man lust to be contentious, we haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God.

17 ¶ Now in this that I declare, I praise *you* not, that ye come together, not with profite, but with hurt.

18 For first of all, when ye come together in ỹ Church, I heare that there are dissensions among you: and I beleeue it *to be true* in some part.

19 For there must be heresies euen among you, that they which are approued among you, might be knowen.

20 When ye come together therefore into one place, *this* is not to eate the Lordes supper.

21 For euery man when they shoulde eate, taketh his owne supper afore, & one is hungrie, & another is drunken.

22 Haue ye not houses to eate and to drinke in? or despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that haue not? what shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

23 For I haue receiued of the Lorde that which I also haue deliuered vnto you, *to wit*, That the Lord Iesus in the night that he was betraied, tooke bread:

Mat.26.26. mark.14.22 luke 22.19. 24 * And when he had giuen thankes, he brake it, and said, Take, eate: this is my body, which is broken for you: this doe ye in remembrance of me.

25 After the same maner also *he tooke* the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the Newe testament in my blood: this doe as oft as ye drinke it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye shall eate this bread, and drinke this cup, ye shew the Lordes death till he come.

27 Wherefore, whosoeuer shall eate this bread, and drinke the cup of the Lord vnworthily, shalbe guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

2.Cor.13.5. 28 * Let euery man therefore examine himselfe, and so let him eate of this bread, and drinke of this cup.

29 For he that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth and drinketh his owne damnation, *because* he discerneth not the Lordes body.

30 For this cause many *are* weake, and sicke among you, and many sleepe.

31 For if we would iudge our selues, we shoulde not

be

dged.

32 But when we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lord, because we should not be condemned with ỹ world.

33 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eate, tarie one for another.

34 And if any man be hungrie, let him eate at home, that ye come not together vnto condemnation. Other things will I set in order when I come.

CHAP XII.

To draw away the Corinthians from contention and pride, he sheweth that spirituall giftes are therefore diuersly bestowed, 7 that, the same being ioyntly to eche other imployed, 12 we may growe vp together into one body of Christ in such equall proportion and measure, 20 as the members of mans body doe.

1 Owe concerning spirituall *giftes*, brethren, I woulde not haue you ignorant.

2 Ye knowe that ye were Gentiles, and were caried away vnto the dumme idoles, as ye were led.

3 Wherefore, I declare vnto you, that no man * speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Iesus * execrable: also no man can say that Iesus is the Lorde, but by the holy Ghost. *Mark. 9. 39. Chap. 8. 6. iohn 13. 13. phil. 2. 11.*

4 Now there are diuersities of gifts, but ỹ same Spirit.

5 And there are diuersities of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diuersities of operations, but God is the same which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is giuen to enery man, to profit withall.

8 For to one is giuen by the Spirit the worde of wisedome: and to another the worde of knowledge, by the same Spirit:

9 And to another *is giuen* faith, by the same Spirit: and to another the gifts of healing, by the same Spirit:

10 And to another the operations of great workes: and to another, prophecie: and to another, the discerning of spirits: and to another, diuersities of tongues: and to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 *And all these things worketh one & the selfe same Spirit, distributing to enery man seuerally as he will. *Rom. 12. 3. 1 Cor. 4. 7.*

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members; & all the members of the body, which is one, though they be many, *yet* are *but* one body: euen so is Christ.

13 For by one Spirit are we al baptized into one b[ody] whether *we be* Iewes, or Grecians, whether *we be* bond or free, and haue bene all made to drinke into one Spirit.

14 For the body also is not one member, but many.

15 If the foote would say, Because I am not the hand I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the eare would say, Because I am not the eye I am not of the body, is it therefore not of the bodie?

17 If the whole body *were* an eye, where *were* the hearing? if the whole *were* hearing, where *were* the smelling?

18 But nowe hath God disposed the members euery one of them in the body at his owne pleasure.

19 For if they were all one member, where *were* the body?

20 But now *are* there many mẽbers, yet but one body.

21 And the eye can not say vnto the hand, I haue no neede of thee: nor the head againe to the feete, I haue no neede of you.

22 Yea, much rather those members of ỹ body, which seeme to be more feeble, are necessarie.

23 And vpon those *members* of the body, which we thinke most vnhoneſt, put we more honestie on: and our vncomely *partes* haue more comelines on.

24 For our comely *partes* neede it not: but God hath tempered the body together, and hath giuen the more honour to that *part* which lacked,

25 Lest there shoulde be any diuision in the body: but that the members shoulde haue the same care one for another.

26 Therefore if one member suffer, all suffer with it: if one member be had in honour, all the members reioyce with it.

27 Nowe ye are the body of Christ, and members for *your* part.

Ephes.4.11. 28 *And God hath ordeined some in the Church: as first, Apostles, secondly Prophetes, thirdly teachers, then them that doe miracles: after that, the gifts of healing, helpers, gouernours, diuersitie of tongues.

29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all teachers?

30 Are all doers of miracles? haue all the gifts of healing? doe all speake with tongues? doe all interprete?

31 But desire yon the best gifts, and I will yet shew you an more excellent way.

CHAP.

Sheweth that there are no giftes so excellent, which in Gods sight are not corrupt, if Charitie be away: 4 and therefore he digresseth vnto the commendation of it.

THough I speake with the tongues of men and Angels, and haue not loue, I am *as* sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymball.

2 And though I had the *gift* of prophecie, and knewe all secretes and all knowledge, yea, if I had all faith, so that I coulde remoue * mountaines, and had not loue, I were nothing. *Mat.17.20.*

3 And though I feede the poore with all my goodes, and though I giue my body, that I be burned, and haue not loue, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Loue suffereth long: it is bountifull: loue enuieth not: loue doeth not boast it selfe: it is not puffed vp:

5 It doeth no vncomely thing: it seeketh not her owne things; it is not prouoked to anger: it thinketh not euill

6 It reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioyceth in the truth:

7 It suffereth all things: it beleeueth all thinges: it hopeth all thinges: it endureth all thinges.

8 Loue doeth neuer fall away, though that prophecyings be abolished, or the tongues cease, or knowledge vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophecie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect, is come, then that which is in part, shalbe abolished.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I vnderstood as a childe, I thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

12 For now we see through a glasse darkely: but then *shall we see* face to face. Now I know in part: but then shal I knowe euen as I am knowen.

13 And nowe abideth faith, hope *and* loue, *euen* these three: but the chiefest of these *is* loue.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 *He commendeth the gift of prophecying: 7 and by a similitude taken of musicall instruments, 12 he teacheth the true vse of interpreting the Scriptures: 17 he taketh away the abuse: 34 and forbiddeth women to speake in the Congregation.*

FOllowe after loue, and couet spiritual *giftes*, and rather that ye may prophecie.

3 For he that ſpeaketh a *ſtrange* tongue, ſpeaketh vnto men, but vnto God: for no man heareth *him*: howbeit in the ſpirite he ſpeaketh ſecret things.

3 But he that prophecieth, ſpeaketh vnto men to edifying, and to exhortation, and to comfort.

4 He that ſpeaketh *ſtrange* language, edifieth himſelfe: but he that prophecieth, edifieth the Church.

5 I woulde that ye all ſpake *ſtrange* languages, but rather that ye prophecied: for greater is he that prophecieth, then he that ſpeaketh *diuers* tongues, except he expound it, that the Church may receiue edification.

6 And nowe, brethren, if I come vnto you ſpeaking *diuers* tongues, what ſhall I profite you, except I ſpeake to you, eyther by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine?

7 Moreouer things without life which giue a ſounde, whether *it be* a pipe or an harpe, except they make a diſtinction in the ſoundes, how ſhall it be knowen what is piped or harped?

8 And alſo if the trumpet giue an vncertaine ſounde, who ſhall prepare himſelfe to battel?

9 So likewiſe you, by the tongue, except ye vtter words that haue ſignification, howe ſhall it be vnderſtand what is ſpoken? for ye ſhall ſpeake in the ayre.

10 There are ſo many kindes of voyces (as it commeth to paſſe) in the worlde, and none of them is dumme.

11 Except I know then the power of the voyce, I ſhalbe vnto him that ſpeaketh a barbarian, and he that ſpeaketh, ſhalbe a barbarian vnto me.

12 Euen ſo, foraſmuch as ye couet ſpirituall *giftes*, ſeeke that ye may excell vnto the edifiyng of the Church.

13 Wherefore, let him that ſpeaketh a *ſtrange* tongue, pray, that he may interprete.

14 For if I pray in a *ſtrange* tongue, my ſpirit prayeth: but mine vnderſtanding is without fruite.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the ſpirit, but I will pray with the vnderſtanding alſo: I will ſing with the ſpirit, but I wil ſing with the vnderſtanding alſo.

16 Elſe, when thou bleſſeſt with the ſpirit, howe ſhall he that occupieth the roome of the vnlearned, ſay, Amen, at thy giuing of thankes, ſeeing he knoweth not what thou ſayeſt?

17 For thou verely giueſt thankes well, but the other

...edified.

18 I thank my God, I speake languages more then ye al.

19 Yet had I rather in the Church to speake fiue words with mine vnderstanding, that I might also instruct others, then ten thousand wordes in a *strange* tongue.

20 Brethren, be not * children in vnderstanding, but as concerning malicionsnesse be children, but in vnderstanding be of a ripe age. *Mat.18.3.

21 In the Law it is written, *By men of other tongues, and by other languages will I speake vnto this people: yet so shall they not heare me, sayth the Lord. *Isa.28.11.

22 Wherefore *strange* tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleeue, but to them that beleeue not: but prophecying *serueth* not for them that beleeue not, but for them which beleeue.

23 If therefore when the whole Church is come together in one, and all speake *strange* tongues, there come in they that are vnlearned, or they which beleeue not, will they not say, that ye are out of your wittes?

24 But if all prophecie, and there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vnlearned, he is rebuked of all men, and is iudged of all.

25 And so are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so he will fall downe on his face and worship God, and say plainely that God is in you in deede.

26 What is to be *done* then, brethren? when ye come together, *according as* euery one of you hath a Psalme, *or* hath doctrine, *or* hath a tongue, *or* hath reuelation, *or* hath interpretation, let all things be done vnto edifiyng.

27 If any man speake a *strange* tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the most, by three, and that by course, and let one interprete.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, *which speaketh languages*, and let him speake to himself, and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two, or three, and let the other iudge.

30 And if any thing be reuciled to another that sitteth by, let the first holde his peace.

31 For ye may all prophecie one by one, that all may learne, and all may haue comfort.

32 And the spirits of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets.

33 For God is not *the author* of confusion but of
as *we see* in all the Churches of the Saintes.

1.Tim.2.12. 34 *Let your women keepe silence in the Chur
for it is not permitted vnto them to speake: but *they*
Gene.3.16. to be subiect, as also *the Lawe saieth.

35 And if they will learne any thing, let them
their husbandes at home: for it is a shame for wome
speake in the Church.

36 Came the worde of God out from you? either c
it vnto you onely?

37 If any man thinke himselfe to be a Prophet, or
tuall, let him acknowledge, that the things, that I write
to you, are the commaundements of the Lord.

38 And if any man be ignorant, let him be ignor

39 Wherefore, brethren, couet to prophecie, a
and not to speake languages.

40 Let all things be done honestly, and by order.

CHAP. XV.

1 *The Gospel that Paul preached.* 3 *The death and re
tion of Christ.* 8 *Paul saw Christ.* 9 *He had pe
that Church, whereof afterwarde he was made a mi
12 Christ first rose againe, and we all shall rise by h
The last enemie, death.* 29 *To be baptized for
At Ephesus Paul fought with beastes.* 35 *Howe the
are raised.* 45 *The first Adam. The last Adam.* 47
first and seconde man.* 51 *We shall all be change
shall not all sleepe.* 55 *Deaths sting.* 57 *Victorie
Constancie and stedfastnes.*

Gala.1.11. MOreouer, * brethren, I declare vnto you the Go
which I preached vnto you, which ye haue also re
ued, and wherein ye continue,

2 And whereby ye are saued, if ye keepe in memo
ter what maner I preached it vnto you, except ye ha
leeued in vaine.

3 For first of all, I deliuered vnto you that which I
ceiued, howe that Christ died for our sinnes, accord
Isa.53.5. the * Scriptures,

1.Pet.2.24. 4 And that he was buried, and that he arose the
Iames 2.1. day, according to the * Scriptures,

Luke 20.19. 5 * And that he was seene of Cephas, then o
twelue.

6 After that, he was seene of mo then fiue hun
brethren at once: whereof many remaine vnto this p

vnder his feete.

26 The laſt enemie that ſhalbe deſtroyed, *is* death.

Pſal.8.6. 27 * For he hath put downe all things vnder his feet.
Ebr.2.8. (And when he ſaith that all things are ſubdued *to him*, it is manifeſt that he is excepted, which did put down all things vnder him.)

28 And when all things ſhalbe ſubdued vnto him, then ſhall the Sonne alſo himſelfe be ſubiect vnto him, that did ſubdue all things vnder him, that God may be all in all.

29 Elſe what ſhall they doe which are baptized for dead? if the dead riſe not at all, why are they then baptized for dead?

30 Why are we alſo in ieopardy euery houre?

31 By our reioycing which I haue in Chriſt Ieſus our Lord, I die dayly.

32 If I haue fought with beaſtes at Epheſus after the maner of men, what aduantageth it mee, if the dead be not
Eſai.22.13. raiſed vp? * let vs eate & drinke: for to morowe we ſhal die.

33 Be not deceyued: euil ſpeakings corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to *liue* righteouſly, & ſinne not: for ſome haue not the knowledge of God, I ſpeake this to your ſhame.

35 But ſome man wil ſay, Howe are the dead rayſed vp? and with what body come they forth?

36 O foole, that which thou ſoweſt, is not quickened, except it die:

37 And that which thou ſoweſt, thou ſoweſt not that body that ſhalbe, but bare corne as it falleth, of wheat, or of ſome other.

38 But God gineth it a body at his pleaſure, euen to euery ſeede his owne body.

39 All fleſh *is* not the ſame fleſh, but there is one fleſh of men, and another fleſh of beaſtes, and another of fiſhes, and another of birdes.

40 There *are* alſo heauenly bodies, and earthly bodies: but the glory of the heauenly *is* one, and *the glorie* of the earthly *is* another.

41 There is another glory of the ſunne, & another glorie of the moone, and another glory of the ſtarres: for one ſtarre differeth from *another* ſtarre in glorie.

42 So alſo *is* the reſurrection of the dead, *The body is* ſowen in corruption, *and* is raiſed in incorruption.

43 It is ſowen in diſhonour, *and* is rayſed in glory: it is ſowen

is in weakenes, it is raysed in power.

44 It is sowen a natural body, & is raised a spiritual bodie: there is a naturall body, & there is a spirituall bodie.

45 As it is also written, The first man *Adam was made a liuing soule: & the last Adã *was made* a quickening Spirit. *Gen.2.7.*

46 Howbeit that *was* not first which is spiritual: but that which is naturall, and afterward that *which is* spirituall.

47 The first man *is* of the earth, earthly: the second man is the Lord from heauen.

48 As *is* the earthly, such *are* they that are earthly: and as is the heauenly, such *are* they also that are heauenly.

49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthly, so shal we beare the image of the heauenly.

50 This say I, brethren, that flesh and blood can not inherit the kingdome of God, neither doeth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Beholde, I shewe you a secret thing, we shall not all sleepe, but we shal all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinkeling of an eye at the last trumpet: for the trumpet shal blowe, and the dead shalbe raysed vp incorruptible, and we shalbe changed. *Mat.24.31* *1.thes.4.16*

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption: and this mortall *must* put on immortalitie.

54 So when this corruptible hath put on incorruption, and this mortall hath put on immortalitie, then shall bee brought to passe the saying that is written, *Death is swallowed vp into victorie. *Ose.13.14.* *heb.2.14.*

55 O death where *is* thy sting? O graue where *is* thy victorie?

56 The sting of death *is* sinne: and the strength of sinne is the Lawe.

57 *But thanks *be* vnto God which hath giuen vs victorie through our Lord Iesus Christ. *1.Iohn 5.5.*

58 Therefore my beloued brethren, be yee stedfast, vnmoueable, abundant alwayes in the worke of the Lorde, forasmuch as ye knowe, that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 He exhorteth them to helpe the poore brethren of Hierusalem: 10 Then he commendeth Timothie: 13 and so with a friendly exhortation, 19 & cõmendations, endeth the epistle.

COncerning the gathering for the Saintes, as I haue ordeined in the Churches of Galatia, so do ye also.

2 Euery

2 Euery first *day* of the weeke, let euery one of you lay aside by himselfe, and lay vp as *God* hath prospered him, that then there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I am come, whomsoeuer ye shal allowe by letters, them will I sende to bring your liberalitie vnto Hierusalem.

4 And if it be meete that I go also, they shal go with me.

5 Now I wil come vnto you, after I haue gone thorow Macedonia (for I wil passe through Macedonia.)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, or winter with you, that ye may bring me on my way whithersoeuer I goe.

7 For I wil not see you now in my passage, but I trust to abide a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 And I wil tarie at Ephesus vntill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto me, and there are many aduersaries.

10 ¶ Nowe if Timotheus come, see that he be without feare with you: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, euen as I *doe*.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conney him forth in peace, that he may come vnto me: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching *our* brother Apollos, I greatly desired him, to come vnto you with the brethren: but his minde was not at all to come at this time: howbeit he wil come when he shal haue conuenient time.

13 ¶ Watche ye: stand fast in the faith: quite you like men, *and* be strong.

14 Let all your things be done in loue.

15 Nowe brethren, I beseeche you (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruites of Achaia, and that they haue giuen themselues to minister vnto the Saintes)

16 That ye be obedient euen vnto such, and to all that helpe with vs and labour.

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, & Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for they haue supplied the want of you.

18 For they haue comforted my spirit and yours: acknowledge therefore such men.

19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila & Priscilla with the Church that is in their house, salute you greatly
Rom. 16.16 in the Lorde.
2.*cor.* 13.12. 20 All the brethren greete you. Greete ye one another
1.*pet.* 5.14. with an * holy kisse.

21 The

21 The salutation of *me* Paul with mine owne hand.
22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him be
had in execration maran-atha.
23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you.
24 My loue *be* with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, *and sent* by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

He beginneth with the prayse of afflictions, 8 *declaring what he hath suffered in Asia,* 10 *and howe happily God assisted him.* 17 *He sayth it was not vpon any lightnes, that he came not, according to his promise.*

PAul an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, by the wil of God, and *our* brother Timotheus, to the Church of God, which is at Corinthus with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lorde Iesus Christ.

3 *Blessed *be* God, euen the Father of our Lorde Iesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort, *Ephe.1.3. 1.pet.1.3.*

4 Which comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any affliction by the cofort wherewith we our selues are comforted of God.

5 For as the suffrings of Christ abound in vs, so our consolation abounderh through Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your cōsolation and saluation, which is wrought in the induring of the same suffrings, which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your consolation and saluation.

7 And our hope is stedfast concerning you, in as much as we know that as ye are partakers of the suffrings, so *shal ye be* also of the consolation.

8 For

2 For he that ſpeaketh a *ſtrange* tongue, ſpeaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: for no man heareth *him*: howbeit in the ſpirite he ſpeaketh ſecret things.

3 But he that prophecieth, ſpeaketh vnto men to edifying, and to exhortation, and to comfort.

4 He that ſpeaketh *ſtrange* language, edifieth himſelfe: but he that prophecieth, edifieth the Church.

5 I woulde that ye all ſpake *ſtrange* languages, but rather that ye prophecied: for greater is he that prophecieth, then he that ſpeaketh *diuers* tongues, except he expound it, that the Church may receiue edification.

6 And nowe, brethren, if I come vnto you ſpeaking *diuers* tongues, what ſhall I profite you, except I ſpeake to you, eyther by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine?

7 Moreouer things without life which giue a ſounde, whether *it be* a pipe or an harpe, except they make a diſtinction in the ſoundes, how ſhall it be knowen what is piped or harped?

8 And alſo if the trumpet giue an vncertaine ſounde, who ſhall prepare himſelfe to battel?

9 So likewiſe you, by the tongue, except ye vtter words that haue ſignification, howe ſhall it be vnderſtand what is ſpoken? for ye ſhall ſpeake in the ayre.

10 There are ſo many kindes of voyces (as it commeth to paſſe) in the worlde, and none of them is dumme.

11 Except I know then the power of the voyce, I ſhall be vnto him that ſpeaketh a barbarian, and he that ſpeaketh, ſhalbe a barbarian vnto me.

12 Euen ſo, foraſmuch as ye couet ſpirituall *giftes*, ſeeke that ye may excell vnto the edifiyng of the Church.

13 Wherefore, let him that ſpeaketh a *ſtrange* tongue, pray, that he may interprete.

14 For if I pray in a *ſtrange* tongue, my ſpirit prayeth, but mine vnderſtanding is without fruite.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the ſpirit, but I will pray with the vnderſtanding alſo: I will ſing with the ſpirit, but I wil ſing with the vnderſtanding alſo.

16 Elſe, when thou bleſſeſt with the ſpirit, howe ſhall he that occupieth the roome of the vnlearned, ſay, Amen, at thy giuing of thankes, ſeeing he knoweth not what thou ſayeſt?

17 For thou verely gineſt thankes well, but the other

edified.

18 I thank my God, I speake languages more then ye al.

19 Yet had I rather in the Church to speake fiue wordes with mine vnderstanding, that I might also instruct others, then ten thousand wordes in a *strange* tongue.

20 Brethren, be not * children in vnderstanding, but as concerning maliciousnesse be children, but in vnderstanding be of a ripe age. * Mat.18.3.

21 In the Law it is written, *By men of other tongues, and by other languages will I speake vnto this people: yet so shall they not heare me, sayth the Lord. * Isa.28.11.

22 Wherefore *strange* tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleeue, but to them that beleeue not: but prophecying *serueth* not for them that beleeue not, but for them which beleeue.

23 If therefore when the whole Church is come together in one, and all speake *strange* tongues, there come in they that are vnlearned, or they which beleeue not, will they not say, that ye are out of your wittes?

24 But if all prophecie, and there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vnlearned, he is rebuked of all men, and is iudged of all.

25 And so are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so he will fall downe on his face and worship God, and confesse plainely that God is in you in deede.

26 What is to be *done* then, brethren? when ye come together, *according as* euery one of you hath a Psalme, *or* hath doctrine, *or* hath a tongue, *or* hath reuelation, *or* hath interpretation, let all things be done vnto edifiyng.

27 If any man speake a *strange* tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the most, by three, and that by course, and let one interprete.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, *which speaketh languages*, and let him speake to himselfe, and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two, or three, and let the other iudge.

30 And if any thing be reuciled to another that sitteth by, let the first holde his peace.

31 For ye may all prophecie one by one, that all may learne, and all may haue comfort.

32 And the spirits of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets.

33 For God is not *the auctour* of confusio, but of
as *we see* in all the Churches of the Saintes.

1.Tim.2.12 34 *Let your women keepe silence in the Chur
for it is not permitted vnto them to speake: but *they*
Gene.3.16. to be subiect, as also * the Lawe saieth.

35 And if they will learne any thing, let them
their husbandes at home: for it is a shame for women
speake in the Church.

36 Came the worde of God out from you? either c
it vnto you onely?

37 If any man thinke himselfe to be a Prophet, or
tuall, let him acknowledge, that the things that I write
to you, are the commaundements of the Lord.

38 And if any man be ignorant, let him be ignor

39 Wherefore, brethren, couet to prophecie, and
bid not to speake languages.

40 Let all things be done honestly, and by order.

CHAP. XV.

1 *The Gospel that Paul preached.* 3 *The death and re
tion of Christ.* 8 *Paul saw Christ.* 9 *He had perse
that Church, whereof afterwarde he was made a mi
12 Christ first rose againe, and we all shall rise by hi
The last enmie, death.* 29 *To be baptized for dead
At Ephesus Paul fought with beastes.* 35 *Howe the
are raised.* 45 *The first Adam. The last Adam.* 47
first and seconde man. 51 *We shall all be changed
shall not all sleepe.* 55 *Deaths sting.* 58 *Victorie.
Constancie and stedfastnes.*

Galat.1.11. MOreouer, * brethren, I declare vnto you the Go
which I preached vnto you, which ye haue also re
ued, and wherein ye continue,

2 And whereby ye are saued, if ye keepe in memorie
tet what maner I preached it vnto you, except ye have
leeued in vaine.

3 For first of all, I deliuered vnto you that which I
ceiued, howe that Christ died for our sinnes, according
Isa.53.5. the * Scriptures,
1.Pet.2.24.
Rom.4.1. 4 And that he was buried, and that he arose the th
Iohn 20.19. day, according to the * Scriptures,

5 * And that he was seene of Cephas, then of
twelue.

6 After that, he was seene of mo then fiue hundr
brethren at once: where of many remaine vnto this pres

also are asleepe.

that, he was seene of Iames, then of all the A-

And last of all he was seene also of mee, as of one *Act. 9. 5.*
out of due time.

For I am the least of the Apostles, which am not *Ephes. 3. 8.*
meet to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the
Church of God.

But by the grace of God, I am that I am: and his *Ephes. 4. 7.*
grace which is in me, was not in vaine: but I laboured more
abundantly then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God
which was with me.

Wherefore whether it were I, or they, so we preach,
and so ye haue beleeued.

Now if Christ be preached, that Christ is risen from the
dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrec-
tion of the dead?

But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is
Christ not risen.

And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching
vaine, and your faith is also vaine.

Yea we are found also false witnesses of God: for we
haue testified of God, that he hath raysed vp Christ: whom
he hath not raysed vp, if so be the dead rise not.

For if the dead rise not, then is Christ not raysed.

And if Christ be not raysed, your faith is vayne: ye
are yet in your sinnes.

And so they also which are fallen asleepe in Christ, are perished.

If in this life only we haue hope in Christ, we are
of all men the most miserable.

But now is Christ risen from the dead, and was made *Col. 1. 18.*
the first fruites of them that slept.

For since by man came death, by man came also the *Rom. 1. 5.*
resurrection of the dead.

For as in Adam all dye, euen so in Christ shall all be
made aliue.

But euery man in his owne order: the first fruites *1. Thes. 4. 15*
Christ, afterward they that are of Christ at his comming.

Then commeth the ende, when he hath deliuered vp *Psal. 110. 1.*
the kingdome to God, euen the Father, when he hath put *Act. 2. 34.*
downe all rule, and all authoritie and power. *Heb. 1. 13.*

For he must reigne, till he hath put all his enemies *vnder*

vnder his feete.

26 The laſt enemie that ſhalbe deſtroyed, *is* death.

Pſal.8.6. 27 * For he hath put downe all things vnder his feet.
Ebr.2.8. (And when he ſaith that all things are ſubdued *to him*, it is manifeſt that he is excepted, which did put down all things vnder him.)

28 And when all things ſhalbe ſubdued vnto him, then ſhall the Sonne alſo himſelfe be ſubiect vnto him, that did ſubdue all things vnder him, that God may be all in all.

29 Elſe what ſhall they doe which are baptized for dead? if the dead riſe not at all, why are they then baptized for dead?

30 Why are we alſo in ieopardy euery houre?

31 By our reioycing which I haue in Chriſt Ieſus our Lord, I die dayly.

32 If I haue fought with beaſtes at Epheſus after the maner of men, what aduantageth it mee, if the dead be not
Eſai. 22. 13. raiſed vp? * let vs eate & drinke: for to morowe we ſhall die.

33 Be not deceyued: euil ſpeakings corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to *iuſtice* righteouſly, & ſinne not: for ſome haue not the knowledge of God, I ſpeake this to your ſhame.

35 But ſome man wil ſay, Howe are the dead rayſed vp? and with what body come they forth?

36 O foole, that which thou ſoweſt, is not quickened except it die:

37 And that which thou ſoweſt, thou ſoweſt not that body that ſhalbe, but bare corne as it falleth, of wheat, or of ſome other.

38 But God gineth it a body at his pleaſure, euen to euery ſeede his owne body.

39 All fleſh *is* not the ſame fleſh, but there is one fleſh of men, and another fleſh of beaſtes, and another of fiſhes, and another of birdes.

40 There *are* alſo heauenly bodies, and earthly bodies: but the glory of the heauenly *is* one, and *the glorie* of the earthly *is* another.

41 There is another glory of the ſunne, & another glorie of the moone, and another glory of the ſtarres: for one ſtarre differeth from *another* ſtarre in glorie.

42 So alſo *is* the reſurrection of the dead, *The body* is ſowen in corruption, *and* is raiſed in incorruption.

43 It is ſowen in diſhonour, *and* is rayſed in glory: it is ſow-

44 It is sowen a naturall body, & is raised a spirituall bo-
die: there is a naturall body, & there is a spirituall bodie.
45 As it is also written, The first man *Adam was made a liuing soule: & the last Adã *was made* a quickening Spirit. *Gen.2.7.*
46 Howbeit that *was* not first which is spiritual: but that which *is* naturall, and afterward that *which is* spirituall.
47 The first man *is* of the earth, earthly: the second man is the Lord from heauen.
48 As *is* the earthly, such *are* they that are earthly: and as *is* the heauenly, such *are* they also that are heauenly.
49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthly, so shal we beare the image of the heauenly.
50 This say I, brethren, that flesh and blood can not inherite the kingdome of God, neither doeth corruption inherit incorruption.
51 Beholde, I shewe you a secret thing, we shall not all sleepe, but we shal all be changed,
52 In a moment, in the twinkeling of an eye at the last trumpet: for the trumpet shal blowe, and the dead shalbe raised vp incorruptible, and we shalbe changed. *Mat.24.31. 1.Thes.4.16*
53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption: and this mortall *must* put on immortalitie.
54 So when this corruptible hath put on incorruption, and this mortall hath put on immortalitie, then shall bee brought to passe the saying that is written, *Death is swallowed vp into victorie. *Ose.13.14. heb.2.14.*
55 O death where *is* thy sting? O graue where *is* thy victorie?
56 The sting of death *is* sinne: and the strength of sinne is the Lawe.
57 *But thanks *be* vnto God which hath giuen vs victorie through our Lord Iesus Christ. *1.Iohn 5.5.*
58 Therefore my beloued brethren, be yee stedfast, vnmoueable, abundant alwayes in the worke of the Lorde, forasmuch as ye knowe, that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *He exhorteth them to helpe the poore brethren of Hierusalem:* 10 *Then he commendeth Timothie:* 13 *and so with a friendly exhortation,* 19 *& cõmendations, endeth the epistle.*

Concerning the gathering for the Saintes, as I haue ordeined in the Churches of Galatia, so do ye also.

2 Euery

2 Euery first *day* of the weeke, let euery one of you put aside by himself, and lay vp as God hath prospered him, that then there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I am come, whomsoeuer ye shal allow by letters, them will I sende to bring your liberalitie vnto Hierusalem.

4 And if it be meete that I go also, they shal go with me.

5 Now I wil come vnto you, after I haue gone thorowe Macedonia (for I wil passe through Macedonia.)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, or winter with you, that ye may bring me on my way whithersoeuer I goe.

7 For I wil not see you now in my passage, but I trust to abide a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 And I wil tarie at Ephesus vntill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto me, and there are many aduersaries.

10 ¶ Nowe if Timotheus come, see that he be without feare with you: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, euen as I *doe*.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conney him forth in peace, that he may come vnto me: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching *our* brother Apollos, I greatly desired him, to come vnto you with the brethren: but his minde was not at all to come at this time: howbeit he wil come when he shal haue conuenient time.

13 ¶ Watche ye: stand fast in the faith: quite you like men, *and* be strong.

14 Let all your things be done in loue.

15 Nowe brethren, I beseeche you (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruites of Achaia, and that they haue giuen themselues to minister vnto the Saintes)

16 That ye be obedient euen vnto such, and to all that helpe with vs and labour.

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, & Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for they haue supplied the want of you.

18 For they haue comforted my spirit and yours: acknowledge therefore such men.

19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila & Priscilla with the Church that is in their house, salute you greatly
Rom. 16,16 in the Lorde.
2.*cor.* 13.12. 20 All the brethren greete you. Greete ye one another
1.*pet.* 5,14. with an * holy kisse.

21 The

21 The ſalutation of *me* Paul with mine owne hand.
22 If any man loue not the Lord Ieſus Chriſt, let him be had in execration maran-atha.
23 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt *be* with you.
24 My loue *be* with you all in Chriſt Ieſus, Amen.

¶ The firſt *Epiſtle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, *and ſent* by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

He beginneth with the prayſe of afflictions, 8 *declaring what he hath ſuffered in Aſia,* 10 *and howe happily God aſſiſted him.* 17 *He ſayth it was not vpon any lightnes, that he came not, according to his promiſe.*

PAul an Apoſtle of IESVS CHRIST, by the wil of God, and *our* brother Timotheus, to the Church of God, which is at Corinthus with all the Saints, which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lorde Ieſus Chriſt.

3 *Bleſſed *be* God, euen the Father of our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort, *Ephe.1.3. 1.pet.1.3.*

4 Which comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any affliction by the cofort wherewith we our ſelues are comforted of God.

5 For as the ſuffrings of Chriſt abound in vs, ſo our conſolation aboundeth through Chriſt.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your coſolation and ſaluation, which is wrought in the enduring of the ſame ſuffrings, which we alſo ſuffer: or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your conſolation and ſaluation.

7 And our hope is ſted faſt concerning you, in as much as we know that as ye are partakers of the ſuffrings, ſo *ſhal ye be* alſo of the conſolation.

8 For

8 For brethren, we would not haue you ignorant of our affliction, which came vnto vs in Asia, how we were pressed out of measure passing strength, so that we altogether doubted, euen of life.

9 Yea, we receiued the sentence of death in our selues, because we should not trust in our selues, but in God, which rayseth the dead.

10 Who deliuered vs from so great a death, & doeth deliuer *vs*: in whom we trust, that yet hereafter he wil deliuer *vs*,

Rom.15.30. 11 * So that yee labour together in prayer for vs, that for the gift *bestowed* vpon vs for many, thanks may be giuen by many persons for vs.

12 For our reioycing is this, the testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicitie & godly purenes, & not in fleshly wisdome, but by the grace of God we haue had our conuersation in the worlde, and most of all to you wardes.

13 For we write none other things vnto you, then that ye reade, or els that ye acknowledge, and I trust ye shall acknowledge vnto the ende.

14 Euen as ye haue acknowledged vs partly, that we are your reioycing, euen as yee are ours, in the daye of our Lord Iesus.

15 And in this confidence was I minded first to come vnto you, that ye might haue had a double grace,

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, & to be led forth toward Iudea of you.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vse lightnes? or minde I those thinges which I minde, according to the flesh, that with me should be, Yea, yea, and Nay, nay?

18 Yea, God is faithfull, that our word toward you was not Yea, and Nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was preached among you by vs, *that is* by me, & Siluanus, and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay: but in him it was Yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are Yea, and are in him Amen, vnto the glory of God through vs.

21 And it is God which stablisheth vs with you in Christ, and hath anoynted vs,

22 Who hath also sealed vs, & hath giuen the earnest of the Spirit in our heartes.

23 Nowe, I call God for a record vnto my soule, that to spare

...yon, I came not as yet vnto Corinthus.

Not that we haue dominion ouer your faith, but we ...helpers of your ioy: for by faith ye ſtand.

CHAP. II.

He excuſeth his not comming vnto them, 2 & priuily repre-...ueth them. 4 He ſheweth that ſuch is his affectiō towards ...them, 5 that he neuer reioyceth but when they are merie. 6 Perſuading the adulterer (whom he commaded to be delue-red vp to Satan) to repent. 7 He requeſteth that they forgiue ...him. 12 He mentioneth his going into Macedonia.

VEt I determined thus in my ſelfe, that I would not come ...againe to you in heauines.

For if I make you ſorie, who is he then that ſhoulde ...make me glad, but the ſame which is made ſorie by me?

And I wrote this ſame thing vnto you, leaſt when I ...ſhould take heauines of them, of whome I ought to ...reioyce: this confidence haue I in you all, that my ioy is the ...of you all.

For in great affliction, and anguiſh of heart I wrote ...you with many teares: not that ye ſhould be made ſo-...but that ye might perceiue the loue which I haue, ſpe-...ially vnto you.

And if any hath cauſed ſorowe, the ſame hath not ...made me ſorie, but partly (leaſt I ſhould more charge *him*) ...you all.

It is ſufficient vnto the ſame man, that he was rebu-...of many.

So that now contrariwiſe ye ought rather to forgiue ...and comfort *him*, leſt the ſame ſhould be ſwallowed vp ...with ouermuch heauines.

Wherfore, I pray you, that you would confirme your ...loue towards him.

For this cauſe alſo did I write, that I might know the ...proofe of you, whether ye would be obedient in all things.

To whom ye forgiue any thing, I *forgiue* alſo: for ve-...rily if I forgaue any thing, to whome I forgaue it, for your ...ſakes *forgaue I it* in the ſight of Chriſt,

Leaſt Satan ſhoulde circumuent vs: for we are not ...ignorant of his enterpriſes.

¶ Furthermore, when I came to Troas *to preache* ...Chriſtes Goſpell, and a doore was opened vnto mee of the ...Lorde,

I had no reſt in my ſpirit, becauſe I founde not Titus

my

my brother, but tooke my leaue of them, and went [from] to Macedonia.

14 Now thanks *be* vnto God which alwayes ma[keth] to triumphe in Christ, & maketh manifest the sauou[r] knowledge by vs in euery place.

15 For we are vnto God the *sweete* sauour of C[hrist] in them that are saued, and in them which perish.

16 To the one *we are* the sauour of death, vnto [death] and to the other the sauour of life, vnto life: and who [is] ficient for these things?

Chap. 4.2. 17 *For we are not as many, which make marchan[dise] of the worde of God: but as of synceritie, but as of God [in] the sight of God speake we in Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 He desireth no other commendation, then their con[stancie] in the faith. 6 He is a minister not of the letter, but [of the] Spirit. 8 He sheweth the differences of the Lawe [and] Gospel. 13 that the brightnesse of the Lawe doeth [not] dimme the light then lightneth: 18 But the Gospel [doth] make manifest Gods countenance vnto vs.

DO we begin to prayse our selues againe? or neede [we] some other, epistles of recommendation vnto you, [or] letters of recommendation from you?

2 Ye are our epistle, written in our hearts, which [is] dersta[n]d, and read of all men.

3 In that ye are manifest, to bee the epistle [of] Christ, ministred by vs, and written not with yncke, but [by] the Spirit of the liuing God, not in tables of stone, but [in] fleshly tables of the heart.

4 And such trust haue we through Christ to God-[ward]

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selues, to think [any] thing, as of our selues: but our sufficiencie is of God,

6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the [new] Testament, not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the [letter] killeth, but the Spirit giueth life.

7 If then the ministration of death *written* with [letters] and ingraued in stones, was glorious, so that the chil[dren] of Israel coulde not behold the face of Moses, for the [glory] of his countenance (which glory is done away):

8 How shal not the ministration of the Spirit be [more] glorious?

9 For if the ministerie of condemnation *was* glo[rious]

more doth the ministration of righteousness exceede in glorie.

10 For euen that which was glorified, was not glorified in this point, *by a*, as touching the excelling glorie.

11 For if that which should be abolished, was glorious, much more that which remaineth, be glorious.

12 Seeing then that we haue such trust, we vse great

13 And *are* not as Moses, *which* put a valle vpon his face, that the children of Israel should not stedfastly looke vnto the ende of that which should be abolished. *Exod. 34. 33*

14 Therefore their mindes were blinded: for vntil this day remayneth the same couering vntaken away in the reading of the old Testament, which vaile in Christ is put away.

15 But euen vntil this day, when Moses is read, the vaile is layed ouer their hearts.

16 Neuertheles when their *heart* shalbe turned to the Lord, the vaile shalbe taken away.

17 Nowe the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, there is libertie. *Iohn 4. 14.*

18 But we all beholding as in a mirrour the glorie of the Lord with open face, are changed into the same image, from glorie to glorie, as by the Spirit of the Lord.

CHAP. IIII.

The meanes that he hath so laboured in preaching the Gospell. 4 That such are euen blinded of Satan, who do not perceiue the brightnes thereof. 6 That the same is caried in earthen vessels, 10 who are subiect to many miseries, 16 and therefore be exhorteth them to constancie, 17 example to be contemned, 17 and comforteth them.

1 Therefore, seeing that we haue this ministerie, as we haue receiued mercie, we faint not.

2 But haue cast from vs the hidden things of dishonestie, not walking in craftines, neither handle we the worde of God deceitfully: but in declaration of the truth we approue our selues to euery mans conscience in the sight of God.

3 If our Gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost.

4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the mindes of the infidels, that the glorious light of the Gospel of Christ, which is the image of God, should not

5 For we preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants for Iesus sake.

Gen.1.3. 6 For God * that commanded the light to shine
darkenes, is he which hath shined in our hearts, to gi
light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the fa
Iesus Christ.

7 But we haue this treasure in earthen vessels, that
excellencie of that power might be of God, and not of

8 We are afflicted on euery side, yet *are we* not
streste: we are in doubt, but yet we despaire not.

9 *We are* persecuted, but not forsaken: cast downe,
we perish not.

10 Euery where we beare about in our body the d
of the Lorde Iesus, that the life of Iesus might also be
manifest in our bodies.

11 For we which liue, are alwayes deliuered vnto d
for Iesus sake, that the life also of Iesus might be made
nifest in our mortall flesh.

12 So then death worketh in vs, and life in you.

13 And because we haue the same spirit of faith, acc
Psal.116.10 ding as it is written, * I beleeued, and therefore haue I s
ken, we also beleeue, and therefore speake,

14 Knowing that he which hath raised vp the Lord I
sus, shall raise vs vp also by Iesus, and shall set vs with y

15 For all things *are* for your sakes, that that most pl
teous grace by the thankesgiuing of many, may redou
to the praise of God.

16 Therefore we faint not, but though our outw
man perish, yet the inward man is renewed dayly.

17 For our light affliction which is but for a mom
causeth vnto vs a farre most excellent *and* an eternal we
of glorie:

18 While we looke not on the things which are see
but on the things which are not seene: for the things wh
are seene, are temporal: but the things which are not see
are eternall.

CHAP. V.

1 *He continueth in the same argument,* 6 *touching the*
sweet hope of saluation 8 *through faith,* 12 *not to pr*
himselfe, 14 *seeing hee hath God and his Church be*
his eyes, 17 *and esteemeth nothing, but newnes of li*
Christ.

FOr we knowe that if our earthly house of this taberna
be destroyed, we haue a building *giuen* of God, *that*
house not made with handes, *but* eternal in the heauen

2

2 For therefore we sighe, desiring to be clothed with
house, which is from heauen.

3 Because that if we be clothed, we shall not be found
naked.

Rom. 16. 19.

4 For in deede we that are in this tabernacle, sigh and
are burdened, because wee would not be vnclothed, but
would be clothed vpon, that mortalitie might be swalowed
vp of life.

5 And hee that hath created vs for this thing, is God,
who also hath giuen vnto vs the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore we are alway bolde, though we know that
while we are at home in the body, we are absent from the
Lord.

7 (For we walke by faith, and not by sight.)

8 Nouertheles, we are bold, and loue rather to remoue
out of the body, and to dwell with the Lord.

9 Wherefore also we coueт, that both dwelling at home,
or remoouing from home, we may be acceptable to him.

10 *For we must al appeare before the iudgement seat
of Christ, that euery man may receiue the things which are
done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it
be good or euil.

Rom. 14. 10.

11 Knowing therefore that terrour of the Lord, we per-
swade men, and we are made manifest vnto God, and I trust
that we are made manifest in your consciences.

12 For we praise not our selues againe vnto you, but
giue you an occasion to reioyce of vs, that ye may haue to an-
swer against them, which reioyce in the face, and not in the
heart.

13 For whether we be out of our wit, *we are it* to God:
or whether we be in our right minde, *we are it* vnto you.

14 For that loue of Christ constraineth vs,

15 Because we thus iudge, that if one be dead for all,
then were all dead, and he dyed for all, that they which liue,
should not henceforth liue vnto themselues, but vnto him
which died for them, and rose againe.

16 Wherefore, henceforth knowe we no man after the
flesh, yea though we had knowen Christ after the flesh, yet
now henceforth know we him no more.

17 Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *he is he* a newe
creature. * Olde things are passed away, behold, all things
are become newe.

Isa. 43. 18. Reuel. 21. 5.

18 And all things are of God, which hath reconciled

vs vnto himselfe by Iesus Christ, and hath giuen vnto
ministerie of reconciliation.

19 For God was in Christ, and reconciled the
himselfe, not imputing their sinnes vnto them, & hath
put in vs the word of reconciliation.

20 Now then are we ambassadours for Christ, as
God did beseeche *you* through vs, we pray you in Christ
steade, that ye be reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him *to be* sinne for vs, which
no sinne, that we should be made the righteousnes of
in him.

CHAP. VI.

1 *He exhorteth them to leade their liues as it becom*
Christians, 5 *neither to be dismayed in tribulations,*
puffed vp with glorie, 14 *to auoyde all vncleannes,*
considering that they are the temples of the liuing God.

SO we therefore as workers together beseech *you*, th
receiue not the grace of God in vaine.

Esa.49.8. 2 For he saith, * I haue heard thee in a time acce
and in the day of saluation haue I succoured thee: be
now the accepted time, behold now the day of salua

3 We giue no occasion of offence in any thing, th
ministerie should not be reprehended.

2.Cor.4.1. 4 But in all things we approue our selues as * the
sters of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessi
distresses,

5 In stripes, in prisons, in tumultes, in labours,

6 By watchings, by fastings, by puritie, by knowle
by long suffering, by kindnes, by the holy Ghost, by loue
fained,

7 By the worde of trueth, by the power of God, by
armour of righteousnes on the right hand, and on the

8 By honour, and dishonour, by euil report, and goo
port, as deceiuers, and *yet* true:

9 As vnknowen, and *yet* knowen: as dying, and beh
we liue: as chastened, and *yet* not killed:

10 As sorowing, and *yet* alway reioycing: as poore
yet make many riche: as hauing nothing, and *yet* posse
all things.

11 O Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you
heart is made large.

12 Ye are not kept straight in vs, but ye are kept
in your owne bowels.

13 Now

Nowe for the same recompence, I speake as to my
Be you also enlarged.
Be not vnequally yoked with the infidels: for *what
ship hath righteousnes with vnrighteousnes? and
communion hath light with darkenes?
And what concorde hath Christ with Belial? or what
hath the beleeuer with the infidel?
And what agreement hath the Temple of God with
dols? for ye are the temple of the liuing God: as God
hath said, *I will dwell among them, and walke there: and
I will be their God, and they shalbe my people.
*Wherefore come out from among them, and sepa-
your selues, saith the Lord: and touche none vncleane
and I will receiue you.
*And I will be a Father vnto you, and ye shalbe my
sons and daughters, saith the Lord almightie.

Eccl. 13.18.
1. *Cor.* 3. 16. *and* 6.19.
Leui. 26.11.
Isa. 52. 11.
Iere. 31.1.

CHAP. VII.

Paul by earnest vrging them he should dismay their tender minds, 2 he proueth that all that he said, 4 proceeded of the great good will he bare vnto them: 8 And therefore they should not be offended, that he made them sorie, 10 and brought them to repentance not to be repented of.

Hauing then we haue these promises, dearely beloued, let vs
cleanse our selues from all filthines of the flesh and spirit,
and finish *our* sanctification in the feare of God.
2 Receiue vs: wee haue done wrong to no man; wee
haue corrupted no man: we haue defrauded no man.
3 I speake it not to *your* condemnation: for I haue said
before, that ye are in our hearts, to die and liue together.
4 I vse great boldnes of speache toward you: I reioyce
greatly in you: I am filled with comfort, and am exceeding
ioyous in all our tribulation.
5 For when wee were come into Macedonia, our flesh
had no rest, but we were troubled on euery side; fightings
without, and terrours within.
6 But God, that comforteth the abiect, comforted vs at
the comming of Titus:
7 And not by his comming onely, but also by the conso-
lation wherewith he was comforted of you, when he tolde
vs your great desire, your mourning, your feruent minde to
me warde, so that I reioyced much more.
8 For though I made you sorie with a letter, I repent
not, though I did repent: for I perceiue that the same epistle

made you sorie, though it were but for a season.

9 I nowe reioyce, not that ye were sorie, but that ye
rowed to repentance: for ye sorowed godly, so that n
thing ye were hurt by vs.

10 For godly sorowe causeth repentance vnto sa
tion, not to be repented of: but the worldly sorowe caus
death.

11 For beholde, this thing that ye haue bene godly s
rie, what great care it hath wrought in you? yea, what c
ring of your selues? yea, what indignation? yea, what f
yea, how great desire? yea, what a zeale? yea, what reue
in all things ye haue shewed your selues, that ye are p
in this matter.

12 Wherefore, though I wrote vnto you, I did no
for his cause that had done the wrong, neither for his ca
that had the iniurie, but that our care toward you in
sight of God might appeare vnto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted, because ye we
comforted: but rather we reioyced much more for the
of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if that I haue boasted any thing to him of you,
haue not bene ashamed: but as I haue spoken vnto you a
things in truth, euen so our boasting vnto Titus was tru

15 And his inward affection is more abundant towa
you, when he remembreth the obedience of you all, and ho
with feare and trembling ye receiued him.

16 I reioyce therefore that I may put my confidence
you in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *He exhorteth them, by the example of the Macedonians,*
and also euen of Christ himselfe, 14 *to be liberal toward*
the Saintes: 16 *For which purpose, hee sheweth that Titus*
18 *and an other brother came vnto them.*

WE do you also to wit, brethren, of the grace of God be
stowed vpon the Churches of Macedonia,

2 Because in great tryal of affliction their ioy abounded
and their most extreme pouertie abounded vnto the
riche liberalitie.

3 For to *their* power (I beare record) yea, and beyon
their power, they were willing,

4 And prayed vs with great instance that we would
ceiue the grace and fellowship of the ministring which
toward the Saintes.

5 And *this they did*, not as we looked for: but gaue their owne selues, first to the Lord, and *after* vnto vs by the will of God.

6 That we should exhort Titus, that as he had begunne, so hee would also accomplish the same grace among you also.

7 Therefore, as ye abounde in euery thing, in faith and word, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your loue towards vs, *euen so see* that ye abound in this grace also.

8 This say I not by commandement, but because of the diligence of others: therefore proue I the naturalnes of your loue.

9 For ye knowe the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that he being rich, for your sakes became poore, that ye through his ponertie might be made rich.

10 And I shewe *my* minde herein: for this is expedient for you, which haue begun not to do only, but also to will, a yeare agoe.

11 Nowe therefore performe to do it also, that as there was a readines to will, euen so ye may performe it of that which ye haue.

12 For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 Neither *is it* that other men should be eased and you grieued: but vpon like condition, at this time your abundance *supplieth* their lacke:

14 That also their abundance may be for your lacke, that there may be equalitie:

15 As it is written, * Hee that *gathered* much, had no ouerplus: and he that *gathered* litle, had not the lesse.

16 And thankes *be* vnto God, which hath put in the heart of Titus the same care for you.

17 Because he accepted the exhortation, yea, he was so carefull that of his owne accorde he went vnto you.

18 And we haue sent also with him the brother, whose praise *is* in the Gospel throughout all the Churches.

19 (And not so only, but is also chosen of the Churches to be a fellow in our iourney, concerning this grace that is ministred by vs vnto the glory of the same Lord, and declaration of your prompt minde)

20 Auoyding this, that no man should blame vs in this aboundance that is ministred by vs,

Rom. 12. 17. 22 * Prouiding for honeſt things, not onely before the Lord, but alſo before men.

22 And we haue ſent with them our brother, whom we haue oft times proued to be diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, for the great confidence, which *we haue* in you.

23 Whether *any do enquire* of Titus, *he is* my fellow and helper to youward: or of our brethren, they are meſſengers of the Churches, *and* the glorie of Chriſt.

24 Wherefore ſhewe towarde them, and before the Churches the proofe of your loue, and of the reioycing that we haue of you.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Why, albeit hee thinke well of their ready wils,* 3 *yet he gentlie exhorteth them,* 4 *he yeldeth a reaſon:* 6 *He compareth almes to ſeede ſowing,* 10 *which God doeth repay with great gaines.*

FOr as touching the miniſtring to the Saintes, it is ſuperfluous for me to write vnto you. *

2 For I knowe your readines of minde, whereof I boaſt my ſelfe of you vnto them of Macedonia, *&* ſay, that Achaia was prepared a yere ago, & your zelle hath prouoked many.

3 Yet haue I ſent the brethren, leſt our reioycing of you ſhoulde be in vaine in this behalfe, that ye (as I haue ſaid) be readie:

4 Leſt if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you vnprepared, we (that we may not ſay, you) ſhould be aſhamed in this ſame conſtant boaſting.

5 Wherefore I thought it neceſſary to exhort the brethren to come before vnto you, and to finiſh your benefices appointed afore, that it might be readie, *and* come as beneuolence, and not as of niggardlines.

6 This yet *remember*, that hee which ſoweth ſparingly, ſhall reape alſo ſparingly, and he that ſoweth liberally, ſhall reape alſo liberally.

7 As euery man witheth in his heart, *ſo let him giue*, not Rom. 12. 8. * gradgingly, or of neceſſitie: * for God loueth a cheerefull giuer. Deut. 15. 10.

8 And God is able to make all grace to abound toward you, that ye hauing all ſufficiencie in all things, may abound in euery good worke.

As it is written, He hath ſpred abroad, and hath giuen to the poore: his righteouſneſſe remaineth for euer.

10 Now

...he that findeth seede to the sower, will minister
...read for foode, and multiplie your seede, and in-
...fruites of your beneuolence.)

That on all parties ye may be made rich vnto all libe-
...which causeth through vs thankes giuing vnto God.

For the ministration of this seruice not onely sup-
...th the necessities of the Saintes, but also aboundantly
...eth many to giue thankes to God,

(Which by the experiment of this ministration
...se God for your voluntarie submission to the Gospel of
... and for your liberall distribution to them, and to
...)

And in their prayer for you, to long after you grace
...the aboundant grace of God in you.

Thankes therefore *be* vnto God for his vnspeakeable

CHAP. X.

He sheweth with what confidence, & with what weapons, and vnto what reuenge he is armed against the enuiers of the Gospel, 7 and that, when he is present his deeds shall be of lesse power, 11 then his wordes bare force, when he is absent.

Now I Paul my selfe beseech you by the meekenes, and
...leanes of Christ, which when I am present among
... but am bolde toward you being absent:

...for I require you, that I neede not to be bolde
... present, with that same confidence, wherewith
... to be bold against some, which account of vs as
...ing to the flesh.

...though we walke in the flesh, yet we do
... after the flesh,

(For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall,
...ghtie through God, to cast downe holdes)

Casting downe the imaginations, & euery high thing
...t is exalted against the knowledge of God, and bringing
... captiuitie euery thought to the obedience of Christ,

And hauing ready the vengeance against all disobe-
...when your obedience is fulfilled.

Looke ye on things after the outward appearance? If
... in him selfe that he is Christes, let him
... of him selfe, that as he is Christes,
...ers.

For though I should boast
...

thenitie, which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your destruction, I should haue no shame.

9 *This I say* that I may not seeme as *it were* to feare you with letters.

10 For the letters, saith he, are sore and strong, but his bodily presence is weake, and his speach is of no value.

11 Let such one thinke this, that such as we are in word by letters, when we are absent, such *will we be* also in deede when we are present.

12 For we dare not make our selues of the number, or to compare our selues to them, which prayse themselues: but they vnderstande not that they measure themselues with them selues, & compare them selues with them selues.

Ephes. 4. 7. 13 But we will not reioyce of thinges, which are not within *our* measure, * but according to the measure of the line, whereof God hath distributed vnto vs a measure to reache euen vnto you.

14 For we stretch not our selues beyonde *our* measure, as though we had not attained vnto you: for euen to you also haue we come *in preaching* the Gospel of Christ,

15 Not boasting of things which are without *our* measure: *that is*, of other mens labours: and we hope, when your fayth shal increase, to be magnified by you according to our line aboundantly,

16 And to preache the Gospel in those *regions* which *are* beyond you: not to reioyce in another mans line, or in the things that are prepared alreadie.

Ier. 9. 23. 1. Cor. 1. 31. 17 * But let him that reioyceth, reioyce in the Lord.

18 For he that prayseth him selfe, is not allowed, but he whom the Lord prayseth.

CHAP. XI.

2 He testifieth, that for the great loues sake he beareth vnto the Corinthians, he is compelled 5 to vtter his owne prayse. 9 And that he bestowed his labour on them without any reward. 13 that the false Apostles should not surpasse him in any thing, 22 whom he farre excelled in those things which are prayse worthie in deede.

WOuld to God, ye could suffer a litle my foolishnes, and in deede, ye suffer me.

2 For I am iealous ouer you, with godly iealousie: for I haue prepared you for one husband, to present you as a pure virgine to Christ.

Gen. 3. 4. 3 But I feare lest as the * serpent beguiled Eue through

...ilie, so your mindes should be corrupt from the ſim-
...city that is in Christ.

4 For if he that commeth, preacheth another Iesus
whom we haue not preached: or if ye receiue another ſpirit
which ye haue not receiued: either another Gospel which
ye haue not receiued, ye might well haue ſuffred *him.*

5 Verely I ſuppoſe that I was not inferiour to the verie
chiefe Apoſtles.

6 And though *I be* rude in ſpeaking, yet *I am* not ſo in
knowledge, but among you we haue bene made manifeſt
to the vtmoſt, in all things.

7 Haue I committed an offence, becauſe I abaſed my
ſelfe, that ye might be exalted, and becauſe I preached to
you the Gospel of God freely?

8 I robbed other Churches, and tooke wages *of them*
to doe you ſeruice.

9 And when I was preſent with you, and had neede,
was not ſlouthful to the hinderance of any man: for that *Chap.* 12. 13
which was lacking vnto me, the brethren which came from
Macedonia, ſupplied, and in all things I kept and wil keepe
my ſelfe, that I ſhould not be grieuous to you.

10 The trueth of Christ is in me, that this reioycing
ſhall not be ſhut vp againſt me in the regions of Achaia.

11 Wherefore? becauſe I loue you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I doe, that wil I doe: that I may cut away
occaſion from them which deſire occaſion, that they might
be found like vnto vs in that wherein they glorie.

13 For ſuch falſe apoſtles are deceitful workers, and
transforme themſelues into the Apoſtles of Christ.

14 And no marueile: for Satan himſelfe is transfor-
med into an Angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing, though his miniſters
transforme themſelues, as though *they were* the miniſters
of righteouſneſſe, whoſe ende ſhall be according to their
workes.

16 I ſay againe, let no man thinke, that I am fooliſh, or
els take me euen as a foole, that I alſo may boaſt my ſelfe
a little.

17 That I ſpeake, I ſpeake it not after the Lord: but as
it were fooliſhly, in this my great boaſting.

18 Seeing that many reioyce after the fleſh, I will re-
ioyce alſo.

19 For ye ſuffer fooles gladly, becauſe that ye are wiſe.

20 For

20 For ye ſuffer, euen if a man bring you into bond
if a man deuoure *you*, if a man take *your goods*, if a ma
alt him ſelfe, if a man ſmite you on the face.

21 I ſpeake as concerning the reproche: as tho
that we had bene weake: but wherein any man is bol
ſpeake fooliſhly) I am bolde alſo.

Phil.3.5. 22 They are Hebrewes,* ſo am I: they are Iſrael
ſo am I: they are the ſeede of Abraham, ſo am I:

23 They are the miniſters of Chriſt (I ſpeake as a fo
I am more: in labours more aboundant: in ſtripes ab
meaſure: in priſon more plenteouſly: in death oft.

24 Of the Iewes fiue times receiued I fourtie ſtr
ſaue one.

Act.16.23. 25 I was thriſe *beaten with roddes: I was *once
Act.14.19. ned: I ſuffered thriſe * ſhipwracke: night and day ha
Act.27.14. bene in the deepe ſea.

26 In iourneying *I was* often, in perils of waters, in
rils of robbers, in perils of mine owne nation, in peril
mong the Gentiles, in perils in the citie, in perils in wil
nes, in perils in the ſea, in perils among falſe brethren.

27 In wearines and painefulneſſe, in watching o
in hunger and thirſt, in faſtings often, in colde and in
kedneſſe.

28 Beſide the things which are outward, I am comb
dayly, *and haue* the care of all the Churches.

29 Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is o
ded, and I burne not?

30 If I muſt needes reioyce, I will reioyce of mine
firmities.

31 The God, euen the Father of our Lord Ieſus C
which is bleſſed for euermore, knoweth that I lye not.

Act.9.24. 32 In * Damaſcus the gouernour of the people un
King Aretas, layd watch in the citie of the Damaſcenes,
would haue caught me.

33 But at a window was I let down in a basket thro
the wall, and eſcaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

*1 He doth euen vnwillingly make rehearſal 3 of the bea
ly viſions, 4 that were reueiled vnto him: 6 for w
though he might in deede glorie, yet he wil not, 10 bu
priuie of his owne infirmities: 11 but they driue hi
this kinde of follie, 20 in that they giue eare to cer
vaineglorious perſons, who drawe them from Chriſt.*

not expedient for me no doubt to reioyce: for I will come to visions and reuelations of the Lord.

I know a man in Christ aboue fourtene yeres agone, (whether it were in the body, I can not tel, or out of the body, I can not tel: God knoweth) which was taken vp into the third heauen.

And I know such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I can not tel: God knoweth)

How that he was taken vp into Paradise, and heard secret things which can not be spoken, which are not possible for a man to vtter.

Of such a man wil I reioyce: of my selfe will I not reioyce, except it be of mine infirmities.

For though I would reioyce, I should not be a foole: for I will say the truth, but I refraine, lest any man should esteme of me aboue that he seeth in me, or that he heareth of me.

And lest I should be exalted out of measure through the abundance of reuelations, there was giuen vnto me a prick in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should not be exalted out of measure.

For this thing I besought the Lorde thrise, that it might depart from me.

And he sayd vnto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my power is made perfect through weakenes. Very gladly therefore will I reioyce rather in mine infirmities, that the power of Christ may dwel in me.

Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in anguish for Christes sake: for when I am weake, then am I strong.

I was a foole to boast my selfe: ye haue compelled me: for I ought to haue bene commended of you: for in nothing was I inferiour vnto the very chief Apostles, though I be nothing.

The signes of an Apostle were wrought among you in all patience, with signes, and wonders, & great workes.

For what is it, wherein ye were inferiours vnto other Churches, * except that I haue not bene slouthful to *Chap. 11, 9.* you? hinderance? forgiue me this wrong.

Beholde, the third time I am ready to come vnto you, and yet will I not be slouthfull to your hinderance: for I seke not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay vp for the fathers, but the fathers for the children.

15 And

15 And I will moste gladly beſtow, and will be beſtowed for your ſoules: though the more I loue you, the leſſe I am loued.

16 But be it that I charged you not: yet forasmuch as I was craftie, I tooke you with guile.

17 Did I pil you by any of them whom I ſent vnto you?

18 I haue deſired Titus, and with him I haue ſent a brother: did Titus pil you of any thing? walked we not in the ſame ſpirit? *walked we* not in the ſame ſteppes?

19 Againe, thinke ye that we excuſe our ſelues vnto you? we ſpeake before God in Chriſt. But *we doe* all things dearely beloued for your edifying.

20 For I feare leſt when I come, I ſhall not find you ſuch as I would: and that I ſhalbe found vnto you ſuch as ye would not, and leſt *there be* ſtrife, enuying, wrath, contentions, backbitings, whiſperings, ſwellings, *and* diſ-

21 *I feare* leſt when I come againe, my God ſhall humble me among you, and I ſhal bewayle many of them which haue ſinned already, & haue not repented of the vncleanneſſe, fornication, and wantonnes, which they haue committed.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Comming the third time, 2 he denounceth the ſharpe vengeance towards them, 5 who haue a perfect triall of the power of Chriſt in his Apoſtleſhip. 10 At length he prayeth for their repentance, 11 and wiſheth them proſperitie.*

Deu. 19.15. mat. 18.16. ioh. 8.17. heb. 10.28. THIS is the third time that I come vnto you. * In the mouth of two or three witneſſes ſhal euery worde ſtand.

2 I tolde you before, and tell you before; as though I had bene preſent the ſecond time, ſo write I now being abſent to them which heretofore haue ſinned, and to all others, that if I come againe, I wil not ſpare,

3 Seeing that ye ſeeke experience of Chriſt, that ſpeaketh in me, which toward you is not weake, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified concerning *his* infirmitie, yet liueth he through the power of God. And we alſo doubt are weake in him, but we ſhal liue with him, through the power of God toward you.

2. Cor. 11.28 5 *Proue your ſelues whether ye are in the fayth: examine your ſelues: knowe ye not your owne ſelues, how that Ieſus Chriſt is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I truſt that ye ſhall knowe that we are not reprobates.

Nowe I pray vnto God that ye do none euil, not that
should seeme approued, but that ye should doe that
is honest: though we be as reprobates.
For we can not doe any thing against the trueth, but
the trueth.
For we are glad when we are weake, and that ye are
: this also we wish for, *euen* your perfection.
Therefore write I these things being absent, least
I am present, I should vse sharpnes, according to the
which the Lorde hath giuen me, to edification, and
to destruction.
Finally brethren, fare ye wel: be perfect: be of good
: be of one minde: liue in peace, and the God of
and peace shalbe with you.
Greete one another with an * holy kisse. All the 1. Cor. 16. 20
salute you.
The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, and the loue
, and the communion of the holy Ghost be with you
men.

The second *epistle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, a citie in Macedonia, *and sent* by Titus and Lucas.

HE EPISTLE OF THE APOSTLE PAVL TO THE GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

*ght after the salutation. 6 he reprehendeth the Ga-
for reuolting 9 from his Gospel, 15 which here-
d from God, 17 before he had communicated with
of the Apostles.*

Paul an Apostle (not of men, neither by
man, * but by Iesus Christ, and God the Tit. 1. 3.
Father which hath raised him from the
dead)
2 And all the brethren which are with
me, vnto the Churches of Galatia:
3 Grace *be* with you, and peace from
, and *from* our Lord Iesus Christ,
4 Which gaue him selfe for our sinnes, that he might
vs * from this present euil worlde, according to the Luke 1. 74.
will

will of God euen our Father,

5 To whom *be* glorie for euer and euer, Amen.

6 I marueile that ye are so soone remoued awa
another Gospel, from him that had called you in th
of Christ,

7 Which is not another *Gospel*, saue that th
some which trouble you, and intend to peruert the
of Christ.

8 But though that we, or an Angel from heauen p
vnto you otherwise, then that which we haue prea
to you, let him be accursed.

9 As we sayd before, so say I now againe, If an
preach vnto you otherwise, then that ye haue receiu
him be accursed.

10 For now preach I mans *doctrine*, or Gods? o
about to please men? for if I should yet please men, I
not the seruant of Christ.

1. Cor. 15. 1. 11 *Nowe I certifie you, brethren, that the G
which was preached of me, was not after man.

12 For neither receiued I it of man, neither
taught it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ.

Act. 9. 1. 13 For ye haue heard of my conuersation in time
in the Iewish religion, how that *I persecuted the C
of God extremely, and wasted it,

14 And profited in the Iewish religion aboue m
my companions of mine owne nation, and was much
zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God (which had separate
from my mothers wombe, and called *me* by his grac

16 To reueile his Sonne in me, that I should preac

Ephe. 3. 8. *among the Gentiles, immediatly I communicate
with flesh and blood:

17 Neither came I again to Hierusalem to them w
were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and
ned againe into Damascus.

18 Then after three yeres I came againe to Hier
lem to visite Peter, and abode with him fiftene dayes.

19 And none other of the Apostles sawe I, saue Ia
the Lordes brother.

20 Now the things which I write vnto you, behold
witnes before God, that I lie not.

21 After that, I went into the coastes of Syria and C
cia: for I was vnknowen by face vnto the Churches
Iud

which were in Christ.

But they had heard onely *some say*, He which perse-
vv in time past, nowe preacheth the faith which be-
he destroyed.

And they glorified God for me.

CHAP. II.

That the Apostles did nothing disagree from his Gospel, 2
he proveth by the example of Titus being vncircumcised, 3
and also by his admonishing the same against Peters dis-
simulation: 17 *And so he passeth to the handling of our free*
iustification by Christ, &c.

Fourteene yeeres after, I went vp againe to Hieru-
lem with Barnabas, and tooke with me Titus also.

And I went vp by reuelation, & declared vnto them
Gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but parti-
ly to them that were the chiefe, lest by any meanes I
d runne, or had runne in vaine:

But neither yet Titus which was with me, though he
e a Grecian, was compelled to be circumcised,

To wit, for the false brethren which were craftily
in, and crept in priuily to spie out our libertie, which
ue in Christ Iesus, that they might bring vs into
dage.

To whom we gaue not place by subiection for an
e, that the truth of the Gospel might continue with

But by the which seemed to be great, *I was not taught*
whoeuer they were in time passed, I am nothing the
: God accepteth no mans person) for they that are
hese, did adde nothing to me *aboue that I had.*

But contrariwise, when they sawe that the Gospel
the vncircumcision was committed vnto me, as *the*
l ouer the Circumcision, was vnto Peter:

(For he that was mightie by Peter in the Apostleship
the Circumcision, was also mightie by me toward the
tiles.)

And when Iames, and Cephas, and Iohn, knewe of
ace that was giuen vnto me, which are counted to be
, they gaue to me and to Barnabas the right hands
lowship, that we *should preache* vnto the Gentiles, and
nto the Circumcision,

Warning onely that we should remember ỹ poore:
h thing also I was diligent to doe.

Deu.10.17
2.chr.19.7.
iob.34.19.
acts 10.34.
rom 2.11.
eph.6.9.
col.3.25.
1.pti.1.17.

Cc 1 11 ¶And

11 ¶And when Peter was come to Antiochia, I withstoode him to his face: for he was to be condemned.

12 For before that certaine came from Iames, he did eate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himselfe, fearing them which were of the Circumcision.

13 And the other Iewes plaied the hypocrites likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas was led away with them by that their hypocrisie.

14 But when I saw, that they went not the right way to the trueth of the Gospel, I saide vnto Peter before all men, If thou being a Iewe, liuest as the Gentiles, and not like the Iewes, why constrayneſt thou the Gentiles to doe like the Iewes?

15 We *which are* Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowe that a man is not iustified by the workes of the Law, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, euen we *I say*, haue beleeued in Iesus Christ, that we might be iustified by the faith of Christ, and not by the workes of the Law, because that by the workes of the Law no flesh shalbe iustified.

Rom. 3. 19. 17 * If then while we seeke to be made righteous by Christ, we our selues are found sinners, is Christ therefore the minister of sinne? God forbid.

18 For if I builde againe the things that I haue destroyed, I make my selfe a trespasser.

19 For I through the Law am dead to the Lawe, that I might liue vnto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ, but I liue, *yet* not I any more, but Christ liueth in me: and in that that I nowe liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith in the Sonne of God, which hath loued me, and giuen himselfe for me.

21 I doe not abrogate the grace of God: for if righteousnes *be* by the Law, then Christ died without a cause.

CHAP. III.

1 He rebuketh them, for suffering themselues to be drawen from the grace of free iustification in Christ, most lively set out vnto them. 6 He bringeth in Abrahams example 10 declaring the effect, 21 and causes of the giuing of the Lawe.

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye shoulde not obey the trueth, to whom Iesus Christ before was described in your sight, & among you crucified?

2 This onely woulde I learne of you, Receiued ye the
Spirit by the workes of the Lawe, or by the hearing of faith
preached?

3 Are ye so foolish, that after ye haue begun in the
Spirit, ye would now be made perfect by the flesh?

4 Haue ye suffered so many thinges in vaine? if so be it
be euen in vaine.

5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and
worketh miracles among you, *doeth he it* through the
workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith *preached*?

6 *Yea rather* as Abraham beleeued God, and it was*im- *Gen.15.6.*
puted to him for righteousnesse. *rom.4.3.*

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the *iam.2.23.*
same are the children of Abraham.

8 For the Scripture foreseeing, that God would iustifie
the Gentiles through faith, preached before ỹ Gospel vnto
Abraham, *saying*, * In thee shall all the Gentiles be blessed. *Gen.12.3.*

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with *actes.3.25.*
faithfull Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the workes of the Lawe, are
vnder the curse: for it is written, * Cursed is euery man that *Deut.27.26.*
continueth not in all things, which are written in ỹ booke
of the Law, to doe them.

11 And that no man is iustified by the Law in the sight
of God, it is euident: * for the iust shall liue by faith. *Habak 2.4.*

12 And the Lawe is not of faith: but * the man that *rom.1.17.*
shall doe those things, shall liue in them. *hebr.10.38*

13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the *Leuit.18.5.*
Lawe, made a curse for vs (for it is written, * Cursed is eue- *Deut.21.23*
ry one that hangeth on tree)

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the
Gentiles through Christ Iesus, that we might receiue the
promise of the Spirit through fayth.

15 Brethren, I speake as men doe: * Though it be but *Hebr.9.17.*
a mans conenant, when it is confirmed, *yet* no man doeth
abrogate it, or addeth any thing thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seede were the promises
made. He sayth not, And to the seedes, as *speaking* of many:
but, And to thy seede, as of one, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the conenant that was confir-
med afore of God in respect of Christ, the Lawe which was
fore hundreth and thirtie yeeres after, cannot disanull,
that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance *be* of the Lawe, *it is* [illegible] by the promise, but God gaue it freely vnto Abra[illegible] promise.

19 Wherefore then *serueth* the Lawe? It was [illegible] because of the transgressions, till the seede came vn[illegible] which the promise was made: and it was ordeined by [illegible] gels in the hand of a Mediatour.

20 Now a Mediatour is not *a Mediatour* of one: [illegible] God is one.

21 *Is* the Law then against the promises of God? G[illegible] forbid: for if there had bene a Lawe giuen which co[illegible] haue giuen life, surely righteousnesse should haue bee[illegible] the Lawe.

Rom.3.9. 22 But the Scripture hath * concluded all vnder [illegible] that the promise by the faith of Iesus Christ shoulde he [illegible] uen to them that beleeue.

23 But before faith came, we were kept vnder [illegible] Law, *as vnder* a garison, and shut vp vnto that faith, wh[illegible] should afterward be reueiled.

24 Wherefore the Law was our scholemaster *to br[illegible] vs* to Christ, that we might be made righteous by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer v[illegible] a scholemaster.

26 For ye are all the sonnes of God by faith in C[illegible] Iesus.

27 For all ye that are baptized into Christ, haue [illegible] on Christ.

28 There is neither Iewe nor Grecian: there is neith[illegible] bond nor free: there is neither male nor female: for ye [illegible] all one in Christ Iesus.

29 And if *ye be* Christs, then are ye Abrahams se[illegible] and heires by promise.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Being deliuered from the bondage of the Law, 4 by C[illegible] comming, who is the ende thereof, 9 it is very absurde to [illegible] backe to beggerly ceremonies: 13 He calleth them a[illegible] therefore to the puritie of the doctrine of the Gospel, [illegible] confirming his discourse with a fine allegorie.*

THen I say, that the heire as long as he is a childe, di[illegible] reth nothing from a seruant, though he be Lord of a[illegible]

2 But is vnder tutours and gouernours, vntill the [illegible] appointed of the father.

3 Euen so, we whe we were children, were in bond[illegible]

the rudiments of the world.

But when ỹ fulnes of time was come, God ſent forth
Sonne made of a woman, *and* made vnder the Lawe,
That he might redeeme them which were vnder the
, that we * might receiue the adoption of the ſonnes. *Rom.8. 15.*
And becauſe ye are ſonnes, God hath ſent forth the
rit of his Sonne into your hearts, which cryeth, Abba,
ther.

Wherefore, thou art no more a ſeruant, but a ſonne:
if thou be a ſonne, *thou art* alſo the heire of GOD
ough Chriſt.

But euen then, when ye knew not God, ye did ſeruice
to them, which by nature are not gods:

But now ſeeing ye know God, yea, rather are knowen
God, howe turne ye againe vnto impotent and beggerly
ments, whereunto *as* from the beginning, ye will be in
dage againe?

Ye obſerue daies, & moneths, and times, and yeeres.

I am in feare of you, leſt I haue beſtowed on you la-
ur in vaine.

Be ye as I: for I am euen as you: brethren, I beſeech
ye haue not hurt me at all.

And ye know, how through infirmitie of the fleſh I
ached the Goſpel vnto you at the firſt.

And the triall of me which was in my fleſh, ye deſ-
ed not, neither abhorred: but ye receiued me as an An-
of God, *yea*, as Chriſt IESVS.

What was then your felicitie? for I beare you re-
rde, that if it had bene poſſible, ye woulde haue plucked
t your owne eyes, and haue giuen them vnto me.

Am I therefore become your enemie, becauſe I tell
you the trueth?

They are ielous ouer you amiſſe: yea, they woulde
clude you, that ye ſhould altogether lone them.

But it is a good thing to loue earneſtly alwayes in
good thing, and not onely when I am preſent with you,

My litle children, of whom I trauel in birth againe,
till Chriſt be formed in you.

And I woulde I were with you nowe, that I might
ange my voyce: for I am in doute of you.

Tell me, ye that will be vnder the Lawe, doe ye not
are the Lawe?

For it is written, that Abraham had two ſonnes,

Gen.16.15. Gen.21.2. *one by a ſeruant, and * one by a free woman.

23 But he which was of the ſeruant, was borne after the fleſh: and he which was of the free woman, was by promes.

24 By ☞ which things another thing is ment: for the mothers are the two Teſtaments, the one which is Agar mount Sina, which gendreth vnto bondage,

25 (For Agar or Sina is a mountaine in Arabia, and anſwereth to Hieruſalem which now is) and ſhe is in bondage with her children.

26 But Hieruſalem, which is aboue, is free: which is the mother of vs all.

Iſai.54.1. 27 For it is written, * Reioyce thou barren that beareſt no children: breake forth, and cry, thou that trauaileſt not: for the deſolate hath many mo children, then ſhe which hath an husband.

Rom.8.9. 28 * Therefore, brethren, we are after the maner of Iſaac, children of the promes.

29 But as then he that was borne after the fleſh, perſecuted him that *was borne* after ☞ ſpirit, euen ſo it is now.

Gen.21.10. 30 But what ſayth the Scripture? * Put out the ſeruant and her ſonne: for the ſonne of the ſeruant ſhall not be heire with the ſonne of the free woman.

31 Then brethren, we are not children of the ſeruant, but of the free woman.

CHAP. V.

1 *Hauing declared that we came of the free woman, he ſheweth the price of that freedome,* 13 *and how we ſhould vſe the ſame,* 16 *that we may obey the Spirit,* 19 *and reſiſt the fleſh.*

STande faſt therefore in the libertie wherewith Chriſt hath made vs free, and be not intangled againe with the yoke of bondage.

Actes 15.1. 2 * Beholde, I Paul ſay vnto you, that if ye be circumciſed, Chriſt ſhall profite you nothing.

3 For I teſtifie againe to euery man, which is circumciſed, that he is bound to keepe the whole Lawe.

1.Cor.1.17. 4 Ye are * aboliſhed from Chriſt: whoſoeuer are iuſtified by the Law, ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the Spirit waite for the hope of righteouſneſſe through fayth.

6 For in Ieſus Chriſt neither circumciſion auaileth any thing, neither vncircumciſion, but fayth which worketh by loue.

7 Ye did runne well: who did let you, that ye did not
obey the truth?
8 This not the perſuaſion of him that calleth you.
9 *A litle leauen doeth leauen the whole lumpe. 1.Cor.5.6.
10 I haue truſt in you through the Lord, that ye wil be
none otherwiſe minded: but he that troubleth you, ſhall
beare his condemnation, whoſoeuer he be.
11 And brethren, if I yet preach circumciſion, why do
I yet ſuffer perſecution? Then is the ſlander of the croſſe
abolished.
12 Would to God they were euen cut off, which doe
vnquiet you.
13 For brethren, ye haue bene called vnto libertie: on-
ly not your libertie as an occaſion vnto the fleſh, but by
loue ſerue one another.
14 For all the Lawe is fulfilled in one worde, whiche is
this, *Thou ſhalt loue thy neighbour as thy ſelfe. Leui.19.18.
15 If ye bite and deuoure one another, take heede leſt mat.22.39.
ye be conſumed one of another. mar.12.31.
16 Then I ſay, *Walke in the Spirit, and ye ſhall not rom.13.9.
fulfill the luſtes of the fleſh. iames 2.8.
17 For the fleſh luſteth againſt the Spirit, and the Spi- Rom.13.14.
rit againſt the fleſh: and theſe are contrary one to ỹ other, 1.pet.2.11.
ſo that ye can not doe the ſame things that ye would.
18 And if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not vnder the
Lawe.
19 Moreouer ỹ workes of the fleſh are manifeſt, which
are adulterie, fornication, vncleannes, wantonnes,
20 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, debate, emulations,
wrath, contentions, ſeditions, hereſies,
21 Enuie, murthers, drunkennes, gluttonie, and ſuch
like, whereof I tell you before, as I alſo haue tolde you be-
fore, that they which doe ſuch thinges, ſhall not inherite
the kingdome of God.
22 But the fruite of the Spirite is loue, ioy, peace, long
ſuffering, gentlenes, goodnes, faith,
23 Meekenes, tẽperancie: againſt ſuch there is no Law.
24 For they that are Chriſts, haue crucified the fleſh
with the affections and the luſtes.
25 If we liue in the Spirit, let vs alſo walke in the Spi-
rite.
26 Let vs not be deſirous of vaine glorie, prouoking
one another, enuying one another.

CHAP. VI.

1 Now he entreateth particularly of charitie toward such as offend, 6 towards the Ministers of the worde, 10 and that one of the houshold of faith: 12 Not like vnto such as haue a counterfaite zeale of the Lawe, 13 glorying in mangling of the flesh, 14 and not in the crosse of Christ.

BRethren, if a man be suddenly taken in any offence, ye which are spirituall, restore such one with the spirit of meekenesse, considering thy selfe, least thou also be tempted.

2 Beare ye one anothers burden, and so fulfill the Lawe of Christ.

3 For if any man seeme to himselfe, that he is somewhat, when he is nothing, he deceiueth himselfe in his imagination.

4 But let euery man proue his owne worke: and then shal he haue reioycing in himself only and not in an other.

1.Cor.3.8. 5 *For euery man shal beare his owne burden.

6 Let him that is taught in the worde, make him that

1.Cor.9.7. hath taught him, partaker of all *his** goods.

7 Be not deceiued: God is not mocked: for whatsoeuer a man soweth, that shall he also reape.

8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shal of the flesh reape corruption: but he that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reape life euerlasting.

2.Thes.3.13 9 *Let vs not therefore be wearie of well doing: for in due season we shall reape, if we faint not.

10 While we haue therefore time, let vs doe good vnto all men, but specially vnto them, which are of the houshold of faith.

11 Ye see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand.

12 As many as desire to make a faire shew in the flesh, they constraine you to be circumcised, onely because they would not suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.

13 For they themselues which are circumcised keepe not the Lawe, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they might reioyce in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I shoulde reioyce, but in the crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, whereby the worlde is crucified vnto me, and I vnto the worlde.

15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auayleth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a newe creature.

16 And

16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace
be vpon them, and mercy, and vpon the Israel of God.
17 From henceforth let no man put me to busines: for
I bare in my body the markes of the Lord Iesus.
18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with
your spirit, Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians written
from Rome.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE EPHESIANS.

CHAP. I.

After the salutation, 4 he entreateth of the free election of God 5 and adoption: 7. 13 from whence mans saluation floweth, as from the true & natural fountaine: and because so high a mysterie can not be vnderstood, 16 he prayeth that the full 20 knowledge of Christ may by God be reuealed vnto the Ephesians.

1 PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the will
of God, to the *Saints, which are at Ephe- 1.Cor.1.2.
sus, and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus:
2 Grace *be* with you, & peace frō God
our Father, & *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.
3 *Blessed *be* God, and the Father of 1.Cor.1.3.
our Lord Iesus Christ, which hath blessed 1.pet.1.3.
vs with all spiritual blessing in heauenly things in Christ,
4 As he hath chosen vs in him, before the foundation
of the worlde, that we should be holy, and without blame
before him in loue:
5 Who hath predestinate vs, to be adopted through
Iesus Christ in himselfe, according to the good pleasure of
his will,
6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherewith he
hath made vs freely accepted in *his* beloued,
7 By whom we haue redemption through his blood, e-
uen the forgiuenes of sinnes, according to his rich grace:
8 Whereby he hath bene abundant towards vs in all
wisedome and vnderstanding,
9 And hath opened vnto vs the mysterie of his will ac-
cording to his good pleasure, which he had purposed in him,
10 That in the dispensation of the fulnes of the times,

he

he might gather together in one all things, both which in heauen, and which are in earth, *euen* in Christ:

11 In whom also we are chosen when we were predestinate according to the purpose of him which worketh all things after the counsell of his owne will,

12 That we, which first trusted in Christ, should be vnto the praise of his glory:

13 In whome also ye *haue trusted*, after that ye heard the word of trueth, *euen* ỹ Gospel of your saluation, wherein also after that ye beleeued, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promes,

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, for the redemption of that libertie purchased vnto the praise of his glory.

15 Therefore also after that I heard of the faith, which ye haue in the Lord Iesus, & loue toward al the Saints,

16 I cease not to giue thankes for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Iesus Christ that Father of glory, might giue vnto you the Spirit of wisedome, and reuelation through the acknowledging of him,

18 That the eyes of your vnderstanding may be lightned, that ye may knowe what the hope is of his calling, what the riches of his glorious inheritance *is* in the Saints,

19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power toward vs, which beleue, *according to the working of his mightie power,

*Chap. 3.7. Coloss. 2.12.

20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his right hand in the heauenly *places*,

21 Farre aboue all principalitie, and power, and might, and domination, and euery Name, that is named, not in this world onely, but also in that that is to come,

22 And hath made all things subiect vnder his feete, and hath giuen him ouer all things *to be* the head to ỹ Church,

23 Which is his bodie, *euen* the fulnes of him that filleth all in all things.

CHAP. II.

1 *The better to set out the grace of Christ, he vseth a remembrison, calling them to minde,* 5 *that they were aliens and castawayes and aliants:* 8 *that they are saued by grace,* 13 *and brought neere,* 16 *by reconciliation through Christ,* 19 *published by the Gospell.*

1 And *you *hath he quickened*, that were dead in treſpaſſes (*Coloſ.2.13.*
and ſinnes,

2 Wherein in time paſt ye walked, according to the courſe of this world, *and* after the prince that ruleth in the aire, *euen* the ſpirit, that nowe worketh in the children of diſobedience,

3 Among whome we alſo had our conuerſation in time paſt, in the luſts of our fleſh, in fulfilling the will of the fleſh, and of the minde, & were by nature the children of wrath, as well as others.

4 But God which is rich in mercie, through his great loue wherewith he loued vs,

5 Euen when we were dead by ſinnes, hath quickened vs together in Chriſt, *by whoſe* grace ye are ſaued,

6 And hath raiſed vs vp together, and made vs ſit together in the heauenly *places* in Chriſt Ieſus,

7 That he might ſhew in the ages to come the exceeding riches of his grace, through his kindnes towards vs in Chriſt Ieſus.

8 For by grace are ye ſaued through faith, and that not of your ſelues, *it is* the gift of God,

9 Not of workes, leſt any man ſhould boaſt him ſelfe.

10 For we are his workemanſhip created in Chriſt Ieſus vnto good workes, which God hath ordeined, that wee ſhould walke in them.

11 Wherefore remember that ye being in time paſt Gentiles in the fleſh, & called vncircumciſion of thē, which are called circumciſion in the fleſh, made with hands,

12 That ye were, *I ſay*, at that time without Chriſt, and were aliants from the common wealth of Iſrael, and were *ſtrangers from the couenants of promiſe, & had no hope, (*Rom.9.4.*
and *were* without God in the world.

13 But now in Chriſt Ieſus, ye which once were farre off, are made neere by the blood of Chriſt.

14 For he is our peace, which hath made of both one, and hath broken the ſtoppe of the partition wall,

15 *In abrogating through his fleſh the hatred, *that is*, (*Col.2.14.*
the Lawe of commandements *which ſtandeth* in ordinances, for to make of twaine one newe man in him ſelfe, *ſo* making peace,

16 And that he might reconcile both vnto God in one body by *his* croſſe, and ſlay hatred thereby,

17 And came, and preached peace to you which were

afarre off, and to them that were nere.

18 For through him wee both haue an entrance vn[to] the Father by one Spirit.

19 Now therfore ye are no more ſtrangers & foreine[rs] but citizens with the Saints, and of the houſhold of God,

20 And are buylt vpon the foundation of the Apoſtle[s] and Prophets, Ieſus Chriſt himſelfe being the chiefe corner ſtone,

21 In whom all the buylding coupled together, grow[eth] eth vnto an holy Temple in the Lord,

22 In whom ye alſo are built together, to be the habi[ta]tation of God by the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

1 *He declareth that therefore he ſuffered many thinges of the Iewes,* 3 *becauſe he preached the myſterie touching the ſal[u]ation of the Gentiles,* 8 *at Gods commandement.* 13 *After, he deſireth the Epheſians not to faint for his afflictions.* 14 *And for this cauſe he prayeth vnto God,* 18 *that they may vnderſtand the great loue of Chriſt.*

FOr this cauſe, I Paul *am* the priſoner of Ieſus Chriſt for you Gentiles,

2 If ye haue heard of the diſpenſation of the grace of God, which is giuen me to you warde,

3 *That is*, that *God* by reuelation hath ſhewed this my[ſ]terie vnto me (as I wrote aboue in few wordes,

4 Whereby when ye reade, ye may knowe mine vnder[ſ]tanding in the myſterie of Chriſt)

5 Which in other ages was not opened vnto the ſonnes of men, as it is now reueiled vnto his holy Apoſtles and Pro[phets] phets by the Spirit,

6 That the Gentiles ſhoulde be inheriters alſo, and of the ſame body, and partakers of his promiſe in Chriſt by the Goſpel,

7 Whereof I am made a miniſter by the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto me through the effectuall working of his power.

8 Euen vnto me the leaſt of all Saintes is this grace gi[uen], uen, that I ſhould preach among the Gentiles the vnſearchable riches of Chriſt,

9 And to make cleare vnto all men what the fellowſhip of the myſterie is, which from the beginning of the worlde hath bene hid in God, who hath created all things by Ieſus Chriſt,

10 To the intent, that nowe vnto principalities and powers in heauenly *places*, might be knowen by the Church the manifold wisdome of God,

11 According to ỹ eternal purpose, which he wrought in Christ Iesus our Lord:

12 By whom we haue boldnes and entrance with confidence, by faith in him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faynt not at my tribulations for your sakes, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bowe my knees vnto the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,

15 (Of whome is named the whole familie in heauen and in earth)

16 That he might graunt you according to the riches of his glory, that ye may bee strengthened by his Spirit in the inner man,

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith:

18 That ye, being rooted & grounded in loue, may be able to comprehend with all Saintes, what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height:

19 And to knowe the loue of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye may be filled with all fulnes of God.

20 Vnto him therefore that is able to do exceeding abundantly aboue all that wee aske or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs,

21 *Be* praise in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all generations for euer, Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

These three last chapters conteine preceptes of maners. 1 *He exhorteth them to mutuall loue.* 7 *Sundry gifts are therefore bestowed of God,* 16 *that the Church may be buylt vp.* 18 *He calleth them from the vanitie of the infidels,* 25 *from lying,* 29 *and from filthie talke.*

I Therefore, being prisoner in the Lorde, pray you that yee walke worthy of the vocation whereunto ye are called,

2 With all humblenes of minde, and meekenes, with long suffering, supporting one another through loue,

3 Endeauouring to keepe the vnitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There *is* one body, & one Spirit, euen as ye are called in one hope of your vocation.

5 *There is* one Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme,

6 One God and Father of all, which is aboue all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But

7 But vnto euery one of vs is giuen grace, accordi
to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he saith, When he ascended vp on hi
he led captiuitie captiue, and gaue giftes vnto men.

9 (Nowe, in that he ascended, what is it but ỹ he had
also descended first into the lowest parts of the earth?

10 He that descended, is euen the same that ascended
farre aboue all heauens, that he might fill all things)

11 He therefore gaue some *to be* Apostles, and some
Prophetes, and some Euangelistes, and some Pastours, and
Teachers,

12 For the repairing of the Saints, for the worke of ỹ
ministerie, & for the edification of the body of Christ,

13 Till we all meete together (in the vnitie of faith &
that acknowledging of the Sonne of God) vnto a perfite
mā, & vnto the measure of the age of the fulnes of Christ.

14 That we henceforth be no more children, wan-
ring and caried about with euery winde of doctrine, by the
deceite of men, and with craftines, whereby they lay in
wayte to deceiue.

15 But let vs followe the trueth in loue, and in al things
growe vp into him, which is the head, *that is*, Christ.

16 By whome all the bodie being coupled and knit
together by euery ioint, for the furniture *thereof* (accor-
ding to the effectuall power, *which is* in the measure of eu-
ry part) receiueth increase of the bodie, vnto the edifying of
selfe in loue.

17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that ye
henceforth walke not as * other Gentiles walke, in vanitie
of their minde,

Rom.1.21.

18 Hauing their vnderstanding darkened, and being
strangers from the life of God through the ignorance that
is in them, because of the hardnes of their heart:

19 Which being past feeling, haue giuen themselues vn-
to wantonnes, to worke all vncleannes, *euen* w griedines.

20 But ye haue not so learned Christ,

21 If so be ye haue heard him, and haue bene taught by
him, as the trueth is in Iesus,

Coloss.3.8.

22 * *That is*, that ye cast off, concerning the conuersati
on in time past, ỹ olde man, which is corrupt through th
deceiuable lustes,

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your minde,

24 And put on the new mā, which after God is create
vnto

righteousnes, and true holinesse.
25 Wherefore cast off lying, & speake euery mã trueth to his neighbour: for we are members one of another.
26 Be angrie, but sinne not: let not the sunne go downe vpon your wrath,
27 Neither giue place to the deuill.
28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but let him rather labour, & worke with his hands the thing which is good, that he may haue to giue vnto him that needeth.
29 Let no corrupt communication proceede out of your mouthes: but that which is good, to the vse of edifying, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.
30 And grieue not the holy Spirit of God, by whom ye are sealed vnto the day of redemption.
31 Let all bitternes, & anger, & wrath, crying, and euill speaking be put away from you, with all maliciousnesse.
32 Be ye courteous one to another, and tender hearted, freely forgiuing one another, euen as God for Christs sake, freely forgaue you.

CHAP. V.

1 Least in those vices which he reprehended, they should set light by his admonitions, 5 he terrifieth them by denouncing seuere iudgements, 8 and stirreth them forward: 15 Then he descendeth frõ general lessons of maners, 21 to the particular dueties of wiues 25 and husbands.

BE ye therefore followers of God, as deare children,
2 * And walke in loue, euen as Christ hath loued vs, and hath giuen himselfe for vs, *to be* an offering and a sacrifice of a sweete smelling sauour to God. *Ioh.13.34. & 15.12. 1.ioh.3.23.*
3 *But fornication, & all vncleannes, or couetousnesse, let it not be once named among you, as it becometh Saints. *Chap.4.29. coloss.3.5.*
4 Neither filthines, neither fooliſh talking, neither iesting which are things not comely, but rather giuing of thanks. *2.thes.2.17.*
5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, neither vncleane person, nor couetous person, which is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, & of God.
6 *Let no man deceiue you with vaine words: for, for such things commeth the wrath of God vpon the children of disobedience. *Mat.24.4. mar.3.5. luke 21.8. 2.thess.2.3.*
7 Be not therefore companions with them.
8 For ye were once darknesse, but are now light in the Lord: walke as children of light,
9 (For the fruite of the Spirit *is* in all goodnes, & righteousnes, and trueth)
10 Appro-

10 Approuing that which is pleasing to the Lord.
11 And haue no fellowship with the vnfruitefull workes of darkenes, but euen reprooue them rather.
12 For it is shame euen to speake of the things, which are done of them in secret.
13 But all things when they are reprooued of the light are manifest: for it is light that maketh all things manifest.
14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and stand vp from the dead, and Christ shal giue thee light.
15 Take heede therefore that ye walke circumspectly, Coloss. 4.5. not as fooles, but as * wise,
16 Redeeming the season: for the dayes are euill.
17 * Wherefore, be ye not vnwise, but vnderstanding Rom. 12.2. 1. Thes. 4.3. the will of the Lord is.
18 And be not drunken with wine, wherein is excesse, but be fulfilled with the Spirit,
19 Speaking vnto your selues in Psalmes, and hymnes, and spirituall songes, singing, and making melodie to the Lord in your hearts,
20 Giuing thankes alwayes for all things vnto God, euen the Father, in the name of our Lord Iesus Christ,
21 Submitting your selues one to another in the feare of God.
22 ¶ * Wiues, submit your selues vnto your husbands, Coloss. 3.18. tit. 2.5. as vnto the Lord.
23 * For the husband is the wiues head, euen as Christ 1. pet. 3.1. 1. Cor. 11.3. is the head of the Church, and the same is the sauiour of the bodie.
24 Therefore as the Church is in subiection to Christ, euen so let the wiues be to their husbands in euery thing.
25 ¶ * Husbands, loue your wiues, euen as Christ loued Coloss. 3.19. the Church, and gaue himselfe for it,
26 That he might sanctifie it, & cleanse it by the washing of water through the word,
27 That hee might make it vnto himselfe a glorious Church, not hauing spot or wrincle, or any such thing: but that it should be holy and without blame.
28 So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe.
29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh, but nourisheth and cherisheth it, euen as the Lord doth the Church.
30 For we are members of his bodie, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 *For this cause shall a man leaue father and mother, and shal cleaue to his wife, & they twaine shalbe one flesh. *Gene. 2. 24. mat. 19. 5. mar. 10. 7. 1. cor. 6. 16.*

32 This is a great secret, but I speake cõcerning Christ, and concerning the Church.

33 Therefore euery one of you, *do ye so*: let euery one loue his wife, euen as himselfe, and *let* the wife *see* that she feare her husband.

CHAP. VI.

He sheweth the duetes of children, 5 seruants 9 and masters: 10 Then he speaketh of the fierce battell that the faithfull haue, 12 and what weapons we must vse in the same: 21 In the ende he commendeth Tychicus.

CHildren, *obey your parents in ỹ Lord: for this is right. *Coloss. 3. 20.*

2 *Honour thy father and mother (which is the first commandement with promes) *Exod. 20. 12. deut. 5. 16.*

3 That it may be well with thee, and that thou mayest liue long on earth. *eccle. 3. 9. mat. 15. 4. mar. 7. 10.*

4 And ye, fathers, prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in instruction & information of the Lord.

5 *Seruants, be obedient vnto them that are *your* masters, according to the flesh, with feare and trembling in the singlenes of your heartes as vnto Christ, *Coloss. 3. 22. tit. 2. 9. 1. pet. 2. 18.*

6 Not with seruice to the eye, as men pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ, doing the wil of God from the heart,

7 With good will, seruing the Lord, and not men.

8 And knowe ye that whatsoeuer good thing any man doeth, that same shall he receiue of the Lord, whether *he be* bonde or free.

9 And ye masters, doe the same things vnto them, putting away threatning: & know that euen your master also is in heauen, neither is there *respect of person with him. *Deut. 10. 17. 2. chro. 19. 7. iob. 34. 19. acts. 10. 34. rom. 2. 11. galat. 2. 6. coloss. 3. 25. 1. pet. 1. 17.*

10 ¶ Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. *eph. 2. 2.*

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the assaultes of the deuil.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh & blood, but against principalities, against powers, *and* against the worldly gouernours, *the princes* of the darkenes of this worlde, against spirituall wickednesses, *which are* in the high places.

13 For this cause take vnto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to resist in the euil day, and hauing finished all things, stand fast.

14 Stande therefore, & your loynes girded about with

ueritie, and hauing on the breſtplate of righteouſnes,

15 And your feete ſhod with the preparation of the Goſpell of peace.

16 Aboue al, take the ſhield of faith, wherewith ye may quenche all the fierie dartes of the wicked,

17 And take the helmet of ſaluation, and the ſworde of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 And pray alwayes with all maner prayer and ſupplication in the Spirit: and watche thereunto with all perſeuerance and ſupplication for all Saintes,

19 And for me, that vtterance may be giuen vnto me, that I may open my mouth boldly to publiſh the ſecret of the Goſpel,

20 Whereof I am the ambaſſadour in bondes, that therein I may ſpeake boldly, as I ought to ſpeake.

21 ¶ But that ye may alſo know mine affaires, *and* what I do, Tychicus *my* deare brother and faithful miniſter in the Lord, ſhal ſhew you of all things,

22 Whome I haue ſent vnto you for the ſame purpoſe, that ye might knowe mine affaires, and that he might comfort your heartes.

23 Peace *be* with the brethren, & loue with faith from God the Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

24 Grace *be* with all them which loue our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt, to *their* immortalitie, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Epheſians, *and ſent* by Tychicus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 Hauing teſtified his godly and tender affection towardes the Philippians, 12 he entreateth of himſelfe, and his bonds 22 And pricketh them forward by his owne example, and exhorteth them to vnitie 28 and patience.

PAVL and Timotheus the ſeruantes of IESVS CHRIST, to all the Saintes in Chriſt Ieſus which are at Philippi, with the Biſhops, and Deacons:

2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

3 I thā

3 I thanke my God *hauing* you in perfect memorie,
4 (Alwayes in all my prayers for all you, praying with gladnes)
5 Because of the fellowship which ye haue in the Gospel, from the first day vnto now.
6 And I am perswaded of this same thing that hee that hath begonne *this* good worke in you, wil performe it vntill the day of Iesus Christ,
7 As it becommeth me so to iudge of you all, because I haue you in remembrance that both in my bands, and in *my* defence, and confirmation of the Gospel you all were partakers of my grace.
8 For God is my record, howe I long after you all from the very heart roote in Iesus Christ.
9 And this I pray: that your loue may abound, yet more and more in knowledge, and in all iudgement,
10 That ye may allowe those thinges which are best, that ye may be pure, and without offence vntill the day of Christ,
11 Filled with the fruites of righteousnes, which are by Iesus Christ vnto the glorie and praise of God.
12 ¶ I would ye vnderstoode, brethren, that the things which *haue come* vnto mee, are turned rather to the furthering of the Gospel,
13 So that my bandes in Christ are famous throughout all the iudgement hall, and in all other *places*,
14 In so much that many of the brethren in the Lorde are boldened through my bandes, and dare more frankely speake the worde.
15 Some preache Christ euen through enuie and strife, and some also of good will.
16 The one part preacheth Christ of contention *and* not purely, supposing to adde more affliction to my bands.
17 But the others of loue, knowing that I am set for the defence of the Gospel.
18 What then? yet Christ is preached al maner wayes, whether *it be* vnder a pretence, or syncerely: and I therein ioy: yea, and will ioy.
19 For I knowe that this shall turne to my saluation through your prayer, and by the helpe of the Spirit of Iesus Christ,
20 As I feruently looke for, and hope, that in nothing I shalbe ashamed, but that with all cõfidence, as alwayes, so

nowe Christ shalbe magnified in my body, whether *it be* by life, or by death.

21 For Christ *is* to mee both in life, and in death aduantage.

22 And whether to liue in the flesh *were* profitable for me, and what to chuse I know not.

23 For I am distressed betweene both, desiring to be loosed and to be with Christ, which is best of all.

24 Neuertheles, to abide in the flesh, *is* more needefull for you.

25 And this am I sure of, that I shal abide, and with you all continue, for your furtherance and ioy of *your* faith,

26 That ye may more aboundantly reioyce in Iesus Christ for me, by my comming to you againe.

27 Only let your conuersation be, as it becommeth the Gospell of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or els be absent, I may heare of your matters that ye continue in one Spirit, *and* in one minde fighting together through the faith of the Gospel.

28 And in nothing feare your aduersaries, which is to them a token of perdition, and to you of saluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen for Christ, that not onely ye should beleeue in him, but also suffer for his sake,

30 Hauing the same fight, which ye sawe in mee, and now heare *to be* in me.

CHAP. II.

1 *He exhorteth them aboue all things 3 to humilitie, 6 and that by the example of Christ. 19 He promiseth to send Timotheus shortly vnto them, 26 and excuseth the long tarying of Epaphroditus.*

IF *there be* therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of loue, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any compassion and mercie,

2 Fulfill my ioy, that ye be like minded, hauing the same loue, being of one accorde, and of one iudgement,

3 That nothing *be done* through contention or vaine glorie, but that in meekenes of minde euery man esteeme other better then himselfe.

4 Looke not euery man on his owne thinges, but euery man also on the things of other men.

5 Let the same minde be in you that was euen in Christ Iesus,

6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it no robberie to be equall with God:

7 But he made himselfe of no reputation, and tooke on him the forme of a seruant, and was made like vnto men, and was found in shape as a man.

8 He humbled himselfe, and became obedient vnto the death, euen the death of the crosse.

9 Wherefore God hath also highly exalted him, and giuen him a Name aboue euery name,

10 That at the Name of Iesus should euery knee bowe, *both* of things in heauen, and things in earth, and things vnder the earth,

11 And that euery tongue shoulde confesse, that Iesus Christ *is* the Lord, vnto the glorie of God the Father.

12 Wherefore my beloued, as ye haue alwayes obeyed me, not as in my presence only, but now much more in mine absence, *so* make an ende of your owne saluation with feare and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both the wil and the deede, *euen* of *his* good pleasure.

14 Do all things without * murmuring and reasonings, 1.Pet.4.9

15 That ye may be blameles, and pure, *and* the sonnes of God without rebuke in ȳ middes of a naughtie & crooked nation, among whom ye shine as *lights in the world, Mat.5.14

16 Holding foorth the word of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in vaine, neither haue laboured in vaine.

17 Yea, and though I be offred vp vpon the sacrifice, and seruice of your faith, I am glad, and reioyce with you all.

18 For ȳ same cause also be ye glad, & reioyce with me.

19 And I trust in the Lord Iesus, to sende * Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state. Acts.16.1

20 For I haue no man like minded, who will faithfully care for your matters.

21 * For all seeke their owne, *and* not that which is Iesus Christes. 1.Cor.10.24

22 But ye know the proofe of him, that as a sonne with the father, he hath serued with me in the Gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to sende assoone as I knowe how it will go with me,

24 And trust in the Lord, that I also my selfe shal come shortly.

25 But I ſuppoſed it neceſſarie to ſend my brother E-
phroditus vnto you, my companion in labour, and fel-
ſouldier, euen your meſſenger, and hee that miniſtred vn-
me ſuch things as I wanted.

26 For he longed after all you, and was ful of heavi-
becauſe ye had heard, that he had bene ſicke.

27 And no doute hee was ſicke, very neere vnto dea-
but God had mercie on him, and not on him onely, but
me alſo, leſt I ſhould haue ſorowe vpon ſorowe.

28 I ſent him therefore the more diligently, that wh-
ye ſhould ſee him againe, ye might reioyce, and I might
the leſſe ſorowfull.

29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord with all gladn-
and make much of ſuch:

30 Becauſe that for the worke of Chriſt he was nere
to death, and regarded not his life, to fulfill that ſeru-
which was lacking on your part toward me.

CHAP. III.

*2 Hee refuteth the vaine boaſting of the falſe apoſtles, 7 an-
ſetteth Chriſt againſt them. 10 He ſetteth out the force o-
nature of faith, 15 that laying all things aſide, they may
partakers of the croſſe of Chriſt, 18 the enemies where-
he noteth out.*

MOreouer, my brethren, reioyce in the Lord. It grieue-
me not to write the ſame thinges to you, and for you
is a ſure thing.

2 Beware of dogges: beware of euill workers: beware
of the conciſion.

3 For we are the circumciſion, which worſhip God
the ſpirit, and reioyce in Chriſt Ieſus, & haue no confiden-
in the fleſh:

4 Though I might alſo haue confidence in the fleſh.
any other man thinketh that hee hath whereof hee might
truſt in the fleſh, much more I,

5 Circumciſed the eight day, of the kinred of Iſrael,
2. Cor. 11. 22. the tribe of Beniamin, * an Ebrewe of the Ebrewes, *by th-
Acts. 23. 6. Lawe a Phariſe.

6 Concerning zeale, I perſecuted the Church: tou-
ching the righteouſnes which is in the Lawe, I was vnr-
bukeable.

7 But the thinges that were vantage vnto me, the ſa-
I counted loſſe for Chriſtes ſake.

8 Yea, doutles I thinke all thinges but loſſe for th-
excell-

knowledge sake of Christ Iesus my Lorde, for
I haue counted all things losse, and do iudge them to
gue, that I might winne Christ,
And might be found in him, *that is*, not hauing mine
righteousnes, which is of the Lawe, but that which is
ugh the faith of Christ, *euen* the righteousnes which is
od through faith,
That I may knowe him, and the vertue of his resur-
tion, & the fellowship of his afflictions, and be made con-
mable vnto his death,
If by any meanes I might atteine vnto the resurrecti-
of the dead:
Not as though I had alreadie attained *to it*, either
e alreadie perfect: but I follow, if ỹ I may comprehend
for whose sake also I am comprehended of Christ Iesus.
Brethren, I count not my selfe, that I haue attained
but one thing *I do*: I forget that which is behinde, and
stretch my selfe vnto that which is before,
And followe hard toward the marke, for the price of
hie calling of God in Christ Iesus.
Let vs therefore as many as be perfect, be thus min-
ded: and if ye be otherwise minded, God shal reueile euen
e same vnto you.
Neuertheles, *in that* whereunto we are come, let vs
proceede by one rule, that we may minde one thing.
Brethren, be followers of mee, and looke on them,
ich walk so, as ye haue vs for an ensample.
For many walke, of whome I haue told you often, *Rom.16.17.*
d nowe tel you weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the
osse of Christ.
Whose ende *is* damnation, whose God *is their* bel-
, and *whose* glorie *is* to their shame, which minde earthly
inges.
But our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also
e looke for the * Sauiour, *euen* the Lord Iesus Christ. *1.Cor.1.7.*
Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fa- *tit.2.13.*
shioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the wor-
king, whereby he is able euen to subdue all things vnto him
selfe.

CHAP. IIII.

From particular exhortations, 4 he commeth to generall.
10 He saith that he tooke such ioye in their readines to libe-
ralitie, 12 that he will patiently beare the want.

THerefore, my brethren, beloued and longed fo
and my crowne, so continue in the Lord, ye b
2 I pray Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that t
one accord in the Lord.
3 Yea, and I beseeche thee, faithfull yokefellow
those *women*, which laboured with me in the Gos
Clement also, and with other my fellowe labourers,
Reuel. 3. 5. and 10. 8. and 21. 27. names *are* in the * booke of life.
4 Reioyce in the Lord alway, againe I say, reioyc
5 Let your patient minde be knowen vnto all me
Lord *is* at hand.
6 Be nothing carefull, but in all things let your re
be thewed vnto God in prayer, and supplication with g
of thankes.
7 And the peace of God which passeth all vnder
shall preserue your hearts and mindes in Christ Iesus.
8 Furthermore, brethren, whatsoeuer thinges are
whatsoeuer things *are* honest, whatsoeuer things *are*
whatsoeuer things *are* pure, whatsoeuer things *are* w
loue, whatsoeuer things *are* of good report, if there *be*
vertue, or if there *be* any praise, think on these things.
9 Which ye haue both learned and receiued, & h
and seene in me: those things doe, and the God of p
shalbe with you.
10 Now I reioyce also in the Lord greatly, that no
the last your care for me springeth afresh, wherein not
standing ye were carefull, but ye lacked opportunitie.
11 I speake not because of want: for I haue learn
whatsoeuer state I am, therewith to be content.
12 And I can be abased, and I can abound: euery w
in all things I am instructed, both to be full, and to be
grie, and to abound, and to haue want.
13 I am able to *do* all things through the helpe
Christ, which strengtheneth me.
14 Notwithstanding ye haue well done, that ye
communicate to mine affliction.
15 And ye Philippians know also that in the beginn
of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no Chu
communicated with mee, concerning the matter of gi
and receyuing, but ye onely.
16 For euen *when* I was in Thessalonica, ye sent on
and afterward againe for my necessitie.
17 Not that I desire a gift, but I desire the fruit wh

...er your reckoning.
...should haue receiued all, and haue plentie: I was
...filled, after that I had receiued of Epaphroditus that
...came from you, an odour that smelleth sweete, a sa-
...crifice acceptable and pleasant to God.
And my God shal fulfil all your necessities through
...ches with glory in Iesus Christ.
Vnto God euen our Father, *be* prayse for euermore.
Amen.
Salute all the Saintes in Christ Iesus. The brethren,
...hare with me, greete you.
All the Saintes salute you, & most of all they which
...of Cesars housholde.
The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, *be* with you all.
Amen.

¶ Written to the Philippians from Rome, *and sent* by Epaphroditus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. I.

After the salutation, 4 *he prayseth them the more to* ...*them attentiue vnto him.* 7 *He reporteth the testi-* ...*mony of the doctrine which they heard of Epaphras.* 13 *He* ...*mindeth Gods grace toward them,* 20 *and sheweth that* ...*parties of our saluation consist in Christ alone.*

PAul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus *our* brother,
2 To them which are at Colosse, Saints and faithful brethren in Christ: Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.
3 We giue thankes to God euen the ... of our Lord Iesus Christ, alwayes praying for you:
Since we heard of your faith in Christ Iesus, and of ...loue toward all Saintes,
For the hopes sake, which is laid vp for you in heauen, ...of ye haue heard before by the word of truth, *which* ...Gospel,
Which is come vnto you, euen as *it is* vnto all the ...worlde,

worlde, and is fruitfull, as it is also among you, from th
that ye heard and truely knewe the grace of God,

7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our deare fellow
uant, which is for you a faithfull minister of Christ:

8 Who hath also declared vnto vs your loue in
Spirit.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard
cease not to pray for you, and to desire that ye mig
fulfilled with knowledge of his will, in all wisedome,
spirituall vnderstanding,

10 That ye might walke worthie of the Lord, & pl
him in all things, being fruitfull in all good workes, an
creasing in the knowledge of God,

11 Strengthened with all might through his glor
power, vnto all patience, and long suffring with ioyfuln

12 Giuing thankes vnto the Father, which hath m
vs meete to be partakers of the inheritance of the Sa
in light,

13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of dar
Mat.3.17. nes, and hath translated vs into the kingdome* of his de
and 17.5. Sonne,

2.pet.1.17. 14 In whome we haue redemption through his blo
that is, the forgiuenes of sinnes,

Hebr.1.3. 15 Who is the * image of the inuisible God, the f
begotten of euery creature.

Iohn 1.3. 16 * For by him were all things created, which are
heauen, and which are in earth, things visible and inuis
whether *they* be Thrones or Dominions, or Principalit
or Powers, all things were created by him, and for him

17 And he is before al things, & in him al things co

18 And he is the head of the body of the Church: h
Reue.1.5. the beginning, * *and* the first begotten of the dead, that
1.cor.15.20 all things he might haue the preeminence.

Chap.2.9. 19 * For it pleased *the Father*, that in him should all f
Iohn 1.14. nes dwell,

20 And through peace made by that blond of that
crosse, to reconcile to him selfe through him, through h
I say, all things, both which *are* in earth, and which *are*
heauen.

21 And you which were in times past strangers & e
mies, because *your* mindes *were set* in euil workes, hath

nowe also reconciled,

22 In that body of his flesh through death, to m

holy, and vnblameable and without fault in his sight,
23 If ye continue, grounded and stablished in the faith, and be not moued away from the hope of the Gospel, which of ye haue heard, and which hath bene preached to euery creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am made minister.
24 Nowe reioyce I in my sufferings for you, and fulfil that which is behinde of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church,
25 Whereof I am a minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is giuen me vnto you warde, to fulfill the worde of God,
26 * *Which is* the mysterie hid since the worlde began, and from *all* ages, but nowe is made manifest to his Saintes, *Rom.16.25. ephe.3.9. 2.tim.1.10.*
27 To whom God would make knowen what is the riches of his glorious mysterie among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glorie, *titus 1.2. 1.pet.1.20.*
28 Whome we preach, admonishing euery man, and teaching euery man in all wisedome, that we may present euery man perfect in Christ Iesus,
29 Whereunto I also labour and striue, according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

He condemneth, as vaine, whatsoeuer is without Christ, 11 *intreating specially of circumcision,* 16 *of abstinence from meates,* 18 *and of worshipping of Angels.* 20 *That we are deliuered from the traditions of the Law through Christ.*

OR I would ye knew what great fighting I haue for your sakes, and for them of Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my person in the flesh,
2 That their hearts might be comforted, and they knit together in loue, and in all riches of the full assurance of vnderstanding, to knowe the mysterie of God, euen the Father, and of Christ:
3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisedome and knowledge.
4 And this I say, least any man should beguile you with enticing wordes:
5 * For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, reioycing, and beholding your order, and your stedfast faith in Christ, *1.Cor.5.3.*

6 As ye haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the L
so walke in him,

7 Rooted and built in him, and stablished in the fait
ye haue bin taught, abounding therein with thankes gi

8 Beware lest there be any man that spoile you thro
philosophie, and vaine deceite, through the traditions
men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not
ter Christ.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the Godhe
bodily.

10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head o
all principalitie and power.

Rom.2.29. 11 In whom also ye are circumcised with * circumci
on made without hands, by putting off the sinnefull bo
of the flesh, through the circumcision of Christ,

Rom.6.4. 12 In that ye are * buried with him through baptis
Ephes.1.19. in whom ye are also raised vp together through the fait
the operation of God, which raised him from the dead.

Ephe.2.1. 13 * And ye which were dead in sinnes, and in the u
circumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together wi
him, forgiuing you all *your* trespasses.

Ephe.2.15. 14 And putting out the * hand writing of ordinanc
that was against vs, which was contrary to vs, he euen to
it out of the way, and fastened it vpon the crosse.

15 And hath spoiled the Principalities, and Powers, a
hath made a shewe of them openly, and hath triumph
ouer them in the same *crosse*.

16 Let no man therefore condemne you in meate o
drinke, or in respect of an holy day, or of the newe moo
or of the Sabbath *dayes*,

17 Which are *but* a shadow of things to come: but t
body is in Christ.

18 Let no man at his pleasure beare rule ouer you
humblenes of minde, and worshipping of Angels, ad
cing him selfe in those things which he neuer sawe, ra
puft vp with his fleshly minde,

19 And holdeth not the head, whereof all the b
furnished and knit together by ioynts and bands, increa
with the increasing of God.

20 Wherefore if ye *be* dead with Christ from the u
nances of the world, why, as though ye liued in the wo
are ye burdened with traditions?

21 *As*, Touch not, Taste not, Handle not.

22 W

22 Which all perish with the vsing, *and are* after the commandements and doctrines of men.

23 Which things haue in deede a shew of wisedome, in voluntarie religion and humblenes of minde, and in not sparing the body, which are things of no value, *sith they pertaine* to the filling of the flesh.

CHAP. III.

Against earthly exercises, which the false apostles vrged, he setteth heauenly: 5 *And beginneth with the mortifying of the flesh,* 8 *whence he draweth particular exhortations,* 18 *and particular duties which depende on eche mans calling.*

1 If ye then be risen with Christ, seeke those thinges which are aboue, where Christ sitteth at the right hande of God.

2 Set your affections on thinges which are aboue, *and* not on things which are on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ which is our life, shall appeare, then shall ye also appeare with him in glorie.

5 *Mortifie therefore your members which are on the earth, fornication, vncleannes, the inordinate affection, euil concupiscence, and couetousnes which is idolatrie.* *Ephe.5.3*

6 For the which thinges sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.

7 Wherein ye also walked once, when ye lined in them.

8 But now put ye away euen all these things, wrath, anger, maliciousnes, cursed speaking, filthie speaking, out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye haue put off the olde man with his workes,

10 And haue put on the new, which is renued in knowledge after the image of him that created him,

11 Where is neither Grecian nor Iewe, circumcision nor vncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond, free: But Christ is all, and in all things.

12 Now therefore as the elect of God holy and beloued, put on the bowels of mercies, kindnes, humblenes of minde, meekenes, long suffring:

13 Forbearing one another, & forgiuing one another, if any man haue a quarel to another: euen as Christ forgaue, euen so doe ye.

14 And

14 And aboue all theſe things *put on* loue, which is the
bond of perfectnes.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to
the which ye are called in one bodie, and be ye thankeful.

16 Let the word of Chriſt dwel in you plenteouſly in all
wiſedome, teaching and admoniſhing your owne ſelues in
Pſalmes, and hymnes, and ſpirituall ſongs, ſinging with
gtace in your hearts to the Lord.

1.Cor.10.31 17 *And whatſoeuer ye ſhall doe, in worde or deede,
doe all in the Name of the Lorde Ieſus, giuing thankes to
God euen the Father by him.

Ephe.5.22. 18 ¶ *Wiues, ſubmit your ſelues vnto your husbands,
as it is comely in the Lord.

1.Pet.3.1. 19 *Husbands, loue your wiues, and be not bitter vn-
to them.

Ephe.6.1. 20 ¶ *Children, obey your parents in all things: for
that is wel pleaſing vnto the Lord.

21 Fathers, prouoke not your children to anger, leaſt
they be diſcouraged.

Ephe.6.5. 22 ¶ *Seruants, be obedient vnto them that are your
Tit.2.9. maſters according to the fleſh in all thinges, not with eye
1.pet.2.18. ſeruice as men pleaſers, but in ſinglenes of heart, fearing
God.

23 And whatſoeuer ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the
Lord, and not to men,

24 Knowing that of the Lorde ye ſhall receiue the re-
ward of the inheritance: for ye ſerue the Lord Chriſt.

25 But he that doeth wrong, ſhal receiue for the wrong
that he hath done: and there is no reſpect of perſons.

CHAP. IIII.

*2 He returneth to generall exhortations, 3 touching prayer,
and gracious ſpeach, 7 and ſo endeth with greetings and
commendations.*

YE maſters, doe vnto your ſeruants, that which is iuſt,
and equall, knowing that ye alſo haue a maſter in
heaueh.

Luke 18.1. 2 *Continue in prayer, and watche in the ſame with
1.theſ.5.17. thankes giuing,

Ephe.6.18. 3 *Praying alſo for vs, that God may open vnto vs the
2.theſ.3.1. doore of vtterance, to ſpeake the myſterie of Chriſt, where-
fore I am alſo in bonds,

4 That I may vtter it, as it becommeth me to ſpeake.

5 ¶ *Walke

5 * Walke wisely toward them that are without, and redeeme the season. *Ephe.5.15.*

6 *Let* your speache *be* gracious alwayes, and powdred with salt, that ye may know how to answere euery man.

7 ¶ Tychicus *our* beloued brother and faythfull minister, and fellowe seruant in the Lord, shal declare vnto you all my whole state,

8 Whome I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose that he might knowe your state, and might comfort your hearts,

9 With Onesimus a faythful & a beloued brother, who is one of you. They shall shewe you of all things here.

10 Aristarchus my prison fellow saluteth you, and Marcus Barnabas cousin (touching whome ye receyued commaundements. If he come vnto you receiue him)

11 And Iesus which is called Iustus, which are of the circumcision. These onely are my worke fellowes vnto the kingdome of God, which haue bin vnto my consolation.

12 Epaphras the seruant of Christ, which is one of you, saluteth you, and alwayes striueth for you in prayer, that ye may stande perfect, and full in all the will of God.

13 For I beare him recorde, that hee hath a great zeale for you, and for them of Laodicea, and them of Hierapolis.

14 * Luke the beloued physition greeteth you, and Demas. *2.Tim.4.11.*

15 Salute the brethren which are of Laodicea, & Nymphas, and the Church which is in his house.

16 And when this Epistle is read of you, cause that it be read in the Church of the Laodiceans also, and that ye likewise reade the Epistle *written* from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, Take heede to the ministerie, that thou hast receiued in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bands. Grace *be* with you, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, *and sent* by Tychicus, and Onesimus.

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

He therefore beginneth with thankesgiuing, 4 *to put them in minde that whatsoeuer was prayse worthie in them came of Gods goodnes:* 8 *and that they are ensamples to others.*

PAVL and Siluanus, and Timotheus, to the Church of ye Thessalonians which is in God the Father, and in the Lord Iesus Christ: Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

2 We giue God thankes alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,

3 Without ceasing, remembring your effectuall faith and diligent loue, and the patience of *your* hope in our Lord Iesus Christ, in the sight of God euen our Father,

4 Knowing, beloued brethren, that ye are elect of God.

5 For our Gospel was not vnto you in worde onely, but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, & in much assurance, as ye knowe after what maner we were among you for your sakes.

6 And ye became followers of vs, and of the Lord, and receiued the worde in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghost,

7 So that ye were as ensamples to all that beleeue in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the worde of the Lord, not in Macedonia and in Achaia onely: but your fayth also which is toward God, spred abroade in all quarters, that we needed not to speake any thing.

9 For they them selues shewe of vs what maner of entring in we had vnto you, and howe ye turned to God from idoles, to serue the liuing and true God,

10 And to looke for his Sonne from heauen, whom he raised from the dead, *euen* Iesus which deliuereth vs from that wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

He declareth howe faithfully he preached the Gospel among them, 5 *seeking neither gaine,* 6 *nor prayse of men:* 10 *he proueth the same by their owne testimonie:* 14 *that*

...ariously bear persecutions of their countrey men that he desireth verie much to see them.

...e your selues knowe, brethren, that our entrance in
... you was not in vaine,
But euen after that we had suffered before, and were
...fully entreated at * Philippi (as ye knowe) we were *Acts.16.12*
... in our God, to speake vnto you the Gospel of God
...much striuing.
For our exhortation was not by deceit, nor by vn-
...nes, nor by guile.
But as we were allowed of God, that ỹ Gospel should
...mitted *vnto vs*, so we speake, not as they that please
but God, which approueth our heartes.
Neither yet did we euer vse flattering wordes, as ye
...nor coloured couetousnes, God *is* recorde,
Neither sought we praise of men, neither of you, nor
...ers, when we might haue bene chargeable, as the A-
...s of Christ.
But we were gentle among you, euen as a nource
...cheth her children.
Thus being affectioned towardes you, our good will
...to haue dealt vnto you, not the Gospel of God onely,
...o our owne soules, because ye were deare vnto

For ye remember, brethren, * our labour and trauaile: *Acts.20.34*
...laboured day and night, because we woulde not be *1.cor.4.12*
...geable vnto any of you, and preached vnto you the *2.thes.3.8.*
...el of God.
Ye *are* witnesses, and God *also*, how holily, and iust-
...d vnblameablie we behaued our selues among you
...beleeue.
As ye know how that we exhorted you, and com-
..., and besought euery one of you (as a father his
...en)
That ye * woulde walke worthie of God, who hath *Ephes.4.1.*
...you vnto his kingdome and glorie. *phil.1.27.*
For this cause also thanke we God without cea- *coloss.1,10.*
...sing, that when ye receiued the worde of God, which ye
...of vs, ye receiued it not as the worde of men, but as
...it is the word of God, which also worketh in you
...eeue.
For brethren, ye are become folowers of the Chur-
...of God, which in Iudea are in Christ Iesus, because

ye haue also suffered the same thinges of your owne co
trey men, euen as they *haue* of the Iewes,

15 Who both killed the Lorde Iesus and their ow
Prophetes, and haue persecuted vs away, & God they pl
not, and are contrary to all men,

16 And forbid vs to preache vnto the Gentiles, th
they might be saued, to fulfill their sinnes alwayes: for t
wrath *of God* is come on them, to the vttmost.

17 Forasmuch brethren, as we were kept from you f
a season, concerning sight, but not in the heart, we en
ced the more to see your face with great desire.

18 Therefore we woulde haue come vnto you (I P
at lest once or twise) but Satan hindred vs.

19 For what is our hope or ioy, or crowne of reioyci
are not euen you it in the presence of our Lord Iesus Ch
at his comming?

20 Yes, ye are our glorie and ioye.

CHAP. III.

1 *To shewe his affection towardes them, he sendeth Timo
vnto them:* 6 *He is so moued by the report of their pro
vous state,* 9 *that he can not giue sufficient thankes,
and therefore he breaketh out into prayer.*

WHerefore since we coulde no longer forbeare, w
thought it good to remaine at Athens alone,

Actes 16.1 2 *And haue sent Timotheus our brother and mi
ster of God, and our labour fellowe in the Gospel of Chr
to establishe you, and to comfort you touching y
fayth,

3 That no man should be moued with these afflictio
for ye your selues knowe, that we are appointed th
unto.

4 For verely when we were with you, we tolde you b
fore that we shoulde suffer tribulations, euen as it came
passe, and ye know it.

5 Euen for this cause, when I could no longer forbe
I sent *him* that I might know of your faith, least the te
ter had tempted you in any sort, and that our labour h
bene in vaine.

6 But now lately when Timotheus came from you
to vs, and brought vs good tidings of your faith and l
and that ye haue good remembrance of vs alwayes, d
ring to see vs, as we also *do* you,

7 Therefore, brethren, we had consolation in you,

our affliction and neceſsitie through your faith.

8 For nowe are we aliue, if ye ſtand faſt in the Lord.

9 For what thankes can we recompenſe to God againe for you, for all the ioye wherewith we reioyce for your ſakes before our God,

10 Night & day, * praying exceedingly that we might ſee your face, and might accompliſh that which is lacking in your faith? *Rom.1.10. and 15.23.*

11 Now God himſelfe, euen our Father, and our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt, guide our iourney vnto you,

12 And the Lord increaſe you, and make you abounde in loue one toward another, and towarde all men, euen as we *doe* toward you:

13 * To make your heartes ſtable and vnblameable in holines before God euen our Father, at the comming of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt with all his Saintes. *Chap.5.23. 1.cor.1.8.*

CHAP IIII.

1 He exhorteth them 3 to holines, 9 and brotherly loue. 13 He forbiddeth them to ſorowe after the maner of infidels. 15 He ſetteth out the hiſtorie of our reſurrection.

AND furthermore we beſeeche you, brethren, and exhort you in the Lord Ieſus, that ye increaſe more and more, as ye haue receiued of vs, howe ye ought to walke, and to pleaſe God.

2 For ye know what commandements we gaue you by the Lord Ieſus.

3 * For this is the will of God, *euen* your ſanctification, *and* that ye ſhould abſtaine from fornication, *Rom.12.2. ephes.5.17.*

4 That euery one of you ſhould know, how to poſſeſſe his veſſell in holines and honour,

5 *And* not in the luſt of concupiſcence, euen as the Gentiles which know not God:

6 * That no man oppreſſe or defraude his brother in any matter: for the Lord *is* auenger of all ſuch things, as we alſo haue tolde you before time, and teſtified. *1.Cor.6.8.*

7 * For God hath not called vs vnto vncleanneſſe, but vnto holines. *1.Cor.1.2.*

8 He therefore that deſpiſeth *theſe things*, deſpiſeth not man, but God who hath euen giuen you his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly loue, ye neede not that I write vnto you: * for ye are taught of God to loue one an other. *Iohn 13.34. and 15.12.*

10 Yea, and that thing verely ye doe vnto all the bre- *1.Iohn 2.8. and 4.21.*

thren, which are throughout all Macedonia: but we beseeche you, brethren, that ye increase more and more,

11 And that ye studie to be quiet, and to meddle with your owne busines, and to worke with your owne handes, as we commaunded you,

12 That ye may behaue your selues honestly towarde them that are without, and that nothing be lacking vnto you.

13 ¶ I would not, brethren, haue you ignorant concerning them which are a sleepe, that ye sorowe not euen as other which haue no hope.

14 For if we beleeue that Iesus is dead, & is risen, euen so them which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this say we vnto you by the word of the Lorde, that we which liue, and are remaining in the comming of the Lord, shall not preuent them which sleepe.

16 For the Lorde himselfe shall descende from heauen with a showte, *and* with the voyce of the Archangel, and
1. Cor. 15. 52. * with the trumpet of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:

17 Then shall we which liue and remaine, be caught vp with them also in the cloudes, to meete the Lorde in the ayre: and so shall we euer be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore, comfort your selues one another with these wordes.

CHAP. V.

1 Condemning the curious searching for the seasons of Christes comming, 6 he warneth them to be ready daily to receiue him: 11 And so giueth them sundrie good lessons.

BVt of the times and seasons, brethren, ye haue no neede that I write vnto you.

2 For ye your selues know perfectly, that the day of the Lord shall come, euen as a thiefe in the night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace, and safetie, then shall come vpon them suddaine destruction, as the trauaile vpon a woman with childe, and they shall not escape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkenes, that that day should come on you, as *it were* a thiefe.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, neither of darkenes.

6 Therefore let vs not sleepe as doe other, but let vs watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and

that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

8 But let vs which are of the day, be sober, *putting on the brest plate of faith and loue, and of the hope of saluation for an helmet. *Isa.59.17. ephes.6.17.

9 For God hath not appointed vs vnto wrath, but to obtaine saluation by the meanes of our Lord Iesus Christ,

10 Which died for vs, ỹ whether we wake or sleepe, we should liue together with him.

11 Wherefore exhort one another, and edifie one an other, euen as ye doe.

12 Nowe we beseech you, brethren, that ye acknowledge them, which labour among you, and are ouer you in the Lord, and admonish you,

13 That ye haue them in singular loue for their workes sake. Be at peace among your selues.

14 We desire you, brethren, admonish them that are out of order: comfort the feeble minded: beare with the weake: be pacient towarde all men.

15 *See that none recompense euil for euill vnto any man: but euer folowe that which is good, both towarde your selues, and towarde all men. *Pro.17.13. and 20. 22. mat.5.39.

16 Reioyce euermore. rom.12. 17.

17 *Pray continually. 1.pet.3.9.

18 In all thinges giue thankes: for this is the will of God in Christ Iesus towarde you. Luke 18.1.

19 Quench not the Spirit.

20 Despise not prophecying.

21 Trie all things, *and* keepe that which is good.

22 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.

23 Nowe the very God of peace sanctifie you throughout: and *I pray God* that your whole spirit and soule and body, may be kept blameles vnto the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ.

24 *Faithfull *is he* which calleth you, which will also doe it. 1.Cor.1.9.

25 Brethren, pray for vs.

26 Greete all the brethren with an holy kisse.

27 I charge you in the Lorde, that this epistle be read vnto all the brethren the Saintes.

28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* ỹ you, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* vnto the Thessalonians written from Athens.

THE SECONDE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 He commendeth the increase of faith and charitie, 4 and the patience of the Thessalonians: 6 And describing Gods vengeance against such as oppresse the godly, 10 he teacheth the godly to waite for the last iudgement.

PAul and Siluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God our Father, and in the Lord Iesus Christ:

2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lorde Iesus Christ.

1.Thes.1.2. 3 * We ought to thanke God alwayes for you, brethrē, as it is meete, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the loue of euery one of you towarde another, aboundeth,

4 So that we our selues reioyce of you in the Churches of God, because of your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye suffer,

Iude 6. 5 * *Which is* a manifest token of the righteous iudgement of God, that ye may be counted worthie of the kingdome of God, for the which ye also suffer.

6 For it is a righteous thing with God, to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you,

1.Thes.4.16 7 And to you which are troubled, rest with vs, * when the Lorde Iesus shall shewe himselfe from heauen with his mightie Angels,

8 In flaming fire, rendring vengeance vnto them, that doe not knowe God, and which obey not vnto the Gospell of our Lord Iesus Christ,

9 Which shalbe punished with euerlasting perdition, from the presence of the Lorde, and from the glory of his power,

10 When he shall come to be glorified in his Saintes, and to be made marueilous in all them that beleeue (because our testimonie towarde you was beleeued) in that day.

11 Wherefore, we also pray alwayes for you, that our God may make you worthie of this calling, and fulfill all the

good pleasure of *his* goodnesse, and the worke of faith with power,

12 That the Name of our Lorde Iesus Christ, may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and of the Lorde Iesus Christ.

CHAP. II.

1 He sheweth that the day of the Lord shall not come, til there be a departure from the faith, 3 and that Antichrist be reuealed, 8 whose destruction he setteth out, 15 and therevpon exhorteth to constancie.

NOw we beseeche you, brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our assembling vnto him,

2 That ye be not suddenly moued from *your* mind, nor troubled neither by spirit, nor by worde, nor by letter, as *were* from vs, as though the day of Christ were at hande.

3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes: for *that day shall not come*, except there come a departing first, and that that man of sinne be disclosed, *euen* the sonne of perdition,

4 Which is an aduersarie, and exalteth himself against all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he doth sit as God in the Temple of God, shewing himselfe that he is God.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I tolde you these things?

6 And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be reuealed in his time.

7 For the mysterie of iniquitie doeth already worke: onely he which now withholdeth, *shall let* till he be taken out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked man be reuealed, *whom the Lord shall consume with the Spirit of his mouth, and shall abolish with the brightnesse of his comming, *Isa.* 11.4.

9 *Euen him* whose comming is by the effectuall working of Satan, with all power, and signes, & lying wonders,

10 And in all deceiueablenes of vnrighteousnesse, among them that perish, because they receiued not the loue of the trueth, that they might be saued.

11 And therefore God shal send them strong delusion, that they should beleeue lyes,

12 That all they might be damned which beleeued not the trueth, but had pleasure in vnrighteousnesse.

13 But we ought to giue thankes alway to God for you brethren beloued of the Lord, because that God hath from the beginning chosen you to saluation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and the faith of trueth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our Gospel, to obtain the glory of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast and keepe the traditions, which ye haue bene taught, eyther by worde, or by our Epistle.

16 Now the same Iesus Christ our Lorde, and our God euen the Father which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlasting consolation and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in euery worde and good worke.

CHAP. III.

1 He desireth them to further the preaching of the Gospel with their prayers, 6 and to withdrawe themselues from those, who through idlenes, 11 and curiositie peruert good order: 14 Whom he excludeth from the companie of the faithfull.

Ephes. 6. 19 Colos. 4. 3. FVrthermore, brethren, *pray for vs, that the word of the Lord may haue free passage, and be glorified, euen as it is with you,

2 And that we may be deliuered from vnreasonable and euill men: for all men haue not fayth.

3 But the Lord is faithfull, which will stablish you, and keepe you from euill.

4 And we are perswaded of you through the Lorde that ye both doe, and will doe the things which we warne you of.

5 And the Lord guide your hearts to the loue of God, and the waiting for of Christ.

6 We warne you, brethren, in the Name of our Lorde Iesus Christ, that ye withdrawe your selues from euery brother that walketh inordinately, and not after the instruction, which he receiued of vs.

2. Cor. 11. 1. 1. Thes. 4. 11 7 For ye your selues know, *howe ye ought to followe vs: for we behaued not our selues inordinately among you,

8 Neither tooke we bread of any man for nought: but we wrought with labour and trauaile night and day, because we would not be chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because we haue not authoritie, but that we might

make our selues an ensample vnto you to followe vs.
For euen when we were with you, this we warned
of, that if there were any, which would not worke, that
should not eate.
11 For we heare, that there are some which walke a-
mong you inordinately, and worke not at all, but are busie
bodies.
12 Therefore them that are such, we warne and ex-
hort by our Lord Iesus Christ, that they worke with quiet-
nes, and eat their owne bread.
13 And ye, brethren, be not wearie in well doing.
14 If any man obey not this our saying in this letter,
note him, and haue no company with him, that he may be
ashamed:
15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admonish him
as a brother.
16 Now the Lord him selfe of peace giue you peace
alwayes by all meanes. The Lord *be* with you all.
17 The salutation of me Paul, with mine owne hand,
which is the token in euery Epistle: so I write,
18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you all.
AMEN.

¶ The second *Epistle* to the Thessalonians,
written from Athens.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL TO TIMOTHEVS.

CHAP. I.

Setting foorth a perfect paterne of a true Pastour, whose office especially consisteth in teaching, 4 he warneth him, that vaine questiõs set apart, he teach those things, 5 which further charitie & faith. 12 and that his authoritie be not contemned, 14 he sheweth what an one he is made through the grace of God.

PAVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the commandement of God our Sauiour, and of *our* Lorde Iesus Christ our hope, [Or, ordinance.
2 Vnto Timotheus *my* naturall sonne in the faith: Grace, mercie, and peace from God our Father, and *from* Christ Iesus

Iesus our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still in Ephesus, when I departed into Macedonia, *so doe*, that thou mayest warne some, that they teach none other doctrine,

4 Neyther that they give heede to fables and genealogies *which are* endles, which breede questions rather then godly edifying which is by fayth.

Rom.13.10. 5 For * the end of the commaundement is loue out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith vnfayned.

6 From the which things some haue erred, and haue turned vnto vaine iangling.

7 They would be doctours of the Lawe, and yet vnderstand not what they speake, neyther whereof they affirme.

8 And we knowe, that the Lawe is good, if a man vse it lawfully,

9 Knowing this, that the Lawe is not giuen vnto a righteous man, but vnto the lawlesse and disobedient, to the vngodly, and to sinners, to the vnholy, & to the prophane, to murtherers of fathers and mothers, to manslayers,

10 To whoremongers, to buggerers, to men stealers, to liers, to the perjured, and if there be any other thing, that is contrary to wholesome doctrine,

11 *Which is* according to the glorious Gospell of the blessed God, which is committed vnto me.

12 Therefore I thanke him, which hath made me strong, *that is*, Christ Iesus our Lord: for he counted me faithfull, and put me in *his* seruice:

13 When before I was a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and an oppresser: but I was receiued to mercie: for I did it ignorantly through vnbeliefe.

14 But the grace of our Lorde was exceeding abundant with faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesus.

15 This *is* a true saying, and by all meanes worthie to
Mat.9.13. marke 2.17 be receiued, that * Christ Iesus came into the worlde to saue sinners, of whom I am chiefe.

16 Notwithstanding, for this cause was I receiued to mercie, that Iesus Christ shoulde first shewe on me all loo suffring vnto the ensample of them, which shall in time come beleeue in him vnto eternall life.

17 Now vnto the King euerlasting, immortall, inuisible vnto God only wise, *be* honour & glorie, for euer, and ever Amen.

18 T

This commaundement commit I vnto thee, ſonne
lieus, according to the propheeies, which went be-
pon thee, that thou by them ſhouldeſt fight a good

Haning faith and a good conſcience, which ſome
put away, and as concerning faith, haue made ſhip-
ke.

Of whome is Hymeneus, and Alexander, *whome 1. Cor. 5. 5.
e deliuered vnto Satan, that they might learne not
laſpheme.

CHAP. II.

He exhorteth them to make publike prayers for all men, 4. and that for two cauſes: 8 and therefore he willeth men in all places to pray: 9 and declareth in what apparell 11 And with what modeſtie women ought to beare themſelues in holy aſſemblies.

hort therefore, that firſt of all ſupplications, prayers,
erceſsions & giuing of thankes be made for all men,

For Kings, & for al that are in authoritie, that we may
e a quiet and a peaceable life, in all godlineſſe and
ſtie.

For this is good and acceptable in the ſight of God
Sauiour,

Who will that all men ſhalbe ſaued, and come vnto
acknowledging of the trueth.

For there is one God, and one Mediatour betweene
and man, *which is* the man Chriſt Ieſus,

Who gaue him ſelfe a ranſome for all men, *to be* that
monie in due time,

*Whereunto I am ordeined a preacher and an Apo- 2. Tim. 1. 11
ſpeake the trueth in Chriſt, and lie not) *euen* a teacher
e Gentiles in faith and veritie.

I will therefore that the men pray, euery where lif-
vppure hands without wrath, or doubting.

*Likewiſe alſo the women, that they araye them 1. Pet. 3. 3.
es in comely apparell, with ſhamefaſtneſſe and mode-
not with broyded heare, or golde, or pearles, or coſtly
arell,

But (as becommeth women that profeſſe the feare
God) with good workes.

Let the woman learne in ſilence with al ſubiection.

*I permit not a woman to teache, neither to vſurpe 1. Cor. 14.
thoritie ouer the man, but to be in ſilence. 34.

Gen.1.27. and 2.7, 21. Gen.3.6. 13 For * Adam was first formed, then Eue.
14 * And Adam was not deceiued, but the wo
was deceiued, and was in the transgression.
15 Notwithstanding, through bearing of childre
shalbe saued if they continue in faith, and loue, and ho
with modestie.

CHAP. III.

2 *He setteth out Bishops,* 8 *and christian Deacons,* *their wiues,* 12 *children and familie:* 15 *he calleth Church the house of God.*

THis *is* a true saying, If any man desire the office of
shop, he desireth a worthie worke.

Tit.2.6. 2 * A Bishoppe therefore must be vnreproueable,
husband of one wife, watching, temperate, modest, h
rous, apt to teach,
3 Not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthi
cre, but gentle, no fighter, not couetous,
4 One that can rule his owne house honestly, ha
children vnder obedience with all honestie.
5 For if any cannot rule his owne house, howe
he care for the Church of God?
6 He may not bea yong scholer, least he being pu
vp fall into the condemnation of the deuill.
7 He must also be wel reported of, euen of them wh
are without, least he fall into rebuke, and the snare of
deuill.
8 Likewise *must* Deacons *be* graue, not double
gued, not giuen vnto much wine, neither to filthie luc
Chap.1.19. 9 * Hauing the mysterie of the faith in pure conse
10 And let them first be proued: then let them mini
if they be found blameless.
11 Likewise their wiues *must be* honest, not euill
kers, *but* sober, *and* faithfull in all things.
12 Let the Deacons be ỹ husbands of one wife, &
as can rule their children wel, & their owne houshold
13 For they that haue ministred well, get them s
a good degree, and great libertie in the faith, which
Christ Iesus.
14 These things write I vnto thee, trusting to c
very shortly vnto thee.
15 But if I tarie long, that thou mayest yet kn
how thou oughtest to behaue thy self in the house of G
which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar
gro

nd of trueth.

16 And without controuersie, great is the mysterie of
liues, *which is*, God is manifested in the flesh, iustified in
Spirit, seene of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, be-
ed on in the world, *and* receiued vp in glory.

CHAP. IIII.

He condemneth aswell false doctrines 3 of marriage and the choyce of meates, 7 as also prophane fables: 8 And commendeth the godly exercise, 13 and the daily reading of the Scripture.

Ow the Spirit speaketh euidently, that in the latter
rimes some shall depart from the faith, and shall giue
de vnto spirits of errour, and doctrines of deuils,

2 Which speake lyes through hypocrisie, and haue
r consciences burned with an hote yron,

3 Forbidding to marrie, *and commanding* to abstaine
meates which God hath created to be receiued with
ing thankes of them which beleeue and knowe the
eth.

4 For euery creature of God *is* good, & nothing *ought*
be refused, if it be receiued with thankesgiuing.

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, & prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these
gs, thou shalt be a good minister of Iesus Christ, which
bene nourished vp in the words of faith, and of good
trine, which thou hast continually followed.

7 But cast away prophane, and old wiues fables, and
reise thy selfe vnto godlines.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth litle: but godlinesse is
itable vnto all things, which hath the promes of the
present, and of that that is to come.

9 This *is* a true saying, and by all meanes worthie to be
eiued.

10 For therefore we labour & are rebuked, because
e trust in the liuing God, which is the Sauiour of al men,
cially of those that beleeue.

11 These things warne and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be vnto them
t beleeue, an ensample, in worde, in conuersation, in
ue, in spirit, in faith, *and* in purenes.

13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to exhor-
tion, *and* to doctrine.

14 Despise not the gift that is in thee, which was gi-
uen

nen thee by prophecie with the laying on of the h
the company of the Eldership.

15 These things exercise, & giue thy selfe vnto
that it may be seene howe thou profitest among all

16 Take heede vnto thy selfe, & vnto learning,
nue therein: for in doing this thou shalt both saue th
and them that heare thee.

CHAP. V.

1 *Hauing set downe a maner how to rebuke all degrees,*
entreateth of widowes, who then were chosen for th
uice of the Church: 17 *Then he commeth to Elders,*
speaketh somewhat touching the health of the body.

REbuke not an Elder, but exhort him as a father,
younger men as brethren.

2 The elder women as mothers, the yonger as si
with all purenes.

3 Honour widowes, which are widowes in deede.

4 But if any widowe haue children or nephewes,
them learne first to shewe godlinesse towarde their o
house, and to recompense their kinred: for that is a
nest thing and acceptable before God.

5 And she that is a widowe in deede and left al
trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and p
ers night and day.

6 But she that liueth in pleasure, is dead, while she
neth.

7 These things therefore warne *them* of, that they
be blameleſſe.

8 If there be any that prouideth not for his owne,
namely for them of his household, he denyeth the fayt
is worse then an infidel.

9 Let not a widowe be taken into the number u
three score yere old, that hath bin the wife of one hus

10 And well reported of for good workes: if she
nouriſhed her children, if she haue lodged the strange
she haue washed the Saints feete, if she haue ministred
to them which were in aduersitie, if she were continu
giuen vnto euery good worke.

11 But refuse the yonger widowes: for when
haue begun to waxe wanton against Christ, they wil m

12 Hauing damnation, because they haue broken
first faith.

13 And likewise also being idle they learne to go
b

from house to house: yea, *they are* not onely idle, but prattlers and busiebodies, speaking thinges which are comely.

14 I will therefore that the yonger women marry, and bear children, and gouerne the house, & giue none occasion to the aduersarie to speake euill.

15 For certaine are already turned backe after Satan.

16 If any faithfull man, or faithfull woman haue widowes, let them minister vnto them, & let not the Church be charged, that there may be sufficient for them that are widowes indeede.

17 ¶ The elders that rule well, let them be had in double honour, specially they which labour in the word & doctrine.

18 For the Scripture saith, * Thou shalt not mouzell the mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the corne: and, The labourer is worthie of his wages. *Deut.25.4. 1.cor.9.9. Mat.10.10 Luke 10.7.*

19 Against an Elder receiue none accusation, but vnder two or three witnesses.

20 Them that sinne, rebuke openly, that the rest also may feare.

21 ¶ * I charge *thee* before God and the Lorde Iesus Christ, and the elect Angels, that thou obserue these things without preferring one to another, and doe nothing partially. *Chap.6.13.*

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other mens sinnes: keepe thy selfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but vse a litle wine for thy stomakes sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sinnes are open before hand, and goe before vnto iudgement: but some mens folowe after.

25 Likewise also the good works are manifest before hand, and they that are otherwise, cannot be hid.

CHAP. VI.

1 *He sheweth the duetie of seruants:* 10 *and what a mischieuous euill couetousnesse is:* 13 *and hauing spoken somewhat of rich men, he once againe forbiddeth Timothie* 20 *to comfort himselfe with vaine babblings.*

LEt as many seruants as are vnder the yoke, count their masters worthie of all honour, that the Name of God, & his doctrine be not euill spoken of.

2 And they which haue beleeuing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren, but rather

do

do seruice, because they are faithfull, & beloued
kers of the benefite. These things teach and exh
3 If any man teach otherwise, and consente
the wholesome words of our Lord Iesus Christ, a
doctrine, which is according to godlinesse,
4 He is puft vp and knoweth nothing, but d
bout questions and strife of words, whereof com
uie, strife, railings, euill surmisings,
5 Froward disputations of men of corrupt m
destitute of the trueth, which thinke that gaine is
nes: from such separate thy selfe.
6 But godliness is great gayne, if a man be content
that he hath.
7 For we brought nothing into the world, and it is
taine, that we can carry nothing out.
8 Therefore when we haue foode and raiment, l
therewith be content.
9 For they that will be riche, fall into tentation
snares, and into many foolish and noysome lusts, w
drowne men in perdition and destruction.
10 For the desire of money is the roote of all
which while some lusted after, they erred from the
and pearced them selues through with many sorow
11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, & f
after righteousnesse, godlinesse, faith, loue, patience,
meekenes.
12 Fight the good fight of faith: lay holde of eter
life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast profess
good profession before many witnesses.
Chap. 5.21. 13 * I charge thee in the sight of God, who quicken
all things, & before Iesus Christ, which vnder Pontius
Mat. 27.11. late * witnessed a good confession,
Iohn 18.37. 14 That thou keepe *this* commaundement with
spot, and vnrebukeable, vntill the appearing of our Lo
Iesus Christ,
Chap. 1. 11. 15 Which in due time he shall shewe, that is * bles
Reuel. 17.14. and Prince onely, the King of kings, and Lord of lords,
and 19. 16. 16 Who only hath immortalitie, and dwelleth in
Iohn 1.18. light that none can attaine vnto, * whome neuer man s
neither can see, vnto whome *be* honour and power e
lasting, Amen.
Marke 4.19 17 Charge them that are riche in this worlde, t
Luke 12. 15. they be not high minded, and that they * trust not in
certa

ine riches, but in the liuing God, (which giueth vs a-
dantly all things to enioy)

18 That they do good, *and* be rich in good workes, *and*
die to distribute, and communicate,

19 * Laying vp in store for themselues a good founda- *Mat. 6. 2.*
on against the time to come, that they may obtaine eter-
all life.

20 O Timothens, keepe that which is committed vnto
hee, and auoid prophane *and* vaine babblings, and opposi-
ons of science falsely so called,

21 Which while some professe, they haue erred cõcer-
ing the faith. Grace *be* with thee, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* to Timotheus written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest citie of Phrygia Pacaciana.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL TO TIMOTHEVS.

CHAP. I.

He commendeth Timothies faith, 6 and exhorteth him to goe on faithfully in the charge committed vnto him: 8 and that neither for his bondes, 15 nor the reuolting of others, he faint. 11 He triumpheth of his Apostleship. 14 He willeth him to haue care of the thing committed vnto him: 16 and praiseth Onesiphorus.

PAVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promes of life which is in Christ Iesus,

2 To Timotheus *my* beloued sonne: Grace, mercie, *and* peace from God the Father, and *from* Iesus Christ our Lord.

3 I thanke God, * whom I serue from *Acts. 22. 3.*
the elders with pure conscience, that without ceasing I
haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day,

4 Desiring to see thee, mindful of thy teares, that I may
be filled with ioy:

5 When I call to remembrance the vnfained faith that
is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and
thy mother Eunice, and am assured that *it dwelleth* in thee
also.

6 Wherefore, I put thee in remembrance that thou

ſtirre vp the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of mine handes.

7 For God hath not giuen to vs the Spirit of feare, but of power, and of loue, and of a ſound minde.

8 Be not therefore aſhamed of the teſtimonie of our Lord, neither of me his priſoner: but be partaker of the afflictions of the Goſpel, according to the power of God,

1.Cor.1.2. Tit.3.5. 9 Who hath ſaued vs, and called vs with an * holy calling, not according to our * workes, but according to his owne purpoſe and grace, which was giuen to vs through Rom.16.25. Chriſt Ieſus before the * world was,

Ephe.1.4. Coloſſ.1.26. 10 But is nowe made manifeſt by that appearing of our Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt, who hath aboliſhed death, and hath Tit.1.2. brought life & immortalitie vnto light through the Goſpel:

1.Tim.2.7. 11 * Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and Apoſtle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cauſe I alſo ſuffer theſe thinges, but I am not aſhamed: for I knowe whom I haue beleeued, and I am perſwaded that hee is able to keepe that which I haue committed to him againſt that day.

13 Keepe the true patterne of the wholſome wordes which thou haſt heard of mee in faith and loue which is in Chriſt Ieſus.

14 That worthie thing, which was committed to thee, keepe through the holy Ghoſt, which dwelleth in vs.

15 This thou knoweſt, that all they which are in Aſia be turned from mee: of which ſort are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lorde giue mercie vnto the houſe of Oneſiphorus: for he oft refreſhed mee, and was not aſhamed of my chaine,

17 But when he was at Rome, he ſought me out very diligently, and found *me*.

18 The Lord graunt vnto him, that he may finde mercie with the Lord at that day, and in how many thinges he hath miniſtred vnto me at Epheſus, thou knoweſt very well.

CHAP. II.

2 The better to ſet out perſeuerance in the Chriſtian warfare 3 he taketh ſimilitudes 4 from ſouldiers, 6 and from husbandmen. 10 He ſheweth that his bonds are for the profit of the Saints: 15 Then he warneth Timothie to deuide the word of truth aright, 17 to beware of the examples of the wicked, 22 and to do all things modeſtly.

Thou therefore, my ſonne, be ſtrong in the grace that is in Chriſt Ieſus.

2 And what things thou haſt heard of me, by many witneſſes, the ſame deliuer to faithfull men, which ſhalbe able to teache other alſo.

3 Thou therefore ſuffer affliction as a good ſouldier of Ieſus Chriſt.

4 No man that warreth, entangleth himſelfe with the affaires of *this* life, becauſe hee would pleaſe him that hath choſen him to be a ſouldier.

5 And if any man alſo ſtriue for a maſterie, hee is not crowned, except he ſtriue as he ought to do.

6 The husbandman muſt labour before hee receiue the fruites.

7 Conſider what I ſay: and the Lord giue thee vnderſtanding in all things:

8 Remember that Ieſus Chriſt *made* of ỹ ſeed of Dauid, was raiſed againe from the dead according to my Goſpel,

9 Wherein I ſuffer trouble as an euill doer, euen vnto bondes: but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I ſuffer all things, for the elects ſake, that they might alſo obtaine the ſaluation which is in Chriſt Ieſus, with eternal glorie.

11 *It is* a true ſaying, For if we be * dead together *with him*, we alſo ſhall liue together *with him*. *Rom.6.5.*

12 If we ſuffer, we ſhall alſo reigne together *with him*: if we denie *him*, he alſo wil denie vs. *Mat. 10.33. mar.8.38.*

13 If * we beleeue not, *yet* abideth he faithfull: he can not denie himſelfe. *Rom.3.3. and 9.6.*

14 Of theſe thinges put them in remembrance, and proteſt before the Lorde, that they ſtriue not about wordes, which is to no profit, *but* to the peruerting of the hearers.

15 Studie to ſhewe thy ſelfe approued vnto God, a workeman that needeth not to be aſhamed, deuiding the word of trueth aright.

16 Stay prophane, and vaine babblings: for they ſhall increaſe vnto more vngodlines.

17 And their word ſhall fret as a canker: of which ſort is Hymeneus and Philetus,

18 Which as concerning the trueth haue erred from the marke, ſaying that the reſurrection is paſt alreadie, and do deſtroy the faith of certaine.

19 But the foundation of God remaineth ſure, and hath

this seale, The Lord knoweth who are his: &, Let euery one that calleth on the Name of Christ, depart from iniquitie.

20 Notwithstanding in a great house are not onely vessels of golde and of siluer, but also of wood and of earth,
Rom.9.21. * and some for honour, and some vnto dishonour.

21 If any man therefore purge himselfe from these, he shalbe a vessell vnto honour, sanctified, and meete for the Lord, and prepared vnto euery good worke.

22 Flee also from the lustes of youth, and followe after
2.Cor.1.2. righteousnesse, faith, loue, *and* peace, with them that * call on the Lord with pure heart.

1.Tim.1.4. 23 * And put away fooliſh, and vnlearned questions,
and 4.7. knowing that they ingender strife.
tit.3.9.

24 But the seruant of the Lord must not striue, but must be gentle toward all men, apt to teach, suffering the euil,

25 Instructing them with meekenes that are contrarie minded, *prouing* if God at any time will giue them repentance, that they may acknowledge the trueth,

26 And come to amendment out of that snare of the deuil, of whom they are taken prisoners, to *do* his will.

CHAP. III.

1 *He foretelleth the dangerous times that are to insue: 9. but with the certaine hope of victorie 10 he encourageth him to the combat: 14 Setting out especially the tryal of sound doctrine.*

2.Tim.4.1. THis knowe also, that in the * last dayes shall come perilous
2.pet.3.3. times.
iude 18.

2 For men shalbe louers of their owne selues, couetous, boasters, proude, cursed speakers, disobedient to parents, vnthankefull, vnholy,

3 Without naturall affectiō, trucebreakers, false accusers, intemperate, fierce, no louers at al of them which are good,

4 Traiters, headie, high minded, louers of pleasures more then louers of God,

5 Hauing a shew of godlines, but haue denied ỹ power thereof: turne away therefore from such.

6 For of this sort are they which creepe into houses, and leade captiue simple women laden with sinnes, and led with diuers lustes,

7 *Which women are* euer learning, and are neuer able to come to the acknowledging of the trueth.

Exod.7.11. 8 * And as Iannes & Iambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the trueth, men of corrupt mindes, reprobate concerning the faith.

9

9 But they shall preuaile no longer: for their madnes shalbe euident vnto all men, as theirs also was.

10 ¶ But thou hast fully knowen my doctrine, maner of liuing, purpose, faith, long suffering, loue, patience,

11 Persecutions, *and* afflictions which came vnto me at Antiochia, at Iconium, and at Lystri, which persecutions I suffered: but from them all the Lord deliuered me.

12 Yea, and all that will liue godly in Christ Iesus, shal suffer persecution.

13 But the euill men and deceiuers, shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing, and being deceiued.

14 But continue thou in the thinges which thou hast learned, and which are committed vnto thee, knowing of whom thou hast learned *them*:

15 And that thou hast knowen the holy Scriptures of a childe, which are able to make thee wise, vnto saluation through the faith which is in Christ Iesus.

16 * For the whole Scripture *is* giuen by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable to teache, to conuince, to correct, *and* to instruct in righteousnesse, 2. Pet. 1. 20.

17 That the man of God may be absolute, being made perfect vnto all good workes.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He chargeth him to preache the Gospell with all diligence,* 3 *in that so miserable time:* 6 *That his death is hard at hand,* 8 *yet so, that as a conquerour, he maketh haste to a glorious triumph:* 10 *He sheweth the cause why he sendeth for Timothie,* 11 *euen by reason of his present state.*

I Charge *thee* therefore before God, and *before* the Lord Iesus Christ, which shall iudge the quicke and dead at that his appearing, and in his kingdome,

2 Preache the worde: be instant, in season and out of season: improue, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come, when they wil not suffer wholsome doctrine: but hauing their eares itching, shall after their owne lustes get them an heape of teachers,

4 And shall turne their eares from the trueth, and shall be giuen vnto fables.

5 But watch thou in al things: suffer aduersitie: do the worke of an euangelist: cause thy ministerie to be throughliked of.

6 For I am nowe ready to be offered, and the time of my

my departing is at hand.

7 I haue fought a good fight, & haue finiſhed *my* courſe, I haue kept the faith,

8 *For* henceforth is laid vp for me the crowne of righteouſnes, which the Lord the righteous iudge ſhal giue me at that day: and not to me onely, but vnto all them alſo that loue that his appearing.

9 Make ſpeede to come vnto me at once:

10 For Demas hath forſaken mee, and hath embraced this preſent world, and is departed vnto Theſſalonica. Crescens *is gone* to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.

Col. 4. 10, 14 11 *Onely Luke is with me. Take Marke and bring him with thee: for he is profitable vnto me to miniſter.

12 And Tychicus haue I ſent to Epheſus.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou commeſt, bring with thee, & the bookes, but ſpecially the parchments.

14 Alexander the copper ſmith hath done me much euill: the Lord reward him according to his workes.

15 Of whom be thou ware alſo: for he withſtoode our preaching ſore.

16 At my firſt anſwering no man aſſiſted me, but all forſooke me: *I pray God*, ỹ it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithſtanding the Lord aſsiſted mee, and ſtrengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully beleued, and that all the Gentiles ſhould heare: and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the Lion.

18 And the Lord wil deliuer me from euery euil worke, and wil preſerue me vnto his heauenly kingdom: to whom *be* praiſe for euer and euer, Amen.

Chap. 1. 16. 19 Salute Priſca, and Aquila, and the * houſholde of Oneſiphorus.

20 Eraſtus abode at Corinthus: Trophimus I left at Miletum ſicke.

21 Make ſpeede to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lorde Ieſus Chriſt *be* with thy ſpirit. Grace be with you, Amen.

¶ The ſecond *Epiſtle* written from Rome vnto Timotheus, the firſt Biſhop elected of the Church of Epheſus, when Paul was preſented the ſecond time before the Emperour Nero.

THE

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO TITVS.

CHAP. I.

5 He sheweth what kind of men ought to be chosen ministers: 10 how vaine babblers mouthes should be stopped: 12 and through this occasion hee toucheth the nature of the Cretians, 14 and the Iewes who put holines in outward thinges.

PAVL a seruant of God, and an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, according to the faith of Gods elect, and the acknowledging of the trueth, which is according to godlines,

2 Vnto the hope of eternal life, which God that cannot lie, hath promised before the * world began: *Rom 16 25.*

3 But hath made his word manifest in due time through the preaching, which is * committed vnto me, according to the commandement of God our Sauiour: *ephes.3.9. col.1.26. 2.tim.1.9.*

4 To Titus *my* natural sonne according to the common faith, Grace, mercie *and* peace from God the Father, & *from* the Lord Iesus Christ our Sauiour. *1.pet.1.20. Gal.1.1.*

5 For this cause left I thee in Creta, that thou shouldest continue to redresse the things that remaine, and shouldest ordaine Elders in euery citie, as I appointed thee,

6 * If any be vnreproueable, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, which are not slandered of riote, neither are disobedient. *1.Tim.3.2.*

7 For a bishop must be vnreproueable, as Gods steward, not froward, not angrie, not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre,

8 But harberous, one that loueth goodnes, wise, righteous, holy, temperate,

9 Holding fast that faithful word according to doctrine, that he also may be able to exhort with wholsome doctrine, and conuince them that say against it.

10 For there are many disobedient & vaine talkers and deceiuers of mindes, chiefly they of the circumcision,

11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, which subuert whole houses, teaching thinges, which they ought not, for filthie lucres sake.

12 One of themselues, *euen* one of their owne prophets said,

said, The Cretians are alwayes lyars, euil beasts, slow b
13 This witnes is true: wherefore couince them sh
ly, that they may be sound in the faith,
1.Tim.1.4. 14 And not taking heede to * Iewish fables and c
maundements of men, that turne away from the trueth.
Rom.14.20. 15 Vnto the pure *are* all thinges pure, but vnto
that are defiled, and vnbeleeuing, *is* nothing pure, but e
their mindes and consciences are defiled.
16 They professe that they knowe God, but by wo
they denie *him*, and are abominable and disobedient,
vnto euery good worke reprobate.

CHAP. II.

2 Hee setteth out the duties of sundrie persons and states, and willeth him to instruct the Church in manners. 11 He draweth an argument from the end of our redemption, Which is, that we liue godly and vprightly.

BVt speake thou the thinges which become wholso
doctrine,
2 That the elder men be watchfull, graue, temper
found in the faith, in loue, *and* in patience:
3 The elder women likewise, that they be in such be
uiour as becommeth holines, not false accusers, not subj
to much wine, *but* teachers of honest things,
4 That they may instruct the yong women to be so
minded, that they loue their husbandes, that they loue
children,
5 *That they be* temperate, chaste, keeping at home, go
Ephe.5.23. and * subiect vnto their husbands, that the word of God
not euil spoken of.
6 Exhort yong men likewise, that they be sober mind
7 In all thinges shewe thy selfe an ensample of g
workes with vncorrupt doctrine, with grauitie, integri
8 *And* with the wholsome word, which cannot be
demned, that he which withstanderh, may be ashamed
uing nothing concerning you to speake euil of.
Ephe.6.5. 9 * Let seruantes be subiect to their maisters, and pl
coloss.3.22. *them* in all things, not answering againe,
1.pet.2.18. 10 Neither pykers, but that they shew all good faith
nes, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sau
in all things.
1.Tim.1.2. 11 * For that grace of God, that bringeth (alnation
coloss.1.22. to all men, hath appeared,
12 And teacheth vs that wee should denie vngodl

worldly lustes, and that we should liue soberly and
righteously, and godly in this present world,

Looking for that blessed hope, and appearing of the
glory of that mightie God, and of our Sauiour Iesus Christ,

Who gaue himselfe for vs, that he might redeeme
vs from all iniquitie, and purge vs to be a peculiar people vn-
to himselfe, zealous of good workes.

These things speake, and exhort, and conuince with
all authoritie. See that no man despise thee.

CHAP. III.

*He willeth that all generally be put in minde to reuerence
such as be in authoritie: 3 That they remember their for-
mer life, and attribute all iustification vnto grace. 9 And
of any brabler withstand these fethings, 10 he willeth that he
be reiected.*

Put them in remembrance that they *be subiect to y Prin- *Rom.13.1.
cipalities and powers, *and* that they be obedient, *and* 1.pet.2.13.
ready to euery good worke,

That they speake euil of no man, that they be no fight-
ers, but soft, shewing all meekenes vnto all men.

*For we our selues also were in times past vnwise, 1.Cor.6.11.
disobedient, deceiued, seruing the lustes and diuers plea-
sures, liuing in maliciousnes and enuie, hatefull, *and* hating
one another.

But when that bountifulnesse and that loue of God
our Sauiour toward man appeared,

*Not by the workes of righteousnes, which we had 2.Tim.1.9.
done, but according to his mercie he saued vs, by y washing
of the newe birth, and the renuing of the holy Ghost,

Which he shed on vs abundantly, through Iesus
Christ our Sauiour,

That we, being iustified by his grace, should be made
heires according to the hope of eternall life.

This is a true saying, and these things I will thou
affirmest, that they which haue beleeued God,
might be careful to shewe forth good workes. These things
are good and profitable vnto men.

*But stay foolish questions, and genealogies, & con- *1.Tim.1.4.
tentions, and braulings about the Law: for they are vnpro- *and 4.7.
fitable and vaine. 2.Tim.2.23.

Reiect him that is an heretike, after once or twise
admonition,

Knowing that he that is such, is peruerted, and sin-
neth

neth, being damned of his owne selfe.

12 When I shal sende Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come to me vnto Nicopolis: for I haue determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the expounder of the Law, and Apollos on their iourney diligently, that they lacke nothing.

14 And let ours also learne to shew forth good workes for necessarie vses, that they be not vnfruitfull.

15 All that are with me, salute thee. Greete them that loue vs in the fayth. Grace *be* with you all, Amen.

¶ To Titus, elect the first bishop of the Church of the Cretians, written from Nicopolis in Macedonia.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO PHILEMON.

1 *Paul handling a base and small matter, yet according to his maner mounteth aloft vnto God.* 8 *Sending againe to Philemon his vagabound and thieuish seruant, he entreateth pardon for him, and verie granely preacheth of Christian equitie.*

PAVL a prisoner of Iesus Christ, and our brother Timotheus, vnto Philemon our deare friend, and fellow helper,

2 And to *our* deare *sister* Apphia, and to Archippus our fellow souldier, and to the Church that is in thine house:

3 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

1. *Thes.* 1. 2. 2. *thes.* 1. 3. 4 I* giue thankes to my God, making mention alwayes of thee in my prayers,

5 (When I heare of thy loue and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Iesus, and toward all Saintes)

6 That the fellowship of thy fayth may be made effectuall, & that whatsoeuer good thing is in you through Christ Iesus, may be knowen.

7 For we haue great ioy and consolation in thy loue, because by thee, brother, the Saintes bowels are comforted.

8 Wherefore, though I be very bolde in Christ to commaund thee that which is conuenient,

9 *Yet* for loues ſake I rather beſeech thee, though I be ſuch a one as I am, euen Paul aged, and euen nowe a priſoner for Ieſus Chriſt.

10 I beſeech thee for my ſonne * Oneſimus, whome I haue begotten in my bonds, *Coloſ.4.9.*

11 Which in time paſt was to thee vnprofitable, but nowe profitable both to thee and to me,

12 Whom I haue ſent againe: thou therefore receiue him, that is mine owne bowels,

13 Whom I would haue reteined with me, that in thy ſtead he might haue miniſtred vnto me in the bonds of the Goſpel.

14 But without thy minde would I doe nothing, that thy benefite ſhould not be as it were of neceſsitie, but willingly.

15 It may be that he therefore departed for a ſeaſon, that thou ſhouldeſt receiue him for euer,

16 Not nowe as a ſeruant, but aboue a ſeruant, *euen as* a brother beloued, ſpecially to me: howe much more then vnto thee, both in the fleſh, and in the Lord?

17 If therefore thou count our things common, receiue him as my ſelfe.

18 If he hath hurt thee, or oweth thee ought, that put on mine accountes.

19 I Paul haue written *this* with mine owne hand: I will recompence it, albeit I doe not ſay to thee, that thou oweſt moreouer vnto me euen thine owne ſelfe.

20 Yea, brother, let me obteine this pleaſure of thee in the Lord: comfort my bowels in the Lord.

21 Truſting in thine obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt doe euen more then I ſay.

22 Moreouer alſo prepare me lodging: for I truſt through your prayers I ſhalbe freely giuen vnto you.

23 There ſalute thee Epaphras my fellowe priſoner in Chriſt Ieſus,

24 Marcus, Ariſtarchus, Demas *and* Luke, my fellowe helpers.

25 The grace of our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt *be* with your ſpirit, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, *and ſent* by Oneſimus a ſeruant.

THE

The drift and end of this Epistle, is to shewe that Iesus Christ the Sonne of God both God and man, is that true eternall and onely Prophet, King, and high Priest, that was shadowed by the figures of the olde Lawe, and is nowe in deede exhibited: of whom the whole Church ought to be taught, gouerned, and sanctified.

CHAP. I.

1 *To shewe that the doctrine which Christ brought, is most excellent, in that it is the knitting vp of all prophecies,* 4 *he aduaunceth him aboue the Angels:* 10 *And proueth by diuers testimonies of the Scripture, that he farre passeth all other.*

AT sundrie times and in diuers maners God spake in the olde time to *our* fathers by the Prophets: 2 in these last dayes he hath spoken vnto vs by his Sonne,

Whome he hath made heire of all things, by whom also he made ye worldes,

Col.1.15. 3 *Who being the brightnes of the glory, and the ingraued forme of his person, and bearing vp all things by his mightie word, hath by him selfe purged our sinnes, and sitteth at the right hand of the Maiestie in the highest places,

4 And is made so much more excellent then the Angels, in as much as he hath obteined a more excellent Name then they.

5 For vnto which of the Angels sayde he at any time,

Chap.5.5. *Thou art my Sonne, this day begate I thee? and againe,

psal.2.7. I* wil be his Father, and he shalbe my Sonne?

2.Sa.7.14. 1.chro.22. 6 And againe, when he bringeth in *his* first begotten Sonne into the world, he sayth, * And let all the Angels of

10. God worship him.

Psal.97.7. 7 And of the Angels he saith, * He maketh the Spirits

Psal.104.4. his messengers, and his ministers a flame of fire.

Psal.45.7. 8 But vnto the Sonne *he saith*, * O God, thy throne *is* for euer and euer: the scepter of thy kingdome *is* a scepter of righteousnes.

9 Thou hast loued righteousnes and hated iniquitie. Wherefore God, *euen* thy God, hath anointed thee with the oyle of gladnes aboue thy fellowes.

10 And,

10 And, *Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast established the earth, and the heauens are the workes of thine hands. *Psal.102.25*

11 They shall perish, but thou doest remaine: and they all shall waxe olde as doeth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou folde them vp, and they shalbe changed: but thou art the same, and thy yeeres shall not faile.

13 Vnto which also of ỹ Angels said he at any time, *Sit at my right hand, til I make thine enemies thy footestoole? *Psal.110.1. 1.cor.15.25.*

14 Are they not all ministring spirits, sent forth to minister, for their sakes, which shalbe heires of saluation? *chap.10.12. 13.*

CHAP. II.

1 Thereof he inferreth, that good heede must be giuen to Christes doctrine: 9 And he setteth him out vnto vs euen as our brother in our flesh, that we may with a good wil yelde vp our selues wholy vnto him.

WHerefore we ought diligently to giue heede to the things which we haue heard, least at any time we runne out.

2 For if the worde spoken by Angels was stedfast, and euery transgression and disobedience receiued a iust recompence of reward,

3 Howe shall we escape, if we neglect so great saluation, which at the first began to be preached by the Lord, and *afterward* was confirmed vnto vs by them that heard him,

4 *God bearing witnes thereto, both with signes and wonders, and with diuers miracles, and giftes of the holy Ghost, according to his owne will? *Mar.16.20.*

5 For he hath not put in subiection vnto the Angels the world to come, whereof we speake.

6 But * one in a certaine place witnessed, saying, What is man, that thou shouldest be mindful of him? or the sonne of man, that thou wouldest consider him? *Psal.8.6.*

7 Thou madest him a litle inferior to the Angels: thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and hast set him aboue the workes of thine hands.

8 *Thou hast put all thinges in subiection vnder his feete. And in that he hath put all things in subiection vnder him, he left nothing that should not be subiect vnto him. But we yet see not all things subdued vnto him, *1.Cor.15.27.*

9 But we see Iesus crowned with glory and honour, *which was made a litle inferior to the Angels, through *Phil.2.8.*

the

the ſuffring of death, that by Gods grace he might taſte death for all men.

10 For it became him, for whome *are* all theſe things and by whom *are* all theſe thinges, ſeeing that he brought many children vnto glorie, that he ſhould conſecrate the Prince of their ſalnation through afflictions.

11 For he that ſanctifieth, and they which are ſanctified, *are* all of one: wherefore he is not aſhamed to call them brethren,

Pſal.22.25. 12 Saying, * I wil declare thy Name vnto my brethren in the middes of the Church wil I ſing prayſes to thee.

Pſal.18.2. 13 And againe, * I wil put my truſt in him. And againe,
Eſai.8.18. * Beholde, here am I, and the children which God hath giuen me.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of fleſh and blood, he alſo him ſelfe likewiſe tooke part with
Hoſe.13.14. them, that he might deſtroy * through death, him that had
1.cor.15.55. the power of death, that is the deuil,

15 And that he might deliuer all them, which for feare of death were all their life time ſubiect to bondage.

16 For he in no ſort tooke on *him* the Angels *nature*, but he tooke on *him* the ſeede of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoued him to be made like vnto his brethren, that he might be mercifull, and a faythful hie Prieſt in things concerning God, that he might make reconciliation for the ſinnes of the people.

18 For in that he ſuffred, and was tempted, he is able to ſuccour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 Nowe he ſheweth howe farre inferiour Moſes is to Chriſt, 5. & euen ſomuch as the ſeruant to the Maſter: and ſo bringeth in certaine exhortations and threatnings taken out of Dauid, 8 againſt ſuch as either ſtubburnely reſiſt, 12 or els are very ſlowe to obey.

THerefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heauenly vocation, conſider the Apoſtle and hie Prieſt of our profeſſion Chriſt Ieſus:

2 Who was faithfull to him that hath appointed him,
Nom.12.7. euen as * Moſes *was* in all his houſe.

3 For this man is counted worthie of more glorie then Moſes, in as much as he which hath builded the houſe, hath more honour then the houſe.

4 For euery houſe is builded of ſome man, and he that

built all things, is God.

Nowe Moses verely was faythful in all his house, as a
vant, for a witnes of ỹ things which should be spokē after.

But Christ is as the Sonne, ouer his owne house, whose
use we are, if we holde fast that confidence and that re-
ycing of that hope vnto the ende.

Wherefore, as the holy Ghost sayth, *To day if ye *Chap.4.7.
all heare his voyce, *psal.95.8.

Harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation, accor-
ng to the day of the tentation in the wildernes,

Where your fathers tempted me, proued me, and sawe
y workes fourtie yeres long.

Wherefore I was grieued with that generation,
d sayd, They erre euer in *their* heart, neither haue they
owen my wayes.

So I sware in my wrath, If they shall enter
to my rest.

Take heede, brethren, lest at any time there be in
y of you an euil heart, and vnfaythfull, to depart away
om the liuing God.

But exhort one another dayly, while it is called To
day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnes
of sinne.

For we are made partakers of Christ, if we keepe
e vnto the end ỹ beginning, wherewith we are vpholden,

So long as it is sayd, To day if ye heare his voyce,
arden not your hearts, as in the prouocation.

For some when they heard, prouoked him to an-
r: howbeit, not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

But with whome was he displeased fourtie yeeres?
Was he not displeased with them that sinned, * whose car- *Num.14.37
kases fell in the wildernes?

And to whom sware he that they should not enter
into his rest, but vnto them, that obeyed not?

So we see that they could not enter in, because of
vnbeliefe.

CHAP. IIII.

He ioyneth exhortation with threatning, least they, euen as their fathers were, be depriued of the rest offred vnto them, 11 but that they endeuour to enter into it: 14 And so he beginneth to intreate of Christes Priesthood.

Lets feare therefore, least at any time by forsaking the
promise of entring into his rest, any of you should
seeme

feeme to be depriued.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as also
them: but the worde that they heard, profited not
because it was not mixed with fayth in those that he

3 For we which haue beleeued, doe enter into
Psal.95.11. he sayd *to the other,* * As I haue sworne in my wrath, If
shal enter into my rest: although the workes were
from the foundation of the world.

4 For he spake in a certaine place of the seuenth d
Gen.2.2. this wise, * And God did rest the seuenth day from
Exod.20.11. workes.

5 And in this place againe, If they shall enter into
rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must
thereinto, and they to whom it was first preached, e
not therein for vnbeliefes sake:

7 Againe he appointed in Dauid a certaine day,
Chap.3.7. day, after so long a time, saying, as it is sayd, * This day,
heare his voyce, harden not your hearts.

‖ *Meaning,* 8 For if ‖ Iesus had giuen them rest, then would he
Iosua. after this haue spoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therfore a rest to ỹ people of G

10 For he that is entred into his rest, hath also ce
from his owne workes, as God *did* from his.

11 Let vs studie therefore to enter into that rest, l
any man fall after the same ensample of disobedience.

12 For the worde of God *is* liuely, and mightie in o
ration, and sharper then any two edged sword, and ent
through, euen vnto the dividing asunder of the soul
the spirit, and of the ioyntes, and the marow, and is a d
ner of the thoughtes, and the intentes of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature, which is not man
in his sight: but all things *are* naked and open vnto his e
with whom we haue to doe.

14 Seeing then that we haue a great hie Priest, wh
is entred into heauen, *euen* Iesus the Sonne of God, let
holde fast our profession.

15 For we haue not an hie Priest, which cannot
touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was
things tempted in like sort, *yet* without sinne.

16 Let vs therefore goe boldely vnto the throne
grace, that we may receiue mercie, and finde grace to h
in time of neede.

CH

...dotie of the hie Priest: Secondly that
... of Christ to suffer death, & continue
... dangers deserving punishment.

... Priestis taken from among men, and is
... man, in things pertaining to God, that he
... gifts and sacrifices for sinnes,

... able sufficiently to haue compassion on
... that are ignorant, and that are out of the way, be-
... he himself is compassed with infirmitie,

... sinnes (as he is bound to offer for sinnes,
... one part, as for the people).

... vnto himself this honour vnto himselfe, but 1. Chro. 23.
... of God, as was Aaron. 10. & 25.

... Christ tooke not to himselfe this honor, 25.
... he Priest, but he that said vnto him,

... Sonne, this day haue I begotten thee, Chap. 1. 5.
... in another place, Thou art a psal. 2. 7.
... after the order of Melchisedec. Chap. 7. 17.

... the dayes of his flesh, did offer vp prayers & psal. 110. 4.
... with strong crying and teares vnto him, that
... him from death, and was heard in that
... feared.

... though he were a Sonne, yet learned he obe-
... by the things which he suffered.

... being consummate, was made the author of
... vnto all them that obey him:

... called of God an high Priest after the order
... Melchisedec.

... whom we haue many things to say, which are
... hard to be vttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

... when as concerning the time ye ought to be
... that I take you needs againe that we teache you
... the first principles of the worde of God: and are
... become such as haue need of milke, and not of strong

... For euery one that vseth milke, is inexpert in the
... of righteousnes: for he is a babe.

... But strong meate belongeth to them that are of
... age, euen those that by reason of custome haue their wittes exer-
... cised both to good and euill.

CHAP. VI.

He reproueth the childish slouthfulnes of the Hebrues, and exhorteth them with feare to continue

7 he stirreth them vp to endeuour in time to go forw[ard]. 9 he hopeth well of them. 13 He alledgeth Abraham for example: 17 and compareth faith that taketh holde on the worde, 19 vnto an anere.

THerefore, leauing the doctrine of the beginning of Christ, let vs be led forwarde vnto perfection, not layi[ng] againe the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towarde God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and layinge on of hands, and of the resurrection from the dead, and of eternall iudgement.

3 And this will we doe if God permit.

Chap.10.26. mat.12.45. 2.pet.2.20.

4 *For it is impossible that they, which were once lightened, and haue tasted of the heauenly gifte, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And haue tasted of the good worde of God, and of the powers of the world to come,

6 If they fall away, shoulde be renued againe by repentance: seeing they crucifie againe to themselues the Sonne of God, and make a mocke of him.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that cometh oft ypon it, & bringeth forth herbes meete for them by whom it is dressed, receiueth blessing of God.

8 But that which beareth thornes and briars, *is* reprooued, and is neere vnto cursing, whose ende *is* to be burned.

9 But beloued, we haue persuaded our selues better thinges of you, and such as accompanie saluation, though we thus speake.

10 For God *is* not vnrighteous, that he shoulde forget your worke, and labour of loue, which ye shewed toward his Name, in that ye haue ministred vnto the Saintes, and *yet* minister.

11 And we desire that euery one of you shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope vnto the ende,

12 That ye be not slouthfull, but folowers of them which throngh faith and patience, inherite the promises.

13 For whē God made ȳ promes to Abraham, because he had no greater to sweare by, he sware by himselfe,

Gen.12.2. and 17.4. and 22.17.

14 Saying, *Surely I will aboundantly blesse thee, and multiplie thee marueilously.

15 And so after that he had tarried patiently, he obteined the promes.

16 For men verely sweare by him that is greater than themselues,

…ers; and an othe for confirmation is among them …g of all strife.

So God willing more aboundantly to shewe vnto …eires of promes the stablenes of his counsell, bounde …selfe by an othe,

That by two immutable things, wherein it is vnpos- …le that God should lye, we might haue strong consolati- …, which haue out refuge to laye holde vpon that hope …e is set before vs,

Which *hope* we haue, as an ancre of the soule, both …e and stedfast, and it entreth into that which is within …e vaile,

Whither the forerunner is for vs entred in, *euen* …s that is made an hie Priest for euer after the order of …elchi-sedec.

CHAP. VII.

He hath hither to stirred them vp, to marke diligently what things are to be considered in Melchi-sedec, 15 *wherein he is like vnto Christ.* 20 *Wherefore the Lawe shoulde giue place to the Gospel.*

For this Melchi-sedec * *was* King of Salem, the Priest of the most hie God, who met Abraham, as he returned from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him: *Gen.*14.18.

To whom also Abraham gaue the tithe of all things: who first is by interpretation king of righteousnes: after that, *he is* also king of Salem, that is, King of peace,

Without father, without mother, without kinred, …d hath neither beginning of *his* dayes, neither ende of …e: but is likened vnto the Sonne of God, and continueth …Priest for euer.

Now consider howe great this man *was*, vnto whom …n the Patriarke Abraham gaue the tithe of the spoyles.

For verely they which are the children of Leui, which …ceiue the office of the Priesthood, haue a * commande- *Num.*18.25 …ment to take, according to the Lawe, tithes of the people …at is, of their brethren) though they came out of the …ynes of Abraham.

But he whose kinred is not counted among them, re- …ued tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the …romises.

And without all contradiction the lesse is blessed of …e greater.

And here men that die, receiue tithes: but there he

the ſuffring of death, that by Gods grace he might taſte death for all men.

10 For it became him, for whome *are* all theſe things, and by whom *are* all theſe thinges, ſeeing that he brought many children vnto glorie, that he ſhould conſecrate the Prince of their ſalnation through afflictions.

11 For he that ſanctifieth, and they which are ſanctified, *are* all of one: wherefore he is not aſhamed to call them brethren,

Pſal.22.25. 12 Saying, * I wil declare thy Name vnto my brethren: in the middes of the Church wil I ſing prayſes to thee.

Pſal.18.2. 13 And againe, * I wil put my truſt in him. And againe,

Eſai.8.18. * Beholde, here am I, and the children which God hath giuen me.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of fleſh and blood, he alſo him ſelfe likewiſe tooke part with

Hoſe.13.14. them, that he might deſtroy * through death, him that had

1.Cor.15.55. the power of death, that is the deuil,

15 And that he might deliuer all them, which for feare of death were all their life time ſubiect to bondage.

16 For he in no ſort tooke on *him* the Angels *nature*, but he tooke on *him* the ſeede of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoued him to be made like vnto his brethren, that he might be mercifull, and a faythful hie Prieſt in things concerning God, that he might make reconciliation for the ſinnes of the people.

18 For in that he ſuffred, and was tempted, he is able to ſuccour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 Nowe he ſheweth howe farre inferiour Moſes is to Chriſt, 5. 6 euen ſomuch as the ſeruant to the Maſter: and ſo bringeth in certaine exhortations and threatnings taken out of Dauid, 8 againſt ſuch as either ſtubburnely reſiſt, 12 or els are very ſlowe to obey.

THerefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heauenly vocation, conſider the Apoſtle and hie Prieſt of our profeſsion Chriſt Ieſus:

2 Who was faithfull to him that hath appointed him,

Nom.12.7. euen as * Moſes *was* in all his houſe.

3 For this man is counted worthie of more glorie then Moſes, in as much as he which hath builded the houſe, hath more honour then the houſe.

4 For euery houſe is builded of ſome man, and he that hath

hath built all things, is God.

5 Nowe Moses verely was faythful in all his house, as a seruant, for a witnes of ỹ things which should be spokē after.

6 But Christ is as the Sonne, ouer his owne house, whose house we are, if we holde fast that confidence and that reioycing of that hope vnto the ende.

7 Wherefore, as the holy Ghost sayth, *To day if ye shall heare his voyce, *Chap.4.7. psal.95.8.

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation, according to the day of the tentation in the wildernes,

9 Where your fathers tempted me, proued me, and sawe my workes fourtie yeres long.

10 Wherefore I was grieued with that generation, and sayd, They erre euer in *their* heart, neither haue they knowen my wayes.

11 Therefore I sware in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest.

12 Take heede, brethren, lest at any time there be in any of you an euil heart, and vnfaythfull, to depart away from the liuing God.

13 But exhort one another dayly, while it is called To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnes of sinne.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we keepe sure vnto the end ỹ beginning, wherewith we are vpholden,

15 So long as it is sayd, To day if ye heare his voyce, harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation.

16 For some when they heard, prouoked him to anger: howbeit, not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whome was he displeased fourtie yeeres? Was he not displeased with them that sinned, * whose carkeises fell in the wildernes?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but vnto them, that obeyed not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of vnbeliefe.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He ioyneth exhortation with threatning, least they, euen as their fathers were, be depriued of the rest offred vnto them,* 11 *but that they endeuour to enter into it:* 14 *And so he beginneth to intreate of Christes Priesthood.*

LEts feare therefore, least at any time by forsaking the promise of entring into his rest, any of you should seeme

Nom.14.37

ſeeme to be depriued.

2 For vnto vs was the Goſpel preached as alſo vnto them: but the worde that they heard, profited not them, becauſe it was not mixed with fayth in thoſe that heard it.

3 For we which haue beleeued, doe enter into reſt, Pſal.95.11. he ſayd *to the other*, * As I haue ſworne in my wrath, If they ſhal enter into my reſt: although the workes were finiſhed from the foundation of the world.

4 For he ſpake in a certaine place of the ſeuenth day Gen.2.2. thus wiſe, * And God did reſt the ſeuenth day from all his deut.5.14. workes.

5 And in this place againe, If they ſhall enter into my reſt.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that ſome muſt enter thereinto, and they to whom it was firſt preached, entred not therein for vnbeliefes ſake:

7 Againe he appointed in Dauid a certaine day, by Chap.3.7. day, after ſo long a time, ſaying, as it is ſayd, * This day, if ye heare his voyce, harden not your hearts.

8 For if ‖ Ieſus had giuen them reſt, then would he not ‖ Meaning, Ioſhua. after this haue ſpoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therfore a reſt to ỹ people of God.

10 For he that is entred into his reſt, hath alſo ceaſed from his owne workes, as God *did* from his.

11 Let vs ſtudie therefore to enter into that reſt, leſt any man fall after the ſame enſample of diſobedience.

12 For the worde of God *is* liuely, and mightie in operation, and ſharper then any two edged ſword, and entereth through, euen vnto the diuiding aſunder of the ſoule and the ſpirit, and of the ioyntes, and the marow, and is a diſcerner of the thoughtes, and the intentes of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature, which is not manifeſt in his ſight: but all things *are* naked and open vnto his eyes, with whom we haue to doe.

14 Seeing then that we haue a great hie Prieſt, which is entred into heauen, *euen* Ieſus the Sonne of God, let vs holde faſt our profeſſion.

15 For we haue not an hie Prieſt, which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all things tempted in like ſort, *yet* without ſinne.

16 Let vs therefore goe boldely vnto the throne of grace, that we may receiue mercie, and finde grace to helpe in time of neede.

CHAP.

...he doctrine of the hie Priest. 5 Secondly, that Christ is appointed of God to be our high Priest, 7 and that he hath fulfilled all things belonging thereunto.

...every high Priest is taken from among men, and is ordeined for men, in thinges pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes,

Which can be able sufficiently to have compassion on them that are ignorant, and that are out of the way, because that he himself is compassed with infirmitie,

And for the same cause he is bound to offer for sinnes, as well for himself, as for the peoples.

* And no man taketh this honour vnto himselfe, but that is called of God, as was Aaron. 1. Chro. 13. 10. & 23.

So likewise Christ tooke not to himselfe this honor, to be made the hie Priest, but he that said vnto him, 13.

Thou art my Sonne, this day begate I thee, gaue it him. Chap. 1. 5.

As he saith also in another place, speaketh, * Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchisedec. Psal. 2. 7. Chap. 7. 17. Psal. 110. 4.

Who in the dayes of his flesh did offer vp prayers & supplications, with strong crying and teares vnto him, that was able to saue him from death, and was also heard in that he feared.

And though he were the Sonne, yet learned he obedience, by the thinges which he suffered.

And being consecrate, was made the author of eternall saluation vnto all them that obey him:

Called of God an hie Priest after the order of Melchisedec.

Of whom we haue many thinges to say, which are hard to be vttered, because ye are dull of hearing.

For when as concerning the time ye ought to be teachers, yet haue ye neede againe that we teache you what are the first principles of the worde of God: and are become such as haue neede of milke, and not of strong meate.

For euery one that vseth milke, is inexpert in the worde of righteousnes: for he is a babe.

But strong meate belongeth to them that are of age, which through long custome haue their wittes exercised to discerne both good and euill.

CHAP. VI.

He briefly toucheth the childish slouthfulnes of the Hebrewes, 4 and terrifieth them with sharp threatninges.

7 he stirreth them vp to endeuour in time to go forw[ard]
9 he hopeth well of them. 13 He alledgeth Abraham [for] ample: 17 and compareth faith that taketh holde on [the] worde, 19 vnto an anere.

THerefore, leauing the doctrine of the beginning of Christ, let vs be led forwarde vnto perfection, not layi[ng] againe the foundation of repentance from dead workes, and of faith towarde God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and laying on of hands, and of the resurrection from the dead, and of eternall iudgement.

3 And this will we doe if God permit.

Chap.10.26 4 *For it is impossible that they, which were once
mat.12.45. lightened, and haue tasted of the heauenly gifte, and were
2.pet.2.20. made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And haue tasted of the good worde of God, and of the powers of the world to come,

6 If they fall away, shoulde be renued againe by repentance: seeing they crucifie againe to themselues the Sonne of God, and make a mocke of him.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that commeth oft vpon it, & bringeth forth herbes meete for them by whom it is dressed, receiueth blessing of God.

8 But that which beareth thornes and briars, *is* reprooued, and is neere vnto cursing, whose ende *is* to be burned.

9 But beloued, we haue persuaded our selues better thinges of you, and such as accompanie saluation, though we thus speake.

10 For God *is* not vnrighteous, that he shoulde forget your worke, and labour of loue, which ye shewed toward his Name, in that ye haue ministred vnto the Saintes, and *yet* minister.

11 And we desire that euery one of you shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope vnto the ende,

12 That ye be not slouthfull, but folowers of them which through faith and patience, inherite the promises.

13 For whē God made ȳ promes to Abraham, because he had no greater to sweare by, he sware by himselfe,

Gen.12.2. 14 Saying, *Surely I will abundantly blesse thee
and 17.4. multiplie thee marueilously.
and 22.17.

15 And so after that he had tarried patiently, he enioyed the promes.

16 For men verely sweare by him that is greater than themselues

themselues; and an othe for confirmation is among them an ende of all strife.

17 So God willing more aboundantly to shewe vnto the heires of promes the stablenes of his counsell, bounde himselfe by an othe,

18 That by two immutable things, wherein it is vnpossible that God should lye, we might haue strong consolation, which haue our refuge to laye holde vpon that hope that is set before vs,

19 Which *hope* we haue, as an ancre of the soule, both sure and stedfast, and it entreth into that which is within the vaile,

20 Whither the forerunner is for vs entred in, *euen* Iesus that is made an hie Priest for euer after the order of Melchi-sedec.

CHAP. VII.

1 He hath hitherto stirred them vp, to marke diligently what things are to be considered in Melchi-sedec, 15 wherein he is like vnto Christ. 20 Wherefore the Lawe shoulde giue place to the Gospel.

FOr this Melchi-sedec* *was* King of Salem, the Priest of the most hie God, who met Abraham, as he returned from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him: *Gen.14.18.*

2 To whom also Abraham gaue the tithe of all things: who first is by interpretation king of righteousnes: after that, *he is* also king of Salem, that is, King of peace,

3 Without father, without mother, without kinred, and hath neither beginning of *his* dayes, neither ende of life: but is likened vnto the Sonne of God, and continueth a Priest for euer.

4 Now consider howe great this man *was*, vnto whom euen the Patriarke Abraham gaue the tithe of the spoyles.

5 For verely they which are the children of Leui, which receiue the office of the Priesthood, haue a* commande- *Num.18.21.*
ment to take, according to the Lawe, tithes of the people (that is, of their brethren) though they came out of the loynes of Abraham.

6 But he whose kinred is not counted among them, receiued tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction the lesse is blessed of the greater.

8 And here men that die, receiue tithes: but there he

receiueth them, of whom it is witnessed, that he liueth.

9 And to say as the thing is, Leui also which receiueth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham,

10 For he was yet in the loynes of his father *Abraham* when Melchi-sedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection had bene by the Priesthood of the Leuites (for vnder it the Law was established to the people) what needed it furthermore, that another Priest should rise after the order of Melchi-sedec, and not to be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For if the Priesthood be changed, then of necessitie must there be a change of the Lawe.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken perteineth vnto another tribe, whereof no man serued at the altar.

14 For it is euident, that our Lord sprung out of Iuda, concerning the which tribe Moses spake nothing, touching the Priesthood.

15 And it is yet a more euident thing, because that after the similitude of Melchi-sedec, there is risen vp another Priest,

16 Which is not made *Priest* after the Lawe of the carnall commandement, but after the power of the endelesse life.

Chap.5.6. *Psal.110.4.* 17 For he testifieth *thus*, * Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchi-sedec.

18 For ỹ commandement that went afore, is disanulled, because of the weakenes thereof, and vnprofitablenes.

19 For the Law made nothing perfite, but the bringing in of a better hope *made perfite*, whereby we drawe neare vnto God.

20 And for as much as it is not without an othe (for these are made Priestes without an othe:

21 But this, *is made* with an othe by him that said vnto *Psal.110.4.* him, *The Lorde hath sworne, and will not repent, Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchi-sedec)

22 By so much is Iesus made a suretie of a better Testament.

23 And among them many were made Priests, because they were not suffered to endure, by the reason of death.

24 But this man, because he endureth euer, hath a Priesthoode which cannot passe from one to another.

25 Wherefore, he is able also perfectly to saue them that come vnto God by him, seeing he euer liueth, to make intercessi-

ceſsion for them.

26 For ſuch an hie Prieſt it became vs to haue, *which is* hie, harmeles, vndefiled, ſeparate from ſinners, and made hier then the heauens:

27 Which needeth not daily as thoſe hie Prieſtes to offer vp ſacrifice, *firſt for his owne ſinnes, and then for the peoples: for that did he once, when he offered vp himſelfe. *Leui.16, 11*

28 For the Lawe maketh men hie Prieſtes, which haue infirmitie: but the word of the othe that was ſince ỹ Lawe, maketh the Sonne, who is conſecrated for euermore.

CHAP. VIII.

To proue more certainely that the ceremonies of the Lawe are abrogated, 5 he ſheweth that they were appointed to ſerue the heauenly paterne. 8 He bringeth in the place of Ieremie, 15 to proue the amendment of the olde couenant.

NOwe of the thinges which we haue ſpoken, *this is* the ſumme, that we haue ſuch an hie Prieſt, that ſitteth at the right hand of the throne of the Maieſtie in heauens,

2 And *is* a miniſter of the Sanctuarie, and of that true Tabernacle which the Lord pight, and not man.

3 For euery hie Prieſt is ordeined to offer both giftes and ſacrifices: wherefore it was of neceſsitie, that this man ſhould haue ſomewhat alſo to offer.

4 For he were not a Prieſt, if he were on the earth, ſeeing there are Prieſts ỹ according to the Lawe offer gifts,

5 Who ſerue vnto the paterne and ſhadow of heauenly thinges, as Moſes was warned by God, when he was about to finiſh the Tabernacle. *See, ſaid he, that thou make all things according to the paterne, ſhewed to thee in the mount. *Exod.25.40 actes 7.44.*

6 But now *our hie Prieſt* hath obteined a more excellẽt office, in aſmuch as he is the Mediatour of a better Teſtament, which is eſtabliſhed vpon better promiſes.

7 For if that firſt *Teſtament* had bene vnblameable, no place ſhould haue bene ſought for the ſecond.

8 For in rebuking them he ſaith, *Beholde, the dayes wil come, ſaith the Lord, when I ſhall make with the houſe of Iſrael, and with the houſe of Iuda a new Teſtament: *Chap.10.16 iere.31.31, 32,33,34.*

9 Not like the Teſtament that I made with their fathers, in the day that I tooke them by the hand, to leade them out of the land of Egypt: for they continued not in my teſtament, and I regarded them not, ſayth the Lord. *v.m.11.27.*

10 For this is the Teſtament that I will make with the

house of Israel, After those dayes, sayth the Lord, I will put my Lawes in their minde, and in their heart I will write them, and I wilbe their God, and they shalbe my people.

11 And they shal not teache euery man his neighbour and euery man his brother, saying, Knowe the Lord: for all shall knowe me, from the least of them to the greatest of them.

12 For I wilbe mercifull to their vnrighteousnes, and I will remember their sinnes and their iniquities no more.

13 In that he sayth a newe *Testament*, he hath abrogate the olde: now that which is disanulled and waxed olde, is readie to vanish away.

CHAP IX.

2 *Comparing the forme of the Tabernacle,* 10 *and the ceremonies of the Law,* 11 *vnto the trueth set out in Christ,* 15 *he concludeth that nowe there is no more neede of an other Priest,* 24 *because Christ himselfe hath fulfilled these dueties vnder the newe couenant.*

THen the first *Testament* had also ordinances of religion, and a worldly Sanctuarie.

2 For the first Tabernacle was made, wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shewbread, which *Tabernacle* is called the Holy places.

3 And after the second vaile *was* the Tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all,

4 Which had the golden censer, and the Arke of the Testament ouerlayde rounde about with golde, wherein the golden pot which had Manna, *was*, and * Aarons rod that had budded, and the * tables of the Testament.

Num. 17. 10.
1. *King.* 8. 9.
2. *chro.* 5. 10

5 *And ouer the Arke were the glorious Cherubims, shadowing the mercie seate: of which thinges we will not now speake particularly.

Exod. 25. 22

6 Nowe when these thinges were thus ordeined, the Priestes went alwayes into the first Tabernacle, and accomplished the seruice.

7 But into the second went the * hie Priest alone, once euery yeere, not without blood which he offered for him selfe, and for the ignorances of the people.

Exod. 30. 10
Leuit. 16. 2.

8 Whereby the holy Ghost this signified, that the way into the Holiest of all was not yet opened, while as yet the first Tabernacle was standing,

9 Which was a figure for that present time, wherein were offred giftes and sacrifices that could not make holy, concerning

concerning the conſcience, him that did the ſeruice,

10 Which onely ſtoode in meates and drinkes, and diuers waſhings, and carnall rites, which were inioyned, vntil the time of reformation.

11 But Chriſt being come an hie Prieſt of good things to come, by a greater and a more perfect Tabernacle, not made with handes, that is, not of this building,

12 Neither by the blood of goates and calues: but by his owne blood entred he in once vnto the holie place, and obteined eternall redemption *for vs*.

13 *For if the blood of bulles and of goates, and the aſhes of an heifer, ſprinkling them that are vncleane, ſanctifieth as touching the purifiyng of the fleſh, *Leui.16.14. num.19.4.*

14 How much more ſhall the *blood of Chriſt, which through the eternall Spirit offered himſelfe without fault to God, *purge your conſcience from dead workes, to ſerue the liuing God? *1.Pet.1.19. 1.iohn 1.7. reuel.1.5. Luke 1.74.*

15 And for this cauſe is he the Mediatour of the newe Teſtament, that through *death which was for the redemption of the tranſgreſsions *that were* in the former teſtament, they which were called, might receiue the promiſe of eternall inheritance. *Rom.5.6. 1.pet.3.18.*

16 For where a Teſtament *is*, there muſt be the death of him that made the Teſtament.

17 *For the Teſtament is confirmed when men are dead: for it is yet of no force as long as he that made it is aliue. *Galat.3.15.*

18 Wherefore neither was the firſt ordeined without blood.

19 For when Moſes had ſpoken euery precept to the people, according to the Law, he tooke the blood of calues and of goates, with water and purple wooll and hyſſope, and ſprinkled both the booke, and all the people,

20 *Saying, This is the blood of the Teſtament, which God hath appointed vnto you. *Exod.24.8.*

21 Moreouer, he ſprinkled likewiſe the Tabernacle with blood alſo, and all the miniſtring veſſels.

22 And almoſt all things are by the Lawe purged with blood, and without ſhedding of blood is no remiſsion.

23 It was then neceſſarie, that the ſimilitudes of heauenly things ſhoulde be purified with ſuch things: but the heauenly things themſelues *are purified* with better ſacrifices then are theſe.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy places that are made with handes, which are similitudes of the true *Sanctuarie*: but *is entred* into verie heauen, to appeare now in the sight of God for vs.

25 Not that he shoulde offer himselfe often, as the hie Priest entred into the Holy place euery yeere with other blood,

26 (For then must he haue often suffered since ỹ foundation of the world) but now in the end of the world hath he bene made manifest, once to put away sinne by the sacrifice of himselfe.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men that they shal once die, and after that *commeth* the iudgement:

Rom.5.8. 1.pet.3.18. 28 So * Christ was once offered to take away ỹ sinnes of manie, and vnto them that looke for him, shall heappeare the second time without sinne vnto saluation.

CHAP. X.

1 He proueth that the sacrifices of the Law were vnperfite, 2 because they were yeerely renued: 5 But that the sacrifice of Christ is one, and perpetuall, 6 he proueth by Dauids testimonie: 19 Then he addeth an exhortation, 29 and seuerely threatneth them that reiect the grace of Christ. 36 In the ende he prayseth patience. 38 If at commeth of faith.

FOr the Lawe hauing the shadowe of good thinges to come, and not the verie image of the thinges, can neuer with those sacrifices, which they offer yeere by yeere continually, sanctifie the commers thereunto.

2 For woulde they not then haue ceased to haue bene offered, because that the offerers once purged, should haue had no more conscience of sinnes?

3 But in those *sacrifices* there *is* a remembrance againe of sinnes euery yeere.

4 For it is vnpossible that the blood of bulles & goates should take away sinnes.

Psal.40.7. 5 Wherefore when he commeth into the worlde, he saith, * Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not: but a bodie hast thou ordeined me.

6 In burnt offerings, and sinne offerings thou hast had no pleasure.

7 Then I said, Lo, I come (in the beginning of ỹ booke it is written of me) that I should do thy will, O God.

8 Aboue, when he said, Sacrifice and offering, & burnt offerings, & sinne offerings thou wouldest not haue, neither hadst

8 A pleasure *therein* (which are offred by the Law)
9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God, he taketh away the first, that he may stablish the seconde.
10 By the which will we are sanctified, *euen* by the offring of the body of Iesus Christ once *made*.
11 And euery Priest standeth daily ministring, and oft times offreth one maner of offring, which can neuer take away sinnes:
12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sinnes, * sitteth for euer at the right hand of God, *Chap.* 1. 13.
13 And from henceforth tarieth, * till his enemies be made his footestoole. *psal.* 110. 1. 1. *cor.* 15. 25.
14 For with one offring hath he consecrated for euer them that are sanctified. *Chap.* 1. 13.
15 For the holy Ghost also beareth vs recorde: for after that he had said before,
16 * This *is* the Testament that I will make vnto them after those dayes, saith the Lorde, I will put my Lawes in their heart, and in their mindes I wil write them, *Chap.* 8. 8. *ier.* 31. 33. *rom.* 11. 27.
17 And their sinnes and iniquities will I remember no more.
18 Now where remission of these things *is*, there *is* no more offring for sinne.
19 Seeing therefore, brethren, that by the blood of Iesus we may be bolde to enter into the Holy place,
20 By the newe and liuing way, which he hath prepared for vs, through the vaile, that is, his flesh:
21 *And seeing we haue* an hie Priest, *which is* ouer the house of God,
22 Let vs draw neere with a true heart in assurance of faith, our hearts being pure from an euill conscience, and washed in our bodies with pure water,
23 Let vs kepe the profession of our hope, without wauering, (for he is faithfull that promised)
24 And let vs consider one another, to prouoke vnto loue, and to good workes,
25 Not forsaking the felowship that we haue among our selues, as the maner of some *is*: but let vs exhort *one another*, and that so much the more, because ye see that the day draweth neere.
26 * For if we sinne willingly after that we haue receiued and acknowledged that trueth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinnes, *Chap.* 6. 4.

27 But

27 But a fearefull looking for of iudgement, and violent fire, which shall deuoure the aduersaries.

28 He that despiseth Moses law, dieth without mercy
Deut.19.15 vnder two, or three witnesses:

mat.18.16. 29 Of howe much sorer punishment suppose ye, shall
iohn 8.17. he be worthie, which treadeth vnder foote the Sonne of
2.cor.13.1. God, and counteth the blood of the Testament as an vnholy thing, wherewith he was sanctified, and doth despite the Spirit of grace?

Deu.32.35. 30 For we know him that hath said, *Vengeance belongeth
rom.12.19. vnto me: I will recompense, saith the Lord. And againe, The Lord shall iudge his people.

31 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the handes of the liuing God.

32 Nowe call to remembrance the dayes that are past, in the which, after ye had receiued light, ye endured a great fight in afflictions,

33 Partly while ye were made a gazing stocke both by reproches & afflictions, & partly while ye became companions of them which were so tossed to and fro.

34 For both ye sorowed with me for my bondes, and suffred with ioye the spoyling of your goods, knowing in your selues how that ye haue in heauen a better, and an enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye haue neede of patience, that after ye haue done the will of God, ye might receiue the promes.

37 For yet a very litle while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tarie.

Habak.2.4. 38 *Now the iust shall liue by faith: but if *any* withdrawe him selfe, my soule shall haue no pleasure in him.
rom.1.17.
galat.3.11. 39 But we are not they which withdrawe our selues vnto perdition, but *follow* faith vnto the conseruation of the soule.

CHAP. XI.

1 *He declareth in the whole chapter, that the Fathers, which from the beginning of the world, were approued of God, obtained saluation no other way then by faith, that the Iewes may knowe, that by the same onely, they are knit vnto the Fathers in an holy vnion.*

NOwe faith is the ground of thinges, which are hoped for, and the euidence of things which are not seene.

For by it *our* elders were well reported of.

3 * Through faith we vnderſtand that the world was ſtay- *Gen.1.1.*
ned by the word of God, ſo that the things which we *iohn 1.10.*
ſee are not made of things, which did appeare.

4 By faith Abel * offered vnto God a greater ſacrifice *Gen.4.4.*
than Cain, by * the which he obtained witnes that he was *Mat.23.35.*
righteous, God teſtifying of his gyftes: by the which *faith*
he being dead, yet ſpeaketh.

5 By faith was * Enoch tranſlated, that he ſhoulde not *Gen.5.24.*
ſee death: neither was he founde: for God had tranſlated
him: for before he was tranſlated, he was reported of, that
he had pleaſed God.

6 But without faith it is vnpoſsible to pleaſe *him*: for
he that commeth to God, muſt beleeue that *God* is, and that
he is a rewarder of them that ſeeke him.

7 By faith * Noe being warned of God of the thinges *Gen.6.13.*
which were as yet not ſeene, moued with reuerence, pre-
pared the Arke to the ſauing of his houſhoulde, through
the which *Arke* he condemned the worlde, and was
made heire of the righteouſnes, which is by faith.

8 By faith * Abraham, when he was called, obeyed *Gen.12.4.*
him to go out into a place, which he ſhoulde afterward re-
ceiue for inheritance, and he went out, not knowing whi-
ther he went.

9 By faith he abode in the lande of promes, as in a
ſtrange countrey, as one that dwelt in tents with Iſaac and
Iacob heires with him of the ſame promes.

10 For hee looked for a citie hauing a foundation,
whoſe builder and maker *is* God.

11 Through faith * Sara alſo receiued ſtrength to cō- *Gen.17.19.*
ceiue ſeede, & was delinered of a childe when ſhe was paſt *and 21.2.*
age, becauſe ſhe iudged him faithfull which had promiſed.

12 And therefore ſprang there of one, euen of one
who was dead, *ſo many* as the ſtarres of the skie in mul-
titude, and as the ſande of the ſea ſhore which is innume-
rable.

13 All theſe dyed in faith, and receiued not the promi-
ſes, but ſawe them a farre off & beleeued *them*, and recei-
ued them thankfully, and confeſſed that they were ſtran-
gers and pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that ſay ſuch things, declare plainely that
they ſeeke a countrey.

15 And if they had bin mindfull of that *countrey*, from
whence

whence they came out, they had leisure to haue retur-
16 But now they desire a better, that is an heauen-
wherefore God is not ashamed of them to be called th-
God: for he hath prepared for them a citie.

Gen.22.10. 17 By faith * Abraham offered vp Isaac, when hee wa-
tried, and he that had receiued the promises, offred his o-
ly begotten sonne.

Gen.21.12. *rom.9.7.* 18 (To whom it was said, * In Isaac shall thy seede be
called.)

19 For he considered that God was able to rayse him
vp euen from the dead: from whence he receiued him al-
so after a sorte.

Gen.27.28, 39. 20 By faith * Isaac blessed Iacob and Esau, concerning
things to come.

Gen.48.15. 21 By faith * Iacob when he was a dying, blessed both
Gen.47.31. the sonnes of Ioseph, and * *leaning* on the end of his staf-
worshipped *God*.

Gen.50.25. 22 By faith * Ioseph when he died, made mention o-
the departing of the children of Israel, and gaue comman-
dement of his bones.

Exod.2.2. 23 * By faith Moses when he was borne, was hid three
act.7.20. moneths of his parents, because they sawe he was a pro-
Exod.1.16. per childe, neither feared they the Kings * commande-
ment.

Exod.2.11. 24 By faith * Moses when he was come to age, refused
to be called the sonne of Pharaos daughter,

25 And chose rather to suffer aduersitie with the peo-
of God, then to enioy the pleasures of sinnes for a seaso-

26 Esteeming the rebuke of Christ greater riches th-
the treasures of Egypt: for he had respect vnto the reco-
pence of the reward.

27 By faith he forsooke Egypt, & feared not the fierc-
nes of the King: for he endured, as he that saw him whi-
is inuisible.

Exod.12.22 28 Through faith he ordeined the * Passeouer, and th-
effusion of blood, least he that destroyed the first bo-
should touch them.

Exod.14.22 29 By faith they * passed through the red sea as by dr-
land, which when the Egyptians had assayed to doe, th-
were swallowed vp.

Iosh.6.20. 30 By faith the * walles of Iericho fell downe after th-
were compassed about seuen dayes.

Iosh.6.23. 31 By faith the harlot * Rahab perished not with the-
which

which obeyed not, when *she had receiued the spies peace- *Iosh.2.1.
fully.

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would be
too short for me to tel of *Gedeon, of *Barac, & of *Samp- *Iudg.6.11.
son, and of *Iephte, also of Dauid, and Samuel, and of the *Iudg.4.6.
Prophets: *Iudg.13.24.

33 Which through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought *Iudg.11.1.
righteousnesse, obtayned the promises, stopped y mouthes and 12.7.
of lyons,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge
of the sword, of weake were made strong, waxed valiant in
battell, turned to flight the armies of the aliants.

35 The women receiued their dead raised to life: o-
thers also were racked, and would not be deliuered, that
they might receiue a better resurrection.

36 And others haue bene tryed by mockings & scour-
gings, yea, moreouer by bonds and prisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were hewen asunder, they
were tempted, they were slaine with the sworde, they wan-
dered vp and downe in sheeps skinnes, & in goates skinnes,
being destitute, afflicted, *and* tormented:

38 Whome the world was not worthie of: they wan-
dered in wildernesses and mountaines, and dennes, & caues
of the earth.

39 And these all through faith obteined good report,
and receiued not the promes,

40 God prouiding a better thing for vs, that they with-
out vs should not be made perfite.

CHAP. XII.

He doeth not onely by the examples of the Fathers before recited, exhort them to patience and constancie, 3 *but also by the example of Christ.* 11 *That the chastenings of God can not be rightly iudged by the outward sense of our flesh.*

WHerefore, *let vs also, seeing that wee are compassed *Rom.6.4.
with so great a cloude of witnesses, cast away euerye *coloss.3.8.
thing that presseth downe, and the sinne that hangeth *ephes.4.24.
so fast on: let vs runne with patience the race that is set *1.pet.2.1.
before vs,

2 Looking vnto Iesus the authour and finisher of our
faith, who for the ioye that was set before him, endured
the crosse, and despised the shame, and is set at the right
hand of the throne of God.

3 Consider therefore him that endured such speaking
against

against of ſinners, leaſt ye ſhould be wearied and fa
your mindes.

4 Ye haue not yet reſiſted vnto blood, ſtriuing a
ſinne.

5 And yee haue forgotten the conſolation, w
Prou.3.11. ſpeaketh vnto you as vnto children, * My ſonne, deſpi
the chaſtening of the Lord, neither faint when thou ar
buked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loueth, he chaſteneth: and
ſcourgeth euery ſonne that he receiueth:

7 If ye endure chaſtening, God offreth him ſelfe
you as vnto ſonnes: for what ſonne is it whome the fa
chaſteneth not?

8 If therfore ye be without correction, whereof all
partakers, then are ye baſtards, and not ſonnes.

9 Moreouer we haue had the fathers of our bod
which corrected vs, & we gaue them reuerence: ſhould
not much rather be in ſubiection vnto the Father of
rits, that we might liue?

10 For they verely for a fewe dayes chaſtened vs
ter their owne pleaſure: but he *chaſteneth vs* for our pr
fite, that we might be partakers of his holines.

11 Now no chaſtiſing for the preſent ſeemeth to
ioyous, but grieuous: but afterwarde, it bringeth th
quiet fruite of righteouſnes, vnto them which are there
exerciſed.

12 Wherefore lift vp *your* hands which hang dow
and *your* weake knees,

13 And make ſtraight ſteppes vnto your feete, leſt th
which *is* halting, be turned out of the way, but let it rath
be healed.

Rom.12.18. 14 * Followe peace with all men, and holines, witho
the which no man ſhall ſee the Lord.

15 Take heede, that no man fall away from the gra
of God: let no roote of bitterneſſe ſpring vp and tro
ble *you*, leſt thereby many be defiled.

16 Let there be no fornicator, or prophane perſon
Gene.25.33. * Eſau, which for one portion of meat ſolde his birthright
Gen.27.38. 17 * For ye knowe howe that afterward alſo when h
would haue inherited the bleſsing, he was reiected: f
he found no place to repentance, though he ſought th
bleſſing with teares.

Exod.19.16 18 For ye are not come vnto the * mount that mig

ched, nor vnto burning fire, nor to blackeneſſe and
neſſe, and tempeſt,
19 Neither vnto the ſound of a trumpet, & the voyce
ords, which they that heard it, excuſed them ſelues,
the word ſhould not be ſpoken to them any more, *Exod.* 20.19
20 (For they were not able to abide that which was
mmaunded,* Yea, though a beaſt touch the mountaine, *Exod.* 19.12
albe ſtoned, or thruſt thorowe with a dart:
21 And ſo terrible was the ſight which appeared, that
ſes ſaid, I feare and quake.)
22 But ye are come vnto the mount Sion, and to the
e of the liuing God, the celeſtiall Hieruſalem, & to the
pany of innumerable Angels,
23 And to the aſſembly and congregation of the firſt
e, which are written in heauen, & to God the iudge
ll, and to the ſpirits of iuſt and perfite men,
24 And to Ieſus the Mediatour of the new Teſtament,
to the blood of ſprinkeling that ſpeaketh better things
n that of Abel.
25 See that ye deſpiſe not him that ſpeaketh: for if
y eſcaped not which refuſed him, that ſpake on earth:
uch more ſhal we *not eſcape*, if we turne away from him,
t *ſpeaketh* from heauen.
26 Whoſe voyce then ſhooke the earth, and nowe
th declared, ſaying,* Yet once more will I ſhake, not the *Agge.* 2.7.
rth onely, but alſo heauen.
27 And this *word*, Yet once more, ſignifieth the remo-
ing of thoſe things, which are ſhaken, as of things which
e made *with handes*, that the thinges which are not ſha-
en, may remaine.
28 Wherfore ſeeing we receiue a kingdom, which can
t be ſhaken, let vs haue grace whereby wee may ſo ſerue
God, that we may pleaſe him with reuerence and feare.
29 For* euen our God *is* a conſuming fire. *Deu.* 4. 24.

CHAP. XIII.

He giueth good leſſons not only for maners, 7 but alſo for doctrine.

1 Et* brotherly loue continue. *Rom.* 12.10.
2 *Be not forgetfull to intertaine ſtrangers: for *1. Pet.* 4.9.
thereby ſome haue * receiued Angels into their houſes *Gen* 18.3.
vnwares. *and* 19.3.
3 Remember them that are in bondes, as though yee
were bounde with them: and them that are in affliction,
as if

as if ye were also *afflicted* in the body.

4 Marriage *is* honourable among all, & the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will

5 Let your conuersation be without couetousnesse, & be content with those things that ye haue, for he hath

Iosh.1.5. 6 *I will not faile thee, neither forsake thee:

Psal.118.6. 7 So that we may boldly say, *The Lord is* mine helper, neither will I feare what man can do vnto me.

8 Remember them which haue the ouersight of you, which haue declared vnto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering what hath bene the end of their conuersation. Iesus Christ yester day, and to day, and the same also *is* for euer.

9 Be not caried about with diuers *and* strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be stablished with grace, *and* not with meates, which haue not profited them that haue bene occupied therein.

10 We haue an altar whereof they haue no authoritie to eat which serue in the Tabernacle.

Leuit.4.11. and 6.30. and 16.27. 11 *For the bodies of those beastes whose blood is brought into the Holy place by the high Priest for sinne, are burnt without the campe.

12 Therefore euen Iesus, that he might sanctifie the people with his owne blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let vs go forth to him therefore out of the campe, bearing his reproche.

Mich.2.10. 14 *For here haue we no continuing citie: but we seeke one to come.

15 Let vs therefore by him offer the sacrifice of praise

Hose 14.13. alwayes to God, that is, the *fruite of the lippes, which confesse his Name.

16 To do good, and to distribute forget not: for with such sacrifices God is pleased.

17 Obey them that haue the ouersight of you, and submit your selues: for they watch for your soules, as they that must giue accounte, that they may do it with ioy, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you.

18 Pray for vs: for we are assured that we haue a good conscience in all things, desiring to liue honestly.

19 And I desire you somewhat the more earnestly that ye so do, that I may be restored to you more quickly.

20 The God of peace that brought againe from the dead our Lorde Iesus, the great shepheard of the sheepe

through the blood of the euerlasting Couenant,

21 Make you perfect in all good workes, to do his will, working in you that which is pleasant in his sight through Iesus Christ, to whom *be* praise for euer and euer, Amen.

22 I beseech you also brethren, suffer the wordes of exhortation: for I haue written vnto you in fewe wordes.

23 Know that *our* brother Timotheus is deliuered, with whom (if he come shortly) I will see you.

24 Salute all them that haue the ouersight of you, and all the Saintes. They of Italie salute you.

25 Grace *be* with you all, Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrewes from Italie, *and sent* by Timotheus.

THE GENERAL EPISTLE OF IAMES.

CHAP. I.

1 *He entreateth of patience,* 6 *of faith,* 10 *and of lowlines of minde in rich men.* 13 *That tentations come not of God for our euill.* 17 *because hee is the authour of all goodnes.* 21 *In what maner the word of life must be receiued.*

IAmes a seruant of God, and of the Lord IESVS CHRIST, to the twelue Tribes, which are scattered abroad, saluation.

2 My brethren, count it exceeding ioy, when ye fall into diuers tentations,

3 * Knowing that the trying of your faith bringeth foorth patience, *Rom.5.3.*

4 And let patience haue *her* perfect worke, that ye may be perfect and entier, lacking nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wisdom, let him aske of God, which giueth to all men liberally, and reprocheth no man, and it shalbe giuen him.

6 * But let him aske in faith, and waner not: for he that wauereth, is like a waue of the sea, tost of the winde, and caried away. *Mat.7.7. mar.11.24. Iuke 11.9. Iohn 14.13. and 16.23.*

7 Neither let that man thinke that he shall receiue any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man *is* vnstable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of lowe degree reioyce in that he is exalted:

16 Againe he that is riche, in that he is made lowe: for
Isai.40.6. 23 the flower of the grasse, shall he *vanish away.
1.pet.1.24. 11 For *as when* the sunne riseth with heate, then the grasse withereth, and his flowre falleth away, & the goodly shape of it perisheth: euen so shall the riche man wither away in *all* his wayes.
Iob.5.17. 12 *Blessed *is* the man, that endureth tentation: for when he is tryed, he shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that loue him.
13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with euil, neither tempteth he any man.
14 But euery man is tempted, when he is drawen away by his owne concupiscence, and is entised.
15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth foorth sinne, and sinne when it is finished, bringeth foorth death.
16 Erre not, my deare brethren.
17 Euery good giuing, and euery perfect gift is from aboue, and commeth downe from the Father of lightes, with whom is no variablenes, neither shadow of turning.
18 Of his owne wil begat he vs with the word of truth, that we should be as the first fruites of his creatures.
Prou.19.27 19 Wherefore my deare brethren, * let euery man be swift to heare, slowe to speake, *and* slowe to wrath.
20 For the wrath of man doth not accomplish the righteousnes of God.
21 Wherefore lay apart all filthines, and superfluitie of malicionsnes, *and* receiue with meekenes the word that is graffed in you, which is able to saue your soules.
Mat.7.21. rom.2.13. 22 *And be ye doers of the word, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne selues.
23 For if any heare the worde, and do it not, he is like vnto a man that beholdeth his naturall face in a glasse.
24 For when hee hath considered himselfe, hee goeth his way, and forgetteth immediatly what maner of one he was.
25 But who so looketh in the perfect Lawe of libertie, and continueth *therein*, he not being a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the worke, shalbe blessed in his deede.
26 If any man among you seemeth religious, and refraineth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, this mans religion *is* vaine.
27 Pure religion and vndefiled before God, euen the

Father,

Father, is this, to visite the fatherles, and widowes in their aduersitie, *and* to keepe himselfe vnspotted of the world.

CHAP. II.

1 *He saith, that to haue respect of persons is not agreeable to Christian faith,* 14 *which to professe in words is not enough,* vnlesse 15 *we shew it also in deedes of mercy and charitie,* 21 *after the example of Abraham.*

MY brethren, haue not the faith of our glorious Lord Iesus Christ * in respect of persons. *Leui.19.15. deut.1.17. and 16.19. prou.24.23.*

2 For if there come into your company a man with a golde ring, and in goodly apparell, and there come in also a poore man in vile raiment,

3 And ye haue a respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say vnto him, Sit thou here in a goodly place, and say vnto the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my footestoole,

4 Are ye not partiall in your selues, and are become iudges of euil thoughtes?

5 Hearken my beloued brethren, hath not God chosen the poore of this world, *that they should be* riche in faith, and heires of the kingdome which hee promised to them that loue him?

6 But ye haue despised the poore. Doe not the riche oppresse you by tyrannie, and doe not they drawe you before the iudgement seates?

7 Do not they blaspheme the worthy Name after which ye be named?

8 But if ye fulfill the royal Lawe, according to the Scripture, *which saith,* Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, ye do well.

9 But if ye regard the persons, ye commit sinne, and are rebuked of the Lawe, as transgressours.

10 For whosoeuer shall keepe the whole Lawe, *and* yet faileth in one *point,* he is guiltie of all.

11 For he that saide, Thou shalt not commit adulterie, said also, Thou shalt not kil. Nowe though thou doest none adulterie, yet if thou killest, thou art a transgressour of the Lawe.

12 So speake ye, and so doe, as they that shalbe iudged by the Lawe of libertie.

13 For there shalbe condemnation mercilés to him that sheweth not mercie, and mercie reioyceth against condemnation.

14 What auaileth it, my brethrē, though a man saith he hath faith, when he hath no workes? can ỳ faith saue him?

15 For if a brother or a sister be naked and destitute of daily foode,

16 And one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace, warme your selues, and fill your bellies: notwithstanding ye giue them not those thinges which are needefull to the body, what helpeth it?

17 Euen so the faith, if it haue no workes, is dead in it selfe.

18 But some man might say, Thou hast the faith, and I haue workes: shewe mee thy faith out of thy workes, and I wil shew thee my faith by my workes.

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God: thou doest well: the deuils also beleeue it, and tremble.

20 But wilt thou vnderstand, O thou vaine man, that the faith *which is* without workes, is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified through workes, *when he offred Isaac his sonne vpon the altar? *Gene.22.10*

22 Seest thou not that the faith wrought with his workes? & through the workes was the faith made perfect?

23 And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith, *Abraham beleeued God, and it was imputed vnto him for righteousnes: and he was called the friend of God. *Gene.15.6. rom.4.3. galat.3.6.*

24 Ye see then howe that of workes a man is iustified, and not of faith onely.

25 Likewise also was not *Rahab the harlot iustified through workes, when she had receiued the messengers, and sent them out another way? *Iosh.2.1.*

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, euen so the faith without workes is dead.

CHAP. III.

3 To shew that a Christian man must gouerne his tongue with the bridle of faith and charitie, 9 he declareth the commodities and mischiefes that insue thereof: 15 and how mans wisdome 17 differeth from heauenly.

MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receiue the greater condemnation.

2 For in many things we ‖ sinne all: If any man sinne not in word, he is a perfect man, and able to bridle all the body. *‖Or, stumble*

3 Beholde, we put bittes into the horses mouthes that they should obey vs, and we turne about all their body.

4 Beholde also the shippes, which though they be so great,

great, and are driuen of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very ſmall rudder, whitherſoeuer the gouernour liſteth.

5 Euen ſo the tongue is a litle member, and boaſteth of great things: behold how great a thing a litle fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is fire, *yea*, a world of wickednes: ſo is the tongue ſet ãmong our members, that it defileth the whole body, and ſetteth on fire the courſe of nature, and it is ſet on fire of hell.

7 For the whole nature of beaſtes, and of birdes, and of creeping thinges, and things of the ſea is tamed, and hath bene tamed of the nature of man.

8 But the tongue can no man tame. *It is* an vnruly euill, full of deadly poyſon.

9 Therewith bleſſe we God euen the Father, and therewith curſe we men, which are made after the ſimilitude of God.

10 Out of one mouth proceedeth bleſsing and curſing: my brethren, theſe things ought not ſo to be.

11 Doeth a fountaine ſende foorth at one place ſweete *water* and bitter?

12 Can the figge tree, my brethren, bring forth oliues, either a vine figs? ſo can no fountaine make both ſalt water and ſweete.

13 Who is a wiſe man and endued with knowledge among you? let him ſhew by good conuerſation his workes in meekenes of wiſdome.

14 But if ye haue bitter enuying & ſtrife in your hearts, reioyce not, neither be liars againſt the trueth.

15 This wiſdome deſcendeth not from aboue, but *is* earthly, ſenſual, and diueliſh.

16 For where enuying and ſtriſe *is*, there *is* ſedition, and all maner of euil workes.

17 But the wiſdome that *is* from aboue, is firſt pure, then peaceable, gentle, eaſie to be entreated, full of mercie and good fruites, without iudging, and without hypocriſie,

18 And the fruite of righteouſnes is ſowen in peace, of them that make peace.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He reckoneth vp the miſchiefes that proceede of the workes of the fleſh.* 7 *He exhorteth to humilitie,* 8 *and to purge the heart* 9 *from pride,* 10 *backbiting,* 14 *and the forgetfulnes of our owne infirmitie.*

FRom whence *are* warres and contentions among you? are they not hence, *euen* of your pleasures, that fight in your members?

2 Ye lust, and haue not: ye ennie, and desire immoderately, and cannot obtaine: ye fight and warre, and get nothing, because ye aske not.

3 Ye aske, and receiue not, because ye aske amisse, that ye might lay the same out on your pleasures.

4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the amitie of the worlde is the enimitie of God? Whosoeuer therefore wil be a friend of the world, maketh himselfe the enemie of God.

5 Doe ye thinke that the Scripture saith in vaine, The spirit that dwelleth in vs, lusteth after enuie?

6 But *the Scripture* offereth more grace, *and* therefore saith, * God resisteth the proude, and giueth grace to the humble.

Prou. 3. 34. 1. pet. 5. 5.

Ephes. 4. 27.

7 * Submit your selues to God: resist the deuil, and he will flee from you.

8 Draw neere to God, and he will drawe neere to you. Clense your handes, ye sinners, and purge your heartes, ye double minded.

9 Suffer afflictions, and sorowe ye, and weepe: let your laughter be turned into mourning, & *your* ioy into heauines.

1. Pet. 5. 6.

10 * Cast downe your selues before the Lorde, and he will lift you vp.

11 Speake not euill one of another, brethren. He that speaketh euil of his brother, or he that condemneth his brother, speaketh euill of the Lawe, and condemneth the Lawe: and if thou condemnest the Lawe, thou art not an obseruer of the Lawe, but a iudge.

12 There is one Lawgiuer, which is able to saue, and to destroy. * Who art thou that iudgest another man?

Rom. 14. 4.

13 Go to now ye that say, To day or to morowe we will go into such a citie, and continue there a yeere, and bye and sell, and get gaine,

14 (And yet ye cannot tell what *shalbe* to morowe. For what is your life? It is euen a vapour that appeareth for a litle time, and afterward vanisheth away)

Leuit. 4. 19.

15 For that ye ought to say, * If the Lord will, and, if we liue, we wil do this or that.

16 But ye reioyce in your boastings: all such reioycing is euill.

17 Therefore,

17 Therefore, to him that knoweth howe to doe well, and doeth it not, to him it is sinne.

CHAP. V.

He threatneth the riche with Gods seuere iudgement, for their pride, 7 *that the poore hearing the miserable ende of the riche,* 8 *may patiently beare afflictions,* 11 *as Iob did,* 14 *euen in their distresses.*

GOe to nowe, ye riche men: weepe, and howle for your miseries that shall come vpon you.

2 Your riches are corrupt, and your garments are moth eaten.

3 Your golde and siluer is cankred, and the rust of them shalbe a witnes against you, & shall eate your flesh, as *it were* fire. Ye haue heaped vp treasure for the last dayes.

4 Beholde, the hire of the labourers, which haue reaped your fieldes (which is of you kept backe by fraude) cryeth, and the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of hostes.

5 Ye haue liued in pleasure on the earth, & in wantonnes. Ye haue nourished your heartes, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye haue condemned *and* haue killed the iust, and hee hath not resisted you.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, vntill he receiue the former, and the latter raine.

8 Be ye also patient therefore and settle your heartes: for the comming of the Lord draweth neere.

9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, least ye be condemned: behold, the iudge standeth before the doore.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets for an ensample of suffering aduersitie, and of long patience, which haue spoken in the Name of the Lorde.

11 Beholde, we count them blessed which endure. Ye haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue knowen what ende the Lorde *made*. For the Lorde is very pitifull and mercifull.

12 But before all thinges, my brethren, † sweare not, *Mat.5.34.*
neither by heauen, nor by earth, nor by any other othes but let your yea, be yea, and *your* nay, nay, lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray. Is any merie? Let him sing.

14 Is any ſicke among you? Let him call for the Elders of the Church, and let them pray for him, and anoint him
Mar.6.13. with *oyle in the Name of the Lord.

15 And the prayer of faith ſhall ſaue the ſicke, and the Lorde ſhall raiſe him vp: and if hee haue committed ſinnes, they ſhalbe forgiuen him.

16 Acknowledge your faultes one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: for the prayer of a righteous man auaileth much, if it be feruent.

1.Kin.17.1. 17 *Helias was a man ſubiect to like paſſions as we are, *and 18.45.* and he prayed earneſtly that it might not raine, & it rained *Luke 4.25.* not on the earth for three yeeres and ſixe moneths.

18 And hee prayed againe, and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth brought foorth her fruite.

Mat. 18.15. 19 Brethren, * if any of you hath erred from the truth, and ſome man hath conuerted him,

20 Let him knowe that hee which hath conuerted the ſinner from going aſtray out of his way, ſhall ſaue a ſoule from death, and ſhall hide a multitude of ſinnes.

THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL OF PETER.

CHAP. I.

1 He extolleth Gods mercie ſhewed in Chriſt, 7 which we lay hold vpon by faith, and poſſeſſe through hope: 10 whereof the Prophets foretolde. 13 He exhorteth 15 to renounce the world, 23 and their former life, & ſo wholy yeld themſelues to God.

PETER an Apoſtle of Ieſus Chriſt, to the ſtrangers that dwel here & there throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Aſia and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father vnto ſanctification of the Spirit, through obedience and ſprinkling of the blood of Ieſus Chriſt: Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you.

3 Bleſſed *be* God, euen the Father of our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt, which according to his aboundant mercie hath begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope by the reſurrection of Ieſus Chriſt from the dead,

4 To an inheritance immortall and vndefiled, and that
vnfadeth not, reserued in heauen for vs,

5 Which are kept by the power of God through fayth
vnto saluation, which is prepared to be shewed in the last
time,

6 Wherein ye reioyce, though nowe for a season (if
neede require) ye are in heauines, through manifolde ten-
tations,

7 That the tryall of your fayth, being much more pre-
cious then golde that perisheth (though it be tried with
fire) might be found vnto *your* praise, and honour and glo-
rie at the appearing of Iesus Christ:

8 Whom ye haue not seene, and yet loue *him*, in whom
nowe, though ye see him not, yet doe you beleeue, and re-
ioyce with ioy vnspeakeable and glorious,

9 Receiuing the [end of your faith, *euen* the saluation [*Or, reward*
of your soules.

10 Of the which saluation the Prophets haue inquired
and searched, which prophecied of the grace that should
come vnto you,

11 Searching when or what time the Spirit which te-
stified before of Christ which was in them, should declare
the sufferings *that should come* vnto Christ, and the glorie
that should follow.

12 Vnto whome it was reuealed, that not vnto them
selues, but vnto vs they should minister the thinges which
are nowe shewed vnto you by them which haue preached
vnto you the Gospel by the holy Ghost sent downe from
heauen, the which things the Angels desire to beholde.

13 Wherefore, gird vp the loynes of your minde: be
sober, and trust perfectly on that grace that is brought vn-
to you, in the reuelation of Iesus Christ,

14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selues
vnto the former lustes of your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you, is holy, so be ye
holy in * all maner of conuersation,

16 Because it is written, * Be ye holy, for I am holy.

17 And if ye call him Father, which without * respect
of person iudgeth according to euery mans worke, passe
the time of your dwelling here in feare,

18 Knowing that ye were not redeemed with corrup-
tible things, as siluer and golde, from your vaine conuersa-
tion receiued by the traditions of the fathers,

Luke.1.75.
Leu.11.44. and 19.2. & 20.7.
Deu.10.17.
1.Cor.7.23.
gal.4.8.

19 *But

1.Cor.6.20. and 7.23. hebr.9.14. 1.iohn 1.7. reuel.1.5.

19 *But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lambe vndefiled, and without spot.

Rom.16.25. ephe 3.9. coloſ.1.26. 2.tim.1.10. titus 1.2.

20 Which was *ordeined before the foundation of the world, but was declared in the laſt times for your sakes,

Chap.2.17. rom.2.10. epheſ.4.2. Iſa 40.6. iam.1.10.

21 Which by his meanes doe beleeue in God that raiſed him from the dead, and gaue him glorie, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Hauing purified your ſoules in obeying the truth through the ſpirit, to *loue brotherly without fayning, loue one another with a pure heart fernently,

23 Being borne anewe, not of mortall ſeede, but of immortal, by the worde of God, who liueth and endureth for euer.

24 For all *flesh is as graſſe, and all the glorie of man as the flower of graſſe. The graſſe withereth, and the flower falleth away.

25 But the worde of the Lorde endureth for euer: and this is the worde which is preached among you.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth the new borne in faith, to leade their liues answerable to the ſame: 6 and leſt their faith ſhould ſtagger, he bringeth in that which was foretolde touching Chriſt. 11 Then he willeth thē to be obedient to Magiſtrates, 21 and that they patiently beare aduerſitie after Chriſtes example.

Rom.6.4. ephe.4.23. coloſ.3.8. hebr.12.1.

WHerefore, *laying aſide all malicious nes and all guile, and diſsimulation, and enuie, and all euil ſpeaking,

2 As newe borne babes deſire that ſyncere milke of the worde, that ye may growe thereby,

3 Becauſe ye haue tasted that the Lorde is bountifull.

4 To whom comming as vnto a liuing ſtone diſalowed of men, but choſen of God, and precious,

5 Ye alſo as liuely ſtones, be made a ſpirituall houſe, an holy *Prieſthood to offer vp ſpirituall ſacrifices acceptable to God by Ieſus Chriſt.

Reuel.1.6. Iſa.28.16. rom.9.33.

6 Wherefore alſo it is conteined in the Scripture, *Beholde, I put in Sion a chiefe corner ſtone, elect & precious, and he that beleeueth therein, ſhal not be aſhamed.

7 Vnto you therefore which beleeue, it is precious: but vnto them which be diſobedient, the *ſtone which the builders diſalowed, the ſame is made the head of the corner,

Pſal.118.22 mat.21.42. act.4.11. Iſa 8.14. rom.9.33.

8 And a *ſtone to ſtumble at, & a cocke of offence, even to them which ſtumble at the worde, being diſobedient, vnto the which thing they were euen ordeined.

9

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royall *Priesthood, an holy nation, a people set at libertie that ye should shewe forth the vertues of him that hath called you out of darkenes into his marueilous light, *Exo.19.6.

10 *Which in time past were not a people, yet *are* now the people of God: which in time past were not vnder mercie, but now haue obteined mercie. *Hose.2.23. rom.9.25.

11 Dearely beloued, I beseech you, as strangers and pilgryms, *abstaine from fleshly lustes, which fight against the soule, *Rom.13.14. gala.5.16.

12 *And haue your conuersation honest among the Gentiles, that they which speake euil of you as of euil doers, may by *your* *good workes which they shall see, glorifie God in the day of visitation. *Chap.3.16. *Mat.5.16.

13 *Therefore submit your selues vnto all maner ordinance of man for the Lordes sake, whether it be vnto the king, as vnto the superiour, *Rom.13.1.

14 Or vnto gouernours, as vnto them that are sent of him, for the punishment of euil doers, and for the prayse of them that doe wel.

15 For so is the wil of God, that by wel doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of the foolish men,

16 As free, and not as hauing the libertie for a cloke of maliciousnes, but as the seruants of God.

17 Honour all men: *loue brotherly fellowship: feare God: honour the King. *Chap.1.22. rom.12.10.

18 *Seruants, be subiect to your masters with al feare, not onely to the good & courteous, but also to the froward. *Ephes.5.6. col.3.22.

19 *For this is thanke worthie, if a man for conscience toward God endure griefe suffering wrongfully. 2.Cor.7.10.

20 For what prayse is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faultes, ye take it patiently? but and if when ye doe wel, ye suffer *wrong* and take it patiently, this is acceptable to God.

21 For hereunto ye are called: for Christ also suffred for you, leauing you an ensample that ye should folowe his steppes.

22 *Who did no sinne, neither was there guile found in his mouth. *Isa.53.9. 1.John3.5.

23 Who when he was reuiled, reuiled not againe: when he suffred, he threatned not, but committed it to him that iudgeth righteously.

24 *Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his bodie on *Isa.53.5. Mat.8.17.

on the tree, that we being dead to ſinne, ſhould liue in righteouſnes: by whoſe ſtripes ye were healed.

25 For ye were as ſheepe going aſtray: but are now returned vnto the ſhepheard and biſhop of your ſoules.

CHAP. III.

1 *That Chriſtian women ſhould not contemne their husbands though they be infidels,* 5 *he bringeth in examples of godly women.* 8 *Generall exhortations,* 14 *patiently to beare perſecutions,* 15 *and boldely to yeeld a reaſon of their faith.* 18 *Chriſtes example.*

Col 3.18. *Epheſ.*5.22. LIkewiſe *let the wiues be ſubiect to their husbands, that euen they which obey not the worde, may without the worde be wonne by the conuerſation of the wiues,

2 While they beholde your pure conuerſation, which is with feare.

*1.Tim.*2.9. 3 *Whoſe apparelling, let it not be that outwarde, with broyded heare, and golde put about, or in putting on of apparel:

4 But let it be the hid man of the heart, *which conſiſteth* in the incorruption of a meeke and quiet ſpirit, which is before God a thing much ſet by.

5 For euen after this maner in time paſt did the holy women, which truſted in God, tier them ſelues, and were ſubiect to their husbands.

Gen. 18.12. 6 As Sara obeyed Abraham, and *called him Syr: whoſe daughters ye are, whiles ye doe well, not being afrayde of any terrour.

*2.Cor.*7.3. 7 *Likewiſe ye husbands, dwell with them as men of knowledge, giuing honour vnto the woman, as vnto the weaker veſſel, euen as they which are heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not interrupted.

8 Finally, be ye all of one minde: one ſuffer with another: loue as brethren: *be* pitiful: *be* courteous,

*Pro.*17.13. *&* 20.22. *mat.*5.39. *rom.* 12.17. 9 *Not rendring euil for euil, neither rebuke for rebuke: but contrariwiſe bleſſe, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye ſhould be heires of bleſsing.

1.*theſ.* 5.15. *Pſal.*34.13. *Iſa.*1.16. 10 *For if any man long after life, and to ſee good dayes, let him refraine his tongue from euil, and his lippes that they ſpeake not guile,

11 *Let him eſchew euil, and doe good: let him ſeeke peace, and follow after it.

12 For the eyes of the Lorde *are* ouer the righteous, and his eares *are open* vnto their prayers: and the face

the Lord *is* against them that doe euil.

13 And who is it that wil harme you, if ye follow that which is good?

14 *Notwithstanding blessed *are ye*, if ye suffer for righteousnesse sake. Yea, *feare not their feare, neither be troubled. *Mat.5.10. Isa.8.12,13.*

15 But sanctifie the Lorde God in your hearts: and be ready alwayes to giue an answere to euery man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekenes and reuerence,

16 Hauing a good conscience, that when they speake euil of you as of euil doers, they may be ashamed, which falsely accuse your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For it *is* better (if the wil of God be so) that ye suffer for wel doing, then for euil doing.

18 *For Christ also hath once suffred for sinnes, the iust for the vniust, that he might bring vs to God, & was put to death concerning the flesh, but was quickened by ỹ spirit. *Rom.5.6. hebr.9.15.*

19 By the which he also went, and preached vnto the spirits that *are* in prison.

20 Which were in time passed disobedient, when once the long suffring of God abode in the dayes of *Noe, while the Arke was preparing, wherein fewe, that is, eight soules were saued in the water. *Gen.6.14. mat.24.38. luke 17.26.*

21 Whereof the baptisme *that* now *is*, answering that figure, (*which is* not a putting away of the filth of the flesh, but a confident demaunding which a good conscience maketh to God) saueth vs also by ỹ resurrection of Iesus Christ,

22 Which is at the right hand of God, gone into heauen, to whom the Angels, and Powers, and might are subiect.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He bringeth in Christes example, and applieth it 6 to the mortifying of the flesh, 8 especially commending Charitie: 12 And so entreateth of patience. 17 That it is necessarie that correction beginne at the Church.

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffred for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same minde, *which is*, that he which hath suffred in the flesh, hath ceassed frō sinne,

2 That he hence forward should liue (as much time as remaineth in the flesh) not after the lustes of men, but after the wil of God.

3 *For it is sufficient for vs that we haue spent the time past of the life, after the lust of the Gentiles, walking in *Ephes.4.22.*

wantonnes,

wantonnes, luſtes, drunkennes, in gluttonie, drinkings, and in abominable idolatries.

4 Wherein it ſeemeth to them ſtrange, that ye runne not with them vnto the ſame exceſſe of ryot: *therefore* ſpeake they euil *of you*,

5 Which ſhal giue accountes to him, that is ready to iudge quicke and dead.

6 For vnto this purpoſe was ỹ Goſpel preached alſo vnto the dead, ỹ they might be condemned, according to men in the fleſh, but might liue according to God in the ſpirit.

7 Now the end of all things is at hand. Be ye therefore ſober, and watching in prayer.

8 But aboue all thinges haue feruent loue among your ſelues: *Pro. 10. 12.* * for loue ſhal couer the multitude of ſinnes.

9 Be ye *Rom. 12. 13.* * harberous one to another without grudging. *Hebr. 13. 2.*

10 * Let euery man as he hath receiued the gift, miniſter the ſame one to another, as good diſpoſers of the *Rom. 12. 6.* manifolde grace of God. *Philip. 2. 14.*

11 If any man ſpeake, *let him ſpeake* as the wordes of God. If any man miniſter, *let him doe it* as of the abilitie which God miniſtreth, that God in all things may be glorified through Ieſus Chriſt, to whom is prayſe and dominion for euer, and euer, Amen.

12 Dearely beloued, thinke it not ſtrange concerning the firie tryall, which is among you to proue you, as though ſome ſtrange thing were come vnto you:

13 But reioyce, inaſmuch as ye are partakers of Chriſtes ſuffrings, that when his glorie ſhall appeare, ye may be glad and reioyce.

Mat. 5. 10. 14 * If ye be railed vpon for the Name of Chriſt, bleſſed are ye: for the ſpirit of glorie, and of God reſteth vpon you: *which* on their part is euil ſpoken of: but on your part is glorified.

15 But let none of you ſuffer as a murtherer, or as a thief, or an euil doer, or as a buſibody in other mens matters.

16 But if *any man ſuffer* as a Chriſtian, let him not be aſhamed: but let him glorifie God in this behalfe.

17 For the time *is come*, that iudgement muſt begin at the houſe of God. If it firſt *beginne* at vs, what ſhal the end be of them which obey not the Goſpel of God?

Pro. 2. 31. 18 * And if the righteous ſcarcely be ſaued, where ſhal the vngodly and the ſinner appeare?

19 Wherefore let them that ſuffer according to the

God, commit their soules *to him* in well doing, as vnto a faythfull Creator.

CHAP. V.

He warneth the Elders not to vsurpe authoritie ouer the Church, 5 willing the yonger sort to be willing to be taught, and to be modest, 8 to be sober and watchfull to resist the cruel aduersarie.

THe Elders which are among you, I beseech which am also an Elder, and a witnes of the suffrings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glorie that shalbe reueiled,

2 Feede the flocke of God, which dependeth vpon you, ruling for it not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a readie minde:

3 Not as though ye were lordes ouer *Gods* heritage, but that ye may be ensamples to the flocke.

4 And when that chief Shepheard shal appeare, ye shall receiue an incorruptible crowne of glorie.

5 Likewise ye yonger, submit your selues vnto the Elders, and submit your selues euery man one to another: be clothed with humilitie: for *God resisteth the proude, and giueth grace to the humble. *Rom.12.16. Iam.4.6.*

6 Humble *your selues therefore vnder the mightie hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time. *Iam.4.10.*

7 *Cast all your care on him: for he careth for you. *Psal.55.23.*

8 Be sober and watch: for *your aduersarie the deuil as a roaring lyon walketh about, seeking whom he may deuoure: *mat.6.25. luk.12.22. Luke.22.31.*

9 Whom resist stedfast in the fayth, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren which are in the world.

10 And the God of all grace, which hath called vs vnto his eternal glorie by Christ Iesus, after that ye haue suffered a litle, make you perfect, confirme, strengthen, and stablish you.

11 To him *be* glorie and dominion for euer, and euer, Amen.

12 By Siluanus a faythfull brother vnto you, as I suppose haue I written briefly, exhorting and testifying howe this is the true grace of God, wherein ye stand.

13 *The Church* that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and Marcus my sonne.

14 Greete ye one another with the *kisse of loue. Peace be with you all which are in Christ Iesus, Amen. *Rom.16.16 1.cor.16.20. 2.cor.13.11*

THE

THE SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL OF PETER.

CHAP. I.

3 Hauing spoken of the bountifulnesse of God, 5 and of the vertues of faith, 6 he exhorteth them to holines of life, 12 and that his counsel may be the more effectuall, he sheweth that his death is at hand, 16 and that him selfe did see the power of Christ which he opened vnto them.

SImon Peter a seruant and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to you which haue obtained like precious faith with vs by the righteousnes of our God and Sauiour Iesus Christ.

2 Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you, through the acknowledging of God, and of IESVS our Lord,

3 According as his diuine power hath giuen vnto vs all things that pertaine vnto life and godlines, through the acknowledging of him that hath called vs vnto glorie and vertue.

4 Whereby most great, and precious promises are giuen vnto vs, that by them ye should be partakers of the diuine nature, in that ye flee the corruption, which is in the world through lust.

5 Therefore giue euen all diligence thereunto: ioyne moreouer vertue with your fayth: and with vertue knowledge:

6 And with knowledge, temperance: and with temperance, patience: and with patience, godlines:

7 And with godlines, brotherly kindnes: and with brotherly kindnes, loue.

8 For if these things be among you, and abound, they wil make you that ye neither shalbe idle, nor vnfruitfull in the acknowledging of our Lord Iesus Christ:

9 For he that hath not these things, is blinde, and can not see farre off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his olde sinnes.

10 Wherefore, brethren, giue rather diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye doe these things ye shall neuer fall.

11 For by this meanes an entring shalbe ministred vnto you abundantly into the euerlasting kingdome of our Lord

Sauiour Iesus Christ.

13 Wherefore, I will not be negligent to put you alwayes in remembrance of these thinges, though that ye haue knowledge, and be stablished in the present trueth.

14 For I thinke it meete as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp by putting you in remembrance:

15 Seeing I know that the time is at hand that I must lay downe this my tabernacle, euen as our Lorde Iesus Christ hath *shewed me. *Iohn 21. 18.

16 I will endeuour therefore alwayes, that ye also may be able to haue remembrance of these things after my departing.

17 *For we followed not deceiueable fables when we opened vnto you the power, and comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, but with our eyes we sawe his maiestie: *1. Cor. 1. 17. and 2. 1.

18 For he receiued of God the Father honour and glorie, when there came such a voyce to him from that excellent glorie, *This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased. *Mat. 17. 5.

19 And this voyce we heard when it came from heauen, being with him in the holy mount.

20 We haue also a most sure word of the Prophets, to the which ye do well that ye take heede, as vnto a light that shineth in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day starre arise in your heartes.

21 *So that ye first knowe this, that no prophecie of the Scripture is of any priuate interpretation. *2. Tim. 3. 16.

22 For the Prophecie came not in olde time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moued by the holy Ghost.

CHAP. II.

1 Hee foretelleth them of false teachers, 3 whose wicked sleights & destruction he declareth. 12 He compareth them to brute beasts, 17 and to welles without water, 20 because they seeke to withdraw men from God to their old filthines.

BVt there were false prophetes also among the people, euen as there shalbe false teachers among you: which priuily shall bring in damnable heresies, euen denying the Lord, that hath bought them, and bring vpon them selues swift damnation.

2 And many shall folowe their destructions, by whom the way of trueth shalbe euill spoken of,

3 And through couetousnesse shall they with fained

wordes make marchandise of you, whose condemnation long since resteth not, and their destruction slumbreth not.

Iob 4.18. Iude 6.

4 For if God spared not the * Angels that had sinned, but cast them downe into hell, and deliuered them into chaines of darkenes, to be kept vnto damnation:

Gene.7.1.

5 Neither hath spared the olde world, but saued * Noe the eight *person*, a preacher of righteousnesse, & brought in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly,

Gene.19.13, 24.

6 And * turned the cities of Sodome and Gomorrhe into ashes, condemned them and ouerthrewe them, and made them an ensample vnto them that after should liue vngodly,

7 And deliuered iust Lot vexed with the vncleanly conuersation of the wicked:

8 (For he being righteous, and dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day with their vnlawfull deedes)

9 The Lorde knoweth to deliuer the godly out of tentation, and to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement vnder punishment.

10 And chiefly them that walke after the flesh, in the lust of vncleanesse, and despise gouernement, *which are* bolde, and stand in their owne conceite, and feare not to speake euill of them that are in dignitie.

11 Whereas the Angels which are greater both in power and might, giue not rayling iudgement against them before the Lord.

12 But these, as naturall brute beastes, led with sensualitie, and made to be taken and destroyed, speake euill of those things which they know not, and shal perish through their owne corruption,

13 And shall receiue the wages of vnrighteousnesse, as they which count it pleasure daily to liue deliciously. ‖Spots *they are* and blottes, deliting them selues in their deceiuings, in feasting with you,

‖Or, litle rockes.

14 Hauing eyes full of adulterie, and that can not cease to sinne, beguiling vnstable soules: they haue heartes exercised with couetousnesse, *they are* the children of curse:

15 Which forsaking the right way, haue gone astray, folowing the way of * Balaam, *the sonne* of Bosor, which loued the wages of vnrighteousnesse.

Nom.22.23

16 But he was rebuked for his iniquitie: *for* the dumme beast speaking with mans voyce, forbade the foolishnes of

Prophet.

17 * These are welles without water, *and* cloudes carried about with a tempest, to whom the blacke darkenes is reserued for euer. *Iude* 12.

18 For in speaking swelling words of vanitie, they beguile with wantonnes through the lustes of the flesh them that were cleane escaped from them which are wrapped in errour,

19 Promising vnto them libertie, and are themselues the * seruants of corruption: for of whomsoeuer a man is ouercome, euen vnto the same is he in bondage. *Iohn* 8. 34. *rom.* 6. 20.

20 * For if they, after they haue escaped from the filthines of the worlde, through the acknowledging of the Lord, & of the Sauiour Iesus Christ, are yet tangled againe therein, and ouercome, the latter ende is worse with them then the beginning. *Mat.* 12. 45. *hebr.* 6. 4.

21 For it had bin better for them, not to haue acknowledged the way of righteousnes, then after they haue acknowledged it, to turne from the holy commandement giuen vnto them.

22 But it is come vnto them according to the true prouerbe, * The dogge is returned to his owne vomite: and, The sowe that was washed, to the wallowing in the mire. *Pro.* 26. 11

CHAP. III.

1 He sheweth that he writeth the same things againe, 2 because they must often be stirred vp, 4 because dangers hang ouer their heads through certaine mockers: 8 therefore he warneth the godly that they doe not after the iudgement of the flesh, 12 appoint the day of the Lord, 14 but that they thinke it alwayes at hand, 15 in which doctrine he sheweth that Paul agreeth with him.

THis seconde Epistle I nowe write vnto you, beloued, wherewith I stirre vp, and warne your pure mindes,

2 To call to remembrance the wordes, which were tolde before of the holy Prophetes, and also the commaundement of vs the Apostles of the Lord and Sauiour.

3 * This first vnderstand, that there shall come in the last dayes mockers, which will walke after their lustes, *1. Tim.* 4. 1. *2. tim.* 3. 1. *iude* 18.

4 And say, Where is the promes of his comming? For since the Fathers died, all things continue alike from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly knowe not, that the heauens

were of olde, and the earth that was of the water and in the water, by the worde of God.

6 Wherefore the worlde that then was, perished, ouerflowed with the water.

7 But the heauens and earth, which are nowe, are kept by the same worde in store, and reserued vnto fire against the day of condemnation, and of the destruction of vngodly men.

8 Dearely beloued, be not ignorant of this one thing, *Psal.90.4.* that one day is with the Lord, * as a thousand yeeres, and a thousand yeeres as one day.

9 The Lorde of that promise is not slacke (as some men *Ezek.18.32.* count slacknes) but is patient towardes vs, and * would *and 33. 11.* haue no man to perishe, but would all men to come to *1.tim.2.4.* pentance.

10 But the * day of the Lorde will come as a thiefe *Mat.24.44.* in the night, in the which the heauens shall passe away with *1. thes.5.2.* noyse, and the elements shall melt with heate, and the *reue.3.3.* earth with the workes that are therein, shalbe burnt vp. *and 16. 15.*

11 Seeing therefore that all these things must be dissolued, what maner persons ought ye to be in holy conuersation and godlines,

12 Looking for, and hasting vnto the comming of the day of God, by the which the heauens being on fire, shall be dissolued, and the elements shall melt with heate?

13 But we looke for * newe heauens, and a new earth, *Isai.65.17.* according to his promise, wherein dwelleth righteousnes. *and 66.22.*

14 Wherefore, beloued, seeing that ye looke for such *reuel.21.1.* things, be diligent that ye may be founde of him in peace, without spot, and blameles.

15 * And suppose that the long suffering of our Lord is *Rom.2.4.* saluation, euen as our beloued brother Paul according to the wisedome giuen vnto him wrote to you,

16 As one, that in all *his* Epistles speaketh of these things: among the which some things are hard to be vnderstand, which they y are vnlearned & vnstable, wrest, as they *do* also other Scriptures vnto their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore beloued, seeing ye know these things before, beware, least ye be also plucked away with the error of the wicked, and fall from your owne stedfastnes.

18 But growe in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ: to him *be* glorie both now and for euermore, Amen.

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERALL OF IOHN.

CHAP. I.

He teſtifieth that he bringeth the eternall worde wherein is life, 5 and light. 9 God wilbe mercifull vnto the faithfull, if groning vnder the burden of their ſinnes, they learne to flie vnto his mercie.

THat which was from the beginning, which we haue heard, which we haue ſeene with theſe our eyes, which we haue looked vpon, and theſe handes of ours haue handled of that Word of life,

2 (For that life was made manifeſt, and we haue ſeene it, and beare witnes, and ſhewe vnto you that eternall life, which was with the Father, and was made manifeſt vnto vs)

3 That *I ſay*, which we haue ſeene and heard, declare we vnto you, that ye may alſo haue felowſhip with vs, and that our felowſhip alſo may be with the Father, and with his Sonne Ieſus Chriſt.

4 And theſe things write we vnto you, that that your ioy may be full.

5 This then is the meſſage which we haue hearde of him, and declare vnto you, that God * is light, and in him is no darkenes. *Iohn 8. 12.*

6 If we ſay that we haue felowſhip with him, & walke in darkenes, we lie, and doe not truely:

7 But if we walke in the light as he is in the light, we haue felowſhip one with another, and the * blood of Ieſus Chriſt his Sonne cleanſeth vs from all ſinne. *Hebr. 9. 28 1. pet. 1. 19*

8 *If we ſay that we haue no ſinne, we deceiue our ſelues, and trueth is not in vs. *reuel. 1. 5. 1. Kin. 8 46.*

9 If we acknowledge our ſinnes, he is faithful and iuſt, to forgiue vs our ſinnes, and to cleanſe vs from all vnrighteouſneſſe. *2 chro. 6. 36 pro. 20. 9.*

10 If we ſay we haue not ſinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in vs.

CHAP. II.

He declareth that Chriſt is our Mediatour and aduocate, 3 and ſheweth that the knowledge of God conſiſteth in holineſſe of life, 12 which appertaineth to all ſortes, 14 that depende on Chriſt alone: 15 Then hauing exhorted them to

contemne the worlde, 18 *He giueth warning that* [illegible] *christes be auoyded,* 24 *and that the knowen truethe* [illegible] *steode vnto.*

MY litle children, theſe thinges write I vnto you, that ye ſinne not: and if any man ſinne, we haue an aduocate with the Father, Ieſus Chriſt, the iuſt.

2 And he is the reconciliation for our ſinnes: and not for ours only, but alſo for *the ſinnes* of the whole worlde.

3 And hereby we are ſure that we knowe him, if we keepe his commandements.

4 He that ſaith, I know him, and keepeth not his commaundements, is a liar, and the trueth is not in him.

5 But he that keepeth his worde, in him is the loue of God perfect in deede: hereby we know that ye are in him.

6 He that ſaieth, he remaineth in him, ought euen ſo to walke, as he hath walked.

7 Brethren, I write no new commaundement vnto you, but an olde commaundement, which ye haue had from the beginning: this olde commaundement is that worde which ye haue heard from the beginning.

8 Againe, a new commandement I write vnto you, that which is true in him, and alſo in you: for the darkenes is paſt, and that true light now ſhineth.

9 He that ſaith that he is in that light, and hateth his brother, is in darkenes vntill this time.

Chap. 3. 14. 10 * He that loueth his brother, abideth in that light, and there is none occaſion of euill in him.

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darkenes, and walketh in darkenes, and knoweth not whither he goeth, becauſe that darkenes hath blinded his eyes.

12 Litle children, I write vnto you, becauſe your ſinnes are forgiuen you for his Names ſake.

13 I write vnto you, fathers, becauſe ye haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I write vnto you, young men, becauſe ye haue ouercome that wicked one. I write vnto you, litle children, becauſe ye haue knowen the Father.

14 I haue written vnto you, fathers, becauſe ye haue knowen him, that is from the beginning. I haue written vnto you, young men, becauſe ye are ſtrong, and the worde of God abideth in you, and ye haue ouercome that wicked one.

15 Loue not this worlde, neither the things that are [illegible]

worlde. If any man loue this worlde, the loue of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in this worlde (*as* the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life) is not of the Father, but is of this world.

17 And this world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that fulfilleth the will of God, abideth euer.

18 Litle children, it is the last time, & as ye haue heard that Antichrist shall come, euen now are there many Antichristes: whereby we know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had bene of vs, they should haue continued with vs. But *this commeth to passe*, that it might appeare, that they are not all of vs.

20 But ye haue an ointment from that Holy one, and know all things.

21 I haue not written vnto you, because ye knowe not the trueth: but because ye knowe it, and that no lie is of the trueth.

22 Who is a lyar, but he that denieth that Iesus is that Christ? the same is that Antichrist that denieth the Father and the Sonne.

23 Whosoeuer denieth the Sonne, the same hath not the Father.

24 Let therefore abide in you that same which ye haue heard from the beginning. If that which ye haue hearde from the beginning, shall remaine in you, ye also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promes that he hath promised vs, *euen* that eternall life.

26 These thinges haue I written vnto you, concerning them that deceiue you.

27 But that anointing which ye receiued of him, dwelleth in you: and ye neede not that any man teache you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and it is true, and is not lying, and as it taught you, ye shall abide in him.

28 And nowe litle children, abide in him, that when he shall appeare, we may be bolde, and not be ashamed before him at his comming.

29 If ye knowe that he is righteous, knowe ye that he which doeth righteously, is borne of him.

CHAP. III.

1 *Setting downe the ineſtimable glorie of this, that we are called Gods ſonnes,* 7 *he ſheweth that newnes of life muſt be eſtiſted by good workes, whereof charitie is a manifeſt token.* 19 *Of faith,* 22 *and praying vnto God.*

BEholde, what loue the Father hath giuen to vs, that we ſhoulde be called the ſonnes of God: for this cauſe this world knoweth you not, becauſe it knoweth not him.

2 Dearely beloued, now are we the ſonnes of God, but yet it is not made manifeſt what we ſhalbe: and we know that when he ſhalbe made manifeſt, we ſhall be like him: for we ſhall ſee him as he is.

3 And euery man that hath this hope in him, purgeth himſelfe, euen as he is pure.

4 Whoſoeuer committeth ſinne, tranſgreſſeth alſo the Lawe: for ſinne is the tranſgreſſion of the Lawe.

5 And ye knowe that he was made manifeſt, that he
Iſai.53.6, 9,11. might * take away our ſinnes, and in him is no ſinne.

6 Whoſoeuer abideth in him, ſinneth not: whoſoeuer
1.pet.2.22, 24. ſinneth, hath not ſeene him, neither hath knowen him.

7 Litle children, let no man deceiue you: he that doeth righteouſneſſe, is righteous, as he is righteous.

Iohn 8.44. 8 He that * committeth ſinne, is of the deuil: for the deuill ſinneth from the beginning: for this purpoſe was made manifeſt that Sonne of God, that he might looſe the workes of the deuill.

9 Whoſoeuer is borne of God, ſinneth not: for his ſeede remaineth in him, neither can he ſinne, becauſe he is borne of God.

10 In this are the children of God knowen, and ỹ children of the deuill: whoſoeuer doeth not righteouſneſſe, is not of God, neither he that loueth not his brother.

11 For this is the meſſage, that ye heard from the be-
Iohn 13.34. and 15.12. ginning, that * we ſhould loue one another,

12 Not as * Cain *which* was of that wicked one, and
Gene.4.8. ſlewe his brother: and wherefore ſlew he him? becauſe his owne workes were euill, and his brothers good.

13 Marueile not, my brethren, though this world hate you.

14 We know that we are tranſlated from death vnto
Chap.2.10. Iohn.5.24. life, becauſe we loue the brethren: * he that loueth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whoſoeuer hateth his brother, is a manſlayer: and

know that no manslaier hath eternal life abiding in him.

16 *Hereby haue wee perceiued loue, that he layde downe his life for vs: therfore we ought also to lay downe our liues for the brethren. *Iohn.15.13. ephes.5.2.*

17 *And whosoeuer hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother haue neede, and shutteth vp his compassion from him, how dwelleth the loue of God in him? *Luke.3.11.*

18 My litle children, let vs not loue in woorde, neither in tongue *onely*, but in deede and in trueth.

19 For thereby we know that we are of the trueth, & shall before him assure our hearts.

20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloued, if our heart condeme vs not, then haue we boldenes toward God:

22 *And whatsoeuer we aske we receiue of him, because we keepe his commaundements, and do those things which are pleasing in his sight. *Chap.5.14. mat.21.22. iohn.15.7. and 16.23. Iob.6.23. and 17.3.*

23 *This is then his commandement, That we beleeue in the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ, and loue one another, as he gaue commaundement.

24 *For he that keepeth his commandements, dwelleth in him, & he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in vs, *euen* by that Spirit which he hath giuen vs. *Iob.13.34. and 15.12.*

CHAP. IIII.

Hauing spoken somewhat touching the trying of spirits: 4 For some speake after the worlde, 5 and some after God: 7 He returneth to charitie, 11. 19 and by the example of God he exhorteth to brotherly loue.

DEarely beloued, beleeue not euery spirite, but trie the spirits whether they are of God: for many false prophets are gone out into this world.

2 Hereby shall ye knowe the Spirit of God, Euery spirit which confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And euery spirit ỹ confesseth not Iesus Christ to be come in the flesh, is not of God: but this is the *spirit* of Antichrist, of whom ye haue heard, how that he should come, and now already he is in this worlde.

4 Litle children, ye are of God, and haue ouercome them: for greater is he that is in you, then he that is in this worlde.

5 They are of this world, therefore speake they of this worlde, and this world heareth them.

6 We

Ioh.8.47. 6 We are of God,* he that knoweth God, heareth vs: he that is not of God, heareth vs not. Hereby knowe we the Spirit of trueth, and the spirit of errour.

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue commeth of God, and euery one that loueth, is borne of God, and knoweth God.

8 Hee that loueth not, knoweth not God: for God is loue.

Iohn 3.16. 9 *Herein was that loue of God made manifest amongest vs, because God sent that his onely begotten Sonne into this world, that we might liue through him.

10 Herein is that loue, not that we loued God, but that he loued vs, and sent his Sonne *to be* a reconciliation for our sinnes.

11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, we ought also to loue one another.

Iohn 1.18. 12 *No man hath seene God at any time. If we loue one
1.Iim.6.16. another, God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfect in vs.

13 Hereby knowe we, that we dwell in him, and he in vs: because he hath giuen vs of his Spirit.

14 And we haue seene, & doe testifie, that the Father sent that Sonne *to be* the Sauiour of the worlde.

15 Whosoeuer confesseth that Iesus is the Sonne of God, in him dwelleth God, and he in God.

16 And we haue knowen, and beleeued the loue that God hath in vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is that loue perfect in vs, that we shoulde haue boldénes in the day of iudgement: for as he is, euen so are we in this worlde.

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: for feare hath painefulnes: and he that feareth, is not perfect in loue.

19 We loue him, because he loued vs first.

20 If any man say, I loue God, and hate his brother, he is a liar: for howe can he that loueth not his brother who he hath seene, loue God whome he hath not seene?

Iohn.13.34. 21 * And this commandement haue we of him, that he
and 15.12. that loueth God, should loue his brother also.

CHAP. V.

1 *He sheweth that brotherly loue and faith are thinges inseparable:* 10 *And that there is no faith towards God, but by beleeuing in Christ:* 14 *Hence proceedeth calling vpon*

vpon God with assurance, 16 and also that our prayers be available for our brethren.

WHosoeuer beleeueth that Iesus is that Christ, is borne of God, and euery one that loueth him, which begate, loueth him also which is begotten of him.

2 In this we know that we loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keepe his commandements.

3 For this is the loue of God, that we keepe his commandements: & his * commandements are not burdenous. *Mat.* 11.30.

4 For all that is borne of God, ouercommeth this worlde: and this is that victorie that hath ouercome this worlde, *euen* our faith.

5 * Who is it that ouercommeth this worlde, but he which beleeueth that Iesus is that Sonne of God? *1.Cor.*15. 57.

6 This is that Iesus Christ that came by water & blood: not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is that Spirit, that beareth witnesse: for that Spirit is trueth.

7 For there are three, which beare recorde in heauen, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three, which beare recorde in the earth, the spirit and the water and the blood: and these three agree in one.

9 If we receiue the witnes of men, the witnesse of God is greater: for this is the witnes of God, which he testified of his Sonne.

10 * He that beleeueth in that Sonne of God, hath the witnes in him selfe: he that beleeueth not God, hath made him a lyar, because he beleeued not the recorde, that God witnessed of that his Sonne. *Iohn* 3.36.

11 And this is that recorde, *to wit*, that God hath giuen vnto vs eternall life, and this life is in that his Sonne.

12 He that hath that Sonne, hath that life: and he that hath not that Sonne of God, hath not that life.

13 These things haue I written vnto you, that beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God, that ye may know that ye haue eternall life, and that ye may beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God.

14 And this is that assurance, ỹ we haue in him, * that if we aske any thing according to his wil, he heareth vs. (*Iohn.* 3. 22.

15 And if we knowe that he heareth vs, whatsoeuer we aske, we knowe that we haue the petitions that we haue desired of him.

16 If

16 If any man ſee his brother ſinne a ſinne that is not vnto death, let him aske, and he ſhal giue him life for them
*Mat.12.31. that ſinne not vnto death. * There is a ſinne vnto death:
*mar.3.29. I ſay not that thou ſhouldeſt pray for it.

17 All vnrighteouſnes is ſinne, but there is a ſinne not vnto death.

18 We knowe that whoſoeuer is borne of God, ſinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himſelf, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 We knowe that wee are of God, and this whole world lyeth in wickednes.

*Luke 24.45. 20 But we knowe that that Sonne of God is * come, & hath giuen vs a minde to knowe him, which is true: & wee are in him that is true, *that is*, in that his Sonne Ieſus Chriſt: this ſame is that very God, and that eternall life.

21 Litle children, keepe your ſelues from idoles, Amen.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF IOHN.

1 This Epiſtle is written to a woman of great renowme, 4 who brought vp her children in the feare of God: 6 he exhorteth her to continue in Chriſtian charitie, 7 that ſhe accompanie not with Antichriſts, 10 but auoyde them.

THe Elder to the elect Lady, and her childrē, whom I loue in the trueth: and not I onely, but alſo all that haue knowne the trueth,

2 For the trueths ſake which dwelleth in vs, and ſhall bee with vs for euer:

3 Grace be with you, mercie & peace from God the Father, and from the Lorde Ieſus Chriſt the Sonne of the Father, with trueth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in trueth, as we haue receiued a commaundement of the Father.

5 And nowe beſeeche I thee, Lady, (not as writing a newe commaundement vnto thee, but that ſame which we
*Ioh.15.12. had from the beginning) that we * loue one another.

6 And this is that loue, that we ſhould walke after his com-

commandements. This commandement is, that as ye haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it.

7 For many deceiuers are entred into this world, which confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. He that is such one, is a deceiuer and an Antichrist.

8 Looke to your selues, that we lose not the thinges which we haue done, but y we may receiue a full reward.

9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that continueth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father & the Sonne.

10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine,* receiue him not to house, neither bid him, God speede: Rom. 16. 17

11 For hee that biddeth him, God speede, is partaker of his euill deedes. Although I had many things to write vnto you, yet I would not *write* with paper & ynke: but I trust to come vnto you, & speake mouth to mouth, that our ioye may be full.

12 The sonnes of thine elect sister greete thee, Amen.

THE THIRD EPISTLE OF IOHN.

1 *He commendeth Gaius for hospitalitie: and reprehendeth Diotrephes for vaine glorie.* 10 *he exhorteth Gaius to continue in wel doing:* 12 *& in the end cõmendeth Demetrius.*

THE Elder vnto the beloued Gaius, whõ I loue in the trueth.

2 Beloued, I wishe chiefely that thou prosperedst and faredst well as thy soule prospereth.

3 For I reioyced greatly when the brethren came, and testified of y trueth that is in thee, how thou walkest in the trueth.

4 I haue no greater ioye then these, *that is*, to heare that my sonnes walke in veritie.

5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully, whatsoeuer thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers,

6 Which bare witnesse of thy loue before the Churches. Whom if thou bringest on their iourney as it beseemeth according to God, thou shalt do well,

7 Because that for his Names sake they went forth, & tooke

tooke nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receiue ſuch, that we might be helpers to the trueth.

9 I wrote vnto ỹ Church: but Diotrephes which loueth to haue the preeminence among them, receiueth vs not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I wil call to your remebrance his deeds which he doeth prattling againſt vs w̃ malicious words, and not therewith content, neither he him ſelfe receiueth the brethren, but forbiddeth them that would, and thruſteth them out of the Church.

11 Beloued, followe not that which is euill, but that which is good: he that doeth well, is of God: but he that doeth euill, hath not ſeene God.

12 Demetrius hath good reporte of al men, and of the trueth it ſelfe: yea, and we our ſelues beare recorde, and ye knowe that our recorde is true.

13 I haue many things to write: but I will not with yncke and penne write vnto thee:

14 For I truſt I ſhal ſhortly ſee thee, and we ſhal ſpeake mouth to mouth. Peace *be* with thee. The friendes ſalute thee. Greete the friends by name.

THE GENERAL EPISTLE OF IVDE.

3 He warneth the godly to take heede of ſuch men 4 that make the grace of God a cloke for their wantonneſſe: 5 and that they ſhall not ſcape vnpuniſhed, for the contempt of the grace, 6, 7 he proueth by three examples: 14 & alleageth the prophecie of Enoch: 20 Finally he ſheweth the godly a meane to ouerthrowe all the ſnares of thoſe deceiuers.

IVde a ſeruant of Ieſus Chriſt, and brother of Iames, to them which are called and ſanctified of God the Father, and reſerued to Ieſus Chriſt:

2 Mercie vnto you, & peace & loue be multiplied.

3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you of the common ſaluation, it was needefull for me to write vnto you to exhorte you, that ye ſhoulde earneſtly contend for *the maintenance* of the faith, which was once giuen vnto the Saints.

4 For there are certaine men crept in, which were before of olde ordeined to this condemnation: vngodly men

they

which turne the grace of our God into wantõnes, and deny God the only Lord, & our Lord Iesus Christ. 2.Pet.2.1.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, forasmuch as ye once knewe this, how that the Lord, after that he had deliuered the people out of Egypt, * destroyed them afterwarde which beleeued not. Num.14.37

6 The *Angels also which kept not their first estate, but left their owne habitation, he hath reserued in euerlasting chaines vnder darknes vnto the iudgement of ỹ great day. 2.Pet.2.4.

7 As *Sodom & Gomorrhe, and the cities about thẽ, which in like maner as they did, committed fornication, & followed strange flesh, are set foorth for an ensample, and suffer the vengeance of eternall fire. Gen.19.24.

8 Likewise notwithstanding these sleepers also defile the flesh, and despise gouernment, and speake euill of them that are in authoritie.

9 Yet Michael the Archangel, when he stroue against ỹ deuill, & disputed about ỹ bodie of Moses, durst not blame him with cursed speaking, but said, The Lorde rebuke thee.

10 But these speake euill of those thinges, which they knowe not: and whatsoeuer things they knowe naturally, as beastes which are without reason, in those thinges they corrupt themselues.

11 Wo *be* vnto them: for they haue followed ỹ way of Cain, and are cast away by the deceite * of Balaams wages, and perishe in the gainsaying * of Core. Gen.4.8. & Num.22.21

12 These are rockes in your feastes of charitie when they feast with you, without all feare, feeding themselues: cloudes *they are* without water, caryed about of windes, corrupt trees & without fruite, twise dead, & plucked vp by the rootes. 2.pet.2.15. Num.16.1. 2.Pet.2.17.

13 *They are* the raging waues of the sea, foming out their owne shame: *they are* wandring starres, to whome is reserued the blackenes of darkenes for euer.

14 And Enoch also the seuenth from Adam, prophecied of such, saying, * Beholde, the Lorde commeth with thousands of his Saints, Reuel.1.7.

15 To giue iudgement against all men, & to rebuke all the vngodly among them of al their wicked deedes, which they haue vngodly committed, & of all their cruell speakings, which wicked sinners haue spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their owne lustes: * whose mouthes speake proude things, Psal.17.10. hauing

hauing mens persons in admiration, because of adu
17 But, ye beloued, remember the wordes which
spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Chri
18 How that they told you that there should be
2.Tim.4.1. 2.tim.3.1. kers * in the last time, which should walke after their o
vngodly lustes.
2.pet.3.3. 19 These are they that separate them selues from
ther, naturall, hauing not the Spirit.
20 But, ye beloued, edifie your selues in your most holy
faith, praying in the holy Ghost,
21 And keepe your selues in the loue of God, lookin
for the mercie of our Lord Ie sus Christ, vnto eternall li
22 And haue compasion of some, in putting differen
23 And other saue with feare, pulling them out of y fir
& hate euen that garment which is spotted by the flesh.
24 Now vnto him that is able to keepe you, that ye
not, and to present you faultles before the presence of
glory with ioy,
25 *That is*, to God onely wise, our Sauiour, *be* glorie,
maiestie, and dominion, and power, both nowe and for
uer, Amen.

THE REVELATION OF IOHN THE DIVINE.

CHAP. I.

1 *He declareth what kinde of doctrine is here handled,* 8 *euen his, that is the beginning and ending:* 12 *Then the mysterie of the seuen candlesticks and starres* 20 *is expounded.*

THE Reuelation of IESVS Christ, which GOD gaue vnto him, to shew vnto his seruaunts thinges which must shortely be done: which he sent, and shewed by his Angell vnto his seruaunt Iohn,

2 Who bare recorde of the worde of God, and of the testimonie of Iesus Christ, and of all things that he sawe.

3 Blessed *is he* that readeth, and they that heare the words of this prophecie, and keepe those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

4 Iohn, to the seuen Churches which are in A
Gr

Grace *be* with you, and peace from him, Which * is, and Which was, and Which is to come, and from the seuen Spirits which are before his Throne, *Exod. 3. 14.*

5 And from Iesus Christ, which is that * faithful witnes, and that first begotten of the dead, and that prince of the kings of the earth, vnto him that loued vs, and washed vs from our sinnes in his * blood, *Psal. 89. 38. 1. Cor. 15. 21 Colos. 1. 18. Heb. 9. 14.*

6 And made vs * Kings and Priestes vnto God euen his Father, to him *I say be* glorie, and dominion for euermore, Amen. *1. Pet. 1. 19. 1. John 1. 9. 1. Pet. 2. 5.*

7 Beholde, he commeth with * cloudes, and enery eye shall see him: *yea*, euen they which pearced him through: and all kindreds of the earth shall waile before him. Euen so, Amen. *Isa. 3. 14. mat. 24. 30. Jude 14.*

8 I * am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, Which is, and Which was, and Which is to come, *euen* the Almightie. *Chap. 21. 6. and 22. 13.*

9 I Iohn, euen your brother, and companion in tribulation, & in the kingdome & patience of IESVS CHRIST, was in the yle called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the witnessing of Iesus Christ.

10 And I was *rauished* in spirit on the Lordes day, and heard behind me a great voyce, as it had bene of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha & Omega, that first and that last: and that which thou seest, write in a booke, and send it vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia, vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamus, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and vnto Philadelphia, and vnto Laodicea.

12 Then I turned backe to see the voyce, that spake with me: and when I was turned, I sawe seuen golden candlestickes,

13 And in the middes of the seuen candlesticks, one like vnto the Sonne of man, clothed with a garment downe to the feet, and girded about the pappes with a golden girdle.

14 His head, and heares *were* white as white wooll, *and* as snow, and his eyes *were* as a flame of fire,

15 And his feete like vnto fine brasse, burning as in a fornace: and his voyce as the sound of many waters.

16 And he had in his right hand seuen starres: and out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged sword: and his face *shone* as the sunne shineth in his strength.

17 And when I sawe him, I fell at his feet as dead: then he laid his right hand vpon me, saying vnto me, Feare not:

Isa.41.4. and 44.6. I am that * first and that last,

18 And am aliue, but I was dead: and behold, I am aliue for euermore, Amen: and I haue the keyes of hell and of death.

19 Write the thinges which thou haſt ſeene, and the things which are, & the things which ſhall come hereafter.

20 The myſterie of the ſeuen ſtarres which thou ſaweſt in my right hand, and the ſeuen golden candleſticks, *is this*, The ſeuen ſtarres are the Angels of the ſeuen Churches: and the ſeuen candleſtickes which thou ſaweſt, are the ſeuen Churches.

CHAP. II.

1 *Iohn is commanded to write thoſe thinges, which the Lord knew neceſſarie, to the Churches of Epheſus, 8 of the Smyrnians, 12 of Pergamus, 18 and of Thyatira, 25 that they keepe thoſe things which they receiued of the Apoſtles.*

VNto the Angel of the Church of Epheſus write, Theſe thinges ſaith hee that holdeth the ſeuen ſtarres in his right hand, and walketh in the middes of the ſeuen golden candleſtickes.

2 I knowe thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canſt not beare with them which are euil, & haſt examined them which ſay they are Apoſtles, and are not, and haſt found them lyars.

3 And thou waſt burdened, and haſt patience, and for my Names ſake haſt laboured, and haſt not fainted.

4 Neuertheles, I haue *ſomewhat* againſt thee, becauſe thou haſt left thy firſt loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, & do the firſt workes: or els I wil come againſt thee ſhortly, and will remoue thy candleſticke out of his place, except thou amend.

6 But this thou haſt, that thou hateſt the workes of the Nicolaitans, which I alſo hate.

7 Let him that hath an eare, heare, what the Spirit ſaith vnto the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the tree of life which is in the middes of the Paradiſe of God.

8 ¶ And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Smyrnians write, Theſe things ſaith he that is firſt, and laſt, Which was dead and is aliue.

9 I knowe thy workes and tribulation, & pouertie (but thou art rich) and *I know* the blaſphemie of them, which ſay they

they are Iewes, & are not, but *are* the Synagogue of Satan.
10 Feare none of those things, which thou shalt suffer: behold, it shall come to passe, that the deuil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, and ye shal haue tribulation ten dayes: be thou faithfull vnto the death, and I wil giue thee the crowne of life.
11 Let him that hath an eare, heare what ỹ Spirit saith to the Churches. He that ouercommeth, shall not be hurt of the second death.
12 ¶ And to the Angel of the Church which is at Pergamus write, This saith he which hath that sharpe sworde with two edges.
13 I knowe thy workes and where thou dwellest, *euen* where Satans throne is, & thou keepest my Name, and hast not denied my faith, euen in those dayes when Antipas my faithful martyr was slaine amõg you, where Satan dwelleth.
14 But I haue a fewe things against thee, because thou hast there them that maintaine the doctrine of * Balaam, which taught Balac to put a stumbling blocke before the children of Israel, that they should eate of things sacrificed vnto idoles, and commit fornication. *Nom.24.14. and 25.1.*
15 Euen so hast thou them, that maintaine the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.
16 Repent thy selfe, or els I wil come vnto thee shortly, and wil fight against them with the sword of my mouth.
17 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches, To him that ouercommeth, wil I giue to eate of the Manna that is hid, & wil giue him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth sauing he that receiueth it.
18 ¶ And vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Thyatira write, These things saith the Sonne of God, which hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his feete like fine brasse.
19 I know thy workes and thy loue, and seruice, & faith, and thy patience, and thy workes, and that *they are* mo at the last, then at the first.
20 Notwithstanding, I haue a few things against thee, ỹ thou suffereſt ỹ woman Iezabel, which calleth her self a prophetisse, to teach and to deceiue my seruants to make them commit fornication, & to eat meats sacrificed vnto idoles.
21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Beholde, I wil caſt her into a bed, & them that commit fornication with her, into great affliction, except they repent them of their workes.

23 And I will kill her children with death: and all the
1.Sam.16.7. Churches ſhal know that I am he which *ſearch the reines
Pſal.7.10. and heartes: and I will giue vnto euery one of you accor-
Iere.11.20. ding vnto your workes.
and 17.10. 24 And vnto you I ſay, the reſt of them of Thyatira, as many as haue not this learning, neither haue knowen the deepenes of Satan (as they ſpeake) I will put vpon you none other burden.

25 But that which ye haue already, hold faſt till I come.

26 For he that ouercommeth and keepeth my workes vnto the ende, to him will I giue power ouer nations,

Pſal.2.9. 27 *And he ſhall rule them with a rodde of yron: and as the veſſels of a potter, ſhall they be broken.

28 Euen as I receiued of my Father, ſo will I giue him the morning ſtarre.

29 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit ſaith to the Churches.

CHAP. III.

1 The fifth Epiſtle ſent to the Paſtours of the Church of Sardis, 2 of Philadelphia, 14 and of the Laodiceans, 16 that they be not luke warme, 20 but endeuour to further Gods glorie.

AND write vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Sardis, Theſe thinges ſaith he that hath the ſeuen Spirits of God, and the ſeuen ſtarres, I know thy workes: for thou haſt a name that thou liueſt, but thou art dead.

2 Be awake and ſtrengthen the things which remaine, that are readie to die: for I haue not founde thy workes perfite before God.

3 Remember therefore, howe thou haſt receiued and
Cha.16.15. heard, and hold faſt and repent. * If therefore thou wilt not
1.theſ.5.2. watche, I will come on thee as a thiefe, and thou ſhalt not
2.pet.3.10. know what houre I will come vpon thee.

4 *Notwithſtanding* thou haſt a few names yet in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments: & they ſhall walke with me in white: for they are worthie.

5 He that ouercommeth, ſhalbe clothed in white arai-
Chap 20.12 and I will not put out his name out of the * booke of life,
and 21.27. but I will confeſſe his name before my Father, and before
Phil.4.3. his Angels.

6 Let him that hath an eare, heare, what the Spirit ſaith

saith vnto the Churches.

7 ¶ And write vnto the Angel of the Church which is of Philadelphia, These things saith he that is Holy, & True, which hath the keye of Dauid, which openeth and no man shutteth, and shutteth and no man openeth,

8 I know thy workes: behold, I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a litle strength and hast kept my worde, and hast not denied my Name.

9 Beholde, I wil make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which call themselues Iewes & are not, but do lye: behold, *I say*, I will make them, that they shall come and worship before thy feete, and shall know that I haue loued thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the worde of my patience, therefore I will deliuer thee from the houre of tentation, which will come vpon all the world, to trie them that dwel vpon the earth.

11 Behold, I come shortly: holde that which thou hast, that no man take thy crowne.

12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write vpon him the Name of my God, and the name of the citie of my God, *which is*, the newe Hierusalem, which commeth downe out of heauen from my God, & *I wil write vpon him* my newe Name.

13 Let him that hath an eare, heare what ỹ Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

14 And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Laodiceans write, These thinges saith Amen, that faithfull and true witnes, that beginning of the creatures of God.

15 I know thy workes, that thou art neither colde nor hote: I would thou wereſt colde or hote.

16 Therefore, becaus thou art luke warme, and neither colde nor hote, it will come to passe, that I shall spewe thee out of my mouth.

17 For thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and haue neede of nothing, and knowest not howe thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blind, and naked.

18 I counsell thee to bie of mee golde tryed by the fire, that thou mayest be made riche: and white rayment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that thy filthie nakednes doe not appeare: and anoint thine eyes with eye salue, that thou mayest see.

Prou.3.12. Hebr.12.5. 19 As many as I loue, * I rebuke and chaſten: be zealous therefore and amend.

20 Behold, I ſtand at the doore, and knocke. If any man heare my voyce and open the doore, I will come in vnto him, and will ſuppe with him, and he with me.

21 To him that ouercommeth, will I graunt to ſit with me in my throne, euen as I ouercame, and ſit with my Father in his throne.

22 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit ſaith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *An other viſion conteyning the glorie of Gods Maieſtie: 6 Which is magnified of the foure beaſtes,* 10 *and the foure and twentie Elders.*

AFter this I looked, and behold, a doore was open in heauen, and the firſt voyce which I heard, was as *it were* of a trumpet talking with me, ſaying, Come vp hither, and I will ſhew thee things which muſt be done hereafter.

2 And immediatly I was *rauiſhed* in the ſpirit, & behold, a throne was ſet in heauen, and one ſate vpon the throne.

3 And he that ſate, was to looke vpon, like vnto a iaſper ſtone, and a ſardine, and there *was* a rainebow round about the throne in ſight like to an emeraude.

4 And round about the throne *were* foure and twentie ſeates, and vpon the ſeates I ſawe foure and twentie Elders ſitting, clothed in white raiment, and had on their heades crownes of golde.

5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voyces, and there were ſeuen lampes of fire burning before the throne, which are the ſeuen ſpirites of God.

6 And before the throne there *was* a ſea of glaſſe like vnto cryſtal: and in the middes of the throne, and round about the throne *were* foure beaſtes full of eyes before and behinde.

7 And the firſt beaſt *was* like a lion, and the ſecond beaſt like a calfe, and the third beaſt had a face as a man, and the fourth beaſt *was* like a flying egle.

8 And the foure beaſtes had eche one of them ſixe winges about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they ceaſed not day nor night, ſaying, Holy, holy, holy Lord God almightie, Which Was, and Which Is, and Which Is to come.

9 And

9 And when those beastes gaue glorie, and honour, and thankes to him that sate on the throne, which liueth for euer and euer,

10 The foure & twentie Elders fell downe before him that sate on the throne, and worshipped him that liueth for euermore, and cast their crownes before the throne, saying,

11 Thou art * worthie, O Lord, to receiue glorie and honour, and power: for thou hast created all thinges, and forthy willes sake they are, and haue bene created. *Chap.5.12.*

CHAP. V.

1 *The booke sealed with seuen seales,* 3 *which none could open,* 6 *that Lambe of God* 9 *is thought worthie to open,* 12 *euen by the consent of all the companie of heauen.*

AND I sawe in the right hande of him that sate vpon the throne, a Booke written within, and on the backside, sealed with seuen seales.

2 And I sawe a strong Angel which preached with a loude voyce, Who is worthie to open the booke, & to loose the seales thereof?

3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth, was able to open the Booke, neither to looke thereon.

4 Then I wept much, because no man was founde worthie to open, and to reade the Booke, neither to looke thereon.

5 And one of the Elders said vnto me, Weepe not: behold, that * Lion which is of the tribe of Iuda, that roote of Dauid, hath obteyned to open the Booke, and to loose the seuen seales thereof. *Gene.49.9.*

6 Then I behelde, and lo, in the middes of the throne, and of the foure beastes, and in the middes of the Elders, stoode a Lambe as though he had bene killed, which had seuen hornes, and seuen eyes, which are the seuen spirites of God, sent into all the world.

7 And hee came and tooke the Booke out of the right hand of him that sate vpon the throne.

8 And when he had taken the Booke, the foure beastes and the foure and twentie Elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing euery one harpes and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of the Saintes,

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the Booke, & to open the seales thereof, because thou wast killed, and hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood out of euery kinred and tongue, and people, and nation,

[Chap. 1. 6. 1. pet. 2. 9.] 10 And hast made vs vnto our God * Kings and Priests, and we shall reigne on the earth.

11 Then I beheld, and I heard the voyce of many Angels round about the throne, and *about* the beastes and the Elders, and there *were** ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousand thousands,

[Dan. 7. 10.]

12 Saying with a loude voyce, Worthie is the Lambe that was killed to receiue power, and riches, and wisdome, and strength, and honour, and glorie, and praise.

13 And all the creatures which are in heauen, and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and in the sea, and al that are in them, heard I, saying, Praise, and honour, and glorie, and power *be* vnto him, that sitteth vpon the throne, and vnto the Lambe for euermore.

14 And the foure beastes said, Amen, and the foure and twentie Elders fell downe and worshipped him that liueth for euermore.

CHAP. VI.

1 The Lambe openeth the first seale of the booke, 3 the second, 5 the third, 7 the fourth, 9 the fift, 12 and the sixth, and then arise murders, famine, pestilence, outcryes of Saintes, earthquakes, and diuers strange sightes in heauen.

AFter, I behelde when the Lambe had opened one of the seales, and I heard one of the foure beastes say, as *it were* the noyse of thunder, Come and see.

2 Therefore I beheld, and lo, there *was* a white horse, & he that sate on him, had a bowe, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, & he went forth conquering ỹ he might ouercome.

3 And when he had opened the second seale, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

4 And there went out another horse, *that was* red, and power was giuen to him that sate thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they shoulde kill one another, and there was giuen vnto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seale, I heard the third beast say, Come and see: Then I beheld, and lo, a black horse, and he that sate on him, had balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the middes of ỹ foure beastes say, A measure of wheat for a penie, and three measures of barlie for a penie, and oyle, and wine hurt thou not.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voyce of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

8 And I looked, and beholde, a pale horse, and his name that

sate on him was Death, and Hell followed after him, & power was giuen vnto them ouer the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sworde, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beastes of the earth.

9 And when he had opened the fift seale, I sawe vnder the altar the soules of them that were killed for the worde of God, and for the testimonie which they maintained.

10 And they cryed with a loude voyce, saying, Howe long, Lord, which art holy and true! doest not thou iudge and auenge our blood on them that dwel on the earth?

11 And long white robes were giuen vnto euery one, and it was said vnto them, that they should rest for a litle season vntil their fellowe seruants, and their brethren that should be killed euen as they were, were fulfilled.

12 And I behelde when he had opened the sixt seale, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the sunne was as blacke as sackcloth of heare, & the moone was like blood.

13 And the starres of heauen fell vnto the earth, as a figge tree casteth her greene figges when it is shaken of a mightie winde.

14 And heauen departed away, as a scrole when it is rolled, and euery mountaine and yle were moued out of their places.

15 And the Kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaines, and the mightie men, and euery bondman, and euery free man, hid them selues in dennes, and among the rockes of the mountaines,

16 And sayd to the mountaines and rockes, *Fal on vs, and hide vs from the presence of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe. *Isai. 2. 19. hose. 10 8. luke 23 30.

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who can stande?

CHAP. VII.

The Angels comming to hurt the earth, 3 are stayed vntill the Elect of the Lord 5 of all tribes were sealed. 13 Such as suffred persecution for Christes sake, 16 haue great felicitie, 17 and ioy.

AND after that, I saw foure Angels stand on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure windes of the earth, that the windes should not blowe on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on any tree.

2 And I sawe another Angel come vp from the East, which had the seale of the liuing God, and he cried with a loude

loude voyce to the foure Angels to whom power was gi-
uen to hurt the earth, and the sea, saying,

3 Hurt ye not the earth, neither the sea, neither the
trees, till we haue sealed the seruants of our God in their
foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed,
and there *were* sealed an hundreth and foure and fourtie
thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand.
Of the tribe of Ruben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the
tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of
the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelue thousand. Of the
tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand.
Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the
tribe of Issachar were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe
of Zabulon were sealed twelue thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed twelue thousand.
Of the tribe of Beniamin were sealed twelue thousand.

9 After these things I beheld, and lo, a great multi-
tude, which no man could number, of all nations and kin-
reds, and people, and tongues, stoode before the throne, and
before the Lambe, clothed with long white robes, and
palmes in their hands.

10 And they cryed with a loude voyce, saying, Saluati-
on *commeth* of our God, that sitteth vpon the throne, and of
the Lambe.

11 And all the Angels stood round about the throne,
and *about* the Elders, and the foure beastes, and they fel be-
fore the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen. Prayse, and glorie, and wisedome, and
thankes, and honour, and power, & might, *be* vnto our God
for euermore, Amen.

13 And one of the Elders spake, saying vnto me, What
are these which are araied in long white robes? and
whence came they?

14 And I sayd vnto him, Lorde, thou knoweſt. And he
sayd to me, These are they, which came out of great tribu-
lation, and haue washed their long robes and haue made
their long robes white in the blood of the Lambe.

15 Therefore are they in the presence of the throne of
God, and serue him day and night in his Temple, & he that
sitteth

...k on the throne, wil dwell among them.

16 * They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any ...re, neither shall the sunne light on them, neither any ...eate. *Isa.49.10.*

17 For the Lambe, which is in the middes of the throne, shall gouerne them, and shall leade them vnto the liuely fountaines of waters, and * God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes. *Chap.21.4. isai.25.8.*

CHAP. VIII.

1 After the opening of the seuenth seale, 3 the Saints prayers are offred vp with odours. 6 The seuen Angels come forth with trumpets. 7 The foure first blowe, and fire falleth on the earth, 8 the sea is turned into blood, 10. 11 the waters waxe bitter, 12 and the starres are darkened.

AND when he had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauen about halfe an houre.

2 And I sawe the seuen Angels, which stoode before God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets.

3 Then another Angel came and stoode before the Altar hauing a golden censer, and much odours was giuen vnto him, that he should offer with the prayers of all Saintes vpon the golden altar, which is before the throne.

4 And the smoke of the odours with the prayers of the Saintes, went vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angel tooke the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth, and there were voyces, and thundrings, and lightnings, and earthquake.

6 Then the seuen Angels, which had the seuen trumpets, prepared them selues to blowe the trumpets.

7 So the first Angel blewe the trumpet, and there was haile and fire, mingled with blood, and they were cast into the earth, and the thirde part of trees was burnt, and all greene grasse was burnt.

8 And the second Angel blewe the trumpet, and as it were a great mountaine, burning with fire, was cast into the sea, and the thirde part of the sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures, which were in the sea, and had life, died, and the third part of shippes were destroyed.

10 Then the third Angel blewe the trumpet, and there fell a great starre from heauen burning like a torche, and it fell into the third part of the riuers, and into the fountains of waters.

11 And

11 And the name of the ſtarre is called wormewood: therfore the third part of the waters became wormewood, and many men dyed of the waters, becauſe they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel blewe the trumpet, and the thirde part of the ſunne was ſmitten, and the thirde part of the moone, and the thirde part of the ſtarres, ſo that the thirde part of them was darkened: and the day *was ſmitten*, that the thirde part of it could not ſhine, and likewiſe the night.

13 And I behelde, and heard one Angel flying through the middes of heauen, ſaying with a loude voyce, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabitants of the earth, becauſe of the ſounds to come of the trumpet of the three Angels, which were yet to blowe the trumpets.

CHAP. IX.

1 *The fift Angel bloweth his trumpet,* 3 *and ſpoyling locuſtes come out.* 13 *The ſixt Angel bloweth,* 16 *and bringeth forth horſemen,* 20 *to deſtroy mankinde.*

AND the fift Angel blewe the trumpet, and I ſaw a ſtarre fall from heauen vnto the earth, & to him was giuen the key of the bottomles pit.

2 And he opened the bottomles pitte, and there aroſe the ſmoke of the pit, as the ſmoke of a great fornace, & the ſunne, and the aire were darkened by the ſmoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the ſmoke locuſtes vpon the earth, and vnto them was giuen power, as the ſcorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commanded them, that they ſhould not hurt the graſſe of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but onely thoſe men which haue not the ſeale of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them was commanded that they ſhould not kill them, but that they ſhould be vexed fiue moneths, and that their paine ſhould be as the paine that commeth of a ſcorpion, when he hath ſtung a man.

Chap. 6. 16. Iſa. 2. 19. Hoſe. 10. 8.

6 *Therefore in thoſe dayes ſhal men ſeeke death, and ſhall not finde it, and ſhal deſire to die, and death ſhall flee from them.

7 And the forme of the locuſtes *was* like vnto horſes prepared vnto battel, and on their heads *were* as *it were* crownes, like vnto golde, and their faces *were* like the faces of men.

8 And

8 And they had heare as the heare of women, & their teeth were as the teeth of lyons.

9 And they had habbergions, like to habbergions of yron: and the ſound of their winges *was* like the ſound of charets when many horſes runne vnto battel.

10 And they had tayles like vnto ſcorpions, and there were ſtings in their tayles, & their power was to hurt men fiue moneths.

11 And they haue a King ouer them, which is the Angel of the bottomles pit, whoſe name in Hebrewe *is* Abaddon, and in Greeke he is named Apollyon, *that is, deſtroying.*

12 One wo is paſt, *and* beholde, yet two woes come after this.

13 ¶ Then the ſixt Angel blewe the trumpet, and I heard a voyce from the foure hornes of the golden altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the ſixt Angel, which had the trumpet, Looſe the foure Angels, which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates.

15 And the foure Angels were looſed, which were prepared at an houre, at a day, at a moneth, and at a yeere, to ſlay the third part of men.

16 And the number of horſemen of warre were twentie thouſand times ten thouſand: for I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I ſawe the horſes in a viſion, and them that ſate on them, hauing fierie habbergions, & of Iacinth, and of brimſtone, and the heads of the horſes were as the heads of lyons: and out of their mouthes went foorth fire and ſmoke and brimſtone.

18 Of theſe three was the thirde part of men killed, *that is*, of the fire, and of the ſmoke, and of the brimſtone, which came out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouthes, and in their tailes: for their tailes were like vnto ſerpents, and had heads, wherewith they hurt.

20 And the remnant of the men which were not killed by theſe plagues, repented not of the workes of their hands, that they ſhould not worſhip deuils, and *idoles of golde and of ſiluer, and of braſſe, and of ſtone, and of wood, which neither can ſee, neither heare nor goe. *Pſal. 115.4. & 135.15.

21 Alſo they repented not of their murther, & of their ſorcerie, neither of their fornication, nor of their theft.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

1 Another Angel appeareth clothed with a cloude, 2 holding a booke open, 3 and crieth out. 8 A voyce from heauen commandeth Iohn to take the booke: 10 He eateth it.

AND I ſawe another mightie Angel come downe from heauen, clothed with a cloude, and the raine bowe vpon his head, and his face was as the ſunne, and his feete as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a litle booke open, and he put his right foote vpon the ſea, and *his* left on the earth,

3 And cryed with a loude voyce, as when a lyon roareth: and when he had cryed, ſeuen thunders vttered their voyces.

4 And when the ſeuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: but I heard a voyce from heauen ſaying vnto me, Seale vp thoſe thinges which the ſeuen thunders haue ſpoken, and write them not.

5 And the Angel which I ſawe ſtand vpon the ſea, and vpon the earth, lift vp his hand to heauen,

6 And ſware by him that liueth for euermore, which created heauen, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the thinges that therein are, and the ſea, and the thinges which therein are, that time ſhould be no more.

7 But in the dayes of the voyce of the ſeuenth Angel, when he ſhal beginne to blow the trumpet, euen the myſterie of God ſhalbe finiſhed, as he hath declared to his ſeruants the Prophets.

8 And the voyce which I heard from heauen, ſpake vnto me againe, and ſayd, Goe and take the litle booke which is open in the hand of the Angel, which ſtandeth vpon the ſea and vpon the earth.

9 So I went vnto the Angel, and ſayd to him, Giue me the litle booke. And he ſayd vnto me, Take it, and eate it vp, and it ſhal make thy bellie bitter, but it ſhall be in thy mouth as ſweete as honie.

10 Then I tooke the litle booke out of the Angels hand, and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth as ſweete as honie: but when I had eaten it, my bellie was bitter.

11 And he ſayd vnto me, Thou muſt prophecie againe among the people and nations, and tongues, and to many Kings.

The temple is commanded to be measured. 3 The Lord stirreth vp two witnesses: 7 whome the beast murthereth, 9 and no man burieth them. 11 God raiseth them to life, 12 and calleth them vp to heauen. 13 The wicked are terrified. 15 By the trumpet of the seuenth Angel, the resurrection 18 and iudgement is described.

THen was giuen me a reede, like vnto a rodde, and the Angel ſtoode by, ſaying, Riſe and mete the Temple of God, and the altar, and them that worſhip therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple caſt out, and mete it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy citie ſhall they treade vnder foote, two and fourtie moneths.

3 But I wil giue power vnto my two witneſſes, & they ſhall prophecie a thouſand, two hundreth and three ſcore dayes, clothed in ſackcloth.

4 Theſe are two oliue trees, and two candleſticks, ſtanding before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man wil hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouthes, and deuoureth their enemies: for if any man would hurt them, thus muſt he be killed.

6 Theſe haue power to ſhut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophecying, and haue power ouer waters to turne them into blood, and to ſmite the earth with all maner plagues, as often as they wil.

7 And when they haue finiſhed their teſtimonie, the beaſt that commeth out of the bottomleſſe pit, ſhal make warre againſt them, and ſhall ouercome them, and kill them.

8 And their corpſes ſhal lie in the ſtreetes of the great citie, which ſpiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where our Lord alſo was crucified.

9 And they of the people and kinreds, and tongues, and Gentiles ſhal ſee their corpſes three dayes & an halfe, and ſhal not ſuffer their carkeiſes to be put in graues,

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, ſhall reioyce ouer them and be glad, and ſhall ſende giftes one to another: for theſe two Prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth.

11 But after three dayes and an halfe, the ſpirit of life *coming* from God, ſhall enter into them, and they ſhall ſtand vp vpon their feete: and great feare ſhall come vpon them which ſawe them.

12 And

12 And they ſhall heare a great voyce from he
ſaying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they ſhal aſce
to heauen in a cloude, and their enemies ſhal ſee them.

13 And the ſame houre ſhall there be a great
quake, and the tenth part of the citie ſhall fall, and
earthquake ſhalbe ſlaine in number ſeuen thouſand
the remnant were ſore feared, and gaue glorie to the
of heauen.

14 The ſecond wo is paſt, *and* beholde the third
wil come anon.

15 And the ſeuenth Angel blew the trumpet, and th
were great voyces in heauen, ſaying, The kingdomes of
world are our Lordes, and his Chriſtes, and he ſhall re
for euermore.

16 Then the foure and twentie Elders, which ſate
fore God on their ſeates, fel vpon their faces, and wor
ped God,

17 Saying, We giue thee thankes, Lord God almigh
Which art, and Which waſt, and Which art to come
thou haſt receiued thy great might, and haſt obteined
kingdome.

18 And the Gentiles were angrie, & thy wrath is c
and the time of the dead, that they ſhould be iudged,
that thou ſhouldeſt giue reward vnto thy ſeruants the
phets, and to the Saintes, and to them that feare thy N
to ſmall and great, and ſhouldeſt deſtroy them, which
ſtroy the earth.

19 Then the Temple of God was opened in heauen,
there was ſeene in his Temple the Arke of his cone
and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thundri
and earthquake, and much haile.

CHAP. XII.

1 *A woman appeareth* 2 *trauailing with childe,* 4 *wh
childe the Dragon would deuoure,* 7 *but Michael
commeth him,* 9 *and caſteth him out,* 13 *and the mo
is caſt downe and vanquiſhed, the more fiercely he ex
ſeth his ſubtilties.*

AND there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A wom
clothed with the ſunne, and the moone was vnder
feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue ſtarres.

2 And ſhe was with childe, & cried trauailing in bi
and was pained readie to be deliuered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heaue
be

...le, a greatred dragon hauing ſeuen heads, and tenne ...s, and ſeuen crownes vpon his heads.

4 And his taile drewe the thirde part of the ſtarres of ...uen, and caſt them to the earth. And the dragon ſtoode ...re the woman, which was ready to be delinered, to de...re her childe when ſhe had brought it forth.

5 So ſhe brought forth a man childe, which ſhoulde ...all nations with a rod of yron: and that her childe was ...ken vp vnto God and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into wildernes where ſhe hath ...ace prepared of God, that they ſhoulde feede her there ...ouſand, two hundreth and three ſcore dayes.

7 And there was a battell in heauen, Michael and his ...gels fought againſt the dragon, and the dragon fought ...his angels.

8 But they preuailed not, neither was their place found ...more in heauen.

9 And the great dragon, that olde ſerpent, called the ...uil & Satan, was caſt out, which deceiueth all the worlde ...was *euen* caſt into the earth, and his angels were caſt out ...h him.

10 Then I heard a loude voyce in heauen, ſaying, Now ...aluation, and ſtrength, and the kingdome of our God, ...the power of his Chriſt: for the accuſer of our brethren ...caſt downe, which accuſed them before our God day ...d night.

11 But they ouercame him by that blood of ỹ Lambe, ...d by that worde of their teſtimonie, and they loued not ...eir liues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce, ye heauens, and ye that dwell in ...hem. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the ſea: ...for the deuil is come downe vnto you, which hath great ...wrath, knowing that he hath but a ſhort time.

13 And when the dragon ſawe that he was caſt vnto ...the earth, he perſecuted the woman which had brought ...forth the man *childe*.

14 But to the woman were giuen two wings of a great ...egle, that ſhe might flie into the wildernes, into her place, ...where ſhe is nouriſhed for a time, and times, and halfe a ...time, from the preſence of the ſerpent.

15 And the ſerpent caſt out of his mouth water after ...the woman, like a floud, that he might cauſe her to be caſt ...away of the floud.

16 But the earth holpe the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the flood, which the dragon had cast out of his mouth.

17 Then the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went & made warre with the remnant of her seede, which keepe the commandements of God, and haue the testimonie of Iesus Christ.

18 And I stoode on the sea sande.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *The beast with manie heads is described,* 8 *which drawe the most part of the worlde to idolatrie.* 11 *The other beast rising out of the earth,* 15 *giueth power vnto him.*

AND I saw a beast rise out of the sea, hauing seuen heades and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes *were* ten crownes, and vpon his heads the name of blasphemie.

2 And the beast which I sawe, was like a Leopard, and his feete like a beares, and his mouth as the mouth of a lyon: and the dragon gaue him his power and his throne, and great authoritie.

3 And I sawe one of his heads as *it were* wounded to death, but his deadly wound was healed, and all the worlde wondred *and* followed the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? who is able to warre with him?

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, that spake great things and blasphemies, and power was giuen vnto him, to doe two and fourtie moneths.

6 And he opened his mouth vnto blasphemie against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saintes, and to ouercome them, and power was giuen him ouer euery kinred, and tongue, and nation.

8 Therefore all that dwell vpon the earth, shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Booke of life of that Lambe, which was slaine from the beginning of the worlde.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare.

10 If any leade into captiuitie, he shall goe into captiuitie: * if any kill with a sworde, he must be killed by sworde: here is the patience and the faith of the Saints.

Gene. 9. 6. Mat. 26. 52.

11 And

11 And I beheilde another beast comming vp out of the earth, which had two hornes like the Lambe, but he spake like the dragon.

12 And he did all that the first beast could doe before him, and he caused the earth, & them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he did great wonders, so that he made fire to come downe from heauen on ỹ earth, in the sight of men,

14 And deceiued them that dwell on the earth by the signes, which were permitted to him to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make the image of the beast, which had the wound of a sword, and did liue.

15 And it was permitted to him to giue a spirit vnto the image of the beast, so that ỹ image of the beast shoulde speake, and shoulde cause that as many as woulde not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

16 And he made all, both small and great, riche and poore, free and bonde, to receiue a marke in their right hand or in their foreheads.

17 And that no man might bye or sell, saue he that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the nomber of his name.

18 Here is wisdome. Let him that hath wit, count the nomber of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his nomber is sixe hundreth, three score and sixe.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 *The Lambe standeth on mount Sion, 4 with his chaste worshippers. 6 One Angel preacheth the Gospel: 8 an other foretelleth the fall of Babylon: 9 the third warneth that the beast be auoyded. 13 A voyce from heauen pronounceth them happie who die in the Lorde. 16 The Lordes sickle is thrust into the harueſt, 18 and into the vintage.*

THen I looked, and loe, a Lambe stoode on mount Sion, and with him an hundreth, fourtie and foure thousand, hauing his Fathers Name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voyce from heauen, as the sounde of many waters, and as the sounde of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers harping with their harpes.

3 And they sung *as it were* a newe song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the Elders: and no man could learne that song, but the hundreth, fourtie and foure thousand, which were bought from the earth.

CHAP. X.

1 Another Angel appeareth clothed with a cloude, 2 holding a booke open, 3 and crieth out. 8 A voyce from heauen commandeth Iohn to take the booke: 10 He eateth it.

AND I ſawe another mightie Angel come downe from heauen, clothed with a cloude, and the raine bowe vpon his head, and his face was as the ſunne, and his feete as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a litle booke open, and he put his right foote vpon the ſea, and *his* left on the earth,

3 And cryed with a loude voyce, as when a lyon roareth: and when he had cryed, ſeuen thunders vttered their voyces.

4 And when the ſeuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: but I heard a voyce from heauen ſaying vnto me, Seale vp thoſe thinges which the ſeuen thunders haue ſpoken, and write them not.

5 And the Angel which I ſawe ſtand vpon the ſea, and vpon the earth, lift vp his hand to heauen,

6 And ſware by him that liueth for euermore, which created heauen, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the thinges that therein are, and the ſea, and the thinges which therein are, that time ſhould be no more.

7 But in the dayes of the voyce of the ſeuenth Angel, when he ſhal beginne to blow the trumpet, euen the myſterie of God ſhalbe finiſhed, as he hath declared to his ſeruants the Prophets.

8 And the voyce which I heard from heauen, ſpake vnto me againe, and ſayd, Goe and take the litle booke which is open in the hand of the Angel, which ſtandeth vpon the ſea and vpon the earth.

9 So I went vnto the Angel, and ſayd to him, Giue me the litle booke. And he ſayd vnto me, Take it, and eate it vp, and it ſhal make thy bellie bitter, but it ſhall be in thy mouth as ſweete as honie.

10 Then I tooke the litle booke out of the Angels hand, and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth as ſweete as honie: but when I had eaten it, my bellie was bitter.

11 And he ſayd vnto me, Thou muſt prophecie againe among the people and nations, and tongues, and to many Kings.

The temple is commanded to be measured. 3 The Lord stirreth vp two witnesses: 7 whome the beast murthereth, 9 and no man burieth them. 11 God raiseth them to life, 12 and calleth them vp to heauen. 13 The wicked are terrified. 15 By the trumpet of the seuenth Angel, the resurrection 18 and iudgement is described.

THen was giuen me a reede, like vnto a rodde, and the Angel ſtoode by, ſaying, Riſe and mete the Temple of God, and the altar, and them that worſhip therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple caſt out, and mete it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy citie ſhall they treade vnder foote, two and fourtie monethes.

3 But I wil giue power vnto my two witneſſes, & they ſhal prophecie a thouſand, two hundreth and three ſcore dayes, clothed in ſackcloth.

4 Theſe are two oliue trees, and two candleſticks, ſtanding before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man wil hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouthes, and deuoureth their enemies: for if any would hurt them, thus muſt he be killed.

6 Theſe haue power to ſhut heauen, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophecying, and haue power ouer waters to turne them into blood, and to ſmite the earth with all maner plagues, as often as they wil.

7 And when they haue finiſhed their teſtimonie, the beaſt that commeth out of the bottomleſſe pit, ſhal make warre againſt them, and ſhall ouercome them, and kill them.

8 And their corpſes ſhal lie in the ſtreetes of the great citie, which ſpiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where our Lord alſo was crucified.

9 And they of the people and kinreds, and tongues, and Gentiles ſhal ſee their corpſes three dayes & an halfe, and ſhal not ſuffer their carkeiſes to be put in graues,

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, ſhall reioyce ouer them and be glad, and ſhall ſende giftes one to another: for theſe two Prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth.

11 But after three dayes and an halfe, the ſpirit of life coming from God, ſhall enter into them, and they ſhall ſtand vp vpon their feete: and great feare ſhall come vpon them which ſawe them.

12 And

13 And they ſhall heare a great voyce from h
ſaying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they ſhal aſc
to heauen in a cloude, and their enemies ſhal ſee the
13 And the ſame houre ſhall there be a great
quake, and the tenth part of the citie ſhall fall, and
earthquake ſhalbe ſlaine in number ſeuen thouſand
the remnant were ſore feared, and gaue glorie to the
of heauen.

14 The ſecond wo is paſt, *and* beholde the third
wil come anon.

15 And the ſeuenth Angel blew the trumpet, and th
were great voyces in heauen, ſaying, The kingdomes of
world are our Lordes, and his Chriſtes, and he ſhall re
for euermore.

16 Then the foure and twentie Elders, which ſate
fore God on their ſeates, fel vpon their faces, and wor
ped God,

17 Saying, We giue thee thankes, Lord God almig
Which art, and Which waſt, and Which art to come
thou haſt receiued thy great might, and haſt obteined
kingdome.

18 And the Gentiles were angrie, & thy wrath is c
and the time of the dead, that they ſhould be iudged,
that thou ſhouldeſt giue reward vnto thy ſeruants the
phets, and to the Saintes, and to them that feare thy N
ro ſmall and great, and ſhouldeſt deſtroy them, which
ſtroy the earth.

19 Then the Temple of God was opened in heauen,
there was ſeene in his Temple the Arke of his coue
and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thundri
and earthquake, and much haile.

CHAP. XII.

1 *A woman appeareth* 2 *trauailing with childe,* 4 *w*
childe the Dragon would deuoure, 7 *but Michael c*
commeth him, 9 *and caſteth him out,* 13 *and the mor*
is caſt downe and vanquiſhed, the more fiercely he exe
ſeth his ſubtilties.

AND there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A wo
clothed with the ſunne, and the moone was vnder
feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue ſtarres.

2 And ſhe was with childe, & cried trauailing in bi
and was pained readie to be delinered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heaue
be

...ed dragon, hauing seuen heads, and tenne ...

4 And his taile drewe the thirde part of the starres of heauen, and cast them to the earth. And the dragon stoode before the woman, which was ready to be delyuered, to deuoure her childe when she had brought it forth.

5 So she brought forth a man childe, which should rule all nations with a rod of yron: and that her childe was taken vp vnto God and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into wildernes where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should fede her there a thousand, two hundreth and three score dayes.

7 And there was a battell in heauen, Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels.

8 But they preuailed not, neither was their place found any more in heauen.

9 And the great dragon, that olde serpent, called the deuil & Satan, was cast out, which deceiueth all the worlde he was *euen* cast into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 Then I heard a loude voyce in heauen, saying, Now is saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 But they ouercame him by the blood of ỹ Lambe, and by the worde of their testimonie, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce, ye heauens, and ye that dwell in them. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the deuil is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon sawe that he was cast vnto the earth, he persecuted the woman which had brought forth the man *childe*.

14 But to the woman were giuen two wings of a great egle, that she might flie into the wildernes, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time, from the presence of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water after the woman, like a flood, that he might cause her to be caried away of the flood.

16 But the earth holpe the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swalowed vp the flood, which the dragon had cast out of his mouth.

17 Then the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went & made warre with the remnant of her seede, which keepe the commandements of God, and haue the testimonie of Iesus Christ.

18 And I stoode on the sea sande.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *The beast with manie heads is described,* 8 *which draweth the most part of the worlde to idolatrie.* 11 *The other beast rising out of the earth,* 15 *giueth power vnto him.*

AND I saw a beast rise out of the sea, hauing seuen heades and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes *were* ten crownes, and vpon his heads the name of blasphemie.

2 And the beast which I sawe, was like a Leopard, and his feete like a beares, and his mouth as the mouth of a lyon: and the dragon gaue him his power and his throne, and great authoritie.

3 And I sawe one of his heads as *it were* wounded to death, but his deadly wound was healed, and all the worlde wondred *and* followed the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? who is able to warre with him?

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, that spake great things and blasphemies, and power was giuen vnto him, to doe two and fourtie moneths.

6 And he opened his mouth vnto blasphemie against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saintes, and to ouercome them, and power was giuen him ouer euery kinred, and tongue, and nation.

8 Therefore all that dwell vpon the earth, shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Booke of life of that Lambe, which was slaine from the beginning of the worlde.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare.

10 If any leade into captiuitie, he shall goe into captiuitie: * if any kill with a sworde, he must be killed with sworde: here is the patience and the faith of the Saints.

Gen. 9. 6. Mat. 26. 52.

11

11 And I beheilde another beast comming vp out of the earth, which had two hornes like the Lambe, but he spake like the dragon.

12 And he did all that the first beast could doe before him, and he caused the earth, & them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he did great wonders, so that he made fire to come downe from heauen on ỹ earth, in the sight of men,

14 And deceiued them that dwell on the earth by the signes, which were permitted to him to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make the image of the beast, which had the wound of a sword, and did liue.

15 And it was permitted to him to giue a spirit vnto the image of the beast, so that ỹ image of the beast shoulde speake, and shoulde cause that as many as woulde not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

16 And he made all, both small and great, riche and poore, free and bonde, to receiue a marke in their right hand or in their foreheads.

17 And that no man might bye or sell, saue he that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the nomber of his name.

18 Here is wisdome. Let him that hath wit, count the nomber of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his nomber is sixe hundreth, three score and sixe.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The Lambe standeth on mount Sion, 4 with his chaste worshippers. 6 One Angel preacheth the Gospel: 8 an other foretelleth the fall of Babylon: 9 the third warneth that the beast be auoyded. 13 A voyce from heauen pronounceth them happie who die in the Lorde. 16 The Lordes sickle is thrust into the harnest, 18 and into the vintage.

THen I looked, and loe, a Lambe stoode on mount Sion, and with him an hundreth, fourtie and foure thousand, hauing his Fathers Name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voyce from heauen, as the sounde of many waters, and as the sounde of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers harping with their harpes.

3 And they sung *as it were* a newe song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the Elders: and no man could learne that song, but the hundreth, fourtie and foure thousand, which were bought from the earth.

4 These are they, which are not defiled with women: for they are virgins: these followe the Lambe whither soeuer he goeth: these are bought from men, being the first fruites vnto God, and to the Lambe.

5 And in their mouthes was found no guile: for they are without spot before the throne of God.

6 ¶ Then I sawe another Angel flie in the middes of heauen, hauing an euerlasting Gospel, to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, and to euery nation, and kinred, and tongue, and people,

Psal.145.6. 7 * Saying with a loude voyce, Feare God, and giue glorie to him: for the houre of his iudgement is come: and *Acts.14.15* worship him that made * heauen and earth, and the sea, and the fountaines of waters.

Chap.18.2. 8 And there followed another Angel, saying, *Babylon *Isai.21.9.* that great citie is fallen, it is fallen: for she made all nations *Iere.51.8.* to drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9 ¶ And the third Angel followed them, saying with a loude voyce, If any man worship the beast & his image, and receiue *his* marke in his forehead, or on his hand,

10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, yea, of the pure wine, which is powred into the cuppe of his wrath, and he shalbe tormented in fire and brimstone before the holy Angels, and before the Lambe.

11 And the smoke of their torment shall ascend euermore: and they shal haue no rest day nor night, which worship the beast and his image, and whosoeuer receiueth the print of his name.

12 Here is the patience of Saintes: here are they that keepe the commandements of God, and the faith of Iesus.

13 Then I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, Write, The dead which die in the Lorde, *are* fully blessed. Euen so sayth the Spirit: for they rest from their labours, and their workes followe them.

14 ¶ And I looked, and beholde, a white cloude, and vpon the cloude one sitting like vnto the Sonne of man, hauing on his head a golden crowne, & in his hand a sharpe sickle.

15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, crying with a loude voyce to him that sate on the cloude, *Ioel.3.13.* * Thrust in thy sickle and reape: for the time is come to *Mat.13.39.* reape: for the * harnest of the earth is ripe.

16 And he that sate on the cloude, thrust in his sickle on the

on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 Then another Angel came out of the temple, which is in heauen, hauing also a sharpe sickle.

18 And another Angel came out from the altar, which had power ouer fire, & cried with a lounde crie to him that had the sharpe sickle, and sayde, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the vineyarde of the earth: for her grapes are ripe.

19 And the Angel thrust in his sharpe sickle on the earth, and cut downe the vines of the vineyarde of the earth, & cast them into that great wine presse of the wrath of God.

20 And the winepresse was troden without the citie, and blood came out of the wine presse, vnto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousande and sixe hundreth furlongs.

CHAP XV.

1 *The seuen Angels hauing the seuen last plagues.* 3 *They that conquered the beast, prayse God.* 6 *To the seuen Angels,* 7 *seuen vialles full of Gods wrath, are deliuered.*

AND I sawe another signe in heauen, great and marueilous, seuen Angels, hauing the seuen last plagues: for by them is fulfilled the wrath of God.

2 And I sawe as *it were* a glassie sea, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten victorie of the beast, and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his name, stand at the glassie sea, hauing the harpes of God,

3 And they sung the song of Moses the seruant of God, and the song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marueilous *are* thy workes, Lorde God almightie: iust and true *are* thy * wayes, King of Saintes. *Psal.145.17*

4 * Who shall not feare thee, O Lorde, and glorifie thy Name! for thou onely *art* holy, and all nations shall come and worship before thee: for thy iudgements are made manifest. *Iere.10.7.*

5 And after that, I looked, & behold, the temple of the tabernacle of testimonie was open in heauen.

6 And the seuen Angels came out of the temple, which had the seuen plagues, clothed in pure and bright linnen, and hauing their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beastes gaue vnto the seuen Angels seuen golden vialles full of the wrath of God, which liueth for euermore.

8 And the Temple was full of the smoke of the glorie of God and of his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the seuen plagues of the seuen Angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

2 and 17 The Angels power out the seuen vialles of Gods wrath giuen vnto them, and so diuers plagues arise in the worlde, 18 to terrifie the wicked, 19 and the inhabitants of the great citie.

AND I heard a great voyce out of the Temple, saying to the seuen Angels, Goe your wayes, and powre out the seuen vialles of the wrath of God vpon the earth.

2 And the first went, and powred out his viall vpon the earth: and there fell a noysome, and a grieuous sore vpon the men, which had the marke of the beast, and vpon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second Angel powred out his viall vpon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and euery liuing thing died in the sea.

4 And the third Angel powred out his viall vpon the riuers and fountaines of waters, and they became blood.

5 And I heard the Angel of the waters say, Lorde, thou art iust, Which art, and Which wast: and Holy, because thou hast iudged these things.

6 For they shed the blood of the Saintes, and Prophets, and therefore hast thou giuen them blood to drinke, for they are worthie.

7 And I heard another out of the Sanctuarie say, Euen so, Lord God almightie, true and righteous are thy iudgements.

8 And the fourth Angel powred out his viall on the sunne, and it was giuen vnto him to torment men with heate of fire.

9 And men boyled in great heate, and blasphemed the Name of God, which haue power ouer these plagues, and they repented not, to giue him glorie.

10 And the fift Angel powred out his viall vpon the throne of the beast, and his kingdome waxed darke, and they gnawed their tongues for sorow,

11 And blasphemed ỹ God of heauen for their paines, and for their sores, and repented not of their workes.

12 And the sixt Angel powred out his viall vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water thereof dryed vp, that

e way of the Kinges of the East might be prepared.

And I saw three vncleane spirites like frogs come
of the mouth of that dragon, and out of the mouth of
beast, and out of the mouth of that false prophet.

For they are the spirits of deuils, working miracles,
e vnto the Kinges of the earth, & of the whole world,
ther them to the battell of that great day of God Al-
tie.

(*Beholde, I come as a theefe. Blessed is he that *Chap.3.3.*
heth and keepeth his garments, lest he walke naked, *mat.24.44.*
men see his filthines.) *luke 12. 39.*

And they gathered them together into a place cal-
in Hebrew Arma-gedon.

¶And the seuenth Angel powred out his viall into
yre: and there came a loude voyce out of the Temple
uen from the throne, saying, It is done.

And there were voyces, and thundrings, and light-
gs, and there was a great earthquake, such as was not
e men were vpon the earth, euen so mightie an earth-
ke.

And the great citie was diuided into three partes,
the cities of the nations fell, and that great Babylon
e in remembrance before God, * to giue vnto her the *Ierem.25. 15.*
of the wine of the fiercenes of his wrath.

And euery yle fled away, and the mountaines were
t founde.

And there fell a great haile, like talents, out of hea-
vpon the men, and men blasphemed God, because of
plague of the haile: for the plague thereof was exce-
g great.

CHAP. XVII.

That great whore is described, 2 with whom the kinges of the earth committed fornication. 6 She is drunken with the blood of Saintes: 7 The mysterie of the woman and the beast that carieth her, expounded: 11 their destruction: 14 The Lambes victorie.

Hen there came one of the seuen Angels, which had
the seuen vials, and talked with me, saying vnto me,
Come: I will shew thee the damnation of the great whore
t sitteth vpon many waters,

With whom haue committed fornication the Kings
the earth, and the inhabitants of the earth are drunken
h the wine of her fornication.

3 So he caryed me away into the wildernesse
Spirit: and I sawe a woman sit vpon a skarlet co
full of names of blasphemie, which had seuen
and ten hornes.

4 And the woman was arayed in purple and s
and guilded with golde, and precious stones, and pe
and had a cup of golde in her hande, full of abomina
and filthines of her fornication.

5 And in her forehead was a name written, A my
that great Babylon, that mother of whoredomes, an
minations of the earth.

6 And I sawe the woman dronken with the bloo
Saintes, and with the blood of the Martyrs of Iesus
when I sawe her, I wondred with great marueile.

7 Then the Angel sayd vnto me, Wherefore ma
left thou? I will shewe thee the mysterie of that wo
and of that beast, that beareth her, which hath seue he
and ten hornes.

8 The beast that thou hast seene, was, and is not,
shall ascend out of the bottomles pit, and shall go into
dition, and they that dwell on the earth, shall wo
(whose names are not written in the Booke of life
the foundation of the worlde) when they behold the b
that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 Here is the minde that hath wisdome. The se
heads are seuen mountaines, whereon the woman sit
they are also seuen Kings.

10 Fiue are fallen, and one is, and another is not y
come: and when he commeth, he must continue a sh
space.

11 And the beast that was, & is not, is euen the eig
and is one of the seuen, and shall go into destruction.

12 And the ten hornes which thou saweſt, are ten
kings, which yet haue not receiued a kingdome, but h
receiue power, as Kings at one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one minde, and shall giue their powe
and authoritie vnto the beast.

14 These shall fight with the Lambe, and the Lam
Chap. 19. 16. shall ouercome them: * for he is Lord of Lordes, and Ki
1. Tim. 6. 15. of Kinges: and they that are on his side, called, and chos
and faithfull.

15 And he saide vnto me, The waters which th
saweſt, where the whore sitteth, are people, & multitu

peoples, and tongues.

And the ten hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, are they that shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eate her flesh, and burne her with fire.

For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to do with one consent, for to giue their kingdom vnto the beast, vntill the wordes of God be fulfilled.

And that woman which thou sawest, is that great citie which reigneth ouer the Kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

The horrible destruction of Babylon is set out. 11. 16. 18 The marchants of the earth, who were enriched with the pompe and luxuriousnes of it, weepe and waile: 20 But all the elect reioyce for that iust vengeance of God.

AND after these things, I sawe another Angell come downe from heauen, hauing great power, so that the earth was lightened with his glory.

And he cryed out mightily with a lowde voyce, saying, It is fallen, it is fallen, Babylon that great citie, and is become the habitation of deuils, and the holde of all foule spirits, and a cage of euery vncleane and hatefull birde. *Chap. 14. 8. isa. 21. 9. ierem. 51. 8.*

For all nations haue drunken of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the Kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her, and the marchants of the earth are waxed rich of the aboundance of her pleasures.

And I heard another voyce from heauen say, Go out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, & that ye receiue not of her plagues.

For her sinnes are come vp into heauen, & God hath remembred her iniquities.

Reward her, euen as she hath rewarded you, & giue vnto her double according to her workes: and in the cuppe that she hath filled to you, fill her the double.

In as much as she glorified her selfe, and liued in pleasure, so much giue yee to her torment and sorowe: for she saith in her heart, I sit being a queene, and am no widowe, and shall see no mourning.

Therefore shall her plagues come at one day, death, and sorowe, and famine, and she shall be burnt with fire: for strong is the Lord God which condemneth her.

And the Kings of the earth shall bewayle her, and lament

lament for her, which haue committed fornication, an
ned in pleasure with her, when they shall see that sm
of that her burning,

10 And shall stand a farre off for feare of her torme
saying, Alas, alas, that great citie Babylon, that mighti
tie: for in one houre is thy iudgement come.

11 And the marchants of the earth shall weepe a
waile ouer her, for no man byeth their ware any more.

12 The ware of gold and siluer, and of precious ston
and of pearles, and of fine linen, and of purple, and of si
and of skarlet, and of all maner of Thyne-wood, and of a
vessels of yuory, and of all vessels of most pretious wood, &
of brasse, and of yron, and of marble,

13 And of cynamom, and odours, and ointments, an
frankincense, and wine, and oyle, and fine flower, and whe
and beastes, and sheepe, and horses, and charets, and s
uants, and soules of men.

14 (And the apples that thy soule lusted after, are d
parted from thee, and all things which were fat and exce
lent, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them n
more)

15 The marchants of these things which were waxe
riche, shall stand afarre off from her, for feare of her to
ment, weeping and wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, that was cl
thed in fine linnen and purple, and skarlet, and gilded wit
golde and precious stone, and pearles.

17 For in one houre so great riches are come to des
lation. And euery shipmaster, and all the people that oc
cupie shippes, and shipmen, and whosoeuer trafike on th
sea, shall stand a farre off,

18 And crye, when they see that smoke of that he
burning, saying, What *citie was* like vnto this great citie

19 And they shall cast dust on their heades, and cry
weeping, and wailing, and say, Alas, alas, that great cit
wherein were made riche all that had shippes on the se
by her costlines: for in one houre she is made desolate.

20 O heauen, reioyce of her, and ye holy Apostles and
Prophets: for God hath punished her to be reuenged o
her for your sakes.

21 Then a mightie Angell tooke vp a stone like a gre
Iere.51.63. milstone,* & cast it into the sea, saying, With such violen
shall that great citie Babylon be cast, and shall be founde
mor

22 And the voyce of harpers, & musicians, & of pipers, & trumpetters shalbe heard no more in thee, and no craftesman, of whatsoeuer craft he be, shalbe found any more in thee: and the sounde of a millstone shal be heard no more in thee.

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more in thee: and the voyce of the bridegrome and of the bride shalbe heard no more in thee: for thy marchants were the great men of the earth: and with thine inchantments were deceiued all nations.

24 And in her was found the blood of the Prophets, and of the Saints, & of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

The heauenly company praiſe God, for auenging the blood of his ſeruantes, on the whore. 9 They are written bleſſed, that are called to the Lambes ſupper. 10 The Angell will not be worſhipped. 11 That mightie King of Kings appeareth from heauen. 19 The battel, 20 wherein the beaſt is taken, 21 and caſt into the burning lake.

AND after theſe thinges I heard a great voyce of a great multitude in heauen, ſaying, Hallelu-iah, ſaluation and glorie, and honour, and power *be* to the Lord our God.

2 For true and righteous *are* his iudgements: for he hath condemned that great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, & hath auenged the blood of his ſeruants *ſhed* by her hand.

3 And againe they ſaide, Hallelu-iah: and that her ſmoke roſe vp for euermore.

4 And the foure and twenty Elders, and the foure beaſtes fell downe, and worſhipped God that ſate on the throne, ſaying, Amen, Hallelu-iah.

5 Then a voyce came out of the throne, ſaying, Praiſe our God, all ye his ſeruants, and yee that feare him, both ſmall and great.

6 And I heard like a voyce of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of ſtrong thundrings, ſaying, Hallelu-iah: for the Lord that God that mightie one hath reigned.

7 Let vs be glad and reioyce, and giue glory to him: for the marriage of that Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her ſelfe ready.

8 And to her was graunted, that ſhe ſhould be arayed with

with pure fine linnen and ſhining, for the fine linnen is the righteouſnes of Saints.

Mat.22.2. 9 Then he ſaid vnto me, Write, *Bleſſed *are* they which are called vnto the Lambes ſupper. And he ſaide vnto me, These words of God are true.

Chap.22.9. 10 And I fell before his feete, *to worſhip him: but he ſaid vnto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellowe ſeruant, and one of thy brethren, which haue the teſtimonie of Ieſus. Worſhip God: for the teſtimonie of Ieſus, is the Spirit of prophecie.

11 And I ſaw heauen open, and behold a white horſe, and he that ſate vpon him, was called, Faithfull and true, and he iudgeth and fighteth righteouſly.

12 And his eyes *were* as a flame of fire, and on his head *were* many crownes: and he had a name written, that no man knew but him ſelfe.

13 And he was clothed with a garment dipt in blood, and his name is called, THE WORD OF GOD.

14 And the hoſtes which were in heauen, followed him vpon white horſes, clothed with fine linnen white and pure.

15 And out of his mouth went out a ſharpe ſworde, *Pſal.2.9.* that with it he ſhould ſmite the heathen: for he *ſhall rule them with a rod of yron: for he it is that treadeth the wine preſſe of the fiercenes and wrath of almightie God.

16 And he hath vpon his garment, and vpon his thigh *Chap.17.14* a name written, *THE KING OF KINGS, AND *1.Tim.6.15.* LORD OF LORDES.

17 And I ſawe an Angel ſtand in the ſunne, who cryed with a loud voyce, ſaying to all the foules that did flye by the middes of heauen, Come, and gather your ſelues together vnto the ſupper of the great God,

18 That ye may eate the fleſh of Kings, and the fleſh of hie Captaines, and the fleſh of mightie men, and the fleſhe of horſes, and of them that ſitte on them, and the fleſhe of all free men and bondemen, and of ſmall and great.

19 And I ſawe the beaſt, and the Kings of the earth, & their hoſtes gathered together to make battell againſt him, that ſate on the horſe, and againſt his armie.

20 But the beaſt was taken, and with him that falſe prophet that wrought miracles before him, whereby he deceiued them that receiued the beaſtes marke, and them

that

worshipped his image. These both were alyue cast into
ke of fire, burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sworde of
that sitteth vpon the horse, which commeth out of
s mouth, and all the foules were filled full with their
sshe.

CHAP. XX.

1 *The Angell bindeth Satan for a thousand yeeres:* 8 *being loosed, he stirreth vp Gog and Magog, that is, priuie & open enemies, against the Saints,* 11 *but the vengeance of the Lord cutteth off their insolencie.* 12 *The bookes are opened, by which the dead are iudged.*

ANd I sawe an Angell come downe from heauen, hauing
the keye of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chaine in
s hand.

2 And he tooke the dragon that olde serpent, which
is the deuill and Satan, and he bounde him a thousande
yeeres:

3 And cast him into the bottomles pit, and he shut him
vp, and sealed *the doore* vpon him, that he shoulde deceiue
the people no more, till the thousand yeeres were fulfilled:
for after that he must be loosed for a little season.

4 And I sawe seates: and they sate vpon them, and
iudgement was giuen vnto them, & *I sawe* the soules of thē
that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, and for the
woorde of God, and which did not worship the beast, nei-
ther his image, neither had taken his marke vpon their
foreheads, or on their handes: and they liued, and reig-
ned with Christ a thousand yeere.

5 But the rest of the dead men shall not liue againe,
vntill the thousand yeeres be finished: this is the first re-
surrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he, that hath part in the first re-
surrection: *for* on such the seconde death hath no power:
but they shalbe the Priestes of God, and of Christ, and shall
reigne with him a thousand yeere.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan
shalbe loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall goe out to deceiue the people, which are
in the foure quarters of the earth: *euen* * Gog and Magog, Ezek. 39. 2.
to gather them together to battel, whose number *is* as the
sand of the sea.

9 And

9 And they went vp into the plaine of the earth, they compaſſed the tents of the Saints about, and the loued citie: but fire came downe from God out of hea and deuoured them.

10 And the deuill that deceiued them, was caſt i a lake of fire and brimſtone, where that beaſt and that f prophet *are*, and ſhalbe tormented: euen day and night for euermore.

11 And I ſawe a great white throne, and one that ſa on it, from whoſe face fled away both the earth a heauen, and their place was no more found.

12 And I ſawe the dead, both great and ſmall ſta before God: and the bookes were opened, and * ano booke was opened, which is *the booke* of life, and the d were iudged of thoſe thinges, which were written in bookes, according to their workes.

Chap.3.5. and 21.27. philip.4.3.

13 And the ſea gaue vp her dead, which were in h and death and hell deliuered vp the dead, which were them: and they were iudged euery man according to the workes.

14 And death and hell were caſt into the lake of fire this is the ſecond death.

15 And whoſoeuer was not found written in the book of life, was caſt into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *He deſcribeth newe Hieruſalem deſcending from heauen,* 9 *the Bride the Lambes wife,* 12 *and the glorious building of the citie,* 19 *garniſhed with pretious ſtones:* 22 *whoſe temple the Lambe is.*

Iſa. 65. 17. and 66. 22. 2. Pet. 3. 13.

AND I ſawe * a newe heauen, and a newe earth: for th * firſt heauen, and the firſt earth were paſſed away, and there was no more ſea.

2 And I Iohn ſaw the holy citie new Hieruſalem com downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride trim med for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voyce out of heauen, ſaying, B holde, the tabernacle of God *is* with men, & hee will dwe with them: and they ſhalbe his people, and God himſelf ſhalbe their God with them,

Chap. 7. 17. Iſa. 25. 8.

4 * And God ſhal wipe away all teares from their eie and there ſhalbe no more death, neither ſorowe, neith crying, neither ſhall there be any more payne: for th firſt

things are paſſed.

5 And he that ſate vpon the throne, ſaide,* Beholde, I make all things newe: and he ſaid vnto mee, Write: for theſe wordes are faithfull and true. *Iſa.43.19. 2.cor.5.17.

6 And he ſaid vnto me,* It is done, I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ende. I will giue to him that is a thirſt, of the well of the water of life freely. *Chap.1.8. and 22.13.

7 He that ouercommeth, ſhall inherite all things, and I will be his God, and he ſhalbe my ſonne.

8 But the fearefull and vnbeleeuing, and the abominable & murtherers, and whoremongers, and ſorcerers, & idolaters, and all liars ſhall haue their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimſtone, which is the ſeconde death.

9 And there came vnto me one of the ſeuen Angels, which had the ſeuen vialles full of the ſeuen laſt plagues, and talked with me, ſaying, Come: I will ſhewe thee the bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And he caryed me away in the ſpirit to a great and an hie mountaine, and he ſhewed me that great citie, that holie Hieruſalem, deſcending out of heauen from God,

11 Hauing the glory of God: and her ſhining was like vnto a ſtone moſt precious, as a Iaſper ſtone cleare as cryſtall,

12 And had a great wall & hie, and had twelue gates, and at the gates twelue Angels, and the names written, which are the twelue tribes of the children of Iſrael.

13 On the Eaſt part *there were* three gates, & on the Northſide three gates, on the Southſide three gates, & on the Weſtſide three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and in them the Names of the Lambes twelue Apoſtles.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reede to meaſure the citie withall, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the citie lay foure ſquare, and the length is as large as the breadth of it, and he meaſured the citie with the reede, twelue thouſand furlongs: and the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he meaſured ỹ wal thereof, an hundreth, fourty & foure cubits, by the meaſure of man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Iaſper:

and

...golde, like vnto cleare glasse.

...sides of the wall of the citie ...precious stones: the first ... the second of Saphire: the third ... the fourth of an Emeraude:

...the fift of a Sardonyx: the sixt of a Sardius: ... seuenth of a Chrysolite: the eyght of a Beryl: the ninth ... the tenth of a Chrysoprasus: the eleuenth ... Iacinct: the twelueth an Amethyst.

21 And the twelue gates *were* twelue pearles, and ... euery gate *was* of one pearle, and the streete of the citie *was* ... golde, as it were glasse.

22 And I sawe no Temple therein: for the Lorde God ... almightie and the Lambe are the Temple of it.

Isa.60.19. 23 * And this citie hath no neede of the sunne, neither ... of the moone to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lambe is the light of it.

Isa.60.3. 24 * And the people which are saued, shall walke in ... the light of it: and the kings of the earth shall bring their ... glory and honour vnto it.

Isa.60.11. 25 * And the gates of it shall not be shut by day: for ... there shall be no night there.

26 And the glory, and honour of the Gentiles shall be ... brought vnto it.

27 And there shall enter into it none vncleane thing, ... neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination or lies: but they ... which are written in the Lambes * Booke of life.

Chap.3.5. and 20.12. Dan.12.1.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The riuer of water of life is shewed, 2 and the tree of life: 6 The conclusion of this prophecie, 8 where Iohn declareth that the things herein contained are most true. 13 And nowe the third time repeateth these words, All things come from him who is the beginning of the ende.

AND he shewed me a pure riuer of water of life, clear ... as crystall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of ... the Lambe.

2 In the middes of the streete of it, and of eyther side ... of the riuer, was the tree of life, which bare twelue manner ... of fruites, and gaue fruite euery moneth: and the leaues ... of the tree *were* to heale the nations with.

3 And there shalbe no more curse, but the throne of ...

God

shall
shall be his face, and his name shall be in
there shall be no night there: and they need no *Isa.60.19.*
light of the sunne: for the Lord God giueth
and they shall reigne for euermore.
6 And he said vnto me, These words are faithfull and
true: and the Lord God of the holy Prophetes sent his An-
gel to shew vnto his seruantes the things which must shortly
be done.
7 Behold, I come shortly. Blessed *is he* that keepeth the
wordes of the prophecie of this booke.
8 And I Iohn, which haue heard and seene these thinges:
and when I had heard and seene, I fell downe to wor- *Chap.19.10.*
ship before the feete of the Angel, which shewed me these
things.
9 Then he said vnto mee, See thou *do it* not: for I am thy
fellowe seruant, and of thy brethren the Prophetes, and of
them which keepe the wordes of this Booke: worship God.
10 And he said vnto mee, Seale not the wordes of the
prophecie of this Booke: for the time is at hand.
11 He that is vniust let him be vniust still: and he which
is filthie let him be filthie still: and he that is righteous, let
him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy
still.
12 And behold, I come shortly, and my reward is with
me, *to giue euery man according as his worke shall be. *Rom.2.6.*
13 I am *Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the *Chap.1.8.*
end, the first and the last. *and 21.6.*
14 Blessed *are they* that do his commaundements, that *Isai.42.4.*
they might be in the tree of life, and may enter in *and 44.6.*
through the gates into the citie.
15 For without *shall be* dogges and enchanters, & whore-
mongers, and murtherers, and idolaters, and whosoeuer lo-
ueth or maketh lies.
16 I Iesus haue sent mine Angel, to testifie vnto you
these things in the Churches: I am the roote and the gene-
ration of Dauid, and the bright morning starre.
17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him
that heareth say, Come: and let him that is athirst, come:
and whosoeuer will, take of the water of life freely. *Isai.55.1.*

with pure fine linnen and ſhining, for the fine linnen is the righteouſnes of Saints.

Mat.22.2. 9 Then he ſaid vnto me, Write, *Bleſſed *are* they which are called vnto the Lambes ſupper. And he ſaide vnto me, These words of God are true.

Chap.22.9. 10 And I fell before his feete, *to worſhip him: but he ſaid vnto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellowe ſeruant, and one of thy brethren, which haue the teſtimonie of Ieſus. Worſhip God: for the teſtimonie of Ieſus, is the Spirit of prophecie.

11 And I ſaw heauen open, and behold a white horſe, and he that ſate vpon him, was called, Faithfull and true, and he iudgeth and fighteth righteouſly.

12 And his eyes *were* as a flame of fire, and on his head *were* many crownes: and he had a name written, that no man knew but him ſelfe.

13 And he was clothed with a garment dipt in blood, and his name is called, THE WORD OF GOD.

14 And the hoſtes which were in heauen, followed him vpon white horſes, clothed with fine linnen white and pure.

15 And out of his mouth went out a ſharpe ſworde, *Pſal.2.9.* that with it he ſhould ſmite the heathen: for he *ſhall rule them with a rod of yron: for he it is that treadeth the wine preſſe of the fiercenes and wrath of almightie God.

16 And he hath vpon his garment, and vpon his thigh *Chap.17.14* a name written, *THE KING OF KINGS, AND *1.Tim.6.15.* LORD OF LORDES.

17 And I ſawe an Angel ſtand in the ſunne, who cryed with a loud voyce, ſaying to all the foules that did flye by the middes of heauen, Come, and gather your ſelues together vnto the ſupper of the great God,

18 That ye may eate the fleſh of Kings, and the fleſh of hie Captaines, and the fleſh of mightie men, and the fleſhe of horſes, and of them that ſitte on them, and the fleſhe of all free men and bondemen, and of ſmall and great.

19 And I ſawe the beaſt, and the Kings of the earth, and their hoſtes gathered together to make battell againſt him, that ſate on the horſe, and againſt his armie.

20 But the beaſt was taken, and with him that falſe prophet that wrought miracles before him, whereby he deceiued them that receiued the beaſtes marke, and them

that worshipped his image. These both were alyue cast into a lake of fire, burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sworde of him that sitteth vpon the horse, which commeth out of his mouth, and all the foules were filled full with their flesshe.

CHAP. XX.

1 *The Angell 2 bindeth Satan for a thousand yeeres: 8 being loosed, he stirreth vp Gog and Magog, that is, prime & open enemies, against the Saints,* 11 *but the vengeance of the Lord cutteth off their insolencie.* 12 *The bookes are opened, by which the dead are iudged.*

AND I sawe an Angell come downe from heauen, hauing the keye of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chaine in his hand.

2 And he tooke the dragon that olde serpent, which is the deuill and Satan, and he bounde him a thousande yeeres:

3 And cast him into the bottomles pit, and he shut him vp, and sealed *the doore* vpon him, that he shoulde deceiue the people no more, till the thousand yeeres were fulfilled: for after that he must be loosed for a little season.

4 And I sawe seates: and they sate vpon them, and iudgement was giuen vnto them, & *I saw* the soules of thē that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, and for the woorde of God, and which did not worship the beast, neither his image, neither had taken his marke vpon their foreheads, or on their handes: and they liued, and reigned with Christ a thousand yeere.

5 But the rest of the dead men shall not liue againe, vntill the thousand yeeres be finished: this is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he, that hath part in the first resurrection: *for* on such the seconde death hath no power: but they shalbe the Priestes of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yeere.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan shalbe loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall goe out to deceiue the people, which are in the foure quarters of the earth: *euen* * Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battel, whose number *is* as the sand of the sea. * Ezek. 39. 2.

9 And

9 And they went vp into the plaine of the earth, they compaſſed the tents of the Saints about, and the loued citie: but fire came downe from God out of hea and deuoured them.

10 And the deuill that deceiued them, was caſt in a lake of fire and brimſtone, where that beaſt and that f prophet *are*, and ſhalbe tormented: euen day and night for euermore.

11 And I ſawe a great white throne, and one that ſat on it, from whoſe face fled away both the earth an heauen, and their place was no more found.

12 And I ſawe the dead, both great and ſmall ſt before God: and the bookes were opened, and * ano booke was opened, which *is the booke* of life, and the d were iudged of thoſe thinges, which were written in bookes, according to their workes.

Chap.3.5. and 21.27. Philip.4.3.

13 And the ſea gaue vp her dead, which were in and death and hell deliuered vp the dead, which were them: and they were iudged euery man according to th workes.

14 And death and hell were caſt into the lake of fire this is the ſecond death.

15 And whoſoeuer was not found written in the book of life, was caſt into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *He deſcribeth newe Hieruſalem deſcending from heau* 9 *the Bride the Lambes wife,* 12 *and the glorious bu ding of the citie,* 19 *garniſhed with pretious ſtones:* 2 *whoſe temple the Lambe is.*

Iſa. 65. 17. and 66. 22. 2. Pet. 3. 13.

AND I ſawe * a newe heauen, and a newe earth: for th * firſt heauen, and the firſt earth were paſſed away, a there was no more ſea.

2 And I Iohn ſaw the holy citie new Hieruſalem co downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride tri med for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voyce out of heauen, ſaying, B holde, the tabernacle of God *is* with men, & hee will dw with them: and they ſhalbe his people, and God himſe ſhalbe their God with them,

Chap.7.17. Iſa.25.8.

4 * And God ſhal wipe away all teares from their e and there ſhalbe no more death, neither ſorowe, nei crying, neither ſhall there be any more payne: for

things are passed.

5 And he that sate vpon the throne, saide,* Beholde, I *Isa.43.19.
make all things newe: and he said vnto mee, Write: for *2.cor.5.17.
these wordes are faithfull and true.

6 And he said vnto me,* It is done, I am Alpha and O- *Chap.1.8.
mega, the beginning and the ende. I will giue to him that *and 22.13.
is thirst, of the well of the water of life freely.

7 He that ouercommeth, shall inherite all things, and I will be his God, and he shalbe my sonne.

8 But the fearefull and vnbeleeuing, and the abominable & murtherers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, & idolaters, and all liars shall haue their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the seconde death.

9 And there came vnto me one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vialles full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come: I will shewe thee the bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And he caryed me away in the spirit to a great and an hie mountaine, and he shewed me that great citie, that holie Hierusalem, descending out of heauen from God,

11 Hauing the glory of God: and her shining was like vnto a stone most precious, as a Iasper stone cleare as crystall,

12 And had a great wall & hie, and had twelue gates, and at the gates twelue Angels, and the names written, which are the twelue tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the East part *there were* three gates, & on the Northside three gates, on the Southside three gates, & on the Westside three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and in them the Names of the Lambes twelue Apostles.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reede to measure the citie withall, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the citie lay foure square, and the length is as large as the breadth of it, and he measured the citie with the reede, twelue thousand furlongs: and the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he measured ỹ wal thereof, an hundreth, fourty & foure cubits, by the measure of man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Iasper:

and

and the citie was pure golde, like vnto cleare glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garnished with all maner of precious stones: the first foundation was Iasper: the second of Saphire: the third of a Chalcedonie: the fourth of an Emeraude:

20 The fift of a Sardonyx: the sixt of a Sardius: the seuenth of a Chrysolite: the eyght of a Beryl: the ninth of a Topaze: the tenth of a Chrysoprasus: the eleuenth of a Iacinth: the twelueth an Amethyst.

21 And the twelue gates *were* twelue pearles, and euery gate *was* of one pearle, and the streete of the citie *was* pure golde, as shining glasse.

22 And I sawe no Temple therein: for the Lorde God almightie and the Lambe are the Temple of it.

Isa.60.19. 23 * And this citie hath no neede of the sunne, neither of the moone to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it: and the Lambe is the light of it.

Isa.60.3. 24 * And the people which are saued, shall walke in the light of it: and the Kings of the earth shall bring their glory and honour vnto it.

Isa.60.11. 25 * And the gates of it shall not be shut by day: for there shall be no night there.

26 And the glory, and honour of the Gentiles shall be brought vnto it.

27 And there shall enter into it none vncleane thing, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination or lies: but they which are written in the Lambes * Booke of life.

Chap.3.5. and 20.12. Philip.4.3.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The riuer of water of life is shewed, 2 and the tree of life: 6 7 Then followeth the conclusion of this prophecie, 8 where Iohn declareth, that the things herein contained are most true: 13 And nowe the third time repeateth these wordes, All things come from him who is the beginning and the ende.

AND he shewed me a pure riuer of water of life, clear as crystall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe.

2 In the middes of the streete of it, and of eyther side of the riuer, was the tree of life, which bare twelue manner of fruites, and gaue fruite euery moneth: and the leaues of the tree *serued* to heale the nations with.

3 And there shalbe no more curse, but the throne

God and of the Lambe shalbe in it, and his seruantes shall serue him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his Name shalbe in their foreheads.

5 *And there shalbe no night there, and they neede no candle, neither light of the sunne: for the Lord God giueth them light, and they shall reigne for euermore. *Isa.60.19.*

6 And he said vnto me, These wordes are faithfull and true: and the Lord God of the holy Prophetes sent his Angel to shew vnto his seruantes the things which must shortly be fulfilled.

7 Behold, I come shortly. Blessed *is* he that keepeth the wordes of the prophecie of this booke.

8 And I am Iohn, which sawe and heard these thinges: and when I had heard and seene, *I fell downe to worship before the feete of the Angel, which shewed me these things. *Chap.19.10.*

9 But he said vnto mee, See thou *do it* not: for I am thy fellowe seruant, and of thy brethren the Prophetes, and of them which keepe the wordes of this Booke: worship God.

10 And he said vnto mee, Seale not the wordes of the prophecie of this Booke: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is vniust, let him be vniust still: and he which is filthie, let him be filthie still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come shortly, and my reward is with me, *to giue euery man according as his worke shalbe. *Rom.2.6.*

13 I am *Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. *Chap.1.8. and 21.6.*

14 Blessed *are* they, that do his commaundements, that their right may be in the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the citie. *Isai.42.4. and 44.6.*

15 For without *shalbe* dogges and enchanters, & whoremongers, and murtherers, and idolaters, and whosoeuer loueth or maketh lies.

16 I Iesus haue sent mine Angel, to testifie vnto you these things in the Churches: I am the roote and the generation of Dauid, and the bright morning starre.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come: and let him that is a thirst, come: and *let whosoeuer will, take of the water of life freely. *Isai.55.1.*

18 For I proteſt vnto euery man that heareth the wor
of the prophecie of this booke, If any man ſhall adde v
theſe things, God ſhall adde vnto him the plagues, that a
written in this booke:

19 And if any man ſhall diminiſh of the wordes of th
booke of this prophecie, God ſhall take away his part o
of the Booke of life, and out of the holy citie, and from tho
things which are written in this booke.

20 He which teſtifieth theſe things, ſaith, Surely, I come
quickly. Amen. Euen ſo, come Lord Ieſus.

21 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt *be* with you all.
Amen.

THE ENDE.



Waiting for the reuelation of the children of God. Rom.8.23.
The new creature which is regenerate by faith in Iesus Christ.2.cor.5.17.gal. 6.15.
¶Crosse, wherunto ỹ faithful are called.Mat.10.38. and 16.24.luk.9.23. & 14. 27.reade Persecution.
¶Crowne of thorne.Mat.27. 29.
Crown of life,of righteousnes,incorruptible,and of glory is prepared for the faithful.Iam.1.12.reue.2. 10.2.tim.4.8.1.pet.5.4.
¶Church or congregation taken for ỹ whole number of the elect. Act.14. 27.rom.16.4.1.cor.11.22. and 16,19.col.4.15.
One body, and the body of Christ. Ephes.1.23. col.1. 24.rom.12.5.
The head thereof is Christ. Reade Christ.
It is the house of God. 1. Tim.3.15.hebr.3.5.
The pillar and assurance of the trueth.1.Tim.3.15.
The accomplishment of Christ. Ephes.1.23.
The heauenly and new Ierusalem.Gal.4.26.reue.3. 12.and 21.10.
Mother of the faithful. Gal. 4.26.
Citie of God. Reuel.3.12.
Of which Christ is the temple.Reuel.21,22.
Holie.Ephes.5.26.1.cor.1.2. 2.cor.1.1.
Also it is taken for ỹ faithful of one countrey or towne.Act.14.23.rom.16. 1.1.cor.1.2.& 16.1.2.cor. 1.1.gala.1.2.reue.2.
Likewise for the faithful of one house, Rom.16.23. 1. cor.16.19.col.4.15.
Women may not teach in it.1.Cor.14.34.1.tim.2.12.
All things must be done in it orderly.1.Cor.14.40.
We must heare it. Mat.18. 17.
She heareth not,nor hath anie other doctrine then Christs word.Ioh.8.47.& 10.3.& 18.37.2.ioh.9.10,11
Curiositie.Act.17.22.2.thes. 3.11. 1.tim.5.13.

D

DAyes of them selues are indifferent.mat.12.5.luk 13.15,16.ioh.5.10,11.rom. 14.5.gal.4.10.col.2.16.
Since ỹ comming of Christ is the latter Dayes. Heb. 1.2. 1.ioh.2.18.1.tim.4.1. 2.tim.3.1. 2.pet.3.3.
Euil dayes. Ephes.5.16.
Obseruation of Dayes reproued.Gal.4.10.
It sheweth a weake faith. Rom.14.5.
¶Darknes when Christ suffred.Mat.27.45.
Taken for sinne.Rom.13.12. 1.iohn 1.6. ephes.5.11. 1. thes.5.4.

Take for blindnes of mind, & lacke of ſpiritual light. Mat.4.16.luk.1.79.iohn.8.12.and 12.46. act.26.18. col.1.13.1.theſ.5.4.1.pet. 2.9.1.iohn 2.8.
Dauid eateth the ſhewe bread.Mar.2.26.
Deacons. Act.6.5.1.tim.3.1.
¶ Dead men can not communicate nor teache vs any thing.Luke 16.31.
The dead that die in the faith,are bleſſed.Reuela. 14.13.
They are with Chriſt. Luke 23.43.phil.1.23.
Thei are preſent with God. 2.Cor.5.8.
And partakers of the firſt reſurrection.Reuel.20.6.
The infidels being dead, are tormented in hel. Luke 16.25.
Delites.Luk.7.25. and 16.19. 1.tim.5.6.reuel.18.7.
Deſires of youth, worldly and carnal, ought to be auoyded. 2.Tim.2.22. tit. 2.12. 1.pet.1.14.
Deſolation.Luke 21.20. reuel.6.14,15,16,17.
Deſpaire.Mat.27.5. actes 1. 18.reuel.9.6.
Detraction, or backbiting. Iam.4.11.1.pet.2.1.
¶ Deuil, the tempter. Mat. 4.1. mar.1.13. 1.cor.7.5. 1.theſ.3.5.
He is a manſlear from the beginning. Iohn 8.44. 1. iohn 3.8.
Sinning from ỹ beginning. 1.Iohn 3.8.
A lyar and father of lies. Iohn 8.44.
A deceiner of the worlde. Reuel.12.9.
The father of infidels. Mat. 13.19. iohn 8.44.
The prince of this worlde. Iohn 12.31. and 16.11. luke 4.5.ephe.2.2.
The dragon & old ſerpent. Reuel.12.9.and 20.2.
The god of this worlde. 2. Cor.4.4.
Malitious and euil. 1.Iohn 2.10,11.& 3.10.and 5.16, 17.mat.13.19.and 28.
The powers & dominions of the world.Ephe.6.12.
The prince of ỹ aire.Ephe. 2.2.
The accuſer of the faithful. Reuel.12.10.
An euil ſpirit. Reade Spirit.
Our aduerſarie & enemie. Mat.13.39. luke 10.19.
He transfigureth him ſelfe into an Angel of light. 2.Cor.11.14.
To whome & to his angels is prepared eternall fire. Mat.25.41.2.pet.2.4. iude 6.reuel.12.9.
Deuils chaſed out of men by Chriſt.Mat.8.32.and 9. 33.and 12.22. and 17.18. mar.1.25.
They confeſſe Chriſt. Mat. 8.29.mar.1.24.&3.11.and 5.7.
They are commanded into the ſwine.Mat.8.32.

Ordained to be witnesses of the death & resurrection of Iesus Christ, to preache it to all nations. Mat.28.19,20.mar.16.15. luk. 24.47.acts.1.8.and.2. 32.and 10.42.

Of the twelue principall. Mat.10.1.

Their speciall office to preach. 1.Cor.12.28.eph. 4.11.

The Apostle of ỹ Gentiles. Rom.1.5.and 11.13.gal.2. 7.1.tim.2.7.2.tim.1.11.

The Apostle of the Iewes. Gal.2.7.

False Apostles,2.Cor.2.17.& 11.13.reade Preachers.

Aquila and Priscilla.Act.18. 2,26.1.cor.16.19.

Armour spiritual.Rom.6.13 and 13.12.2.cor.6.7.& 10 4.ephes.6.11. 1.thes. 5.8. 1.pet.4.1.

Almes:Mat.6.1.luk.11.41.& 12.33.and 14.13.& 16.21. act.2.45. and 9.36.& 10.2. and 20.35,and 24.17.phil. 4.10.1.ioh.3.17.

B

BAbylon which signifieth a place of confusion (as Rome) where Antichrist doth reigne, Reuel. 14.8 and 16.19.and 17.5.

Babylon hath made drunke al nations with the wine of the wrath of her fornication, it is the lodging of the deuils, the place of vncleane spirites, the Rewes of princes and kings, and the poysoning of all nations. reuel. 18. 2,21.

Balaam. 2.Pet.2.15.iude 11. reuel.2.14.

¶ Banket prepared by Matthew for Christ.Mat.9.10 mar.2.15.luke 5.29.

Contemners of God pollute the Christians Bankets.2. Pet.2.13.iude 12.

They which are called to Bankets or feastes ought to sit lowest,& why.Luk. 14.10.

Whom Christians ought to bid to dinner & supper. Luk.14.13.

¶ Baptisme is commanded to be ministred to al that beleeue. Mat.28.19.mar. 16.16.

There is but one Baptisme. Ephes.4.5.

By the water of Baptisme we are consecrate to Iesus Christ, & purified by faith in the worde of the Gospel.Ephes.5.26.

It signifieth vnto vs, ỹ we are buried with Iesus Christ,dead to sinne,and deliuered therefrom by the death of Christ, and haue put on Christ, and are made the children of God, by whome also we are all made one.Rom.6. 3.gal.3.27.colos.2.12.

Without faith it profiteth not. Mar.16.16.1.cor.10. 21.pet.3.21.

Men are but the miniſters thereof. Mat. 3.11. iohn. 1. 26. & 3. 23, 27. & 4. 1. act. 8. 16. and 9. 18.

Chriſt giueth ỹ vertue. Mat. 3. 11. luke. 3. 16. iohn. 1. 26.

It is taken for ỹ viſible gifts of the holy Ghoſt. Mat. 3. 8. mar. 1. 8. act. 1. 5.

It ſignifieth alſo to ſuffer tribulations or death. Mar. 10. 38. luk. 12. 50.

Chriſt Baptized not. Iohn. 4. 2.

Barnabas. Act. 4. 36. & 13. 1.

Barabbas. Mat. 27. 21. mar. 15. 7. luke. 23. 18. iohn. 18. 40.

Bartimeus the blinde man. Mar. 10. 46.

Beame, or poſt in the eye. Mat. 7. 3.

Beggers or loyterers ought not to be ſuffred. 2. Theſ. 3. 10. 1. tim. 5. 16.

¶ Benignitie, gentlenes, or liberalitie. Galat. 5. 22. epheſ. 4. 32. col. 3. 12.

The bounteouſnes of God towards vs. Tit. 3. 4.

They which haue mutuall loue are courteous. 1. Cor. 13. 4.

We muſt be gentle one toward an other. Ephe. 4. 32. col. 3. 12.

¶ Blaſphemie condemned. Mat. 15. 19. luke. 23. 35. acts. 13. 45. rom. 2. 24.

Blaſphemie againſt ỹ Sonne of man may be forgiuen, but blaſphemie againſt ỹ holy Ghoſt can not be forgiuē. Mat. 12. 31. mar. 3. 29. luk. 12. 10. 1. tim. 1. 13.

The beaſt ſpeaketh blaſphemies againſt God and his Name. Reuel. 13. 1, 5. and 17. 3.

Bleſſed or happie folk. Mat. 5. 3. luke. 6. 20. and 11. 28. Iohn. 20. 29. rom. 4. 7.

Chriſt aſcending to heauen bleſſeth his Apoſtles. Luke 24. 51.

He bleſſeth litle children. Mark. 10. 16.

Bleſſing and curſing proceede both out of one mouth. Iam. 3. 10.

Bleſsing taken for praiſe. Luke. 1. 28, 68. and 2. 28. rom. 1. 25. and 9. 5. 1. cor. 14. 16, 17. ephe. 1. 3. iam 3, 10.

Alſo for wiſhing, enriching, and aboundance. Mat. 25. 34. actes. 3. 25. galat. 3. 8. epheſ. 1. 3. 1. pet. 3. 9.

¶ Body ſenſual and mortall. Rom. 6. 12. & 7. 24. & 8. 11.

Called a tabernacle. 2. Cor. 5. 1. 2. pet. 1. 13.

A veſſel and houſe of earth 2. Cor. 4. 7. & 5. 1.

The temple of ỹ holy Ghoſt. 1. Cor. 6. 19.

It ſhal riſe againe ſpiritual. Rom. 8. 11. 1. cor. 15. 44. 2. cor. 4. 14.

We muſt mortifie it. Rom. 8. 13. 1. cor. 9. 27. col. 3. 5.

It is taken for the number of ỹ elect. read Church.

Booke of life, Phil. 4 3. reue. 3. 5. and

3.5.and 13.8. & 17.8.and 20.12.& 21.27. & 22.19.
Bragging and boasting.Luk. 18.11.rom.1.30. gal.6.13.
Good & lawfull. 2.Cor.11. 18.phil.3.7.
¶ Brethrē of Christ or kinſmen.Mat.12.47.iohn.7.3. 1.cor.9.5.gal.1.19.
Brethren ſpiritual of Christ are the faithfull. Reade Faithfull.
All Christians are brethren Mat.23. 8. rom.1.13. & 8. 29.1.cor.6.6 &8.11. eph. 6.21. col.4.15. 1.theſ.5. 14.
Falſe brethren.2.Cor.11.26 gal.2.4.

C

CAiaphas propheecieth. Iohn 11.50.
He examineth Christ. Mat. 26.62.
Cain.1.Iohn.3.12.iude.11.
Called are many. Mat.20. 16.
Capernaum reproued.Mat. 11.23.
Chananean. Mat.15.22.
Centurion.Mat.8.5.and 27. 54.
¶ Charitie or loue of God toward vs. Ioh.3.16.and 13.1 &16. 27. rom.5.8. eph.2.4.Read God.
It is a ſigne to knowe the faithful by. Iohn. 13.35.
It is the gift of God. Ephe. 3.19.phil.1.9.1.theſ.3.12. 2.theſ.1.3.
The band of perfectiō. Col. 3.14.
The fulfilling of the Lawe, Mat.7.12.rom.13.9.galat. 5.14.1.tim.1.5.
Waxing colde in the latter times.Mat.24.12.
¶ Childrē are embraced of Chriſt and bleſſed. Mar. 10.16.
They praiſe Chriſt.Mat.21. 15.
Taken for yong Chriſtians and of ſmall capacitie. 1. Cor.3.2.& 14.20.Epheſ.4. 14.heb.5.12.
They ỹ are humble,ſimple, and wout malice.Mat.18. 3.1.cor.14.20.1.pet.2.1.
Children of God.Luk.20.36 iohn 1.12.rom.8.14.2.cor. 6.18. galat.3.26. and 4.7. epheſ.1.5.heb.12.6.1.ioh. 3.1.
Children of ỹ reſurrection, which cannot die. Luke 20.35,36.
Children of the kingdome. Mat.13.38.
Children of light. Iohn.12. 36.epheſ.5.8. 1.theſ.5.5.
The true children of Abraham.Rom.4.16.gal.3.7.
Childrē ought to obey their fathers. Eph.6.1.col.3.20.
¶ Chriſt is God euerlaſting, the beginning & the end. ioh.1.1.& 10.30. & 20.28. acts.20.28.rom.9.5.& 14. 18. philip.2.6. col. 2. 2. 1. tim.3.16. heb.1.8. 1.iohn 5.20.reuel.1.5.
Chriſt is the word of God. 1.iohn.1.1.reuel.19.13.

Christ is the image of God. 2.Cor.4.4.colo.1.15.heb. 1.3.
The ſonne of God.Mat.3.17 and 16.16.& 17.5. mar.3. 11.& 5.7.luk.1.32,35.ioh. 1.18,34,49.& 3.13,14,16 17.& 6.62.& 9.35.& 10.36 & 11.27.act.4.30.& 8.37. rom.1.4.& 8.32.gal.2. 20. & 4.4.col.1.13.heb.1.2,5. & 3. 6.and 4. 14.2.pet.1. 17.1.ioh.1.3.and 4.15.
The power and wiſdome of God.1.Cor.1.24.& 2.7.
The Creator. Ioh.1.1.coloſ. 1.16.
By him al things cõſiſt.ioh. 1.3.col.1. 16,17.heb.1.2.
Hee is the ſearcher of the heart.Mat.9.22,28.luk.6. 8.& 11.17.& 9.47.iohn.2. 24.hebr.4.13.reuel. 2.23.
The prince of life. Act.3.15.
The Lord of glory. 1. Cor. 2.8.
The Prince of ſaluation. Heb.2.10.
The Prince of faith. Hebr. 12.2.
Chriſt is the ſonne of Abraham & Dauid, according to the fleſh. Mat.1.6.luk. 3.34.act.13.23.rom.1.3.2. tim.2.8.heb.2.16.
Deſcended of the fathers. Mat.1.1.rom.9.5.
Come in fleſh. iohn 1. 14. 1.iohn 4.2.heb.2.14.
Cõceiued by ỹ holy Ghoſt, and borne of the virgin. Mat.1.18.luk.1.35.
Was circumciſed, and preſented to ỹ temple. Luk. 2.22,27.
Was ſubiect to Ioſeph and Marie his mother. Luke 2.51.
He growed in wiſdome and age. Luke 2.40.
He was baptized.Mat.3.16.
He was tempted of ỹ deuil. Mat.4.1.
He preached the kingdome of God, and confirmed it with miracles. Mat.mar. luke.iohn.
Sonne of man. Mat.8.20.& 12.8.and 16.13.and 24.27 and 26.2.mar.2.10.and 10 33,45.luk.9.22.and 17.22 ioh.1.51.and 3.13. and 6. 27.and 6.53.and 12.23.
Sent and come of God.ioh. 3.16. and 5.34. & 6.29.& 7.28.and 8.16,26,42.& 10 36.and 12.44.and 17.21.& 20.21.rom.8.3.
All promiſes are accompliſhed in him. 2.Cor.1.20.
In him wee ſee the father. Iohn 8.19.and 14.9.
Hee is heire of all thinges. Heb.1.2.
The onely Lord. Mat.22.43. Luk.2.11.ioh.13.13.& 20. 28.acts.9.5.& 10.48.1.cor. 2.8. and 8.6. & 12.3.& 15. 47. ephe. 4. 1. phil.2.11. reuel.17.14.and 19.16.
The only Sauiour.Mat.1.21. luk. 1,31,32,68,69.ioh.3. 16,& 4.42. act.4.12.1.tim. 1.15.tit.2.13.1.ioh.4.9.
He is our hope and conſo-

lation. Mat.11.27. rom. 15.12.
Our wisdome, iustice, sanctification, & deliuerance. 1. Cor.1.30. Our peace. Luk.2.14. ioh.16.33. rom. 5.1. ephe.2.14,17. phil.4. 7. col.1.20.
Onely mediatour and aduocate. Mat.11.27 iohn 10. 9. and 14.6. act.4.12. rom. 5.1. and 8.34. ephe.2.18. & 3.12. 1.tim.2.5. heb.7.25. and 8.6. & 9.15. & 12.24. and 13.15. 1.iohn 2.1.
We must call vpon God in his Name. Iohn 14.13. & 15.16. and 16.23.
He onely forgiueth sinnes. Mat.9.2. act.10.43. rom.8. 4. 2.cor.5.18. ephe.1.7. & 4.30. col.1.14. 1.ioh.2.12.
He is the onely Master, whome we must heare. Mat.17.5. and 23.8. mar.9. 7. iohn 13.13. act.3.22.
The way, trueth, and life. Iohn 1.4. & 5.26. and 11. 25. & 14.6. act.3.15. 1.ioh. 1.1,5. and 5.11. col.3.4.
The true light. Ioh.1.4. and 8.12. and 9.5. and 12.46.
The giuer of water of life. iohn 4.10. and 7.38. reuel. 22.17.
The accomplishment and end of the Law. Mat.5.17. rom.10.4.
Who hath abolished the Law of decrees. Ephes.2. 15. col.2.14. 2.cor.3.6.
The onely foundation and the chiefe stone. 1.Cor.3. 11. col.2.10. mat.21.42. act. 4.11. ephe.2.20. 1.pet.2.6.
The stone of offence. Mat. 21.44. luke 2.34. rom.9. 32. 1.pet.2.4,8.
The bread of life. Iohn.6. 35,48.
The victorie of the world. Iohn 16.33.
The second Adam and heauenly. 1.Cor.15.45.
Of whome we haue receiued all thing. Iohn 1.16.
The good shepheard, the doore of ỹ sheepehouse, and prince of shepherds. Iohn 10.7,11,14. hebr.13. 20. 1.pet.2.25. and 5.4.
King, and prince of kings. Mat.21.9. & 27.11. luke 1. 33. iohn 1.40. & 12.15. and 18.37. reue.1.5. and 17.14. and 19.16.
Come to serue. Mat. 20.28. mark.11. luke 22.27. iohn 13.5.
To call, to heale, & to comfort sinners. Mat.1.21. & 9.13. and 11.28. and 18.10, 45. luke 4.19. and 19.10. 1.tim.1.15.
He is subiect to mans infirmities and passions. Mat. 4.2. mar.8.2. luk.19.42. ioh. 4.6. and 11,38. and 12.27. heb.2.14.
Without sinne. heb.4.15. 1. pet.2.22. 1.ioh.3.9. 2.cor. 5.21.
Poore and humble. Matth. 8.20. 2.cor.8.9.

Hated

Hated of the world. Luk.4. 29.iohn 1.10.and 5.16. & 7.7.and 15.18,23.
Was iniuried, despised, and blasphemed. Mat. 11.19. and 12.24.& 13.55.& 27. 20,30.mar.15.29. luk.23. 11. iohn 6. 43. and 7.11. and 8.48.
Vtterly cast off and set at naught.Mat.27. from the 30.& 31.verse to the end of the Chapter. Mar.15. from the 16.verse to the 36.iohn 19.1 &c. phil.2. 7.heb.2.9.and 4.15.
Crucified, and dead for vs. Mat.27.46,47,48,49.rom. 5.8. 1.cor.15.3. 2.cor.5. 15. 1.pet.3.18.
He is risen againe. Mat.28. 6. luke 24.46.rom.4.25. & 8.34.1.cor.15.4,11.1.thes. 1.10.
Ascended into heauen.Mar. 16.19.luke 24.51. act.1.9. ephes.4.8.
The eternall Priest. Heb.2. 17.& 3.1. & 4.14. and 5.5. & 7.17.& 8.1. & 9.11. and 10.12.
Who offered vp him selfe. Iohn 10.18.gal.1.4. hebr. 7.27.and 9.26. and 10.10. 1.tim.2.6.titus 2.14.
He was only once offred,& can be offered no more. hebr.7.27.& 9.26. and 10. 10.rom.6.10.1.pet.3.18.
He is our altar.Hebr.13.10.
And hath caried,takē away, and purged our sinnes. Iohn 1. 29. hebr. 9.26. 1.pet.2.24.1.iohn.3.5.
And is the only purgatory, propitiatiō,recōciliatiō, appointment,ransome,& satisfactiō for our sinnes. Rom.5.10. 1. Cor.1.30.2. cor.5.18. ephe.1.7. col.1. 20.1.tim.2.5.1.ioh.2.2.and 4.10. mat.20.28. 1.pet.1. 19.gal.3.13.reuel.5.9.
He is absent frō vs as touching his bodily presēce. Mat.26.11.ioh.7.33.& 16. 16.act.1.11.2.cor.5.20.
And sitteth at ỹ right hand of the Father in heauen. Mar.16.19.luke 24 52.act. 7.55.rom.8.34. ephe.1.20. col.3.1.heb.1.3.and 8.1.& 10.12. 1.pet.3.22.
Accomplishing all in all. Ephes.1.23.
On whō we must call. Mat. 8.25.and 20.30. mar.1.40. & 10.47.luke 5.12. and 17. 13.& 18.38. actes.7.60. 1. cor.1.2.
We must beleeue in him. Ioh.3.15.& 6.40. & 14.1. gal.2.16. 1.iohn 3.23.
He is onely head of the Church.Eph.2.22.& 4.15. & 5 23.col.1.18.& 2.19.
And is alway present with thē after a spiritual sort, & dwelleth in thē.Mat.18 20.and 28.20. iohn 14.18. ephe.3.12.2.cor.13.5.
All thing is subiect to him. Mat.11.27.& 28.18. iohn 3.35.& 13.3.and 17.7.rom. 14.8.1.cor.15.27. ephes. 22. phil.

22.phil.2.10.col.1.17.heb. 2.8. 1.pet.3.22.reue.1.18.
And he ſhall come againe viſibly to iudge ỹ quick and the dead. Mat.24.27, 30,39.luk.17.24,30. & 21. 27.act.1.11.& 3.20.rom.2. 16. 1.cor.4.4.2.cor.5. 10. 1.theſ.5.2.2.theſ.1.7.2.tit. 4.1.2.pet.3.10. reu.16.15.
He is worſhipped. Mat.2. 11.& 8,2.& 14.33. and 15. 25.& 28.9.luk.24.52. iohn 9.38. phil.2.10. hebr.1.6, rom.14.11.
He is our example. Iohn 12.26.& 13.15.1.cor.4.16. and 11.1.epheſ.5.2. phil. 2.2.hebr.13.8.
We muſt confeſſe him before mẽ.Mat.10.32.luk.9. 26.and 12.8.iohn 12.42.ro. 10.9.2.cor.4.2.2.tim.2.12.
We muſt giue him honour. and glory.Iohn 5.23.reue. 5.12.
¶Circumciſion which is in the fleſh.rom.2.28.1.cor. 7.18.gal.5.6.epheſ.2.11.
Spiritual Circumciſion.Rō. 2.29.phil.3.3.col.2.11.
Circumciſion & vncircumciſiō are nothing. 1.Cor. 7.19.gal.6.15.
¶Citie of God Hebr.11.16. and 12.22.& 13.14. reuel. 3.12,and 21.10.
Cities menaced by Chriſt. Mat.11.21. and 23.37.luke 19.43,44.
Collection or gathering for the poore brethren. Act. 11.29.rom.15.26.27.1.cor. 16.1.2.cor.8,9.
¶Commandement of God. Mat.5.19.and 15.3.& 19. 17.& 22.38. mar.7.8. and 12.29.iohn 13.34. and 14. 15.& 15.10.rom.7.12.and 13.9. 1. cor.7.19. 1.iohn 2.3.and 3.23. and 4.21. 2. iohn 4.reuel.12,17.
The cõmandements of mẽ, which are contrarie to God ought not to be obſerued. Mat.15.9.mar.7. 7.luk.11.46.2ct.4.19.col. 2.22.1.tim.4.1.tit.1.14.
¶Communion or ſupper of the Lorde,& of the inſtitution thereof.Mat.26.26. mar.14.24.luke 22.17. 1. cor.11.24.
How al ought to vſe it,and that without either adding to it or taking from it.1.Cor.11.23.
The often vſe of the ſame in the primitiue Church. Act.2.42.and 20.7.
Compaſsion,Reade mercie.
¶Concupiſcence taken for al our corrupt affections. Mar.4.19.rom.6.12.& 7.7. gal.5.24.2.pet.1.4.1.ioh. 2.16.
The mother of ſinne.Iames 1.15.
¶Confeſsion of faith,Reade Chriſt.
It is taken for prayſe. Mat. 11.25 luk.2.38.& 10.21.
Confeſsiō of ſinnes to God. luke.15.18. and 18.13. 1. iohn

iohn 1.9.
Confeſsion publike. Mat. 3. 6. mar. 1.5. act. 19.18.
Confeſsion to reconcile loue and friendſhip. Mat. 5.24. iames 5.16.
¶ Coniurers are torne of the deuils. Act. 19.13.
The bookes of Coniuring burned. Act. 19.19.
¶ Conſcience, which is made good by grace. Heb. 13.9.
A good conſcience toward God and men. Actes. 24.16. 2. corin. 1.12. 1. timot. 1.5. 1. pet. 3.16, 21.
An euill conſcience. 1. Tim. 4.2. tit. 1.15.
Counſell which is good. Ioh. 7.51. acts 5.35. 1. cor. 7.25.
Euil Counſel againſt Chriſt. Mat. 12.14. & 22.15. & 26. 4. and 27.1. & 28.12. mar. 3.6. iohn 11.47.
Counſel of God. Actes 2.23. and 4.28. and 20.27.
Conſolation which cõmeth of God. 2. Cor. 1.4, 6. and 7.6. phil. 2.1. 2. theſ. 2.16.
Which commeth of the Scripture. Rom. 15.4.
Toward our brethren. 1. Theſ. 4.18. and 5.14.
Of Chriſt to his diſciples. Mat. 14.27. luk. 10.23. ioh. 13.14, 15, 16.
Conſolation in worldlye things is euill. Luke 6.24.
Conſtancie, Reade Perſeuerance.
Contention is condemned. Rom. 2.8. & 13.13. 1. cor. 1. 11. 2. cor. 12.20. gala. 5.20. philip. 2.3. 1. tim. 6.4. tit. 3.3. iam. 3.14, 16.
Contention among the apoſtles. Luke 22.24.
Betweene Paul and Barnabas. Act. 15.39.
Contempt of the faythfull miniſter, is the contempt of God. 1. Theſ. 4.8.
Contentation. Luke 3.14. 1. cor. 7.17. phil. 4.11. 1. tim. 6.6. heb. 13.5.
¶ Conuerſatiõ of preachers, reade preachers.
Of maried, Reade maried.
Conuerſation approoued. Phil. 1.27. 1. theſ. 4.12. 1. pet. 1.15. 2. pet. 3.1.
That Conuerſation which is forbidden. epheſ. 2.3. 1. pet. 1.18. and 4.3.
¶ Conuerting to God commeth of God. Iuk. 22.61, 62. iohn 6.44. act. 9.4.
Cornelius the Centurion. Act. 10.1.
¶ Correction which God vſeth towards his. 1. cor. 11.32. heb. 12.5. 1. pet. 4. 17. reuel. 3.19.
Brotherly correction. Mat. 18.15. gal. 6.1. 1. tim. 5.1.
¶ Couetouſnes condemned. Luk. 12.15. & 16.9, 10. act. 5.3. 1. cor. 6.10. eph. 5.3. col. 3.5. 1. tim. 6.10. heb. 13.5.
Creatures of God are all good. 1. Tim. 4.4.
Creature ſubiect to vanitie. Rom. 8.20.

¶ A TABLE OF THE PRINCIPAL THINGES THAT ARE CONTEI-ned in the Newe Testament, after the order of the Alphabet.

The first number noteth the chapter, and the second the verse.

A

Aaron. Hebr. 5. 4.
Abel offred by faith. Heb. 11. 4.
¶ Abomination set vp in the holy place. Mat. 24. 15. mar. 13. 14. luke. 21. 20. reuel. 17. 4. & 21. 27.
That which man esteemeth excellent, is abominable before God. Luke. 16. 15.
¶ Abraham the father of the beleeuers. Rom. 4. 16.
Hee offred Isaac by faith. Hebr. 11. 17.
¶ Abuse of the Scripture. Mat. 4. 6. 2. cor. 2. 17. gal. 1. 8. 2. thes. 2. 2. ephes. 5. 6. 2. pet. 3. 16. iude 4.
Abuse through Antichrist. 2 Thes. 2. 10.
Abuse by the Pharises. Mat. 23. 23.
Abuses. 2. Tim. 3. 5. titus. 1. 10. 2. iohn. 7. 2. pet. 2. 1. iude. 4. Reade False Prophets.
Abused. Gal. 3. 1. 2. thes. 2. 3. 2. tim. 3 4 tit. 1. 10. iude. 9. reuel. 18. 3, 23.
Acception of persons is not with God. Act. 10. 34. rom. 2. 11. gal. 2. 6. ephe. 6. 9. col. 3. 25. 1. pet. 1. 17.
Acception of persons is forbidden. Iam. 2. 3.
¶ Adam, which was first. Luke 3. 38. rom. 5. 14. 1. cor. 15. 12, 45. 1. tim. 2. 13.
The second. Rom. 5. 14. 1. cor. 15. 45. Reade Christ.
Adoption. Rom. 8. 15 & 9. 4. gal. 4. 5. ephe. 1. 5.
¶ Adulterie forbidde. Mat. 5. 27, 28, 32. & 19. 9. mar. 10. 11. luk. 16. 18. ioh. 8. 3. rom. 7. 3. & 13. 9. gal. 5. 19. 1. cor. 6. 9. heb. 13. 4. iames 4. 4. 2. pet. 2. 14.
Vsed for idolatrie. Reuel. 2. 14. & 14. 11. and 17. 1. and 18. 3.
¶ Affection godly. Mat. 6. 33. luke. 11. 28. 2. cor. 12. 10.
According to ỹ flesh. Mat. 6. 21. & 16. 22. & 20. 21. and 26. 51. luke. 9. 33, 54. & 11. 38. rom 8. 6. & 10. 2.
Agabus a prophet. Act. 11. 28. & 21. 10.
Agar. Galat. 4. 25.
Agrippa king. Act. 25. 13.
¶ Alliance ancient. 2. Cor. 3. 14. galat.

4.galat.4.24.
The new. Mat.26.28.1.cor. 11.25.gal.4.26,hebr.8.8. & 9.15.& 12.24.& 13.20.
Ananias and Sapphira.Acts. 5.1.
Ananias the disciple. Acts. 9.10.
Ananias ỹ Priest. Acts.24.1.
¶ Ancient men and women ought to be honoured.1. Tim.5.1.
Of what sort they ought to be.Tit.2.2.Of themwhich are Elders. Read Elders.
¶ Angels good which are in heauen.Mar.12.25.
Created by Christ, or in Christ. Colos.1.16.
The seruants of Christ.Mat. 4.11.mar.1.13.
They comfort him in the garden.Luke 22.43.
Seruantes to the faithfull. Mat.18.10.act.12.11.hebr. 1.14.
Their appearing to persons Mat.1.20.and 2.13,19.luk. 1.11,26.and 2.9.
Seene in forme of men.Mar. 16.5.luke 24.4. ioh.20.12. act.1.10 and 10 3,30.
They shall accompanie Christ at the iudgement. Mat.25.31.mar.8.38.luk.9. 26.2.thes.1.7.
Of euill Angels, reade Deuils.
¶ Anger or wrath must be ouercome by gentlenes. Mat.5.22.rom.12.19.eph. 4.26,31.col.3.8.
We must be slow to anger. Iames 1.19.
If wee be angrie with our brother, let vs be reconciled before we pray. 1. Tim.2.8.
By nature wee are children of wrath.Ephe.2.3.
Christ hath delinered vs from the wrath to come. 1.Thes.1.10.
The wrath of God vpon the infidels. 1.Thes.2.16.
The rich of ỹ world heape vpon them a treasure of anger.Iames 5.3.
Anna the Prophetesse. luke. 2.36.
Annas and Caiaphas. Luk.3. 2.iohn 18.13.acts.4.6.
¶ Antichrist and his kingdome from ỹ time of the Apostles.2.Thes.2.3,4. 1. ioh.2.22.and 4.3.2.ioh.7. mar.13.22.reuel.13.1,2.
Of his destruction.2.Thes.2. 8.reuel.19.20.
Apollos.Act.18.24.1.cor.3.6
¶ Apostles or ambassadors, and messengers were twelue chosen by Christ. Mat.10.2, luk.6.14.ioh.6. 67.act.1.2,13.
They are the light of the world.Mat.5.14.
The salt of the earth. Mat. 5.13.mar.9.50.luk.14.34.
Dispensers of the mysteries of God.1.Cor.4.1.
The ministers of Christ. 2. cor.4.1.
Helpers with God. 1.Cor. 3.9.

Ordeine

Diana of ỹ Ephesians. Act. 19.28.
¶Disciples of Christ Mat.10 42.luk 14.27. iohn 8.31.& 12.35.act.1.15.
The disciples of the false prophets.act 20.30.
¶Disobedience to the Gospel and to the trueth. Rom.10.16,21.2.thes.1.8. and 3.14.
To parentes.Roma.1.30. 2. tim.3.2.
To rulers.2.Pet.2.10.ind.8
Dispute by the Scripture. Act.17.2.
¶Doctrine true & wholesome, of GOD and of Christ. Iohn 7.16. 1.tim. 1.15.2.tim 3.16.
Doctrine of the Scripture. Rom.15.4.2.tim.3.16.
Doctrine of men false. Mat. 15.5.mar.7.11.ephe.4.14. col.2.8,22.heb.13.9.
Doctrine of deuils.1.ti.4.1.
Doctors appointed in the church. Actes.13.1. 1.cor. 12.28.ephe.4.11.
False teachers must bee auoided.Col.2.8. 1.tim.1. 7.and 4.1.2.tim.3.2.tit.1. 14.and 3.9. 2.pet.2.1.and 3.17.2.iohn 10.
¶To doe all things to the glorie of God, and in the Name of Christ.Matth.5. 16.1.cor.10.31. col.3.17. 1.pet.4.11.
To doe to an other, as we would should bee done to our selues. Mat. 7.12. luke 6.31.
To do good to al,but chiefly to the housholde of faith.Luk.6.30.gal.6.10.
¶To doe good to our enemies, reade,To loue.
We ought not to be weary in wel doing. Galat.6.9. 2. thes.3.13.
¶Drunkennes & drũkards. Mat. 24.49. 1.cor. 11.21. luke 21.34. roman.13.13. gal.5.21.
They shall not inherit the kingdome of God. 1.cor. 6.10.
Their companie must be auoyded.1.Cor.5.11.
It is taken for that stupiditie that they haue which forget God. 1. thes.5.7.

E

EDificatiõ must be sought in al things. Rom.14.19. and 15.2. 1.cor.14.26. 2. cor.10.8. 1.thes.5.11. 1. tim.1.4.
Eye,simple or wicked.Mat. 6.22.
To pull out the right eye. Mat.5.29.
Electiõ eternal to saluatiõ. Iohn 23.18.act.13.48.and 22.14. roma.8.29. and 9. 11.and 11.5.ephe.1.4,11. 1. thes.1.4. 2. thes.2. 13. 2.pet.1.10. Reade Vocation.
¶Elect and chosen to office or ministerie. Ioh.15.16. actes 1.2.and 6.5 and 15. 22. 1.tim.5.9.

The

The elect. Mat.20.16. and 22,14.mar.13.20.luke 18. 7.rom.8.33. 2.tim.2.10. heb.12.23.1.pet.1.2.reue. 17.14.

Elias is come. Mat.11.14. & 17.12.

Elias and Eliseus. Luk.4.26, 27.iam.5.17.

Elymas ỹ sorcerer.Act.13.8.

Enoch.Heb.11.5.

¶ Epistle of the Apostles. act.15.23.

In the Epistles of S. Paul there are some harde things.2.Pet.3.16.

¶Enemie must bee loued. Reade To loue, and to do wel.

Enemie of the crosse of Christ.Phil.3.18.

Enuie is condemned. Mat. 27.18.26.17.1.rom.1.29. gal.5.21. 1.tim.6.4. tit.3. 3. 1.pet.2.1.

Enuious.rom.9.13.heb.12.16.

Enuroches or gelded are after three sortes.Matth. 19.12.

The Eunuche of Queene Candace.Act.8.27.

¶Excommunication out of the Church.Mat.18.17. 1. cor.5.5,11.2.thes.3.14. 1. tim.1.20.

Out of the Synagogue.Iohn 9.22.

¶Enil proceedeth out of ỹ heart.Mat.12.34.& 15.11. mar.7.21.

Wee must hate it. Rom. 12.9.

We must not render e for euil, reade Iniuri

F

FAbles may not be pre ched. 1.Tim.4.7.2.pet.1. 16.

Al men ought to auoyd th 1.Tim.1.4.tit.1.14.

The wicked vse them. 2.T mot.4.4.

¶Faith or cõfidence in G and in Christ.Iohn.14.1.

The definition there Heb.11.1.

There is but one fayth. E phe.4.5.

It is the gift of God.Mat.1 17.& 13.11.& 16.17. Io 17.21.32. Ioh.6.44,65.8 13.9 and 16.14.rom.12. 1.cor.2.5.ephe.1.14.& 2 8.phil.1.29. 2.thes.3.2. 2 pet.1.3.1.Ioh.5.20.

It commeth of hearin rom.10.17.

It ought to be certaine a sure.Mat.11.21.ephe.3. col.1.23.&2.7.heb.10.2 iam.1.6.

By reason of it sinnes a forgiuen. Mat.9.2. luke 5.20.10.43.

By it we obteine life eue lasting.Ioh.3.15,36.5 24.& 6.40,47.& 11.25 20.29,31.2&.16.3.rom 13.1.Iohn.5.13.

By it we are made the c dren of God. Iohn.1. gal.3.26.

By it we are iuſtified, purified, vinified, regenerate and ſanctified. Act. 13.39. and 15.9. and 26.18. rom. 3.24, 26. and 4.5, 17, 23. & 5.1. and 9.30. and 10.10. gal. 2.16. and 3.11, 24. phi. 3.9. col. 1.23.

By it wee receiue the holy ghoſt. gal. 3.2.

By it Chriſt dwelleth in vs. epheſ. 3.12.

By it wee haue peace with God. Rom. 5.1.

By it wee obteine health. Mat. 8.3. and 9.6, 22, 29, & 15.28. mar. 9.25. and 10.52. luk. 7.48. and 8.48. act. 3.16. and 14.9. heb. 11.34. iam. 5.15.

By it al things are poſsible. Mat. 17.20 & 21.22. mark. 9.23. and 11.23. philip. 4.13.

Without it, it is impoſsible to pleaſe God. Heb. 11.6.

Without it, euery thing is ſinne. Rom. 14.23.

It is ỹ victorie of the world 1. Iohn 5.4.

is our armour againſt ỹ aſſaultes of the deuill. Epheſ. 6.16. 1. theſ. 5.8. 1. pet. 5.9.

The ende thereof is the ſaluation of our ſoules. 1. pet. 1.9.

The noble deedes & great effectes which the ancient fathers did by it. Heb. 11.

Examples of ſtrong faith. Mat. 8.10. luke 7.7. rom. 14 14. 1. theſ. 1.3. heb. 11.

It is declared by workes. Gal. 5.6. 1. tim. 1.2. phi. 1.5. iam. 2.18.

Without workes it is dead. Iam. 2.17.

Affliction is the trial of our faith. 1. pet. 1.7.

¶ Faithful, who are elect frō before all beginning to life euerlaſting. Reade Election and Elect.

They are ỹ childrē of God, &c. Read Children.

The heires of God. Rom. 8. 17. gal. 4.7. epheſ. 3.6. tit. 3. 7. iam. 2.5.

Brethren and fellow heires with Chriſt. Mat. 25.40. & 28.10. ioh. 20.17. rom. 8.17. heb. 2.11.

Temples of God, and habitation of the holy Ghoſt whō they haue receiued of God. Iohn 14.17. rom. 5 5. and 8.9. 1. cor. 3.16. and 6.19. 2. cor. 1.22. and 5.5. and 6.16. gal. 3.2. and 4.6. epheſ. 2.22. 1. theſ. 4.8. 2. tim. 1.14. tit. 3.5.

New creatures. 2. Cor. 5.17. gal. 6.15.

Anointed of God. 2. Cor. 1. 21. 1. iohn 2.20, 27.

Signed and ſealed with the holy Ghoſt. 2. Cor. 1.22. ephe. 1.13. and 4.30.

They are holy. Act. 9.32, 41. rom. 8.27. and 12.13.

and 15.25,31. and 16. 2. 1.cor.6.2. and 14.33. and 16.1,15. 2.cor.1.1. & 8.4. & 13.12.ephe.1.1,18. and 4.12. colos. 1.4. 1.thes.5. 27.1.tim.5.10.phile.5.heb. 3.1. and 13. 24. 1.pet.2.9. iude 3.reuel.17.6.

The sheepe of Christ, and onely heare his voyce. Iohn 10.27.

Called to holinesse & good conuersation. Luke 1.75. rom.1.7.1.cor.1.2.ephe.1. 4.and 4. 24. colos.1.22.1. thes. 4.7. 1.timoth. 2. 15. tit.2.12.1.pet.1.15.

They are vessels of mercie and honour. Rom.9.23.2. tim.2.20.

They are all one bodie in Christ. Iohn 17.21. rom. 12.5.1.cor.10.17. and 12. 12. galat.3.28.ephe.1.23. and 4.6.col.1.22.

They are dead, buried, and risen againe with Christ by faith.Rom.6.3.ephe.2. 1.col.2.12.

Cladde with Christ. Rom. 13.14.gal.3.27.

Kings and priests.1.pet.2.5, 9.reuel.1.6.and 5.10.and 20.6.

All thinges are theirs, and they are christs.1.cor.3.22

They are called to ỹ crosse and affliction, Read Crosse.

They are hated and persecuted of the world, Mat. 10.22. mat.13.13.ioh.15. 18. and 16. 2. rom. 8. 35. 2.tim.3.11.

They are dead to ỹ world, and aliue with Christ to God.Col.3.3.

They are made like to the image of Christ. Rom.8. 29.

They cannot perish.Iohn.5. 24.

There is no condemnation for them.Rom.8.1.

They ought not to haue to do with the infidels, neither to be conuersant w christians of wicked life. 1.Cor.5.11. and 2. cor. 6. 14,17.ephes.5.7. 2.thes.3. 6.

At what time they were first called Christians. Act.11.26.

¶ False prophetes, Reade Preachers.

False witnesse, reade Witnesse.

Familie, it ought to be well gouerned and prouided for. 1.Tim.3.4. and 5.8.

Fasting and abstinence. Mat. 6.16. and 9.15. acts.13. and 14.23. 1. cor.7.5.

Father and mother must be obeyed and honoured. Reade Children, and Honour.

Wee must not loue them more then Christ.Mat.10. 37.luke 14.26.

Fathers taken for predecessours. Mat.23.30. acts. 10.heb.1.2.

We must not followe the

follies, abuſes, and vngodly cuſtomes. Mat. 15. 2. marke 7. 2. luke 11. 38. galat. 1. 10. act. 3. 17. and 7. 51. 1. pet. 1. 18.

¶ Feare of God, ſuch as children beare toward their fathers. Luke 1. 29. act. 9. 31. and 10 2. 2. cor. 5. 11. and 7. 1. ephe. 5. 21. col. 3. 22. 1. pet. 2. 17.

Such feare as ſeruauntes beare to their Maſters. Rom. 8. 15. ephe. 6. 5. reuel. 21. 8.

It is vſed for obedience & reuerence toward men. Roma. 13. 4. 2. cor. 7. 15. ephe. 6. 5. 1. pet. 3. 14.

Worldly and carnall feare. Iohn 9. 22. and 12. 42. and 19. 8.

We ought not to ſet by it. Mat. 10. 26. 1. pet 3. 14.

It is taken for trembling & aſtoniſhing. Mat. 14. 26. and 27. 54. and 28. 4. luke 1. 12. and 2. 9. act. 2. 43. & 5. 5, 11. and 19. 17. reuel. 11. 11.

Felix the preſident. Actes. 24. 22.

Feaſtes. Reade Dayes.

Feſtus the preſident. Actes 25. 1.

Figge tree accurſed of Chriſt. Mat. 21. 19.

¶ Fleſh taken for ỹ whole man. Mat. 24. 22. act. 2. 17. rom. 3. 20. 1. cor. 1. 26.

For the corrupt nature, affectiō or carnal wiſdome. Mat. 16. 17. iohn. 3. 6. rom. 7. 14. and 8. 5, 6.

The fruites and workes of the fleſh. Galat. 5. 19. eph. 2. 3.

It fighteth againſt the Spirit. Gal. 5. 17. 1. pet. 2. 11.

The fleſh & blood of Chriſt are our ſpirituall meat & drinke. Iohn 6. 51.

To flie in perſecution is lawfull. Mat. 2. 13. and 10. 23. and 24. 16. iohn 8. 59. act. 9. 25. and 13. 51. & 14. 6. 2. cor. 11. 33.

¶ Forgiuenes of ſinnes by the preaching of the goſpel. Mat. 16. 19. iohn 20. 43.

Sinnes freely forgiuē. Rom. 4. 7.

Onely by Chriſt. Ephe. 1. 7. acts. 5. 31. Read Chriſt.

Free will. Reade Workes.

G

GAbriel declareth the birth of Iohn Baptiſt. Luke 1. 13.

He ſaluteth the virgin Marie. Luke 1. 28.

Gamaliel. Acts. 5. 34.

Gate ſtraight or large. Mat. 7. 13. luke 13. 24.

¶ Gentiles, or heathen are left for a time to walk in their owne wayes. Act. 14 15. ephe. 2. 2.

They are receiued to the grace of the Goſpel. Act. 11. 17. & 14. 27. ephe. 3 6.

¶Giue we ought to whosoeuer desireth. Luke 6.30, 38.
It is better to giue then to receiue. Acts. 20.35.
¶Gifts of God. Iohn 4.10. & 10.28. ephes. 2.8. iam. 1.17. 2. pet. 1.3.
God giueth them, & repenteth not. Rom. 11.29.
They are different and peculiar. Rom. 12.6. 1. cor. 7. 7. ephe. 4.7. 1. pet. 4.10.
¶Glorie ought to be to Godwards. 1. Cor. 1.31. 2. cor. 10.17.
Wee ought to glorie in Christ, and his crosse. Gal. 6.14. phil. 3.3.
Also in our tribulations. Rom. 5.3.
None ought to glorie in himselfe. 1. Cor. 1.29. eph. 2.9.
Vaine glorie is forbidden. Mat. 23.6,7,8. gal. 5.26. phil. 2.3.
Gluttonie & drunkennesse are forbidden. Luk. 21.34. rom. 13.13. 1. cor. 5.11. and 6.10. gal. 5.21. heb. 13.9. 1. pet. 4.3.
¶God is one. Mar. 12.26. 1. corin. 8.4. eph. 4.6. 1. tim. 2.5.
He is a spirit. Iohn 4.24.
He is light, and dwelleth in the light. 1. Ioh. 1.5. 1. tim. 6.16.
Hee is inuisible. Iohn. 1.18. col. 1.15. 1. tim. 1.17. & 6. 16. 1. Iohn 4.12.
Immortal. 1. tim. 1.17. and 6. 16.
Father of all. ephe. 4.6.
Creator of all things. Acts 17.24. 1. cor. 8.6. & 11.12. ephes. 3.9. heb. 3.4. reuel. 4.11. and 10.6.
The beginning and the end Reuel. 21.6.
He worketh al in al things. 1. Cor. 12.6. ephe. 1.10.
Nothing is impossible to him. Mat. 19.26. luk. 1.37. and 18.27.
All goodnesse commeth of him. Matt. 7.7. iohn 3.27. roman. 11.36. 1. cor. 4.7. 2. cor. 9.8. ephes. 4.7. 1. tim. 6.17. iames 1.17. 2. pet. 1.3.
Hee giueth life, and being to all. Acts. 17.25. 1. tim. 6.13.
He only is good. Mat. 19.17.
Wise. Rom. 16.27. 1. tim. 1. 17. Iude 25.
Holy. Reuel. 15.4.
True and faithfull and cannot lie. Ioh. 3.33. rom. 3.4. 1. cor. 1.9. 1. thes. 5.24. 2. thes. 3.3. tit. 1.2. heb. 6.18. & 10.23. 1. ioh. 1.9 & 5.20.
Only prince, king of kings, &c. 1. tim. 6.15.
The knower and examiner of hearts. Act. 1.24. & 15.8. rom. 8.27. 1. thes. 2.4. 1. ioh. 3.20.
The knower of his. 2. ti. 2.19
The only forgiuer of sinnes. Mar. 2.7.
The iustifier, sanctifier, and quick-

quickner.Ioh.17.19.rom. 3.24. and 4.25.and 8.30.1. thes.5.23.
The only Sauiour. 1.Tim.2. 3.tit.3.4.iude 25.
Iudge of all. Hebr.12,23.1. pet.1.17.
He is the onely Lawmaker, which can destroy and saue.Iam.4.12.
He only teacheth & giueth the true wisdome.Ioh.6. 45.ephe.1.8, 17.colos.1.9. heb.8.11.iames.1.5.1.ioh. 5.20.
None is coũseller vnto him Rom.11.34.1.cor.2.16.
He onely ought to be worshipped. Mat.4.10.reuel. 19.10.and 22.9,
He dwelleth not in tẽples made with hands.Acts.7. 48.and 17.24.
But dwelleth in his, to wit, the faithful. Iohn 14.17. 1.iohn 4.15.Reade Faithfull.
He hath care ouer vs. Heb. 13.5.1.pet.5.7.
Hee heareth vs in our requestes. Mat.7.7. and 18. 19. and 21.22. 1. iohn 5. 15.
He chasteneth and proueth his.Heb.12.6.1am.1.12.1. pet.1.7.and 4.12,13.reue. 2.10.and 3.19.
He exhorteth to repentãce and attendeth. Rom.2.4. 2.pet.3.9.
We must followe, & be like him.Mat.5.44.ephe.5.1.1. iohn 2.6.
Gods, for princes & iudges iohn 10.34.
False gods, as idols and deuils.Act.14.15.and 19.26. 1.cor.8.1.and 10.20.gal2. 4.8.
¶ Gospel, ỹ is, good tidings, or newes.Rom.1.16.
It is the mysterie or secret of the will of God. Rom. 16.25.ephe.3.7. and 6.19. col.1.23.
The word of trueth. Eph.1. 13.
The administration of the Spirite and of iustice. 2. cor.3.8.
By it we obtaine saluation, Rom.1.16.1.cor.15.2.eph. 1.13.
It ought to be preached publikely through al the world to euery creature Mat.24.14. & 28. 19. mar. 16.15.act.1.8. col.1.23.
Whatsoeuer is not conteined in it, though the Angels of heauen bring it, ought not to be hearde, Galat.1.8.
It is the matter & occasion of diuision and discorde. Mat.10.35.mar.13.12.luk. 12.53.act.13.50.and 14.4. and 16.22. and 19.23. and 21.30.
It is hid from the wise and mightie of the world, and contemned of them, & is receiued of the poore & simple. Mat.11.25. ioh.7. 48.1.cor.1.21,25.& 2.7.

What things hinder the receiuing of it. Mat. 13.22. mar.4.19.luke 8.14. iohn 12.42.rom.9.32.and 10.3. 2.cor.4.4.
The effect and ſumme of it. 1.cor.15.2. 1.tim.3.16.
¶ Grace of God through Chriſt.Iohn 1.17.
By it we are ſaued. Acts.15. 11. rom. 11. 5. ephe. 2. 5. tit.3.7.
We ought to truſt in it. 1. pet.1.13.
Whoſoeuer truſteth in another loſeth it.Gal.5.2.
Grace or thanks rendred to God before meales,& after. Mat.14.19 & 15.36. and 26.26.1.tim.4.4,5.
We muſt render thankes to God for all things.Ephe. 5.20.1.theſ.5.18.

H

HAnde dried, healed of Chriſt.Mat.12.13.
To cut off the hand and the ſoot.Mat.5.30.and 18.8.
To put the hande to the plough.Luke 9.62.
Laying on of hands.Act.6.6. and 13.3. 1.tim.4.14.and 5 22.2.tim.1.6.
¶ Hardening of the heart cõmeth of God. Mat. 13. 15.iohn 12.40. acts.28.27. rom.11.8.
God hardeneth whome he will.rom.9.18.
¶ Harueſt is ripe and wee muſt praye God to ſende forth labourers.Mat.9.38.
Chriſt ſendeth his Apoſtles to mow ỹ harueſt which they had not ſowen.Iohn 4.38.
¶ Hate of the world againſt Chriſt, Reade Chriſt. Againſt the faithfull, Read Faithfull.
To hate one another is forbidden.Mat.5.44.tit.3.3. 1.iohn 2.9.and 3. 15. and 4.20.
We muſt hate ỹ euill.Rom. 12.9.
¶ Heauineſſe which is commendable. 2.Cor.7.9.
Diſcommendable. Luke 18. 23.2.cor.7.10.
¶ Heauen,the place of God. Mat.5.34.acts.7.49.
Heauen & earth ſhall paſſe away. Matth.24.35.hebr. 1. 11. 2. pet. 3. 10. reuel. 21.1.
Heauen and earth newe. 2. pet.3. 13.reuel.21.1.
Heauen open.Mat.3.16.act. 7.56.
¶ Head of Chriſt, God. 1. Cor.11.3.
Of ỹ Church, Chriſt.Eph.1. 22.and 4.15.& 5.23.col.1. 18.and 2.10.
Of the man.1.Cor.11.3.
The man head of ỹ woman. 1.Cor.11.3.Ephe.5.23.
¶ Hell. Luke 10.15. 2.pet.2. 4.iud.6.13. phil. 2. 10. reuel.6.8.
Taken for the graue. Acts 2.27,31.

Whoſe

Whose fire is vnquencheable. Mat.3.12. and 18.8. mar.9.44. luke 3.17.
The worme shall not die there. Mar.9.44.
Darkenesse where shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Mat.8.12. and 22.13 and 25.30.
¶ Heires of God, Reade Faithfull.
The inheritance of God in his Saints. Ephe.1.18. col. 1.12. 1.pet.1.4.
The inheritance is giuē by the promise. Gal.3.18.
¶ Heresies and sectes must needes be in the world, and wherfore. 1. Cor.11. 19. 2.pet.2.1.
We must flie frō heretikes. tit.3.10.
¶ Herod called also Ascalō killeth ȳ infants. Mat.2.16
Herode Antipas putteth Iohn Baptist to death Mat. 14.10.
He cōtemneth & mocketh Christ. Luke 23.11.
Herode Agrippa putteth Iames to death. Act.12.2
Hee is deuoured with vermine. Act.12.23.
Hypocrisie and hypocrites. Mat.6.2. and 7.5. luke 12. 1. col. 2.23. 1. tim. 4.2. Reade Pharises.
¶ Honour to God and to Christ. Iohn 5.23.
To father and mother. Mat. 15.4. and 19.19. ephes. 6.2.
To Kings and Magistrates. 1.pet.2.13.
To ministers. 1.tim.5.17.
To masters. 1.Tim.6.1.
Men must honour their wiues. 1.Pet.3.7.
To giue honour to euerie man that deserueth. Rom. 13.7.
To all. Rom.12.10. 1.pet.2. 17.
It is vsed, for to helpe, prouide, and to intreat wel. Mat.15.5. 2.pet.3.7. 1.tim. 5.8.
¶ Hope is one. Ephe.4.4.
It is of God. Rom.15.13. 2. thes.2.16.
It is of thinges which are not seene. Rom.8.24.
By it we are saued. In the same place.
We must haue it in God. 1. Tim.6.17. 1.pet.1.21.
And in Christ. Mat.12.21. rom.15.12. ephe.1.12.
It bringeth not shame. Rom. 5.5.
It must be sure and stedfast Col.1.23. heb.3.6. and 10. 23.
We must be readie to giue account of it. 1.Pet.3.15.
It is our spirituall armour. 1. Thes.5.8.
Wee must be glad, and reioyce in it. Rom 5.2. and 12.12.
¶ Hospitalitie, which is to receiue the poore and strangers, must be vsed. Matth.25.35. rom. 12. 13. heb.13.2. 1.pet.4.9.

Houſhould, reade, Familie.
¶ Humilitie or hũbleneſſe toward God. Mat. 18.10. luke 18.14. Iames 4.10.1. pet.5.6.
Among men. Mat. 18.4. & 23. 12. luke 14.11. rom. 12.16. eph.4.2. phi.2.3. col.3.12. 1.pet.5.5.

I

IAcob Act.7.12. rom.9.13. heb.11.20.
Iames ſone of Zebede, brother of Iohn, is called of Chriſt. Mat.4.21.
Hee was killed of Herod. Act.12.2.
Iannes and Iambres reſiſt Moſes. 2. Tim.3.8.
Idleneſſe is condemned. 2. Theſ.3.11.1.tim.5.13.
Idle talke. Mat.12.36.
¶ Idolatrie or worſhipping of images or creatures is condemned. Act 7.43. and 14.11.18. and 15.20.29. & 17.16. and 19.28. rom.1.25.1.cor.8.7. and 10.7.19, 20. gal.5.20. col.3.5. 1.col. 6.9. 1.peter 4.3. 1.Iohn 5. 21.
Idolaters muſt be auoided. 1.Cor.5.11. & 6.9. 2.cor. 6.16. reuel.2.20.
They are puniſhed and condemned. reue.9.20. & 21. 8. and 22.15.
¶ Ieruſalem ỹ earthly. Mat. 5.35.
Chriſtes entrie into it. mat. 21.1,18.
The deſtructiõ therof foretolde. Mat.23.37.
The heauenly Ieruſalẽ. Gal. 4.26. heb.12.22.
The new Ieruſalem. Reuel. 3.12. and 21.2.
Ieſus the name of Chriſt. matth.1.25. luke 1.31. & 21.8.
Iewes & their excellencie. Rom.3.2.9. and 9.5.
Yet they haue bin blinded and beleeued not. Iohn 12.38. rom. 11.7. 2.cor.3. 14.
They were reiected, & the Gentiles receiued. Mat. 8.11. and 21.43. rom.11. 11.
They ſhalbe reſtored againe if they remain not in their vnbeleefe. Rom. 11.23.
They are not to be caſt off, but to be loued, & prayed for. Rom.1.10. and 10.1. and 11.28.
There is no difference betweene Iewe & Gentile. Rom.10.12.
Of the inward & outwarde Iewe Rom 2.29.
Iezabel ỹ ſpirituall whore. Reuel.2.20.
¶ Ignorance of God. Act.17. 30. rom.10.3. 1.cor.15.34 galat.4.9. epheſ.4.18. 1 theſ 4.5.
Such as may be pardoned. Act.3.17. 1.tim.1.13.
That which is indurate and

Irremissible. 2.Thes.1.8. 1.tim.1.6.2.pet.2.12.
Image of God is Christ, Reade Christ.
Man is the image of God.1. Cor.11.7.col.3.10.
Inconstancie. 2. Cor.1.17. gal.1.6.2.tim.4.10.iam.1.8.
¶ Infidelity is in al.Rom.11. 30.
In the faithful, Mat.14.31.& 17.20. mar.9.24.& 16.14. luke 24.25.iohn 20.27.
In the reprobate.Matth.23. 39. iohn 6. 64. and 10.25. actes 19.9. rom. 11.10. 2. thes.1.8.
Infidels and reprobate, the children of incredulitie or disobedience.Ephe.2. 2.and 5.6.col.3.6.
Children of the deuil. Mat. 13.38.iohn 8.44. 1. iohn 3.8.
Cursed and the children of malediction.Mat.25.41.2. pet.2.14.
Vessels of wrath and of dishonor, appointed to perdition. rom.9.22. 2.tim.2. 20.2.pet.2.12.iude 4.
Abominable and reprobate in euery good worke.tit. 1.16.
Blinded of the deuil.2.Cor. 4.4.
Condemned. Mar.16.16.ioh. 3.18.
The anger of God remayneth vpon them.Ioh.3.36
They shal go into hell fire. Mat.3.12.& 25.41.mar.9. 43.ioh.15.6.2. thes.1.9.heb. 10.27.reuel.20.14.& 21.8.
We may not haue to do w them.Read Faithful.
¶ Infirmitie and infirme in faith ought to be borne with, that they may be wonne. Rom.14.1.& 15.2. 1.cor.9.22.1.thes.5.14.
We must not offende them, Rom.14.13.1.cor.8.9.
The vertue of God worketh in infirmitie. 2.Cor.12.5.
God chuseth ỹ weak things of the world. 1.Cor.1.27.
Infirme in ỹ body are healed of Christ. Mat.4.23.& 8.13. and 9.7. & 12.13.and 14.36.and 15.28.and 19.2 luke 14.4. iohn 4. 50. and 5.8.
Infirmities & diseases some times come for sinne. Iohn 5.14.
Sometimes for the glory of God. Iohn 9.3. and 11. 4.
Iniurie or wrong ought not to be done nor rendred, but to be borne. Mat. 5. 39. rom.12.17. 1.cor.6.7. 1.thes.5.15.1.pet.3.9.
Iob ought to be an ensample of patience ỹnto vs. iam.5.11.
Iohn Baptist sent of God to beare witnesse to Christ. Iohn 1.6.
Ioy.Read Glory.
Ioseph the husband of Marie the virgin. Mat.1.16.luk. 1.27.Ioseph of Arimathea. Mat.27.

Mat.27.57.iohn 19.38.
Ioseph the Patriarke, Act.7. 9.heb.11.22.
Ioseph called Barnabas. Act. 4.36.
Israelites which are in deede Rom.9.4,8.
¶ Iohn Baptists birth. Luke 1.57.
Hee preacheth, baptizeth, and declareth Christ. Matth.3.1,6,11.luke 3.3. and 7.19.iohn 1.23,26,34. and 3.29.
Christ witnesseth of him. Matth.11.11.luke 7.28.
His death. Mat.14.10.
He is Elias.Matt.11.14.and 17.12.
¶ Iudas selleth and betrayeth Christ. Mat.26.15,48.
Christ discouereth him to Iohn.Iohn 13.26.
He repenteth and hangeth himselfe. Mat.27.5.
¶ Iudgement of God, taken for his secret counsel and workes, are incomprehensible, true, and iust. Rom. 11.33.reuel.19.2.
Iudgement of God taken for correction.1.Cor.11. 32.1.pet.4.17.
Taken for damnation. Mar. 3.29.1.cor.11.29.
The vniuersall iudgement. Mat.11.24. act.17.31.heb. 9.27.
After what sort it shalbe, Mat.25.31,32.
What signes shall goe before.Mat.24.29.
The daye and houre is not knowen. Mat.24.36.mar. 13.32. 1.thes.5.2. 2.pet.3. 10.reuel.3.3.
We must waite for it from houre to houre. Matt.24. 44.luke.12.36.iam.5.7,8.
Then all thinges shalbe discouered, and euery man shal receiue his reward, Rom.2.6.2.tim.4.8.
To iudge our brother is forbidden. Mat.7.1.rom. 2.3.and 14.3,13.1.cor.4.5. iames 4.11.
We must iudge iustly & not after the person. Iohn 7. 24.
Iustice and iustification, Looke Christ and Faith.

KEyes of the kingdome of heauen (either to open it, or to shut it.) Mat.16. 19.and 18 18. iob.20.23.
The keyes of knowledge. Luke 11.52.
The keyes of hel and death. Reuel.1.18.
¶ Kingdome of God, or of heauen by his spirituall gouernement of ỹ faithfull in the person of Iesus Christ.Mat.3.2.mar.1. 15.
It is not with obseruation, but is within vs.Luke 17. 20,21.
It is taken for ỹ preaching of the Gospel. Mat.13,31. mar.4.

mar.4.30,31,32.
It is taken for life euerlasting. Iohn 3.3.
It is prepared for the elect. Mat.25.34.
Who are shut thence. Mar. 10.15. Iohn 3.3. 1.cor.6. 9 and 15. 50. galat.5.21. ephe.5.5. reuel.21.8. and 22.15.
Wee must enter into it by many tribulations. Actes 14.22.
The kingdome of Christ eternall. Luk.1.33.2.pet.1. 11.
A kingdome diuided. Matt. 12.25.
¶ Knowledge of God. Iohn 17.3.
It is giuen of Christ. Matth. 11.27. Iohn 1.17. and 14. 7.and 17.22.1.Iohn 5.20.
The worlde hath not the Knowledge of God. Iohn 1.10.and 8.55.and 17.25. 1.cor.1.21 1.Iohn 3.6.
The knowledge of sinne by the Lawe. Rom.3.20.and 7.7.

L

LAbour & trauaile commanded to all.1.Thes.4. 11.2.thes.3.8,12.
Saint Paul laboured with his owne handes.Actes.18. 3. and 20.34. 1.cor.4.12. 2.thes.2.9 and 3.8.
¶ Lawe ceremoniall was a scholemaster and a, b, c, to leade to Christ.Gal.3, 24.and 4.2.
A shadowe of good thinges to come.Heb.10.1.
It was weake, & impotent to saue by,Gal.4 9.heb.7. 18.and 10.4.
It is aboliſhed by Christ, Reade Christ.
The lawe moral, good, iust, & holy. Rom.7.12.1.tim. 1.8.
The law spiritual which requireth perfect and pure obedience of the heart. Rom 7.14.
It is giuen to make sinne knowen. Rom.3.20. and 7.7,21.Galat.3.19.
And to cause it to abound, Rom.5.20.
It is ỹ force of sinne.1.Cor. 15.56.
It is the administration of death,and damnation. 2. Cor.3.7,9.
A yoke importable.Acts.15. 10.
Procuring anger.Rom.4.15.
No man can obserue and keepe it. Acts.15.10.rom. 7.8.galat.3.13.
It cannot iustifie. Acts. 13. 39.rom.3.20. and 4.13.& 5. 20. and 7.8. 2. cor. 3.6. galat.2.16, 19. and 3. 11, 21,24.
He that is vnder it,is accursed.Gal.3.16.
Christ hath deliuered vs from the curse thereof. Gal.3.13.and 4.5.

It is

It is written of God in the heart of the faithful. Heb. 8.10.
Yet they do not fulfil it perfectly. Rom. 7.23.
It is not giuen for the iust, but for the vniust. 1. Tim. 1.9.
The summe thereof. Mat. 22. 37. rom. 13.9. gal. 5.14.
¶ Lazarus the poore man. Luke 16.20.
The brother of Martha. Ioh. 11.1, 11, 43.
Leaue we must all things to follow Christ. Mat. 19.29. luke 14.26, 33.
Lepers healed of Christ. Mat. 8.2. luke 17.14.
Letter, and Spirit. Rom. 7.6. 2. cor. 3.6.
¶ Leuain taken for euil doctrine. Mat. 16.6.
The old leuain ought to be purged. 1. Cor. 5.7.
Libell of diuorce. Reade Mariage.
¶ Liberty spiritual from the bondage of sinne. Ioh. 8. 35. rom. 6.20. and 8.2.
From the subiection and curse of the Lawe. Rom. 7 6. gala. 3.13. and 4.5. and 5.1.
From the tyrannie of the deuil, death, & hell. Rom. 8.2. 1. corinth. 15.55. heb. 2 14.
From the ceremonies of ỹ lawe. Gal. 2.4. & 5.1 colos. 2.14.
From all things indifferent. 1. Tim. 4.4. tit. 1.15.
This libertie must not be turned to the offence of our brother, but must be measured by charitie. Rom. 14.15. 1. cor. 6.12. & 8.7, 10. and 9.22. gal. 5.13.
Carnall libertie. Galat. 5.13. 1. pet. 2.16. 2. pet. 2.19.
¶ Life bodily is a thing that fadeth. Iam. 4.14.
Wee ought not to disquiet our selues, how to maintaine it. Mat. 6.25.
We must render it, and forsake it for Christes cause. Mat. 10 39. ioh. 12.25. act. 20.24. reuel. 12.11.
¶ Life euerlasting. Ioh. 17.2.
It is the gift of God. Iohn 6. 27. and 10.28. rom. 6.22. tit. 1.2. and 3.7. 1. iohn 2. 25.
¶ Lying forbidden. Colos. 3. 9. iam. 3.14. reuel. 21.27. & 22.15.
Lying in doctrine. 2. Thes. 2. 11. 1. tim. 4.1. reuel. 2.2.
Euery mã is a liar. Rom. 3.4.
And whosoeuer doeth not confesse himselfe to be a sinner. 1. Iohn 1.10.
And he that sayth he knoweth God, and keepeth not his commaundements. 1. Iohn 2.4.
Also hee that denieth Iesus to be Christ. 1. Iohn 2.22.
And he that saith he loueth God, and hateth his brother. 1. Iohn 4.20.
Lot. 2. Pet. 2.7.

His dayes. Luke 17.28.
¶ To loue God. Mat.22.37. mar.12.30.
To loue Christ. Mat.10.37.
To loue our neighbour. Mat. 5.43. and 22.39. luke 10.27. gal.5.14. iam.2.8.
To loue one another. Iohn 13.34. rom.12.10. and 13.8. 1.thes.4.9. 1.peter.1.22. 1. iohn 3.11.
To loue our enemies. Mat. 5.44. luk.6.35. rom.12.20.
The loue of God and Christ towardes vs. Iohn 3.16. rom.8.39. ephe.5.2. reuel. 1.5.
Luke the Physition. Colos.4 14.
Lunatike healed of Christ. Mat.4.24. and 17.18.
Luxurie, reade Adulterie.

M

MAgistrates are ordeined of God, & to what end, Rom.13.4,6. 1.pet.2.13.
Wee ought to obey them. tit.3.1.
To pay them tribute. Luke 20.25. rom.13.6.
Wee must pray for them. 1. tim.2.2.
We may not contemne them, nor speake euill of them. 2.Pet.2.10. iude 8.
But if they commande any thing against God, wee must not obey them. Act. 4.19.
Malice is cõdemned. Rom. 1.29. 1.Cor.5.8. and 14.20. ephe.4.31. col.3.8. tit.3.3. 1.pet.2.1.
¶ Man which is earthly and heauenly. 1.Cor.15.47.
The old and new man. Rom. 6.6. ephes.4.22,24. col.3.9.
Carnall, & sold vnder sinne. Iohn 3.6. rom.7.14.
Sensuall. 1.Cor.2.14.
Spiritual. Iohn 3.5. 1.cor.2. 15.
The outward man or body. 2. Cor.4.16.
The inward, or spiritual cõceiued by the worde. 2. Cor.4.16. ephes.3.16. 1. pet.3.4.
Euery man is a sinner. Rom. 3.9,23. and 5.12. gal.3.22. 1.iohn 1.8.
Is a lyar. Rom.3.4.
Vnbeleeuing. Rom.11.30.
Naturally the childe of wrath. Ephe.2.3.
Death and damnation haue reigned ouer euery man. Rom.5.14. 1.cor.15.21.
¶ Marie the virgine, wife of Ioseph. Mat.1.16,20.
She is saluted of the Angel. Luke 1.28.
She beareth Christ. Luk.2.7
Her song. Luke 1.46.
She sendeth vs to Christ. Iohn 2.5.
¶ Marie the sister of Martha. Luke 10.39. iohn 11.1, 32.
She anointeth Christes feet. Iohn 12.3.
¶ Mariage is an inseparable con-

coniunction of the husband & the wife. Mat. 19. 5. 1. cor. 7. 4, 10.
It is ordeined of God. Mat. 19. 5.
It is graunted to all. 1. Cor. 7. 2.
It is honourable to all folk, Heb. 13. 4.
It is necessarie for whosoeuer hath not the gift of continencie. Mat. 19. 12. 1. cor. 7. 2, 9.
Christ honoured it with his presence, and first miracle. Iohn 2. 2.
It is compared to the ioyning of Christ with his Church Ephe. 5. 29.
Man cannot vndoe it. Mat. 19. 6.
Fornication disseuereth & breaketh it. Mat 5. 32. and 19. 9. 1 cor. 7. 10.
The bond betwene the husband & the wife, also betweene the wife and the husband, and howe they ought to behaue themselues the one to the other. 1. Cor. 7. 3, 12, 13, 14, 34. ephe. 5. 28, 33. colos 3. 18, 19. 1. tim. 2. 12. tit. 2. 5. 1. pet. 3. 1, 7.
Martha. Luke 10 38. iohn 11. 20.
Masters howe they should behaue themselues toward their seruants. Eph. 6. 9. col. 4. 1.
Matthew called Leui. Matt. 9. 9. luke 5. 27.
Matthias is elected Apostle. Acts. 1. 26.
¶ Meate that endureth, and spiritual. Iohn 6 51. 1. cor. 10. 4.
Corporall meates make vs not acceptable to God. 1. Cor. 8. 8. heb. 13. 9.
There is no difference betwixt these bodily meats, as touching matter of conscience. Mar. 7. 18. luk. 10. 8. actes 10. 13. rom. 14 14. 1. cor. 10. 25. colos. 2. 16. 1. tim. 4 3.
Melchisedec. Heb. 7. 1.
Members one of another, are the faithfull. Rom. 12. 5. 1. cor. 12. 25. ephes 4. 25.
Of Christ, our bodies are members. 1. Corin. 6. 15. ephes. 5. 30.
Our members are the temple of the holy Ghost. 1. Cor. 6. 19.
Our members ought to serue in holinesse. Rom. 6. 19.
Wee must mortifie them. Col. 3. 5.
¶ Mercie of God through Christ. Ephes. 2. 4. hebr. 4. 16. 1. pet. 1. 3.
By it we haue saluation Tit. 3. 4. 1. pet. 1. 5.
God sheweth it to whom pleaseth him. Rom. 9. 15.
It is shewed to ỳ Gentiles Rom. 11. 30. and 15. 9.
God will shewe it to them that feare him. Luk 1. 50.
And to them that repent Luke 15. 20.

Alſo to the faithful. 1. Pet. 2. 10.
It is commaunded among men. Luke 6. 36. epheſ. 4. 32. coloſ. 3. 13. 1. pet. 3. 8.
God wil haue mercy & not ſacrifice. Mat. 9. 13, and 12. 7.
Bleſſed are they that do it. Mat 5 7.
He that doth it not, let him not looke for it of God. Iames 2. 13.
It is one of the chiefeſt thinges that ought to be done. Mat. 23 23.
Wee ought to ſhewe it towards all. Luke 10. 33, 37.
Michael ỹ Archangel. Iude 9 reuel. 12 7.
¶ Miniſtration of the word, or preaching the Goſpel. Act 20 24. 2. cor. 5 20.
Miniſters, Read Preachers.
¶ Miracles true, are of God to confirme his trueth. Mat. 16. 17. iohn 5. 36. and 10. 25. and 20. 31. actes 2. 22. and 4. 30. and 14. 3. 2. cor. 12 12. heb. 2. 4.
They are wrought in the Name of Ieſus Chriſt. Mar. 16. 17. acts 3. 16. and 4. 10, 30. and 9. 34.
Falſe miracles are of ỹ deuill to deceiue and confirme his falſly. Mat. 24. 24. 2. theſ. 2. 9. reuel. 13. 14. and 16. 14.
Workers and deſpiſers of the Goſpel. Act. 2. 13. and 17. 32. 2. pet. 3. 3. iude 18.
No man ought to be deſpiſed. Mat. 18. 10.
¶ Moſes. Acts. 7. 20. hebr. 11. 23.
Why he hid his face. 2. Cor. 3. 13.
¶ Mortifying of our ſelues. Rom. 8. 13. coloſ. 3. 5.
It is to dye to ſinne. Rom. 6. 2.
Mortification by the croſſe. 2. Cor. 4. 10.
Mote in the eye. Mat. 7. 3.
Murmure & grudging ought to be auoyded. 1. Cor. 10. 10. philip. 2. 14.
Murmurers. Matt. 20. 11. luke 5. 30. and 15. 2. and 19. 7. iohn 6. 41, 61. rom. 1. 29. iude 16.
¶ Murther and murtherers condemned. Matt. 5. 21 & 15. 19. and 19. 18. rom. 1. 29. and 13. 9. gal. 5. 21. 1. tim. 1. 9. 1. pet 4. 15. reuel. 21, 8. and 22. 15.
He that hateth is a murtherer. 1. Iohn 3. 15.

N

NAthanael. Iohn 1. 46.
Neighbour, is euery man. Luke 10. 36.
Wee ought to loue him as our ſelfe, Read Loue and Charitie.
Newnes of life, is of the ſpirite. Iohn 3. 6.
Newe man, Reade Man, and Creature.

Nicodemus,

Nicodemus. Iohn 3.1. and 7. 50. and 19.39.
¶ Noe. Heb.11.7. 2.pet.2.5.
His dayes. Mat.24.37. 1.pet. 3.20.

O

OBedience to God rather then to man. Act.4.19.& 5.29.
To the Gospell and to the trueth. Rom.1.9. and 15. 20. and 16.25. 2.cor.9.13. 1. pet.1.12.
To Fathers, Read Children. to Princes, reade Magistrates. to Preachers, reade Preachers. to Masters, reade Seruants.
Wee must not obey sinne. Rom.6.16.
Oblation. Read Sacrifice.
¶ Offece, slander, let, or hinderance to come to God, and to Christ, or occasion giuen to drawback, or to fall by any meanes into sinne and destruction. Mat.18.7.
Wee ought not to giue it, Mat.17. 27. rom.14. 13. 1. cor.8.9,13.
Wo be to him that giueth it. Mat.18.7.
Offence taken vniustly. Mat. 24.10. and 26.31. mar.6.3. ioh 6.61. 1.cor.1.23. gal.5. 11.
Happy is he that taketh it not. Mat.11.6.
We ought to put away frō vs all things that should giue offence, be they neuer so deare. Mat.5.29 & 18.8.
Wicked men are called offences or slanders. Mat. 13.41.
Oliue tree wilde. Rom.11. 17.
Christ is ỹ true oliue tree. Rom.11.17.
Onesimus. Philemon 10.
Onesiphorus 2.Tim.1.16.
¶ Othe of God. Heb.6.17.& 7.21.
To what end an oth is made among men. Heb.6,16.
It is prohibited in our priuate cause. Mat.5.34. iam. 5.12.

P

PAtience is necessarie for the faithfull. Luk.21.19. rom.5.3.& 8.25. & 12.12. and 15.4. colos.1.11.& 3. 12.1.thes.5.14. heb.10.36. and 12.1. iames 1.3. and 5. 7.
Palsie healed of Christ. Mat. 9.2,6.
¶ Parable or similitude. Of the candle light. Mat.5.15 luke 11.33.
Of the house built vpō the sand. Mat.7.26.
Of the children in ỹ streets Mat.11.16.
Of the piece of new cloth. Mat.9.16.
Of the sower. Mat.13.3,18.

Of the darnell or cockle. Mat. 13.27.
Of the graine of mustarde seede. Mat. 13.31.
Of leuain Mat. 13.33.
Of the treasure hid, of the marchant & the pearle, of the net. Mat. 13.44.
Of the lost sheepe. Mat. 18. 12.
Of the seruant that pitieth not his companion, Mat. 18.28.
Of the workemen sent to labour in the vineyarde. Mat. 20.2.
Of two Sonnes. Mat. 21.28.
Of ỹ vineyard hired forth. Mat. 21.33.
Of ỹ King that maketh the marriage. Mat. 22.2.
Of the faithful or naughtie seruant. Mat. 24.25.48.
Of the ten virgins. Mat. 25.1.
Of the talentes. Mat. 25.15. luke 19.13.
Of the seede that groweth and encreaseth. Mar. 4.27.
Of the Samaritan. Luke 10. 33.
Of the importunate friend. Luke 11.8.
Of the strong man armed. Luke 11.21.
Of the man that gathereth much fruit. Luke 12.16.
Of the barren fig tree. Luk. 13.6.
Of him that was bid to the feast & setteth him self in ỹ chiefest place. Lu. 14.8.
Of the dramme or piece of siluer lost. Luke 15.8.
Of the prodigal sonne. Luk. 15.12.
Of the vniust steward. Luke 16.1.
Of ỹ importunate widowe. Luke 18.3.
Paradise. Luke 23.43.
Pardon wee must him that offendeth vs. Mat. 6.14. & 18.22.35. mar. 11.25. luke 17.3. ephe. 4.32. col. 3.13.
Parents, Reade Father.
¶ Paul, his vocation, and his acts, his preachings, miracles, iourneys, trauailes, persecutions, perils, and other afflictions, from the 8. chapter of the Acts euen to the last, and throughout all his Epistles.
The ambassadour of Christ, 2. Cor. 5.20.
The Apostle of ỹ Gentiles, Rom. 11.13. gal. 2.8. 1. tim. 2.7.
He hath layd the foundation. 1. Cor. 3.10.
He laboureth w̄ his handes to gaine his liuing without charging any man, Reade Labour.
Howe much he suffred for the Gospel. 1. Cor. 4.9. 2. cor. 4.9. & 11.24. & 12.7. 2. tim. 2.10. and 3.11.
His example of life & doctrine ought to be followed 1. Cor. 4.16. & 11.1. phil. 3. 17. 1. thes. 1.6. 2. thes. 3.9.

His reuelations.2.Cor.12.1.
¶ Peace of God & of Christ by the Gospel.Luke 2.14. and 24.36.Ioh.14.27. and 16.33.act.10.36. rom.5.1. ephes.2.14.phil.4.7. col. 3.15.
Peace with our neighbour, Mat.5.9. mark.9.50. rom. 12.18. and 14.19. 1.cor. 14.33.2.cor.13.11.ephes. 4.3. 1.thes.5.13. 2.tim.2. 22. hebr. 12. 14. 1.pet.3. 11.
Peace of the world, which Christ giueth not.Mat.10. 34.Ioh.14.27.1.thes.5.3.
¶ Persecution followeth ỹ true Christians.Luk.1.12. 2.tim.3.11.
The verie kinsfolkes doe sometimes persecute.Mat 10.21,35.luke 21.16.
Blessed are they that suffer it willingly. Mat.5.10,11. 1.pet.4.14.
In-time of persecution we may flee, Reade Flee.
It commeth by the will of God.1.Pet.2.19. & 3.17. and 4.19.
Examples of the same.Mat. 26.50.acts.4.3. and 6.12. and 7.58.and 8.1.and 12. 2.and 13.50. & 14.5.and 16.22. and 17.6. & 18.17. and 19.29.& 21.30. rom. 8.35. 2. cor.11.24. hebr. 11.36,37.
They ỹ persecute through ignorance, are receiued to repentance. Act.3.17. 1.tim.1.13.
The obstinate persecuters are punished.Luk. 23.28. act.12.23.2.tim.4.15.
¶Perseuerance.Mat.10.22.
It is the gift of God who onely can confirme his in goodnes. Rom.16.25. 1. cor.1.4. 2.cor.1.21. phil. 1.6. 1.thes.3.13. & 5.23. 2.thes.2.16.& 3.5. 1.pet. 5.10.
¶ Peter called Cephas of Christ.Iohn 1.42.
He & Andrew his brother are called.Mat.4.18.
He is called Satan. Mat.16. 23.
He denieth Christ, Mat.26. 70.
He preacheth Christ. Act.2. 22.and 3.13 and 10.36.
His vision. Act.10.11.
He is put in prison.act.12.4.
¶Pharises & Scribes are reproued of Christe for their hypocrisie and malice.Mat.9.12.& 12.al the chapter. and 15.37. & 19. 8.and 22.18. and 23. all the chapter.
Philip the Apostle. Iohn.1. 43.and 14.8.
Philip the deacon.Act.8.5, 30.and 21.8.
Philosophie, whereof we must take heede.col 2.8.
Pilate & his behauiour toward Christ. Iohn 18.29, 30,38.and 19.1. &c.
Poets alledged.Act.17.28.1. cor.15.33.tit.1.12.

Pompe & ruffeling. Mat.12. 38.&c. luk.7.25. 1.iohn 2. 16.reue.17.4. and 18. all the chapter.

¶Poore muſt be ſuccoured, Luk. 14.13.gal.2.10.Reade Almes.

Wee muſt not contemne them.Iames 2.2.

Poore in ſpirit.Mat.5.3 luk. 6.20.

To them is ỹ Goſpel preached.Mat.11.5.

¶Prayer howe it ought to be made.Mat.6.5.

In ſpirit.Ephe.6.18.iude.20.

It muſt be in faith. Mat.21. 21.mark.11.23. iohn 15.7. iames 1.6.and 5.15.

In ỹ Name of Chriſt,Reade Chriſt.

Continual and perſeuering Luke 11 8. and 18.1.&21. 36.actes 1.14. and 2.42. rom.2.12.epheſ.6.18.col. 4.2.1.theſ.5.17. 1.tim.5.5. 1.pet.4.7.

In euery place.1.tim.2.8.

One pray for another. Iam. 5.16.

For the Saintes.Ephe.6.18. 1.theſ.5.26.heb.13.24.

For Kings and Magiſtrates. 1.tim.2.2.

For the enemies and perſecuters.Mat.5.44.luk.6.35. and 23.34.actes 7.60.

For all men.1.Tim.2.1.

Againſt tentations. Mat.26. 41.luke 22.40.

In affliction.Actes 12.5.rom. 15.30.iam.5.13.

With faſting,reade Faſting

The forme of prayer. Mat. 6.9.luke 11.2.

¶Publike,and in the aſſemblie of many.Act.1.14,24. and 4.24,31.and 12.5.and 20.36.and 21.5.

It muſt be in that language which ỹ aſſemblie doeth vnderſtand. 1.Cor.14.13.

Of priuate prayer we haue ỹ example in Chriſt.Mat. 14.23.and 26 39. luk.5.16. and 6.12.and 22.32.

¶Preachers or miniſters of Chriſt to preach his Goſpel,& to feede his flocke with the worde of God, Iohn 21.15.acts.20.28. 1. cor.3.5.and 4.1.2.cor.3.6. ephe.3.7.col.1.7.1.tim.4. 6.1.pet.5.2.

They are ſent of God.Mark. 16.15. iohn 20.21.rom.10. 15.

They may not preache but that which Chriſt hath commanded, that is, the onely word of God.Mat. 28.20.1.cor.2.13.1.tim.1. 5.1 pet.4.11.2 iohn.9.

According to Chriſtes example.Iohn 7.17.

We muſt heare ſuch & obey thē.Luk 10.16.2.cor. 2.9. phil.2.12. 2.theſ.3.4, 14.heb.13.22.

We muſt receiue ſuch,nouriſh them and eſteeme them. Mat.10.40.iohn 13. 20.galat.6.6. 1. theſ.5.13. 1.tim.5.17.3.iohn 8.

They may liue of the Gospel. Rom.15.26,27,28. 1. cor.9.7,9.
They are helpers of the faithful and not lordes of their faith. 2.Cor.1.24. 1. pet.5.3.
They are seruants of the faithful.Mat.20.27.luk.22. 27. 2.cor.4.5.
Their power is to edifie & not to destroy.2.cor.13.10.
They must bee appointed particularly through all Churches.Acts.14.23.tit. 1.5.
What things & conditions are required in thē.1.Tim 3.2ē.tit.1.6,9. 1.pet.5.2.
They ought to be a good example to others. phil. 3.17. 2.thes.3.9. tit.2.7. 1. pet.5.3.
False preachers are prophecied to come, and to deceiue many. Mat.24.11. act.20 29. 1.tim.4. 1.2.tim. 3.2.and 4.3.2.pet.2.1.
With wonderful signes and miracles. Mat. 24.24. 2. thes.2.9. reue.13.13.
They make marchandise of ye word of God.2.cor.2.17.
They teache the commandements and doctrine of men, & deuils. col.2.8. 1. tim.4 1,3.
They serue their bellie, which is their God.Rom. 16.18.philip.3.19.
Predestination, Reade Election.
¶Pride and arrogācie condemned.Mark.7.22.rom. 11.25.& 12.16. 1.cor.4.6, 18. 2.cor.12.20. phil.2.3. 1.tim.3.6.& 6.4.2.tim.3.2. iam.4.16.2.pet.2.18.1.ioh. 2.16.inde 16.
God resisteth ye proud,Luk. 1.51.iam.4.6.1.pet.5.5.
¶Priesthood,Leuiticall according to the Law.Heb. 7.5,11.
Of Christ according to the order of Melchisedec. Heb.7.all the chapter.
The perpetuall priest, and hie bishop of the Newe testament, reade Christ.
The faithfull are spirituall Priests made of Christ.1. pet.2.5,9.reu.1.6.& 5.10.
The Priests procure Christs death. Mat.21.45.and 26. 3.and 27.1.
They persecute his,and his doctrine.Act.4.3.
Prisoners must be visited, Mat.25.36,43.Heb.13.3.
Proces in lawe must be auoyded. Mat.5.40. 1.cor. 6.1,2,3,4.
¶Promes made to the Gentiles.Act.2.39. rom.4.16. gala.3.8,22.
The same that was made to the fathers. 2.cor.7.1.
¶Prophets for shewers of things to come.Act.11.27.
For interpreters of the Scriptures, and how they oughtto exercise their office in ye Church. 1.Co.14.

Prophecie is ỹ gift of God, and no worldly thing, Roma.12.6. 1. cor.12.10. 2.pet.1.21.
¶Proue ỹ spirits.1. Ioh.4.1.
Euery man proue him selfe, 1.Cor.11.28.2.cor.13.5.
To proue euery thing. 1. thes.5.21.
¶ Punishment of euerie crime, that is openly knowen, is committed to the magistrate. Rom. 13.4.1.pet.2.14.
No punishment chanceth to the faithfull saue for a time to correct them. 1. cor.5.5.& 11.32. 1.pe.4.12
But ỹ vnbeleeuers haue euerlasting punishment, Mat.3.12.& 25.41. mar.9. 44.reuel.20.15. and 21.8.

Q

QVeene of ỹ South.Mat. 12.42.
Questions, disputations, & contention of wordes ought to bee auoyded, Rom.14.1.phil.2.14.1.tim. 1.4.& 6.4.2.tim.2.23.tit.3. 9.Looke Contention.

R

RAhab the harlot. Hebr. 11.31.iam.2.25.
¶Raiment should not be cared for.Mat.6.25,28.
We must take away the superfluitie thereof. Luk.3. 11.and 7.25. iam.2.2,3.1. iohn 3.17.
It must be simple & honest, 1.tim.2.9. 1 pet.3.5.
Raiment spirituall. Mat.22. 11.luk.24.49.rom.13.12. 2.cor.5.2.gala.3.27.ephe. 4.24. col.3.10. Reade Armour.
Raiment & meat must not be sought for carefully, Reade Life,& Raiment.
We must be content with whatsoeuer God sendeth, 1.tim.6.8.
Rancour or malice. Ephes. 4.31.heb.12.15.
¶Reconciling toward God, Looke Christ.
Towarde our neighbour. Matt.5.24.
Regeneration spirituall.Ioh. 3.3.1.pet.1.3.Looke Baptisme.
¶ Reioyce wee ought alwayes. 2.Cor.6.10. & 13. 11.phil.3.1.& 4.4. 1.thes. 5.16.
In tribulations & persecutions Mat.5.12.acts.5.41. 1.thes.1.6.heb.10.34.iam. 1.2.1.pet.4.13.
With whom we ought to reioyce. Rom.12.12.
We ought to reioyce that our names are written in heauen.Luke 10.20.
¶Religion true. Iam.1.27.
False and suspicious. Colos. 2.23.
Renounce or forsake him selfe,and all that he hath

to follow Christ. Mat.16. 24.luke 14.33.
¶Repentance, that is, sorowing for our sinnes, with amendement of life by turning to God. Mat. 3.2.and 4.17.luke 15.7,10. and 24.47.act.2.38.and 3. 19.and 17.30.
It must be ioyned w fayth, Mat.1,15.act.20.21.
It is the gift of God.Ioh.12. 40.act.5.31.and 11.18.and 26.20.2.tim.2.25.
Reprobate.Ioh.10.26. rom. 1.28.2.thessa.2.12.iude 4. Reade Iewes, & infidels.
¶Resurrection spirituall by faith.Luke 2.34. iohn 11. 25.col.2.12.and 3.1.
The vniuersall resurrection of the bodies. Act.24.15. rom.14.9.2 cor.5.15.
Of ỹ righteous,to life euerlasting,& of the vnrighteous to euerlasting dãnation.Mat.25.46.ioh.5.29.
In what sort & after what order it shalbe. 1.cor.15. 42,43,44,45. 1.thes.4.17.
The resurrection of Christ is the foundation of our resurrection. 1.cor.15.13, 14,15,16,17,18,19,20. 1. thes.4.14.
Christ wil raise them vp againe whome his Father hath giuen him.Ioh.6.39.
The state of them that are raised vp.Luke 20.35.
¶Reuenging belongeth only to God.Rom.12.19. 1. thes.4.6.heb.10.30.
He will declare it against the persecuters of his elect,& against al rebels, Luk.18.7.2.thes.1.8.reue. 6.10.and 19.2.
It is also committed to the magistrate. Rom.13.4. 1. pet.2.14.
It is forbidden to priuate persons.Mat.5.39.rom.12 19.1.thes.5.15. 1.pet.3.9.
¶Rewarde of hypocrites is in this world. Mat.6.2.
The rewarde of sinne are other sinnes. Rom. 1,28, 29,30,31. 2.thes.2.
The death euerlasting. Romanes 6.23.
The reward of the faithful is in heauen.Mat.5.12.
It is life euerlasting.Mat.19 29.and 25.46.rom.6,23.
¶Riches must be wel vsed and spent.Luke 12.33.and 16.10. 1.tim.6.17. 1.iohn 3.16.
The riche with great paine receiue the Gospel.Mat. 19.24.
Yet some of them receiue it.Mat.27.57.luke 19.3.
We ought not to trust in riches.Mat.10.24.1.tim.6.17.
We can not serue God,and them both. Mat.6.24.
They choke the worde of God in some. Mat.13.22.
Wo be to ỹ rich which are wicked.Luk.6.24.iam.5.1.
How dãgerous a thing it is to wil to be rich.1.tim.6.9

Riche men ought not ambitiously to seeke honour. Iam.2.3.
Of the rich man that lived in pleasure, & poore Lazarus.Luke 16.19.

S

SAbbath, or rest which was a figure Iudaical, & is nowe taken away by Christ. Colos.2.16.Reade Dayes.
The Christian & spirituall, Heb.4.12.
¶ Sacrifices for sinnes in shadow & figure.Heb.8. 3.and 9.10.
In effect & trueth but one onely which is Christe. Reade Christ.
The spiritual sacrifice,& of praise. Rom.12.1.phil.4. 18.heb.13.15.1.pet.2.5.
Sadduces were a sect which denyed the resurrection of the dead. Matth.22.23. act.23.6.
Saintes.Reade Faithful.
Salvation is by the onely grace of God. Ephes 2.5. titus 3.7. Reade Faith & Christ.
Samaritane.Iohn 4.9.
Sanctification.Looke Christ
Sara.Heb.11.11.1.pet.3.6.
Satan.Looke Deuil.
Satisfaction Reade Christ.
Scribes.Reade Pharises.
¶ Scripture is written for our cause. Rom.4.24. 1. cor.9.10.and 10.11.
For our doctrine,consolation,correction,and ful instruction to salvation. Ioh.20.31.rom.15.4.2.tim. 3.16.
It beareth witnes of Christ Luke 24.27,46. iohn 5.39. and 20.9.acts.17.2.and 18. 28.rom.16.22.
It was necessarie that it should be fulfilled. Mat. 26.54,56.luk.24.26,27,44. 46.ioh.12.38.& 13.18.& 17.12.& 19.28,36.act.1.16.
All doctrine is tried by it. Act.17.11.
It is writhen and falsely alleaged by ỹ deuil,& the wicked.Mat.4.6.2.pe.3.16.
¶ Seniours,called also Ancients,which are taken for ministers of the word,or gouerners of discipline in the Church.Acts.15.22. and 20.17. 1.timothie.4. 14.and 5.17.Reade Preachers.
Separate vs from that lone that God beareth vs,nothing can.Rom.8.39.
Sergius Paulus deputie. Act.13.7.
¶ Servants ought to obey and serue their masters. Ephe.6.5. col.3.22.1.tim. 6.1.tit.2.9.1.pet.2.18.
We are all vnprofitable servants.Luke 17.10.
The servant that knoweth the wil of his master,&c. Luke 12.47.
¶ Serue we must only God. Mat.4.10.

We muſt ſerue one another through charitie. Gala. 5.13.
We ought not to ſerue ſinne any lõger. Rom. 6.6.
We can not ſerue two maſters. Reade Riches.
¶Shepherds in Bethlehem. Luke 2.15.
In the Church. Epheſ. 4.11. Reade Preachers.
Sickues. Reade Infirmitie.
Simeon. Luke 2.25.
Simon Peter. Reade Peter.
Simon the Phariſe, in whoſe houſe Chriſte ate. Luke 7.40.
Simon ỹ ſorcerer, Acts. 8.9.
¶Sinne is in all men. Reade Man.
It ingendreth death. Rom. 7.13.
The puniſhment thereof. Looke Death.
What ſinne is irremiſſible. Matt. 12.31. heb. 6.4. and 10.29. 1. iohn 5.16.
He that obeyeth ſinne is ỹ ſeruant thereof. Iohn 8.34. rom. 6.16. 2. pet. 2.23.
He that ſinneth is of the deuil. 1. iohn 3.8.
The ſinneful woman. Luk. 7.37, 44.
Sinners are called to repentance. Mat. 9.13. 2. pet. 3.9.
Slander, Reade Offence.
Sobrietie is required in Chriſtians. 1. Theſ. 5.8. 1. pet. 1.13. and 5.8.
Sorcerers or diuiners. Act. 8.9. and 13.8. and 16.16.
¶Soule taken for life. Mat. 2.20, and 10.39. and 16.25. Iohn 10.10, 15, 17.
Taken for the ſpirit whereby we liue. Matth. 10.22. mar. 8.31. 1. pet. 1.11. and 4.14.
Taken for the affection of the heart. Mat. 26.38. luk. 1.47. and 2.32. ioh. 12.27.
Taken for the will ioyned with vnderſtanding. 1. Theſ. 5.18. 1. pet. 1.22.
Taken for the perſon. Rom. 13.1. 1. pet. 3.20.
¶ Spirit, or holy Ghoſt is God. Mat. 28.19. luk. 3.22. acts. 2.4. and 5.3. & 10.2. and 16.6. & 23.28. 1. cor. 12.11.
The Spirit of God. Mat. 3.16. and 12.28. act. 2.17. and 5.9. rom. 8.9, 14. 1. cor. 3.16. 1. theſ. 4.8.
The Spirit of Chriſt. Rom. 8.9. gal 4.6. 1. pet. 1.11.
He is one. 1. Corin. 12.13. ephe. 2.18.
The comforter. Ioh. 14.16, 26. and 15.26. act. 9.31.
The quickener. Iohn 6.63. 2. cor. 3.6.
The Spirit of trueth. Ioh. 14.17. and 15.26. and 16.13.
The maſter and teacher of the faithful. Luke 12.12. iohn. 14.26. 1. cor. 2.13. 1. iohn 2.24.
He is the ſhewer of things to come. Iohn 16.13. 1. tim. 4.1, 2. pet. 1.21.

He is the witnes of Christ. Ioh.15.26.act.5.32.1.ioh. 5.6.
The distributer of all the gifts.1.Cor.12.11.
Onely he knoweth ỹ things of God.1.Cor.2.11.
He dwelleth in ỹ faithfull, Reade Faithfull.
He beareth them witnes, that they are ỹ children of God.Rom.8.16.
He helpeth their infirmities,and maketh petition for them,Rom.8.26.
He is giuen and sent of the Father.Ioh.14.26.and 15. 26.acts.2.17.and 5.32.1. cor.1.22.and 5.5.gal.4.6.
He is giuen and sent of Christ.Ioh.4.14.& 15.26. and 16.7.and 20.22.ephe. 4.7.
The Spirit of adoption. Rom.8.15.gal.4.5.
He is the pledge of our inheritance.2.Cor.1.22.& 5.5.ephes.1.14.
He is the water of life. Iohn 4.14.and 7.38.
The vnction or anoynting. Luk.4.18.act.10.38.1.ioh. 2.20.27.
His comming vpon the Apostles.Acts.2.3.
His workes & fruites.Gala. 5.22.
The Spirit of man.Math.27. 50. luke.8.55. and 23.46. rom.8.16.1.cor.2.11. and 5.3. 1.thes.5.23.heb.12.23. 1.pet.3.19.
A spirit hath neither flesh nor bones.Luke 24.39.
The wicked and vncleane spirits.Reade Deuil.
¶ Steuen is elect Deacon. Acts.6.5.
He disputeth with ỹ Iewes, and is accused falsely. Acts.6.9,13.
He answereth constantly in the council.acts.7.
He is stoned, and dyeth. Acts.7.58.
He is buried.Acts.8.2.
Strife and debate must be auoyded.Mat.5.25.1.cor. 6.6.gal.5.26.iam.4.1.
¶ Sword of the spirit.Looke Worde of God.
It is taken for affliction. Luke 2.35.
For discord.Mat.10.34.
For ỹ materiall sword, the vse whereof is committed to the magistrate. Rom.13.14.
It is prohibited to priuate persons.Mat.5.39.and 26. 52.reuel.13.10.

T

TAbitha is rayſed to life. Acts.9.36,40.
Temple spirituall. Reade faythfull.
The material Temple.Mat. 21.12.& 24.2.1.Ioh.2.14.
God dwelleth not in temples made with handes. Reade God.
Tentation, good when God prouoth the faith & constancie

ſtancie of his by ꝑ croſſe and afflictions. 1. Cor. 10. 13. heb. 11. 17. iam. 1. 2, 12. 1. pet. 1. 6.

Euill tentation whereby Satan draweth one away from God, and leadeth him to deſtruction. Mat. 4. 1. luke 8. 13. act. 5. 3. 1. cor. 7. 5. gal. 6. 1. 1. theſ. 3. 5. 1. tim. 6. 9. reuel. 2. 10.

God onely deliuereth vs out of it. Mat. 6. 13. 1. cor. 10. 13. 2. pet. 2. 9. reue. 3. 10.

We muſt pray to him to deliuer vs. Mat. 6. 13. and 26. 41. luke 22. 40.

God tempteth not to euill. Iames 1. 13.

We muſt not tempt God. Mat. 4. 7. act. 5. 9. and 15. 10. 1. cor. 10. 9.

¶ Teſtament, Olde. Rom. 9. 4. 2. cor. 3. 14. heb. 8. 9. and 9. 15.

The blood thereof was of bulles & goats, &c. Hebr. 9. 12, 19. and 10. 4.

The New teſtament. Rom. 11. 27. 2. cor. 3. 6. heb. 8. 8. & 9. 15. and 12. 24.

The blood thereof is Chriſtes blood. Mat. 26. 28. luk. 22. 20. 1. cor. 11. 25. heb. 9. 12, 14. and 10. 19, 29. & 12. 24. and 13. 20.

The allegorie of the two teſtaments. Gal. 4. 24.

It is taken for the promiſe made to Abraham & his poſteritie. Luke 1. 72.

¶ Teſtimonie or witneſſe which God rendreth of himſelfe, & of his bountifulnes. Act. 14. 17.

Which hee rendreth of Chriſt, & his Goſpel. Ioh. 5. 32. and 8. 18. act. 14. 3. & 15. 8. 1. cor. 2. 1. 1. ioh. 5. 6.

The witnes ꝑ Chriſt beareth to him ſelfe, and to the trueth of his Goſpel. Iohn. 3. 11, 28. and 8. 14. 1. cor. 1. 6. 1. tim. 6. 13.

Which he teſtifieth of the world. Iohn 7. 7.

The witnes which the ſpirite beareth of Chriſt Looke Spirit.

Of the three witneſſes in heauen and three in earth. 1. Iohn 5. 7.

Of the Scriptures and the Prophets which witneſſe of Chriſt. Read Scripture, and Act. 10. 43.

Of Iohn Baptiſts witneſſe. Iohn 1. 15. 19, 32.

Of Iohn the Euangeliſts. Iohn 19. 35. and 21. 24.

Of the Apoſtles, and of the faithful which thei beare to Chriſt and his Goſpel. Mat. 1. 18. luk. 21. 13 act. 2. 32. and 3. 15. and 4. 33. and 5. 32. and 10. 39. 1. cor. 15. 15. 2. theſ. 1. 10. 2. tim. 1. 8. reue. 1. 2. and 6. 9. and 19. 10. and 20. 4.

The teſtimonie of the conſcience. Rom. 2. 15. and 9. 1. 2. cor. 1. 12.

To receiue teſtimonie of God by faith. Heb. 11. 1, 2, 39.

The

The teſtimonie of two or three is ſufficient. Mat. 18.16. Ioh.8.17.2.cor.13. 1. hebr.10.28.
Falſe witnes is forbidden. Mat.15.19.& 19.18.rom. 13.9.
Thankes to God before meales and after. Looke Graces.
Theft forbidden.Mat.19.18. rom.2.21.and 13.9.1.cor. 6.10.eph.4.28.1.pet.4.15.
¶ Thought and care muſt be put away.Matth.6.34. luke 12.22. 1.cor.7 33.
It muſt be referred to God. 1.Pet.5.7.
We muſt take care for others.2.Cor.11.2.phi.1.24.
Tirannie and crueltie.Mat. 2.16.and 14.10. acts.7.59. and 12.2.
¶Time to come, apperteineth not to vs to know. Act.1.7.
The time of Chriſt is the time of grace.Mark.1.15. Rom.5.6. 2.cor.6.2. gala. 4.4.
Our time is ſhort. 1.Cor. 7.29.
We ought to recouer the time.Ephe.5.16. col.4 5.
The laſt times,looke daies.
Timothie. Acts.16.1.1.cor. 4.17.
Tithes of the Leuites. heb. 7.5.
¶ Tongue, ỹ nature thereof.Iames 3.8.
We ought to refraine it from euil. Iam.1.26. and 3.5.1.pet.3.10.
To ſpeake diuers tongues is the gift of ỹ holy Ghoſt Acts.2.4.and 10.46.and 19. 6.1.cor.12.28.
In the Church we muſt vſe that tongue which is vnderſtand.1.cor.14.all the chapter.
Traditions. Reade cõmandements.
Transfiguration of Chriſt. Mat.17.2.
Treaſon and traitours.Mat. 26.24.mark.14.21.luke 6. 16.acts.7.52.2.tim.3.4.
¶ Treaſure is to be laid vp in heauen.Mat.6.20.
All ỹ treaſures of God are in Chriſt. Col.2.3.
The treaſure of the Goſpel. Mat.13.44.2.cor.4.7.
Treaſure vaine and tranſitorie.Luke 12.iam.5.2.
¶Tribulation commeth to them which are married. 1.Cor.7.28.
To the faithfull. Mat. 24.9. acts.7.10.and 14.21.2.cor. 4.8.and 6.4.and 8.2. heb. 11.36,37.
We muſt beare it patiently.Rom.12.12. 2.theſ.1 4.
And ioyfully.Loke Reioice.
It worketh patience.Rõ.5 3
God ſendeth vs comfort in our tribulations,that we might comfort others in theirs. 2.Cor.1.4. Reade Croſſe and perſecution.
Tribute ought to be paied to

to princes & magiſtrats, Mat.17.27. & 22.21.rom. 13.6.
Trueth. Reade Chriſt, Spirit, Goſpel.
To be of the trueth. Iohn 18.37.1.iohn 3.19.
To do it, and to followe it. Iohn 3.21. epheſ.4.15.1. iohn 1.6.and 3.18.
Againſt them which drawe themſelues from it,& reſiſt.Rom.2.8.gal.3.1.& 5.7. 2.tim.2.18.& 3.8.& 4.4.tit. 1.14.heb.10.26.2.pet.2.

V

VAnting, Reade boaſting. Vengeance, Reade Reuenging.
Vertue of God. Mat.22.29. luke 22.69.
It worketh in his, to ſaluation.Rom.1.16.1.pet.1.5.
The vertue or power of Chriſt.2.Cor.12.9.
The vertue of ỹ holy Ghoſt Actes.1.8.
By miracles. Mat.11.20.and 13.58.act.2.22.and 19.11. heb.2.4.
Veſſels, ſome to honour, & ſome to diſhonour.Rom. 9.21.2.tim 2.20.
Virgins, & of their conteining or marying.1.cor.7.25
Viſite the ſicke and priſoners. Mat 25.36.
To viſite the fatherles and widowes.Iames 1.27.
Vnitie & concord. Act 2.44. & 4.32.rom.12.16.& 15.6. 1.cor.1.10.ephe.4.3.phil. 1.27.and 3.16.1.pet.3.8.
To be vnited in God and Chriſt.Iohn 17.21.
¶Vocation, or calling to followe Chriſt.Mat.& 22. and 9.9.iohn 1.43.
To preach.Mat.4.17.mar.3. 14. luk.6.13. rom.1.1. 1. cor.1.1.gala.1.16.Reade Election.
To liſe euerlaſting, and to ſaluation.Rom.1.1.and 8. 29.and 9.24.and 11.29. 1. cor.1.9,24.gal.1.5.eph.4.1 1.theſ.2.12.& 5.24. 1.tim. 6.12.2.tim. 1.9. 1.pet.2.9. and 5.10. 2.pet.1.3,10.
¶ Vocation of the gentiles. Iohn 10.16.rom.9.24.and 11.12.and 15.9.
Let euery man remaine in his vocation.1.cor.7.20.
Voluptuouſnes and diſſolution is forbidden. Luk.8. 14.tit.1.6.and 3.3. 1.pet. 4.4.
Voluptuous and giuen to pleaſures, being aliue are dead.1.tim.5.6. 2.tim.3.4.
¶ Vowes vſed for gifts and ceremonies. Act.21.23.
Taken for promiſe to doe euil.Acts.23.14.
Vſurie prohibited.Mat.5.42. luke 6.30.

W

WAtch we ought, and be ready continually.Mat. 24.42.& 26.41.mar.13.33. luke 12.37.actes.20.31. 1. cor.16.13.2.cor.6.5.ephe. 6.18.col.4.2. 1.theſ.5.10.1. pet.4.7.and 5.8. reuel.3.2. & 16.15. Wea-

Weapons, reade Armour.
Well doing, Reade Doing well.
Whoredome, Looke Adulterie.
¶Widowes muſt be prouided for. 1. tim. 5. 3. iam. 1. 27.
Of their miniſterie. Act. 6. 1. 1. tim. 5. 9.
Of their continency. 1. cor. 7. 8. 1. tim 5. 11, 16.
The poore widow that offred in the temple. Mar. 12. 42.
Powlers of widowes. Mat. 23. 14. marke 12. 40. luke 20. 47.
Will of GOD according whereunto hee worketh & determineth al things Mat. 18. 14. roma. 9. 19. 1. cor. 1. 1. epheſ. 1. 5. heb. 2. 4. 1. pet. 3. 17. and 4. 19. reuel. 4. 11.
According to the which he commandeth vs, & requireth of vs euery thing Mat. 12. 50. ioh. 7. 17. rom. 2. 18. 1. theſ. 4. 3. and 5. 18. heb. 10. 36. 1. pet. 2. 15. 1. iohn 2. 17.
We muſt ſeeke to vnderſtand it, and fulfil it. Mat. 7. 21. rom. 12. 2. ephe. 5. 17. 1. pet. 4. 2.
We ought to deſire & pray that it may be done. Mat. 6. 10. and 26. 42. col. 1. 9. & 4. 12. heb. 13. 21.
To it we muſt referre all things. act. 18. 21. & 21. 14. rom. 1. 10. and 15. 32. 1. corin. 4. 19. and 16. 7. iam. 4. 15.
Mans wil howe it is able to do nothing of it ſelfe, no not in the regenerate, Reade Workes.
Windes and ſea appeaſed by Chriſt. Mat. 8. 26. and 14. 32.
¶Wiſdome of God, Looke Chriſt and Goſpel.
The wiſdome of this world is fooliſhnes before God. 1. Cor. 1. 20, 25. and 3. 19.
Earthly. iam. 3. 19.
Heauenly, there alſo.
We muſt aske it of GOD. iam. 1. 5.
Wiues, of their duetie, and office toward their huſbands, Reade Marriage.
Woman is of man, & made for man. 1. Cor. 11. 8.
Howe ſhee ought to be apparelled. 1. Tim. 2. 9. 1. pet. 3. 3.
She ought not to teach in the Church. 1. Cor. 14. 34. 1. tim. 2. 12.
The women that followe Chriſt. Luke 8. 2.
Women married to the biſhops, and miniſters of ỹ Church. 1. Timo. 3. 2, 11. titus 1. 6.
Word of God, for the Sõne of God. Iohn 1. 1, 14. reue. 19. 13.
Which created all things. Iohn 1. 3. heb. 11. 3.
It is the power of God. 1. cor. 1.

cor.1.18.
The efficacie thereof.Heb. 4.12.
The worde of life.Mat.4.4. iohn 6.63 act.5.20.
The word of trueth.Ioh.17. 17.2.cor.6.7. epheſ. 1.13. col.1.5.2.tim.2.15.iames 1.18.
The worde of ſaluation. Act.13.26.iam.1.21.
Of reconciliation. 2.Corin. 5.19.
The ſword of the ſpirit. Epheſ.6.17.
It is liuely, effectuall, and iudgeth the thoughtes. Heb.4.12.
Endureth for euer.1.Pet.1. 23.
It worketh in the faithfull. 1.Theſ.2.13.
It ſanctifieth all creatures, 1.Tim.4.4.
It is ỹ incorruptible ſeede. 1.Pet.1.23.
Compared to ỹ ſeede that groweth and fructifieth. Luk. 8.11.act.6.7.and 12. 24.col.1.5.
We ought to keepe this word and put it in practiſe.Mat.7.24. iohn.14 21. iam.1.23.1.ioh.2.5.Reade Goſpel and Scripture.
¶Workes which are good are of God. Epheſi. 2.10. phil.1.6. and 2.13. col.1. 10. 2.theſ.2.17. tit.2.14. heb.13.21.
Workes that pleaſe God ſolowe faith. Luke 19.8. heb.11.
They are the fruites of the Spirit.gal.5.22. ephe.5.9.
They are only done by the faithful.Mat.7.17.and 12. 33.luke 6.44.
They are fruites and teſtimonies of true repẽtãce & faith. Mat. 3.8.& 7.18. luk.6.45.ioh.8.13,14.act. 26.20 gal.5.22. 1.timo.5. 10.tit.1.16.iam.2.17.
They aſſure vs of our election. 2.pet.1.10.1.ioh.3. 17,18,19,20.
The faithfull muſt walke in them.Ephe.5.15.heb.10. 24. 1.pet.2 12.
They muſt be done for the glory of God. Mat.5.16. 1.pet.2 12.
They folowe the faithfull after their death. Reuel. 14.13.
God will rewarde them, Mat.10.42.and 16.27.and 25.34. luke 6.38. and 14. 14. iohn 5.29. rom.2.7. 1. cor.3.8,13.
God hath iuſtified vs without them & before them. Rom.4 3.and 11.5.ephe.2. 8.2.tim.1.9.tit.3.5.
Without faith no worke is good. Roma.14.23. hebr. 11.6.
Euill workes are of ỹ fleſh, Gal.5.19.
They are wrought of the deuil in the infidels. Epheſ.2.2.
Chriſt is come to deſtroye them.

them.1.Iohn.3.8.
We muſt laye them away, and abſtaine from them. Rom.13.12. ephe.4.17. & 5.11.1.pet.4.3.
Euery man ſhal receiue according to his workes. Mat.16.27.rom.2.6.2.cor. 5.10.gala.6.5. 1.pet.1.17. reuel.2.23. and 20.12. & 22.12.
We can worke nothing of our ſelues. Matth.19.26. iohn 3.27.and 6.44.& 14. 6.and 15.4.and 19.11.act. 3.15. rom.7.16,17,18,19, 20,21. and 8.1,2,3. and 9. 11,12,13,14,15,16,17,18, 1.cor.1.27. and 2.14. and 3.1.and 12.3. and 15.10. 2.cor.3.5.gal.5.17. epheſ. 1. phil.2.13. 1.iohn 2.24. Reade Faith and God.
¶ Worlde was made by Chriſt.Iohn 1.10.
Yet neither knoweth him nor the Father. Ioh.1.11. and 17.25.
It is fully bent on wickednes.1.Iohn 5.19.
The deuil is the prince thereof.Reade Deuil.
We muſt not loue it. 1.Ioh. 2.15.
Chriſt prayeth not for it. Iohn 17.9.
Chriſt hath ouercome it. Iohn 16.33.
The faithfull ouercome it by faith.1.Iohn 5.4.
The friendſhip thereof is enimitie with God.Iam. 4.4.1.iohn 2.16.
It hateth Chriſt and his. Ioh.7.7. and 15.18.1.ioh. 3.13.
It paſſeth away. 1.Cor.7.31. 1.iohn 2.17.
The faithfull ſhal iudge it. 1.Cor.6.2.
The faithfull are not of it. Iohn 15.19. and 17.14.
¶ Worſhipping of GOD. Mat.4.10.luke 4.8. act.14. 15.and 17.27.1.cor.14.25. 1.theſ.1.9.reue.4.9. and 14.7.and 15.4.and 19.10. and 22.8. Reade God and Chriſt.
Worſhipping in ſpirit and trueth.Iohn 4.23.
Superſtitious worſhipping Act.10.28. and 14.12. reuel.19.10.and 22.9.
Worſhipping of the beaſt. Reue.13.4.and 14.11.and 16.2.and 19.20. Reade Idolatrie.
Wrong ought not to be done nor rendred, but ſuffred.Mat.5.39.rom.12. 17.1.cor.6.7.1.theſ.5.15. 1.pet.3.9.

Y

YOke of Chriſt.Mat.11.29. Neither the ancient fathers, nor the Apoſtles were able to beare the yoke of the Lawe, therefore the chriſtians ought not to be burdened with it.Act.15.10.

¶ Yong

¶ Yong folke howe they ſhould order thē ſelues. Tit.2. 1.pet.5.5. 1.tim. 5.14.

We muſt flee yong deſires and luſtes. 2.timothie.2. 22.

Yong folke that are learned, are not to be reiected. 1.Timo.4.12. titus 2.

Z

Zacharias, Eliſabet. Luke 1.5,12,22.

His ſong. Luke 1.68.

Zacharias the ſonne of Barachias ſlaine betweene the alear & the temple. Mat.23.35.

Zacheus. Luke 19.2.

Zeale without knowledge, Rom.10.2.

FINIS.

Imprinted at London by Chriſtopher Barker, Printer to the *Queenes Maieſtie.*

Cum priuilegio.

